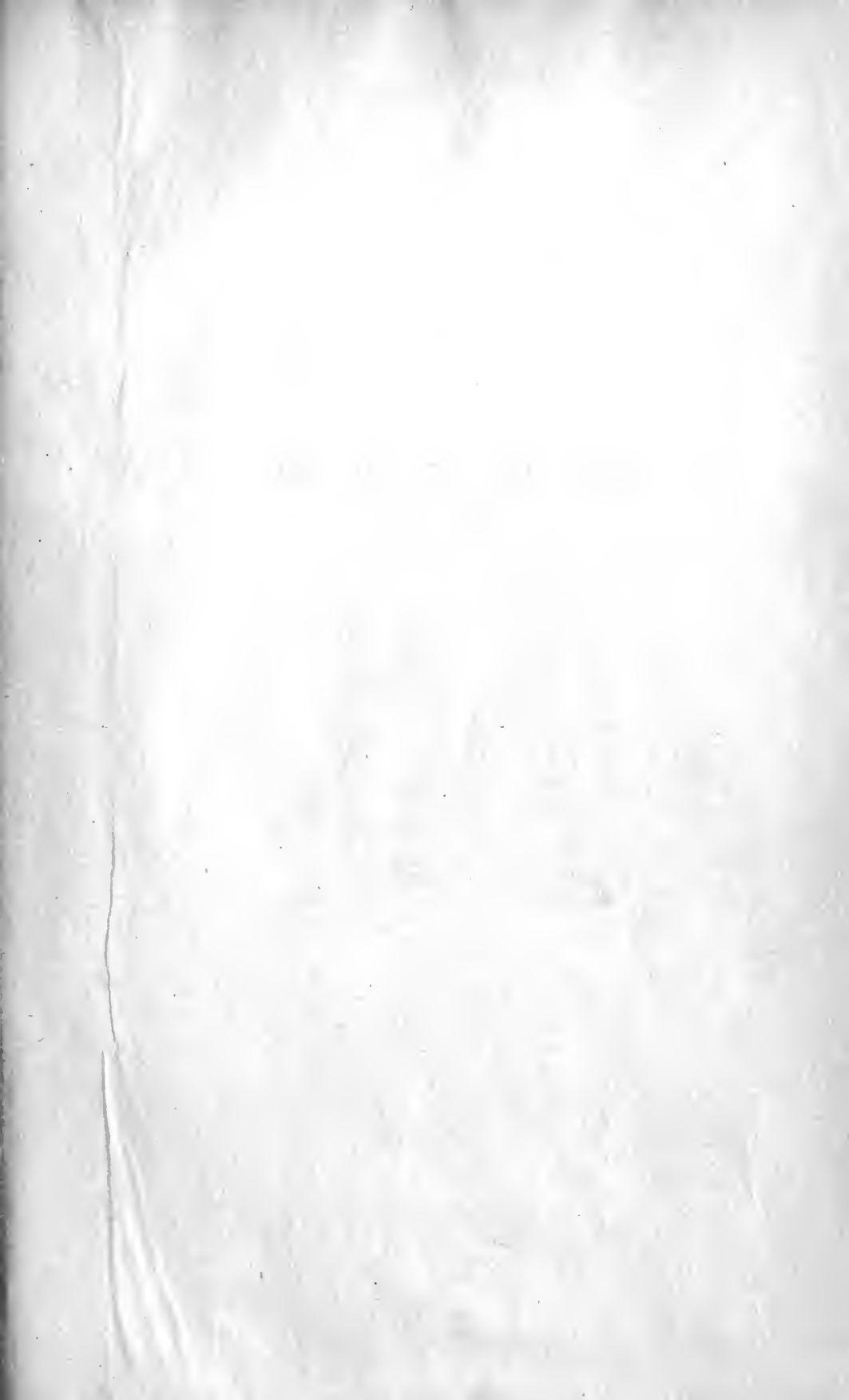


Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation





# **The World's Greatest War**

## **Volume III**

**THE EVENTS OF 1918**

**THE ARMISTICE AND THE  
PEACE TREATIES**

k





LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR ARTHUR W. CURRIE  
Commander of the Canadian Corps from June 9, 1917



57244

# The Book of History

## The World's Greatest War

FROM THE OUTBREAK OF THE WAR  
TO THE TREATY OF VERSAILLES

WITH MORE THAN 1,000 ILLUSTRATIONS

EDITOR-IN-CHIEF  
**HOLLAND THOMPSON, PH.D.**  
*The College of the City of New York*

CONTRIBUTING AUTHORS AND EDITORS

**Maj.-Gen. Leonard Wood, U.S.A.**  
COMMANDING 89TH AND 10TH DIVISIONS

**G. C. Marshall, Jr.**  
COLONEL, GEN'L STAFF, A. D. C., U. S. ARMY

**Herbert T. Wade**  
LATE CAPT. ORDNANCE DEPT., U. S. ARMY

**John H. Finley, LL.D.**  
COMMISSIONER OF EDUCATION,  
N. Y. STATE  
COLONEL, RED CROSS IN PALESTINE

**Albert Sonnichsen**  
NEWSPAPER CORRESPONDENT IN  
BALKANS

**Basil Clarke**  
THE LONDON DAILY MAIL

**Nelson P. Mead, Ph.D.**  
COLLEGE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK  
EDUCATIONAL DEPARTMENT A. E. F.

**Muriel Bray, L.L.A.**  
ASST. EDITOR, CANADIAN BOOK OF  
KNOWLEDGE

**Vernon Kellogg**  
DIRECTOR IN BRUSSELS OF COMMISSION  
FOR RELIEF IN BELGIUM

**Rear-Admiral William S. Sims**  
COMMANDING U. S. NAVY IN EUROPEAN  
WATERS

**Carlyon Bellairs, M.P.**  
LATE COMMANDER OF THE ROYAL NAVY

**Lt.-Gen. Sir Arthur Currie,**  
**G.C.M.G., K.C.B.**  
COMMANDER OF THE CANADIAN CORPS  
IN FRANCE

**Sir John Willison**  
PRESIDENT CANADIAN RECONSTRUCTION  
ASSOCIATION

**W. S. Wallace**  
LATE MAJOR CANADIAN EXPEDITIONARY  
FORCE

**Robert Machray**  
THE LONDON DAILY MAIL

**L. Marion Lockhart, B.A.**  
ASSISTANT EDITOR, BOOK OF HISTORY

**Michael Williams**  
NATIONAL CATHOLIC WAR COUNCIL  
BULLETIN

**Viscount Northcliffe**  
PROPRIETOR, LONDON TIMES

And Other Contributors

### Volume XVIII

'THE EVENTS OF 1918  
THE ARMISTICE AND THE PEACE TREATIES

NEW YORK . . . THE GROLIER SOCIETY  
LONDON . . . THE EDUCATIONAL BOOK CO.

178055.

15.2.23.

COPYRIGHT, 1921, BY  
THE GROLIER SOCIETY

All rights reserved, including that of translation  
into foreign languages.

D  
20  
B7  
v.18

## CONTENTS OF VOLUME III

Chapter	Page
LIII THE COMMISSION FOR RELIEF IN BELGIUM . . . .	877
LIV PRUSSIAN MAPS AND IMPERIAL PLANS . . . .	903
LV BLUNDERS OF GERMAN NAVAL POLICY . . . .	907
LVI LATER DEVELOPMENTS OF WAR IN THE AIR . . . .	911
LVII THE GERMAN EMPIRE AT WAR . . . .	937
LVIII THE CONQUEST OF GERMAN EAST AFRICA . . . .	963
LIX RUSSIA MAKES A SEPARATE PEACE . . . .	975
LX BELGIUM UNDER THE GERMAN YOKE . . . .	989
LXI THE GERMAN OFFENSIVE OF MARCH AND APRIL . . . .	1007
LXII THE MARNE: THE BEGINNING OF VICTORY . . . .	1025
LXIII THE CANADIAN PEOPLE AND THE WAR . . . .	1041
LXIV THE UNITED STATES NAVAL FORCES IN EUROPEAN WATERS	1067
LXV ZEEBRUGGE AND OSTEND . . . .	1095
LXVI THE AMERICAN ARMY IN FRANCE . . . .	1101
LXVII THE COLLAPSE OF THE BALKAN FRONT . . . .	1119
LXVIII THE FIGHTING DURING THE LAST THREE MONTHS . . . .	1133
LXIX THE ARMY MACHINE . . . .	1151
LXX ITALY'S HOUR OF TRIUMPH . . . .	1171
LXXI THE CANADIAN AS A SOLDIER . . . .	1187
LXXII THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES AND THE WAR . . . .	1213
LXXIII RELIEF AND WELFARE ORGANIZATIONS . . . .	1225
Chaplains, Red Cross, etc.	
The National Catholic War Council	
War Work of the Y. M. C. A.	
LXXIV THE LAST OFFENSIVE ON THE NORTHERN FRONT . . . .	1263
LXXV ST. MIHIEL AND THE MEUSE-ARGONNE . . . .	1287
LXXVI THE ARMISTICE IS SIGNED . . . .	1307
LXXVII MAKING THE PEACE TREATIES . . . .	1323
APPENDICES	
INDEX	



# LIST OF MAPS

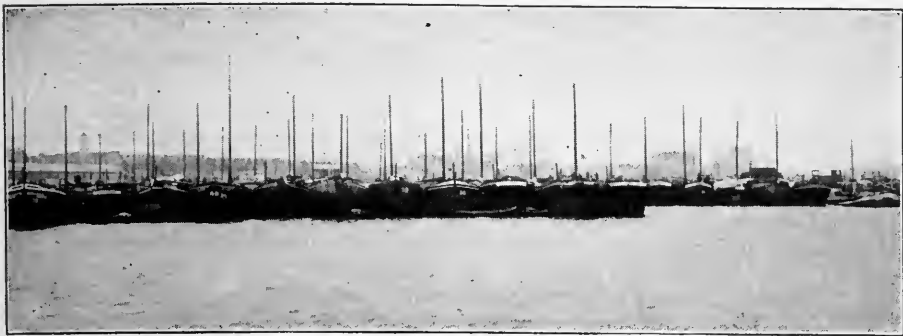
## VOLUME III

	Page
ROUTES OF INVASION IN GERMAN EAST AFRICA . . . .	965
WHERE THE GERMAN BLOW FELL IN MARCH . . . .	1011
THE SOUTHERN PART OF THE BATTLE OF PICARDY . . . .	1014
THE BATTLE OF THE LYS . . . .	1020
MAP ILLUSTRATING THE DRIVE TOWARD PARIS . . . .	1028
FOCH'S FLANK ATTACK UPON THE MARNE SALIENT . . . .	1036
THE MINE-FIELDS OF THE NORTH SEA . . . .	1085
DIAGRAM OF THE HARBOR OF ZEEBRUGGE . . . .	1098
THE BATTLE LINE, JULY 15, 1918 . . . .	1115
WHERE THE ALLIED ARMIES DEFEATED THE CENTRAL POWERS . . . .	1124
AREA OF SOUTHERN HALF OF ALLIES' AUGUST OFFENSIVE . . . .	1135
GERMAN DEFENSIVE POSITION, AUGUST 1918 . . . .	1138
MARSHAL FOCH'S PINCERS STRATEGY . . . .	1140
THE RETREAT OF THE ENEMY IN CHAMPAGNE . . . .	1144
GERMAN LINES—ACTUAL AND PROJECTED . . . .	1147
LAST STAGES OF ALLIES' ADVANCE TO VICTORY LINE ON WESTERN FRONT	1149
BATTLE LINES IN LAST OFFENSIVE ON ITALIAN FRONT . . . .	1179
FIGHTING FOR BAPAUME. . . .	1267
FRANCO-AMERICAN OPERATIONS ON THE ST. MIHIEL FRONT . . . .	1288
PLAN OF ST. MIHIEL OPERATIONS, SEPTEMBER 1918 . . . .	1291
ADVANCE IN THE MEUSE-ARGONNE . . . .	1299
BEFORE AND AFTER THE ARMISTICE . . . .	1319

## LIST OF COLOR PLATES IN THE WORLD'S GREATEST WAR

LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR ARTHUR W. CURRIE . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
MARSHAL FOCH . . . .	1025
GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING . . . .	1101
AMERICAN ARMY AND NAVY DECORATIONS . . . .	1307





Barges of the Commission in Rotterdam

## CHAPTER LIII

# The Commission for Relief in Belgium

## THE STORY OF THE GREATEST WORK OF RELIEF EVER SUCCESSFULLY ACCOMPLISHED

BY VERNON KELLOGG

Ex-Director, in Brussels, of the Commission for Relief in Belgium

**M**ANY American missions and commissions went to Europe during the war on many various errands. Most of them were formed after America had broken with Germany, but a very important one began its work within three months after the Great War began. This was the Commission for Relief in Belgium, commonly referred to by its members and the Belgians as the "C.R.B." Its existence as an organization and its work began in October, 1914, and continued until the signing of the treaty of peace in the summer of 1919. In that period of four and a half years of active effort it collected by donation and purchase and transported overseas and through Holland into Belgium and North France nearly five million tons of foodstuffs and clothing of a value of about seven hundred million dollars.

### THE AMERICAN COMMISSION FOR RELIEF IN BELGIUM.

For the proper protection and equitable distribution of these supplies inside the German-occupied territories of Belgium and North France, the C.R.B. was solely responsible from November, 1914 until April, 1917, at which time America entered the war and Americans were no longer allowed to remain. This responsibility then

devolved upon a joint Dutch-Spanish Commission, although all of the handling of funds, and the purchase and transportation of the supplies, both overseas and through Holland up to the Belgian border, were still carried on by the American Commission.

The actual detailed distribution of the supplies to the nearly ten million shut-in people was effected under the constant supervision of the American volunteers of the C.R.B. by about thirty-five thousand French and Belgian relief workers, thoroughly organized into national, provincial, and local committees. The American volunteers within the occupied territories were never more than forty-five at any one time—the German military authorities made constant objection to having more than twenty-five or thirty—but about two hundred were used altogether during the period of the Commission's work.

### ONLY ONE-SIXTH OF THE BELGIAN POPULATION AGRICULTURAL.

What made the "relief of Belgium" necessary, and necessary so soon after the beginning of the war? Belgium is not, as the United States is, self-sustaining as to food. Except for tea, coffee, and spices, and a part of its sugar, America produces within its borders

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

all of the food it really needs to keep its people alive and even comfortably alive. Of the more important staples, such as bread-grains, meat, milk, and fats, it produces a surplus. If an enemy could completely blockade it, it could go on living indefinitely.

But Belgium could not; nor could England and France and Italy. Belgium is not primarily an agricultural country, despite the fact that what agriculture it does have is the most intensive and highly developed in Europe. Only one-sixth of its people support themselves by agriculture. It is, indeed, the most highly industrialized and densely populated country in Europe, depending upon importations for fifty per cent of its annual general food needs and for seventy-five per cent of its needed bread-grains. These food importations must go on constantly, as must corresponding exportations of manufactured articles to pay for them.

### **BELGIUM EFFECTIVELY BLOCKADED FROM THE BEGINNING.**

But Belgium was, from the beginning of the war, effectively blockaded. It was shut up within a "ring of steel" through which no persons or supplies could pass in or out except under extraordinary circumstances, such as a special permission from both Germans and Allies, or a daring and almost impossible blockade-running. Within ten weeks after the entrance into its country of the first invading Germans on August 4, 1914, all of Belgium, except that forever famous little northwestern corner, was in the hands of the enemy. For all practical purposes it was German territory. So the Allied blockade of Germany necessarily included Belgium; while, on the other hand, the German occupying authorities naturally cut off all communication between the Belgians and their friends, the outside Allies. The result was that by the first of October the Belgians saw clearly the near end of their meagre food stocks and the swiftly approaching spectre of starvation. Some relief had to be provided, and provided quickly. That relief came by the rapid organization and strenuous efforts of the Commission for Relief in Belgium.

The first efforts to avert, or at least postpone the impending disaster, were made by the Belgians themselves. All transportation and communication inside of the country was paralyzed by the rapid spread of the invaders and the rigorously repressive and destructive measures adopted by them. Even the food existing in the country, where not already seized by the invading armies, could not be moved from the producing and storage centres to the consumers in the congested manufacturing and mining centres and to the large cities, without special effort and arrangement.

### **PRICES FIXED BY ROYAL DECREE IN BELGIUM.**

It was evident, too, that special measures were needed to conserve the native food stocks and make them last as long as possible, and to prevent unfair handling of them and insure their equitable distribution to the people. In all the larger cities, therefore, measures were taken to these ends. In the very first days of August, even before the Germans had entered Brussels, Burgomaster Max of that city had decided to have the city acquire stocks of foodstuffs to be held in reserve against the coming need. On August 14, King Albert issued from the Belgian Great Headquarters a decree fixing maximum prices at which various staple foodstuffs, such as flour, bread, potatoes, salt, sugar, and rice, could be sold, and giving the governors in their provinces and the burgomasters in their communes the right to requisition, for the public benefit, wheat and flour, and potatoes, salt, sugar, and rice.

But it was soon realized that the situation could only be met by more extended measures. For it became apparent that the French and English would not be able to come to the rescue of Belgium and drive the Germans quickly out of the country, as had been fondly hoped and confidently expected. Indeed, it was the Allied armies that were being driven not only out of Belgium but farther and farther back in France. It was necessary to undertake measures, if possible, to pro-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

vide for an introduction of food from outside sources.

### THE FIRST ORGANIZATION FOR RELIEF OF THE BELGIANS.

It was necessary to have recourse to some powerful neutral help. Belgium, and particularly Brussels, has always had its American colony. And it was to these Americans that Belgium turned for help. Many members of the colony left as soon as they could, but some, headed by Minister Brand Whitlock, remained. When the Belgian government left Brussels for Antwerp, and later for Le Havre, part of the diplomatic corps followed it but a smaller part stayed in Brussels to occupy a most peculiar position for the rest of the war. Mr. Whitlock elected to stay. It was a fortunate election for the Belgians.

When the American expatriates in Belgium who wished to leave applied to Minister Whitlock for help, he called to his assistance certain American engineers and business men then resident in Brussels, notably Messrs. Daniel Heineman, Millard Shaler, and William Hulse. He had also the very effective help of his First Secretary of Legation, Mr. Hugh Gibson, later Minister to Poland. These men were able to arrange the financial difficulties of the fleeing Americans despite closed banks, disappearing currency, and general financial paralysis. When this was finished they readily turned to the work of helping the Belgians.

### THE FIRST ATTEMPTS TO GET FOOD FROM OUTSIDE.

Their first effort, in coöperation with the burgomaster of Brussels and a group of Brussels business men, was the formation of a Central Committee of Assistance and Provisioning under the patronage of the ministers of the United States and Spain (Mr. Whitlock and the Marqués de Villalobar). The field of this committee was at first limited to Brussels and the communes immediately adjacent to it. But it was soon enlarged, and the committee correspondingly reorganized to cover the whole country. Finding that the shifting about over the land of the rapidly disappearing food stocks of

the country and the special assistance of the destitute and out of work must give way to a more radical relief, since the destruction of factories, the cessation of the incoming of raw materials and the export of manufactures had already thrown thousands of men out of employment, this committee resolved to approach the Germans for permission to attempt to bring in food supplies from outside the country.



**HERBERT HOOVER**

Mr. Herbert C. Hoover a distinguished mining engineer, residing in London when he organized the Commission for Relief in Belgium.

Copyright, Underwood & Underwood.

Burgomaster Max wrote on September 7 to Major General Lüttwitz, the German military governor of Brussels, requesting permission to arrange for the import of foodstuffs through the Holland-Belgium border. The city authorities of Charleroi also began negotiations with the German authorities in their province (Hainaut) to the same end, but little attention was paid to these requests. Therefore, the Americans of the committee decided, as neutrals, to take up personally with the German military authorities the matter of arranging imports.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### PERMISSION TO IMPORT FOOD IS FINALLY OBTAINED.

A general permission for the importation of foodstuffs into Belgium by way of the Dutch frontier was finally obtained from the German authorities, together with their guarantee that all such imported food would be entirely free from requisition by the German army. Also, a special permission was accorded to Mr. Shaler to go to Holland, and, if necessary, to England to try to arrange for obtaining and transporting to Belgium certain kinds and quantities of foodstuffs. But no money could be sent out of Belgium to pay for them, except a first small amount which Mr. Shaler was allowed to take with him.

In Holland, Mr. Shaler found the Dutch government quite willing to allow foodstuffs to pass through Holland for Belgium, but it asked him to try and arrange to find the supplies in England. Holland already saw that she would need to hold all of her food for her own people. So Mr. Shaler went on to England.

### MR. HERBERT HOOVER BECOMES INTERESTED IN THE PROBLEM.

Here he tried to interest influential Americans in Belgium's great need and, through Mr. Edgar Rickard, an American engineer, he was introduced to Mr. Herbert Hoover, then the leading American engineer in London, who lent a sympathetic ear to the story of the situation in the heroic but despairing land across the Channel. This sympathetic listening meant for Mr. Hoover the almost complete surrender of all his personal interests for his now famous four and a half years of successful endeavor to save Belgium from starvation. It meant the organization and enormous undertaking of the Commission for Relief in Belgium.

Mr. Hoover was already conspicuous in relief work, as he had been the organizer and head of a special organization called the American Relief Committee, created in London for the purpose of assisting and repatriating the 150,000 American citizens who found themselves stranded in Europe at the outbreak of the war. His sympathetic

and successful work in looking after the needs of these stranded Americans recommended him as the logical head for the new and greater philanthropic undertaking. He was asked, therefore, by Ambassador Page and the Belgian authorities to organize and begin immediately the work of the Commission.

### THE ORGANIZATION OF THE COMMISSION FOR RELIEF IN BELGIUM.

This was far from being a simple task; an account of the diplomatic negotiations alone would require more pages than those which can be given to this whole article. In addition there were the arrangements for financing the work, for the sufficient and safe transportation overseas and through Holland, for coöperation with the internal Belgian relief committees, and for the full protection from German seizure or interference of the food inside the occupied territory. The principal things quickly effected by Mr. Hoover and his associates, however, may be summed up as follows: first, a formal organization of the Commission as a strictly neutral body, under the chairmanship of Mr. Hoover and the patronage of the American, Spanish, and Dutch ministers in Brussels, the American minister in the Hague, and the American, Spanish, and Dutch ambassadors in London and Berlin, with offices in New York, London, Rotterdam, and Brussels, staffed by Americans; second, formal permission by the Allied and German governments for the continuing importation of large quantities of foodstuffs and clothing from England, America, and elsewhere through Holland into Belgium, with guarantees of unmolested passage over the sea of the food ships of the Commission displaying the Commission's special flag and markings; third, guarantees of the non-requisitioning of any of these supplies by the Germans; fourth, a regular monthly subvention from the English and French governments to pay for part of the supplies (these subventions were made entirely by the United States government after it came into the war); for the rest of the money needed, namely, that for the purely benevolent supplying of the



#### PACKING SHOES FOR BELGIUM IN THE COMMISSION WAREHOUSE

Belgium produces little leather and when imports were cut off there was great need of foot wear of all sizes. The Commission asked for both new and partly worn shoes. The donations were sent to the Commission warehouses in Newark and carefully examined. Those which could do any service were packed and sent across the ocean.



#### PACKING CLOTHING IN THE WAREHOUSE AT NEWARK

The request for clothing for the Belgians brought ready response, and hundreds of thousands of excellent garments were sent, many practically as good as new. Some thoughtless people, however, sent evening dresses and various items of discarded finery which were worse than useless. The garments were examined and sorted in the warehouse at Newark and those of any value were carefully packed.

All pictures by Courtesy of Commission for Relief in Belgium.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

destitute Belgians with sufficient food to keep them alive, the Commission was to appeal to the charity of the world.

**THE COMMISSION GRADUALLY ASSUMED CERTAIN DIPLOMATIC FUNCTIONS.**

All these required diplomatic discussion and action, which continued through the four years and a half of the Commission's work, and a constant

ted in our expectations—a major crisis once a month and a minor crisis once a week.

As the work progressed the attitude of the Allied governments became more and more clear-cut as to the guarantees they demanded that the Commission should secure from the German government. As there could be no diplomatic negotiations between the



**THE ROTTERDAM OFFICE OF THE COMMISSION**

The offices of the Commission in Rotterdam were in this building. It soon outgrew these rather narrow quarters, and some temporary buildings were constructed to house the overflow. To this modest building came letters, telegrams, and documents from every part of the world. The Commission was in one aspect of its work an immense trading corporation.

readjustment and wise handling of financial matters made necessary by the ever-increasing cost of food and transportation and the increasing need of the Belgians, to whose numbers were added early in 1915, all the people in occupied Northern France. The Commission had also constant difficulty in its relations with the German military and quasi-civil authorities in Belgium and France. Indeed, there was never a moment in the whole history of the Commission when it had not to face pressing and serious problems and difficulties connected with its work. We expected—and were rarely disappoint-

warring countries, the necessities of the case compelled the Commission to be the diplomatic go-between, and it became practically, although not nominally, endowed with a certain diplomatic standing of its own. The "passports," or personal certificates carried by its members, had a large validity at borders and inside of Belgium, Holland, England, and France.

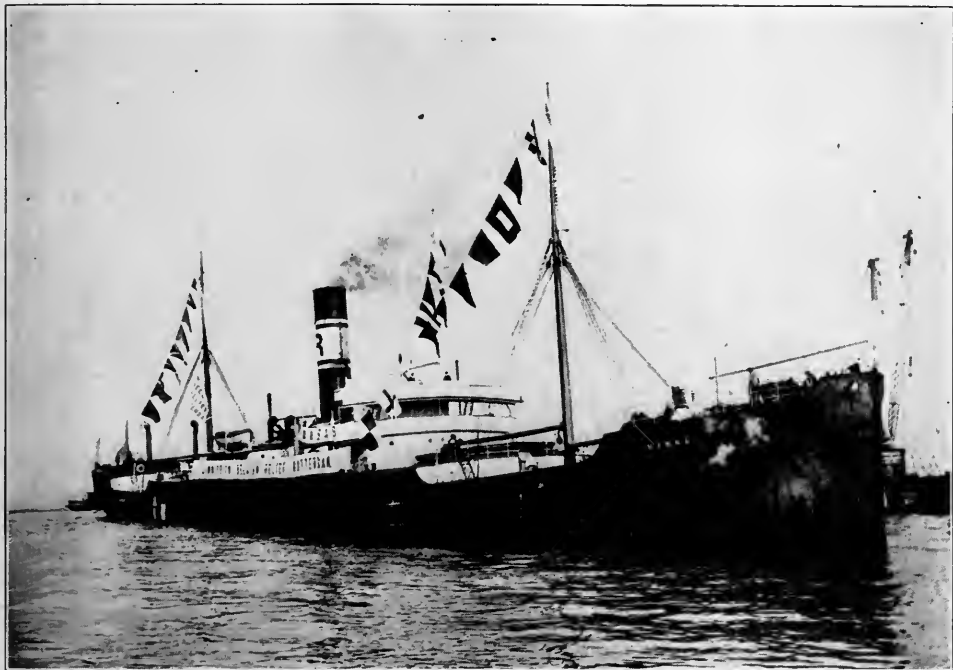
**THE ALLIED GOVERNMENTS REQUIRE CERTAIN GUARANTEES.**

The special pressure of the Allied governments on the Commission grew out of the attitude of the British Admiralty. The Admiralty was doing

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

its best to make more and more effective its blockade of Germany. It demanded that not only should the Commission have guarantees, and see that they were lived up to, that the Germans would take none of the imported supplies, but that none of the native grown crops of Belgium should be seized by the Germans either to be

duced in the occupied territory, this to be replaced by the food imported by the Commission. During the period of the actual invasion, and for some time after it, the Germans seized all the food in Belgium and Northern France that they could find, both for use of their armies and also to send into Germany.



ONE OF THE EARLY RELIEF SHIPS ENTERING PORT

The Hannah first crossed in December, 1914, carrying a load of flour contributed largely by the millers of Kansas. Note the pennants, the long banner with red letters along the side and the flag mentioned in the text. The striped balls on the masts were introduced later as the danger from air-craft was not yet important.

sent into Germany for its civilians or to be used by the German forces in the occupied territories. It was bad enough, said the Admiralty, that the Germans should be relieved of the responsibility of feeding the Belgians and French in the occupied territory—a responsibility, by the way, which the Germans would under no circumstances have assumed; they repeatedly declared that the shut-in people would be allowed to starve unless the English would break the blockade and allow the Belgians and French to freely import food—but it was impossible that the Germans should be allowed to use all or even any part of the food pro-

Near the end of January, 1915, therefore, Mr. Hoover was summoned to a meeting with Mr. Lloyd George, then Chancellor of the Exchequer, and other British government officials, and told that the work of the Commission could not go on unless additional guarantees were obtained from the German government assigning to the exclusive use of the Belgians all the grain and meat produced in the occupied territory. After a great struggle the Germans finally gave, in July, the required guarantees. It then became the duty of the Commission and its protecting ministers in Belgium to see that these guarantees were lived up to. It was not

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

easy to hold the Germans to their agreement, for although the chief authorities took a correct attitude and issued the proper orders, there were constant infractions by lesser officials and small groups of soldiers. On the whole, however, it can be said truthfully that practically none of the imported food, from the beginning, and but a very small fraction of the native food, after July 1915, fell into the hands of the Germans.

### **A GERMAN GROUP ALWAYS OPPOSED THE COMMISSION.**

But if there was an element in England that always more or less strongly opposed the work of the Commission, there was an even stronger group in Germany that was always trying to drive the Commission out of Belgium. This group was led by zu Reventlow, the chief of the German jingoes, whose constant cry was: "Kick these American spies out; we have in our hands ten million French and Belgian hostages; say to the Allied governments that these people may eat what food they now have on hand, but that after it is gone they shall not have a morsel unless the blockade is broken and French, Belgians, and Germans alike are allowed to import food from overseas."

This effort of zu Reventlow and his brother jingoes came to a head in August, 1916. On August 3 a great conference was called in Berlin to discuss the whole matter of the relief work in Belgium and Northern France. It was attended by representatives of the General Staff, Governor General von Bising's German government in Belgium, the Foreign Office, the Minister of the Interior, and other government departments especially interested in the matter.

### **THE GERMAN FOES OF THE COMMISSION ARE DEFEATED.**

The Commission had just before this been attempting to get the German authorities in Belgium and North France to permit it to buy and import from Holland certain special foods, especially fats and dairy products, which were badly needed to keep the children in the occupied territory alive

and in growing condition. They were already showing, by a wide-spread retardation in growth and development, the serious effects of having to live on war bread, dried foods, and an insufficiency of protein and special foods adapted to their powers of digestion. As no satisfaction in regard to this request had been obtained from the local German authorities, Mr. Hoover and I went to Berlin to carry personally the Commission's request to the Imperial Government.

We arrived in Berlin just as the great conference, which had been called to settle the fate of all the relief work was meeting. We were not, of course, allowed to attend it but we could work on the outside. The final decision was reached, after bitter debate and a first victory for the jingoes, to allow the Commission's work to go on. We were able, also, to get a reluctant agreement for the importation from Holland of a certain amount of additional food, especially for the 600,000 suffering children of North France.

### **TWO DISTINCT PHASES OF THE COMMISSION'S WORK.**

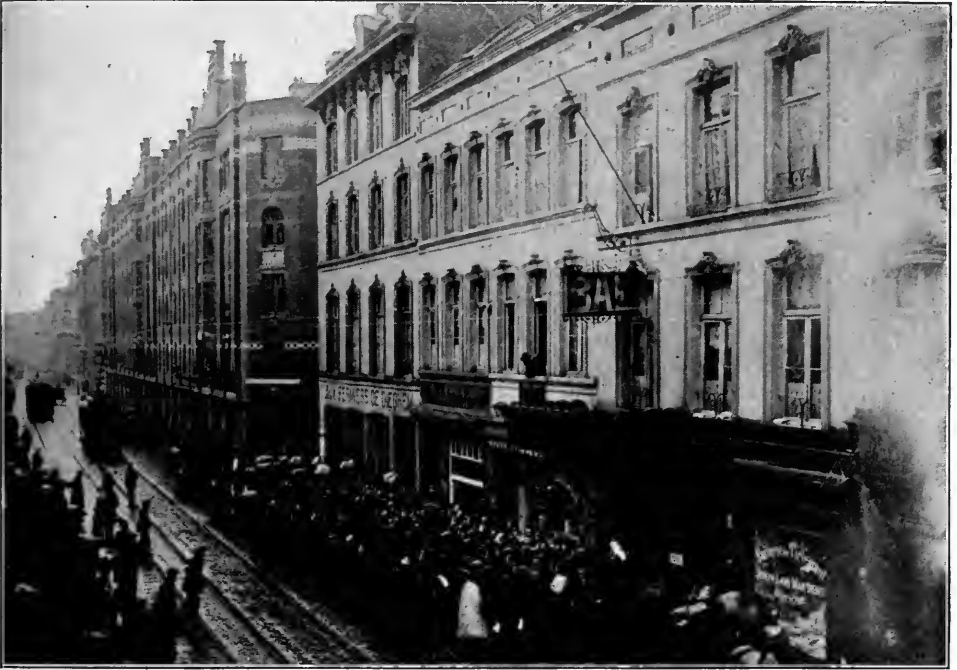
I could go on, for many pages, with illustrations of the constant effort which had to be made by the C.R.B. to maintain its humanitarian work. I must try now to explain some of the methods and details of the actual feeding of the ten million imprisoned people. Before the food could be distributed to the people in Belgium and North France, it had to be found, bought or obtained by gift, and transported from points all over the world, for the Commission went into the primary markets of the world for all the principal kinds of food it imported. And before it could be bought and transported, money had to be obtained.

I have already spoken of the government subventions made by France, England, and America. These were nominally in the form of loans to the Belgian government, but were all put directly in the hands of the Commission, and expended solely by it and under its exclusive responsibility. This money was primarily for the provisioning of the people in Belgium and Nor-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

thern France who could pay, in local money, for it. This local money could not be sent out of the occupied territory and therefore could not be used by the Commission for outside purchases. It practically served as a sort of obligation from these people to the Belgian government. But there were many persons out of work and destitute who had to be fed on a strictly

with it unless the wheat or flour were being brought into the country. Then, second, and more in correspondence with our general understanding of "relief," was the work of providing *secours* directly by charity for the large and ever-increasing number of the actually destitute, who not only had to have the flour brought in but actually given to them.



ONE OF THE SOUP LINES IN BRUSSELS

This former dance hall in the Rue Blaes was transformed into a canteen, to which the hungry came to be fed. There were twenty-one of these in Brussels alone and fifty thousand people of that city depended upon them for their daily food. Similar sights could be seen in every town or village in Belgium.

charity basis. There were, indeed, all the time, two fairly distinct phases of the Commission's work which should be kept clearly in mind in any consideration of the "relief of Belgium." First, there was the continuing *ravitaillement* of the whole country, or bringing in of certain food staples, as flour (or wheat), dried peas and beans, lard and bacon, etc., in quantities which, added to the limited native production would provide a minimum living ration of these necessary staples for *everybody*. No matter how much money, in Belgium, baron this or banker that had, he could get no bread

### THE BRITISH EMPIRE AND THE UNITED STATES GIVE MOST.

In addition to having money for the general *ravitaillement* of the country, which might, however, be paid back some day, it was necessary to have money to be spent for food to be given away. It was for this, the *secours* side of the Commission's undertaking, that it appealed to the charity of the world. Practically all of this charity came from America and the British Empire, although there were gifts of some importance from half a dozen other countries. The total amount of money, food, and clothing thus received was



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of the value of approximately fifty million dollars. This does not include the large gifts made inside of Belgium itself by municipalities, societies, and private individuals. Of these the Commission has no record, but they were many hundred million francs.

### CONTRIBUTIONS OF THE DIFFERENT COUNTRIES COMPARED.

The first public appeals made in October, 1914, by Mr. Hoover on account of the newly organized Commission, and by Minister Whitlock through President Wilson, resulted in the swift organization of Belgian relief committees all over America. Similar public appeals made in England and throughout the British Empire resulted in similar activity. The various British appeals were all consolidated in April, 1915, by the formation of a single great benevolent organization called the "National Committee for Relief in Belgium," with the Lord Mayor of London as active Chairman. This Committee conducted an impressive continuous campaign of propaganda and solicitation of funds, not only in the United Kingdom but, through affiliated organizations, in Canada, Australia, and New Zealand, with the result of obtaining about \$16,000,000 with which to purchase food and clothing for the Belgian destitute. The overseas dominions did quite as well, in proportion to their population, in the race for giving as the English people at home, who were so much nearer the sights and sounds of Belgian distress. In fact, the "record" of all giving to Belgian relief is held by New Zealand, which from its population of 1,160,000 sent \$2,655,000, or a *per capita* average of \$2.29. Australia's charity amounted to \$1.34 *per capita*, Canada's 22 cents, and the United Kingdom's 9 cents. Contributions from the United States, as a whole, amounted to a little over 10 cents *per capita*, although the average for certain states or groups of states was much larger. California, for example, gave over 30 cents *per capita*.

### THE AMERICAN COMMITTEE AT FIRST ASKS FOR FOOD AND CLOTHING.

In the United States the C.R.B. directly managed the campaign for

charity, using its New York office as organizing and receiving headquarters. The work was carried on partly by definitely organized state committees in thirty-seven states, and by scattering local committees in the others: Many of the state committees organized local committees in almost every county and city in their states. Ohio, for example, had some form of local organization in eighty out of the eighty-eight counties in the state, and California had ninety local county and city committees all reporting to the state committee.

The American campaign for help for the Belgians was different from the English one, in that in England and the British dominions the appeal was made almost exclusively for money with which to buy food, while in the United States the call was made, at first, chiefly for outright gifts of food, the Commission offering to serve, in connection with this American benevolence, as a great collecting, transporting and distributing agency. This resulted in the accumulation of large quantities of foodstuffs of many kinds, much of it in small packages. Tens of thousands of these packages were sent over to Belgium, but the cry came back from the Commission's workers there that food in this shape was very difficult to handle in any systematic way. It was already evident that consignments in bulk of a few kinds of staple and concentrated foods were needed. These could be shipped in considerable lots to the various principal distribution centres in Belgium, and thence in lesser lots to the secondary or local centres. There they were handed out on a definite ration plan.

### STATE AND ORGANIZATION FOOD SHIPS ARE SENT.

Some of the states in America, and two or three large organizations, as the Rockefeller Foundation and a group of great millers in the Northwest, recognized from the very beginning the advantage of pooling the individual gifts of food and of buying other food at wholesale, and in bulk, with the money contributed. So there began to cross the ocean as early as December, 1914,





#### UNLOADING A SHIP DIRECTLY INTO A BARGE

Very often the ships were unloaded directly into great barges—some of 1000 tons—which were towed through the main canals into the interior of Belgium. Several of these barges were towed by one of the Commission's thirty-five tugs. Other barges are waiting to be loaded in order that they may start upon their journey.



#### UNLOADING A RELIEF SHIP AT ROTTERDAM

The port of Rotterdam is fitted with every convenience for loading and unloading. The great crane on the right is swinging sixteen sacks of flour to the platform from which they will be taken by the men in the foreground. Another crane on the left is about to lift a similar load from the hold where another crew has placed it within the rope net. Often work went on all night.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

"state food ships" each loaded to capacity with the foodstuffs given outright or bought with the money contributed by the citizens of the respective states. For example, California and Kansas each sent such a food ship, in December. In January and March, 1915, two "Massachusetts Relief Ships," the *Harpalyce* (sunk by torpedo or mine on a later relief voyage) and the *Lynorta*, sailed. Oregon and California together sent the *Cran-*

gium, and the actual distribution of his own relief cargo. His good Samaritan ship was sunk by a German submarine on her return trip but fortunately the philanthropist was not on her.

### OTHER FUNDS RAISED BY VARIOUS GROUPS IN THE UNITED STATES.

In the light of these early experiences the Commission soon changed the form of its appeals and asked that gifts be made chiefly in money to be expended



### AFTER THE CHRISTMAS SHIP HAD COME

A charity which appealed to many was the "Christmas ship" loaded not with the bare necessities of life, but with toys and other trifles, calculated to bring joy to the hearts of children. The great majority of the Belgian children have missed most of the joys of childhood during these hard years of German occupation of their country.

ley in January, 1915, loaded with food and clothing. And several other similar state ships were sent at later dates.

The Rockefeller Foundation's gift of a million dollars was used to load wholly or in part five relief ships, and the "Millers' Belgian Relief" movement, organized and carried through by the editor of the *Northwestern Miller*, Mr. W. C. Edgar, resulted in the contribution of a full cargo of flour valued at over \$450,000 which left Philadelphia for Rotterdam in February, 1915, in the steamer *South Point*. The cargo was accompanied by the organizer of the charity, who saw personally the working of the methods of the C.R.B. inside of Bel-

by the Commission itself for staple foods in wholesale lots in the primary markets of the world, with all the advantages in economy, selection of food most needed and convenience of ultimate distribution, which the constantly perfecting organization of the Commission made possible. Direct gifts of new and second-hand clothing, however, continued to be asked for and obtained in large quantities.

Altogether the American gifts of food, clothing and money for Belgian relief reached a total value of about \$30,000,000. Apart from the amounts contributed by the various states under the stimulus of the work of the organized state and local committees, certain

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

notable special gifts may be briefly mentioned. The Rockefeller Foundation's early gift of a million dollars has already been referred to; later, some additional hundreds of thousands came from this source. The mining engineers of the country, as a special recognition of the mining engineer at the head of the Commission, organized the "Belgian Kiddies, Ltd.," a corporation

thousands of dollars from children and their parents all over the country.

Other notable collections made for the general relief work were those of the American Daughters of the Revolution of \$150,000, the Allied Bazaar of New York of \$115,000, and other bazaars held in San Francisco, Chicago, and Boston. Besides, several large gifts, notably one of \$210,000, another



A CORNER OF A WAREHOUSE IN ROTTERDAM

The Commission's immense warehouses in Rotterdam were busy places. They contained food of many varieties from all parts of the world, clothing, shoes and hundreds of other things. The German administration required that every garment be carefully examined and every scrap of written or printed matter be removed. Failure to observe this rule would have made trouble not only for the Commission but also for the innocent recipient.

for the raising of money to feed 10,000 Belgian children for one year. Their contribution was about a quarter of a million dollars. Other special funds collected and given especially for the feeding of children were one of about \$70,000 from the New York Chamber of Commerce, the Cardinal Gibbons Fund of \$77,000 from the Catholic children of America; the Dollar Christmas Fund of nearly \$100,000, organized by Mr. Henry Clews, and finally the Literary Digest Fund of more than half a million dollars collected by the efforts of Mr. R. J. Cuddihy and the *Literary Digest* in sums from pennies to

of \$200,000, and several of \$100,000, were received from individual donors of large means.

### SOME INTERESTING STORIES OF SACRIFICE AND DEVOTION.

But the great majority of the gifts made to the Commission through state committees or through special fund organizations, or directly to the New York office, were in small sums coming from millions of individuals. And it is a beautiful thing that it has been so. It would be interesting indeed to know just how many of the 105,000,000 inhabitants of the United States have contributed personally to Belgian relief.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

We can never know this with any approach to accuracy, but we do know enough to say that the givers number several millions.

Thousands of incidents, pathetic, inspiring, noble, connected with the giving, clamor for the telling. A number of little girls in a charity home in Cooperstown, N.Y., sent \$1 each month. These little girls were rewarded by a few pennies for any particular excellence in their tasks, making beds, sweeping, etc., and for months they gave enough pennies earned in this way to send this dollar for the children of Belgium.

A little country school near Montara Lighthouse, on the Pacific Coast, gave its playtime to knitting woolen caps and mittens and mufflers, and then the school children brought pennies from their little banks, and jars of fruit and jam, and the girl school teacher put them all, pennies, jam, and mittens, into her one-horse buggy and drove forty miles through a storm to convey these more-than-royal gifts to the California Committee's office in San Francisco.

A druggist in a small town in Indiana sent one dollar a week for more than two years; a country grocer sent, each week, a fixed percentage of his profits; a man without money, but with a gold watch left as a family heirloom, sent it in to be sold for the feeding of a Belgian family.

### **P**ATHETIC AND AMUSING INCIDENTS IN THE DAY'S WORK.

Over in Rotterdam and in Belgium, too, we had our glimpses of the incidents of giving. Three fascinating old-fashioned wedding dresses draped on forms stood for a long time just inside the entrance of the great Antwerp clothing *ouvroir*. These dresses were rescued by Mme. Osterrieth from the cases of used clothing that came from America. She did not let them go to the benches to be torn apart and made over, but kept them intact to speak their message of sympathy to everyone who saw them, and especially to the eight hundred saved women and girls who found employment in the *ouvroir*, in working over the masses of gift

clothing, new and old, that went to the share of Antwerp.

In the pockets of many of the garments sent over were found messages of sympathy and cheer. Other messages admonished the finders to see in these gifts the hand of God, and to "get right with Him." In the pocket of a fancy waistcoat was a quarter, wrapped in a bit of paper, on which was written: "Have a drink with me. Good luck!" In many of the parcels were English Bibles, the good souls who sent them not realizing that few Belgians can read English. In fact, the enclosing of messages and books caused us much trouble, for the Germans allowed no scrap of paper, printed or written, to enter Belgium uncensored. We later had to unpack all the clothing in Rotterdam and go through it carefully to remove all notes and books.

Volumes would not contain all the incidents, but a page of the incidents speaks volumes. Tears and smiles and heart thrills and thanksgiving for the revelation of the human love of humanity in these terrible days of a depressing pessimism. The giving was so worth while; worth while to Belgium, saved from starvation of the body; worth while to America, saved from starvation of the soul.

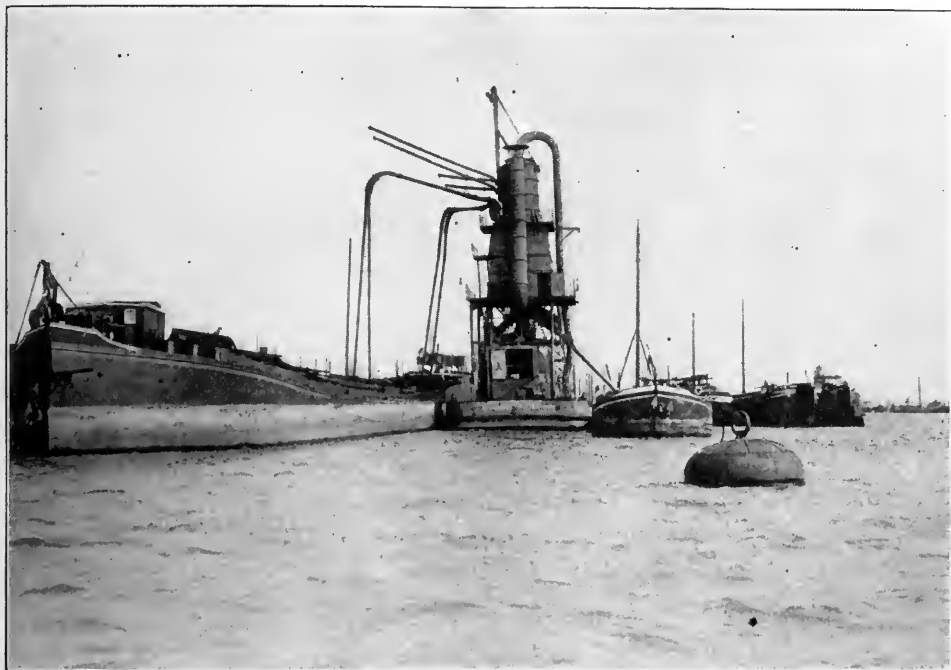
### **T**HE SOURCE OF SUPPLIES FOR BELGIAN RELIEF.

Practically all of the food for imprisoned Belgium and North France was transported across the ocean, some of it even across oceans. Rice from Rangoon, corn from Argentina, beans from Manchuria, wheat and meat and fats from America; and all, with the other things of the regular programme, such as sugar, condensed milk, coffee and cocoa, salt, salad oil, yeast, dried fish, etc., in great quantities, were brought across wide oceans, through the dangerous mine-strewn Channel, and landed safely and regularly in Rotterdam, to be there speedily transferred from ocean vessels into canal boats and urged on into Belgium and Northern France, and from these taken again by railroad cars and horse-drawn carts to the communal warehouses and soup kitchens; and always and ever,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

through all the months, to get there *in time*—these were the buying and transporting and distributing problems of the Commission. One hundred thousand tons a month from the world over in great shiploads to Rotterdam; one hundred thousand tons a month thence in ever more and more divided quantities to the province and district storehouses, to the regional storehouses

a house flag 12 by 15 feet; a pair of deck cloths, 12 by 50 feet, stretched across the deck face up, one forward and one aft; and two huge red- and white-striped signal balls, eight feet in diameter, attached at the tops of two masts. The balls and flat deck cloths were for the benefit of airplane pilots; the side cloths, pennants, and house flag were for sea raiders and sub-



**DIVIDING THE LOAD OF A LARGE BARGE**

Much grain was shipped loose, and was transferred to canal boats and barges by means of a grain elevator. Here we see a floating elevator which is sucking up the grain from a large boat and pouring it into one of the smaller barges which will go to some remote village along one of the smaller canals. This was ground at one of the mills controlled by the Commission.

and mills, to the communal centres, and finally to the mouths of the people. And all to be done speedily, regularly, and with the utmost economy; that was the Commission's "job," in which it must not fail.

### **HOW THE BELGIAN RELIEF SHIPS WERE MARKED.**

The C.R.B. overseas ships, of which a fleet of about seventy were under charter, crossed the ocean under their own special flag and markings. Each ship carried a pair of great cloth banners, 9 by 100 feet, stretching along the hull on each side; also two 50-foot pennants flying from the mast head;

marines. All the flags and cloths were white, with the Commission's name or initials (C.R.B.) in great red letters on them.

Of the seven hundred and forty full ship cargoes and fifteen hundred part cargoes of relief food and clothing transported across the sea during the long period of the Commission's labors not more than twenty were totally or partially lost at sea. Most of the losses came from mines, a few from torpedoes fired by German submarines whose commanders either did not or would not recognize the C.R.B. markings displayed by the ships.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### ROTTERDAM ALWAYS A SCENE OF GREAT ACTIVITY.

Once in Rotterdam, the arrived ship became the centre of extreme activity. Time was the essence of all the Belgian relief work. Too often difficulties of overseas transportation meant delays in the arrival of the ships and these delays had to be offset as much as possible by speed in unloading and transshipping the cargoes at Rotterdam into the canal boats by which all the food was carried through Holland and into Belgium and into North France. The Commission had in continuous service a fleet of thirty-five tugs and nearly five hundred canal boats and barges of from 150 to 1000 tons capacity, most of them of 200 to 500 tons.

The Commission's Rotterdam staff made records in that famous harbor; no such speed of handling had been known there in good old Dutch days. Sometimes four or five ships would arrive at once; on June 1, 1916, 31,342 tons of Commission foodstuffs arrived. On a single day in October 1916, 19,557 tons of foodstuffs were started off for Belgium in the canal boats; this meant getting away nearly sixty loaded boats in one day.

### THE CARGOES ARE FIRST LOADED IN STRINGS OF CANAL BOATS.

When loaded and ready for their journey the boats were arranged at Rotterdam in strings for towing. This towage was done chiefly by tugs under charter to the Commission. On certain canals, however, only horse or man towage was allowed, and as the Germans were constantly sweeping the country of horses, the pulling of the boats on these canals was done chiefly by men. From Rotterdam, then, the strings of boats would start over their first or main routes; via the Ghent Canal for Ghent, Bruges, Courtrai, Western Hainaut, Lille, and Valenciennes; via the Antwerp Canal for Antwerp, Brussels, Louvain, or for transshipment at these points to rail for Luxembourg and Northern France (except Lille and Valenciennes); or via the Liège Canal for Hasselt, Liège, Namur and Eastern Hainaut. The shortest distance for any of the boats

to travel from Rotterdam was that to Antwerp, about 88 miles; the longest, that to La Louvière, about 235 miles.

Each canal boat flew a large flag marked "Commission for Relief in Belgium," and its skipper was provided with a special pass issued by the German consulate in Rotterdam providing for the unmolested passage of the boat and cargo to its Belgian or French destination. The hold of each boat was closed and sealed and the cargo consigned to the American representative of the Commission stationed at destination. On arrival of the boat he examined the seals carefully to see that they had not been tampered with, then broke them, and checked off the cargo against bills of lading that had been sent ahead by military post, duplicates having also gone to the C.R.B. head office at Brussels and also being retained in Rotterdam. Every precaution was taken against seizure or robbery of the cargo while under way. The Americans were not allowed to accompany the boats, but otherwise they were allowed to control the boats and cargoes in every way their ingenuity could suggest. They could meet them at almost every point on their journey, and inspect them. In the Brussels office a large chart indicated the position every day of every moving boat.

### DIFFICULTIES ARISING IN THE USE OF THE RAILWAYS.

But as abundant and widely ramifying as are the canals of Belgium they do not reach every town, and use had to be made of the railroads. The railways of Belgium are of two types: first, the regular standard gauge type, with heavy rails, and second, an interesting type of narrow gauge roads, with very light rails and ties, that wander over the land as if they were following cattle trails, and connect almost every small country village with the larger towns on the main railroads. Of course, the Germans had entire control of all these railroads (as they had, for that matter, of the canals) and used them constantly for military purposes. They did not use the canals so much. The distribution of the food supplies by the Commission by rail, therefore,



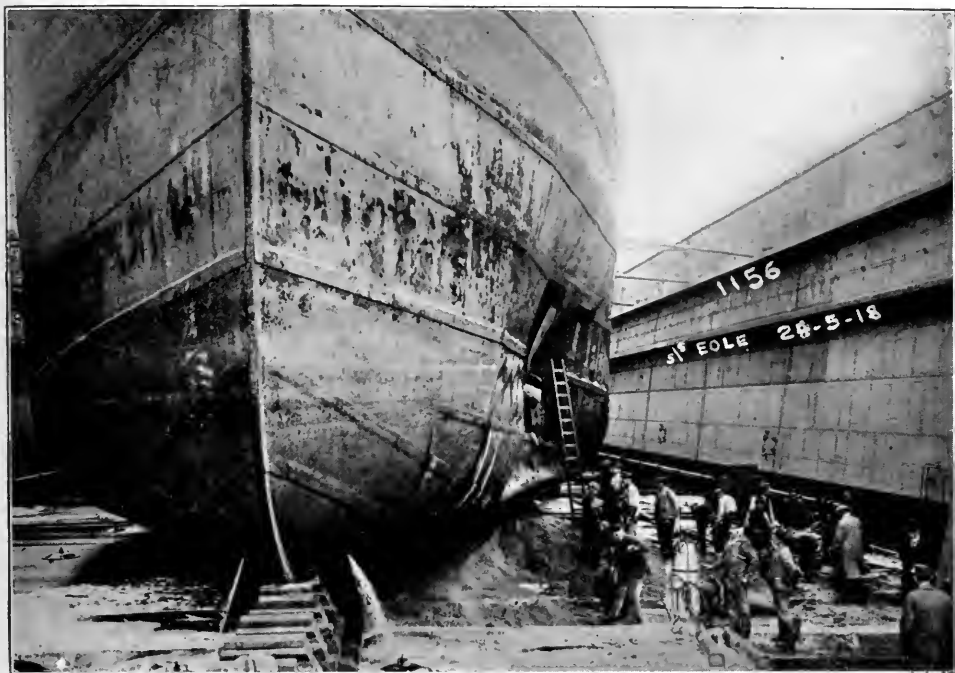
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

suffered much more interruption and delay than its distribution by the water ways, but by a constant struggle with the German authorities the necessary train movements were kept up.

But even the extraordinarily elaborate net-work of railways in Belgium does not reach every town and village, and so a certain amount of distribution by horse-drawn carts had to

warehouses being protected by formal orders of the German Governor-General, as indicated by large placards put on the buildings—there came next the task of getting the food to the actual mouths of the people.

It is this part of the Commission's work which in the popular mind, both in Belgium and in America, was the principal part, and, indeed to many the



ONE OF THE SHIPS WHICH MET A MINE

About twenty cargoes of the Commission's supplies were wholly or partially lost at sea, on account of either mines or torpedoes. This is the ship, Eole, which struck a mine but nevertheless reached port. Some of the cargo is shown on the floor of the dry-dock, though of course it has been damaged by water.

be relied upon. No automotive vehicles were permitted by the Germans to be used in Belgium except their own and a restricted number of passenger automobiles for the necessary movement of the American relief workers. It was only with the greatest difficulty that this cartage could be managed, as the Germans were constantly requisitioning the horses both for their army and to send into Germany for use there.

### THE FOOD FINALLY REACHES THE LOCAL WAREHOUSES.

With the supplies finally distributed to the central and local warehouses all over the country—the stocks in these

only work recognized. But none of it could have been done at all, that is, no food could have found its way to the mouths of the people without all of the elaborate arrangements, organization, and activities of the Commission outside of Belgium. Nevertheless, it is the final actual distribution to the people, the protection of the food from the ever-possible German seizure, the surmounting of the difficulties of carrying on the work in a land of warfare and military control, the scientific rationing, the methods of special charity, and the close interweaving of the relief work with that of the Belgians them-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

selves that make the story of the Commission's work inside of Belgium the most interesting part of the whole account.

### THE PART OF THE BELGIANS IN THE RELIEF WORK.

First, the relations of the Commission and its workers to the Belgian relief organization and the Belgian people must be explained. Although the Belgians could do nothing to help in the outside part of the relief work they could and did take a very large part in the work inside the country. No less than twenty-five thousand Belgians were continuously connected with the enormous labor of the internal distribution of the food and clothing, and these workers were all bound together and controlled by an elaborate nation-wide volunteer organization. At the base of this national relief organization were 3,000 communal committees, one for every commune in the land; above them was a group of regional committees representing groups of neighboring communes; above them the provincial committees, one for each Belgian province, and finally at the top of the whole organization a strong national committee, the *Comité National*, called C. N. for short, just as the American Commission was always called C.R.B.

To define the special functions and position of each of the two parts of the combined relief organization and the general relations to be maintained between them, various formulations of agreement were drafted from time to time. The first written-out general scheme of organization bears date of December, 1914. Before that, had come an all-important meeting in London, in October, 1914, between Mr. Hoover and M. Francqui, the organizing and directing heads of the two groups, at which a general agreement as to fundamentals was reached.

In any complete history of the Commission's work these agreements with our Belgian co-workers must be fully given. No space for that is possible here. But certain essential points of the arrangements must be given in order that the important and delicate

position of the Americans working in Belgium can be in some measure understood.

### THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE BELGIANS AND THE COMMISSION.

I quote from the "general scheme" of December, 1914, which was drafted chiefly to point out the position of the Commission's provincial representatives:

"As the *Comité National* will control its work through ten sub-committees, or *Comités Provinciaux*, each covering a province of Belgium [one province, Brabant, is subdivided for purposes of food administration into two, one being Greater Brussels, and the other all of Brabant province outside of Brussels] and each having its own president and working organization, the Commission for Relief in Belgium proposes to station an authorized delegate (with one or more assistants) in each province, at the point where the principal office of the *Comité Provincial*, with its president, is located. The *Comité National* will also station a delegate or two delegates, as the case may require, at the same office, who will represent the central organization at Brussels.

"The head delegate of the C.R.B., the delegate of the C. N., and the President of the C. P. will form the three principals for the affairs of the relief work in the province.

"But as it has been clearly stipulated that the grain or other merchandise introduced into Belgium by the C.R.B. is under the responsibility of their Excellencies the Ministers of the United States and of Spain, who are the protectors of the Commission, it is essential that the merchandise remain the property of the C.R.B. until the same is distributed to the communes. . . . Therefore, in spite of the fact that the merchandise may be entrusted for handling to the Provincial Committee . . . the delegate of the C.R.B. is still responsible for its safety until it is delivered to the communes."

### THE TASKS OF THE AMERICANS ENGAGED IN THE RELIEF WORK.

As mentioned at the beginning of this account, the total number of Americans representing the C.R.B. inside



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of Belgium was never more than forty-five at one time; the Germans constantly tried to make us get on with even a smaller number, putting twenty-five as a desirable maximum. From this small group there had to be manned the Brussels central office headed by the director for all of Belgium, and a smaller office in the capital of each province. These men in the

in no way contravened the general principles and plans of the Commission regarding fair distribution; they visited all directions of the Provincial Committee as to milling, storage, distribution, etc.; they checked up all shipments coming into their provinces to see that they corresponded as to weight, quantity, and character with the advices from Rotterdam; kept the Brus-



**A GROUP OF AMERICANS WORKING FOR THE COMMISSION**

This is a typical group of relief workers, though perhaps a little older than the average. It includes three men from New York, and one each from Massachusetts, Tennessee, Ohio and Virginia. Some were Rhodes Scholars, and others professional or business men, who gave up their own occupations to assist in the task of feeding Belgium.

© Underwood & Underwood.

province were known as provincial delegates, and were the ones who came into most intimate personal contact with the people, as they were constantly moving over their respective provinces visiting the regional and communal Belgian committees, the storehouses, kitchens, and soup-lines. The actual manual distribution of the supplies was done by the Belgian committees with their thousands of helpers, but the American provincial delegates were responsible for the protection of the supplies from possible German seizure, and for seeing that all plans proposed by the Provincial Committee

sels office informed constantly and in utmost detail of all receipts, movements, and distribution of supplies in each province; they took regular monthly inventories of all stocks on hand, made representation of all general and special needs of each region and people, saw to an efficient inspection and control of the use and abuse of the food, even to the degree, if necessary, of using their power of absolute prohibition of movement of the food stocks under their control to correct abuses.

These are the bald and meagre statements of the responsibility, duties, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

activities of the American delegates in Belgium. But no statement could ever be drafted that would set out in full what their work and behavior were to be, what delicacies of situation were to be met, what discretion was to be exercised, what kind of extraordinary experience they were to meet and meet acceptably for the sake of maintenance of the lives of Belgian men, women, and children, and the honor of American humanitarian achievement.

### PERSONALITY OF THE MEN ENGAGED IN THE WORK.

Let us turn to some details of the work, to some of its difficulties, and some of its successes and satisfactions. But, first, just a few things concerning the *personnel* of the Commission.

Who were these young—and a few older—Americans? How were they selected? What did their personality mean to the Belgians, and what did Belgium mean to them?

The total roll of these men, successive resident directors, assistant directors, head delegates, assistants and all, makes a list of hardly two hundred. Other men of the Commission were busy; did as faithful and as important work in the Rotterdam, London, and New York offices; but it was the men privileged to work inside of Belgium and France who had the personal experiences they can tell to their wondering children in future years; who lived something that already seems almost unreal, almost impossible.

The few older men of the Commission—from among whom most of the directors and executive officers of the New York, London, Brussels, and Rotterdam offices were drawn, although some took their places among the younger men as province delegates—were successful engineers (Mr. Hoover drew his volunteers first of all from his engineer friends), half a dozen college professors, a lawyer of large practice, two clergymen of practical turn of mind, a well-known explorer and sportsman, a dietetic expert, an architect of high repute, a magazine editor, a famous forester, a stockbroker, a consul, an expert in children's diseases; altogether a wholesome variety!

### YOUNG COLLEGE MEN MAKE UP THE MAJORITY.

But the majority of the men, especially those who worked in Belgium and the occupied portion of France, were young men, representatives of an American type. They came from forty-five different American colleges and universities, more from Harvard than any other one. Twenty of them had been selected by their colleges and their states to be Rhodes Scholars in Oxford University. These twenty had been thus already selected on a basis of youthful scholarship, energy, general capacity, and good-fellowship. They had not, however, been selected on a basis of experience in business or—least of all—relief work. And the remainder of the two hundred were selected by us on about the same general grounds, adding the more special one of a usable, or buddingly usable, knowledge of the French language. Several could read German, a few speak it. That was also useful. But the Commission asked primarily for intelligence, character, youthful vigor, and enthusiasm, rather than specific attainments or experience as qualifications in the workers needed.

Two things most of these men had that I have not mentioned. But they were two important things, namely idealism and a sense of humor; a supporting idealism and a saving sense of humor. Curtis, the first of our Brussels-Holland couriers, needed these qualities to stand his seventeen arrests by German sentries, and Warren his three days in a military prison at Antwerp, and yet keep unconcerned on with their work. Curtis' sense of humor was fortunately well-matched by a German's—a single German's—when the young American, a little annoyed by an unusual number of stoppages on the road one day, handed his pass to the tenth man who demanded it with a swift, highly uncomplimentary personal allusion to his tormentor, in pure Americanese. The sentry handed it back with a dry, "Much obliged, the same to you." He was probably a formerly-of-Chicago reservist who knew the argot.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE DAILY RATIONS ISSUED TO THE BELGIAN PEOPLE.

The miscellaneous food was distributed from the communal warehouses and the bread from bakeries under complete control of the relief organization on a rationing system which provided for each head of a Belgian family or unattached individual having two ra-

who had no money. The number dependent on outright charity naturally increased during the period of the occupation, until at the time of the withdrawal of the American workers in April, 1917, 3,000,000 of the 7,300,000 Belgians imprisoned in their country were receiving all or the greater part of their daily food on charity.



THE MESSAGERIE VAN GAND IN ANTWERP

There was little traffic in or out of Antwerp, during the war, and this forwarding station was transformed into a great kitchen. Here soup for 50,000 destitute was made daily. The signs which indicated the destination of the goods in happier days still remain.

tion cards, one for bread exclusively and the other for the various staples, as bacon, lard, rice, dried peas and beans, and condensed milk, imported by the C.R.B. Certain local supplies as potatoes and meat (when available at all) were also rationed, while miscellaneous vegetables and fruit were mostly left to the open markets after the communal committees had acquired what was necessary for the communal kitchen and soup-lines, which provided the destitute who otherwise could have obtained none of them. The ration cards limited the amounts that could be obtained of the rationed supplies, whether they were directly paid for by those who had money to buy them or received as charity by those

The daily ration varied from time to time depending on the kinds and amounts of food available but it ran on the average about as follows: war bread (made from wheat milled in mills, entirely controlled by the relief organization, at from 80% to 97%, mixed with a varying percentage of corn-flour, rye-flour, barley-flour, and rice-flour), 12 ounces; bacon, trifle over 1 ounce; lard, about  $\frac{2}{3}$  ounce; rice,  $2\frac{1}{8}$  ounces; dried beans and peas,  $1\frac{2}{3}$  ounces; cerealine (crushed corn),  $1\frac{2}{3}$  ounces; potatoes,  $10\frac{1}{2}$  ounces; brown sugar, trifle over  $\frac{2}{3}$  ounce; condensed milk, varying small amount. This ration is capable of producing about 2,000 utilizable calories (or energy units). Physiologists agree that

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

3,000 calories are desirable to keep a person engaged in light work in a good condition of health and strength. But most of the Belgians had no work to do.

### EXCEPTIONS MADE TO THE REGULAR RATION FOR SPECIAL REASONS.

Certain additions to the ration were made for the few "heavy workers" (those in the coal mines, for example), and modifications of it were made for

individual properly provided with a soup-card obtained once a day a pint of thick soup and ten ounces of bread, with some added food, enough for a day's maintenance.

The most conspicuous revelation of the degree to which a great portion of the Belgian people was dependent on outright charity for their daily bread was that afforded by the long "soup-



A PRIMARY SCHOOL AIDED BY THE COMMISSION

An important part of the Commission's activity was the attempt to see that every Belgian child received at least one good meal a day. This is a view of a primary school at which the midday meal was furnished by the Commission. There were several thousand of such schools. Evidently some of the children are unaccustomed to the camera.

children who received more milk and sugar, some cocoa, when possible, and less bread and potatoes. The potatoes could rarely be provided up to full ration figure and the rice could sometimes be increased. Those who could pay were able to add some vegetables and fruit, and, rather irregularly, meat. So some had more than 2,000 calories value of food a day but some had less. As the actually destitute had little or no coal or wood with which to do any cooking most of them obtained their food ready cooked at the *soupes* maintained in every commune by the relief organizations. At these *soupes* each

lines" visible in every hamlet and every section of every town and city in the land. Over a million and a half people were standing every day in these lines by the end of 1916. In Antwerp, proud and wealthy sea-port and home of rich Flemish burghers, one-half of the whole population was on the soup-lines in April, 1917.

### THE BABIES AND THE CHILDREN AND THEIR FOOD.

In addition to the systematized general rationing of the whole population and the special care of the destitute by communal kitchens and *soupes*, the relief of Belgium had many special fea-



THE SCHOOL COLONY AT SCHOOTEN, NEAR ANTWERP

The question of the care of the orphans of the war was important. In general these were gathered in "school colonies" under supervision of volunteer workers who looked after them and taught them. This photograph from the Comité Provincial shows one of these colonies with a part of the staff housed in Kasteel "De Wyngaard."



ANOTHER SCHOOL COLONY IN THE SAME NEIGHBORHOOD

This is "School Colony Fordenstein" in the same neighborhood, where some of the orphans of the province were housed. Many owners of country houses offered them to the Comités for this use. This picture, made in winter, shows the children being taken out for necessary exercise. None of the war charities was more deserving than this, undertaken by the Belgians themselves and manned almost exclusively by volunteer workers.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tures; that is, it took various special forms adapted to special needs. Help was extended in special ways to the mutilated soldiers left in the country after the invasion passed on to the west; to distressed special groups as artisans, artists, and professional men and other "ashamed poor" never before dependent on charity and too proud to stand in the soup-lines; to the convents and priests and sisters; to farmers needing help to restore their wrecked buildings so that they might help produce food for the whole people; to young mothers and women about to become mothers, and above all, to the babies and children.

The story of the saving of the children of Belgium is one that in itself needs a whole volume for the telling. There was developed a system of supplementary school meals whereby over a million children of school age had their insufficient home feeding eked out by a simple specially prepared daily meal given in the school room. For weak children and babies, special canteens were established where the little ones got not only special food (milk, cocoa, sugar, etc.,) but also medical attention. In the province of Liège alone there were 111 special charities for children faithfully looked after by 1500 Belgian volunteer-workers who gave all their time, day after day, throughout the whole long period of the occupation. In Brussels the famous "Little Bees" took care of practically every child needing help in the whole great city of nearly a million inhabitants. Countesses and working girls labored side by side as equals in this democratizing work of charity and love.

### WHAT AN AMERICAN WOMAN THOUGHT OF THE BELGIAN WOMEN.

But it is impossible to tell the whole story. As my wife, Charlotte Kellogg, who saw it all as the only woman member of the Commission inside Belgium, writes in her book, "The Women of Belgium, Turning Tragedy into Triumph":

"The story of Belgium will never be told. That is the word that passes oftenest between us. No one will ever

by word of mouth or in writing give it to others in its entirety or even tell what he himself has seen and felt. The longer he stays the more he realizes the futility of any such attempt, the more he becomes dumb. It requires a brush and color beyond our grasp; it must be the picture of the soul of a nation in travail, of the lifting of the strong to save the weak."

### GREATER DIFFICULTIES ENCOUNTERED IN NORTHERN FRANCE.

But this account would be entirely too incomplete without making some brief special reference to the work of the Commission in occupied France, where it had on its shoulders an even heavier burden, relatively, than in Belgium. There were, to be true, only one and three-quarter million people shut up in occupied France compared with the seven and a half million in occupied Belgium, but it was a far more helpless population. Fully one-fourth of all the people in North France escaped from it as the German invaders entered it. And this one-fourth included a particularly important part of the whole population, namely, practically all of the men capable of bearing arms, and in addition many of the better-to-do families. There were only left, thus, the old men, the women and children, and all the sick and physically infirm.

Moreover this unfortunate population was nearer the fighting lines; it was in the zone occupied by active armies and was under an exclusively military control. The prohibitions as to circulation of the people and movements of any supplies from country to town were more rigorous. Also the Germans would never make the same guarantees for not taking local food-stuffs that they made for Belgium, although, of course, they guaranteed all imported foodstuffs from any seizure. And the people were made to work the fields for the Germans instead of for themselves. So there was much less local food in North France than in Belgium to eke out the limited relief ration of imported food. Such conditions plainly increased the problems and added to the difficulties which had to be met.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### ALL RELIEF IN FRANCE HAMPERED BY THE MILITARY AUTHORITIES.

The Commission also was much more hampered in its work of distribution and inspection. Just as in Belgium, there was an elaborate relief organization of the native people, with a communal, regional, and district committee, all under a general head committee, which was commonly known as the

live all the time with his officer; sleep in his quarters; dine at his table. Theoretically, indeed, the C.R.B. men in North France were never to be out of sight or hearing of their proper escort officers. They could never meet with the French committees nor talk with any of the French people except in his presence. We called these officers our "nurses."



THE CHILDREN OF A "SCHOOL COLONY"

There is pathos in this picture of the children of "Schoolkolonie Berchem," housed in "Kasteel Boeckenberg" at Deurne. The adults are all Belgian volunteer workers who strove to prevent the next generation of Belgians from becoming dwarfed and stunted through lack of care. What the Belgians did for themselves is not fully realized.

*Comité Français* (C.F.). And there were American representatives of the C.R.B. to protect the food and supervise and check up its distribution. But the Germans allowed us to have but one man in each of the six districts in which occupied France was divided for relief purposes, with an additional chief representative who had to live at the Great Headquarters of the German General Staff at Charleville. These Americans had no motor cars of their own as in Belgium; they could travel only in German military cars, always in company with a German escort officer. In fact, each American had to

Of the one and three-quarter million French people in the occupied territory, at least one million were wholly dependent on charity for their daily bread. The ration basis on which the food was distributed differed a little from that in Belgium, especially in the addition to it of some sugar, and in the quality of the war-bread, which was coarser and poorer because of the addition to the imported flour used in making it of some flour provided by the Germans as a small offset to their seizure of the whole native grain crop. This flour, to the extent of about 100 grams a day, was theoretically turned

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

back from the French crop for the benefit of the French people, but in reality it came from Germany and was composed of a mixture of rye, potato meal, and other indeterminate things, and was very poor. The French wheat was reserved for German use.

### THE DIFFICULT POSITION OF THE AMERICAN REPRESENTATIVES.

There was more suffering and more illness among the shut-in French than among the Belgians. The death rate in Lille, for example, increased by nearly 50%. And the nervous strain on the C.R.B. representatives in occupied France, because of the sad condition of the people, the rigors of the military control, and the added difficulties of the work, was severe. As chief representative of the Commission in North France for several months, living closely tied to my German escort officer at Great Headquarters, I became more used up than in all the other months of my service with the Commission. It was an experience of absorbing interest but constant strain.

The German escort officers were not all brutes—although some were. But they were all a part of a brutal military machine, and the American representatives in North France suffered from the necessity to repress any expression of their feelings. In Belgium they could boil over occasionally to discreet Belgian ears. Each American in North France, on assuming his position as Commission representative, took upon himself, according to the German requirements, "the obligation to carry out his duties in such a manner as may be expected from an honorable citizen of a neutral state." And it is gratifying to be able to record that in the whole history of the Commission's service in North France, no single complaint of dishonorable or unneutral conduct on the part of its representatives was made by the German military authorities. As in Belgium, when the Americans had to go out in April, 1917, their places were taken by Dutch and Spanish delegates. It may be added that when the Americans did go out, it was the men who had served in North France who made the swiftest rush to

enlist in one of the armies fighting the Germans!

### FEED THE PEOPLE REGULARLY, NO MATTER THE COST.

To give further detail of this work would be but repetition. There was a larger element of excitement and danger in the work of the Commission men in North France because some of their activity was carried on within the danger limits of long distance shell-fire and aerial bombers. For that very reason there was a strong desire on the part of most of the young men of the Commission Staff to be assigned to the work in France. But their duties and work were essentially the same as in Belgium. They had, as we all had, a new Ten Commandments all concentrated in one, to obey. That was: "Feed the People Regularly, no matter the cost in energy, in compromise, in money; no matter the difficulty or the sore discouragement; keep the food coming in; keep it going to the mouths of the people."

That is what the Commission did. Despite all difficulties, diplomatic and material, interruptions in the overseas transportation, including a most serious one just after the Germans instituted their unrestricted submarine warfare, despite trouble in the canals—beginning in February, 1917, all the canals in Holland and Belgium were ice-bound for forty days and the whole distribution system had to be altered swiftly from water transport to a badly limited rail transport—despite constant interference and harassing trouble-making by the Germans, and in the face of a possible breaking up of the whole relief work any day, no commune in all the 5,000 in the French and Belgian occupied territory missed for a single day its ration of bread and soup, from the time the Americans went in until they went out. That is the tangible evidence of the service to humanity that the Commission for Relief in Belgium rendered. The Commission was sometimes called by the unthinking just a sublimated great grocery store. But its members are not called grocers by the French and Belgians; they are called saviours.





Belgian Soldiers in a Wrecked Village

## CHAPTER LIV

# Prussian Maps and Imperial Plans

## HOW THE GERMANS EXPECTED TO REMAKE THE MAP OF THE WORLD

BY SIR WILLIAM M. RAMSAY

A FAVORITE ornament in Berlin restaurants just before the war was a map showing the world of the future, as it was to be when it had been reorganized by the Prussian victory. I am not sure that this map was displayed so often in the fashionable restaurants which tourists and foreigners would frequent, but it was to be seen in those which were thronged by the resident population of Berlin.

**WHAT THE NEW GERMANY WAS TO INCLUDE.**

It is worth while to compare the ideas expressed six years before Armageddon in the Prussian after-the-war map with the situation during the war and to examine how far they were realized. The comparison will also give some solid ground for estimating the German plans. The ideas of the map were those on which every child throughout Germany was trained; these were the natural and lawful claims on which children, as they grew up, were to insist.

On this map Germany, united in one country with Austria, extended from the English Channel to the Black Sea, the Aegean Sea, and the Adriatic. Belgium, the Netherlands, Denmark, all the Balkan countries except a small Greece, and the whole of Turkey in Europe with Constantinople, were

included in Austro-Germany. Most of France and a large part of Western Russia were also incorporated in the great Central Empire. Havre, Dieppe, Boulogne, and Calais, on the north, with the whole of the Seine valley and most of the Rhone valley, had been taken in. Switzerland and Italy remained independent; but the Central Empire encircled Switzerland on all sides, except the Italian frontier. The whole of "German Russia," the parts of Western Russia where Germans are more or less numerous, had been added to the German dominions.

**GERMAN CONTEMPT FOR FRENCH MILITARY POWER.**

The map gave some clue to the way in which this growth was to be accomplished. Obviously, it was understood that France had been conquered, and reduced to a tiny State along the Atlantic Ocean. No one, not even the most confident of Prussians, could have supposed that France would have consented to this dismemberment except as the result of a successful German invasion. The most powerful influence in bringing about the great war was the absolute certainty felt by every German and Austrian that a war against France would be a promenade to the Atlantic coast, in which the German legions would

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

march doing the parade-step, practically without opposition, across Paris to the mouths of the Loire and Garonne. It will be found on examination of history that almost every war has begun through the proud confidence felt by one side that it was able at any moment to beat the other.

### THE INFLUENCE OF THREE SUCCESSFUL PRUSSIAN WARS.

If nations and governments realized the facts of the case, there would be no wars. The few cases in which a nation has gained immediate and complete success have been misfortunes to the world, because they have fostered the hopes of the side which goes into war for the purpose of gaining land and spoils. Unluckily, the Prussian mentality has been determined entirely by success, sudden and complete, in three wars. Now, with an army much larger, stronger, better equipped, and better prepared, Prussia and all Germany expected with undoubting confidence to eat up France at any time that it pleased, leaving only a tiny and helpless scrap of France in the west—not much, if at all, larger than Portugal.

As to Russia, the calculations of the map-makers were very different. They did not delude themselves with the idea that Russia was weak, and that it could be trampled in the dust. But a peaceful arrangement was possible; "German Russia" would be surrendered for an equivalent; and naturally the equivalent was to be given at other people's expense. The map showed Norway, Sweden, and Persia with the whole of Central Asia, colored Russia, and forming one vast mass far surpassing in size European Austro-Germany.

### ONLY GERMANY AND RUSSIA TO BE IMPORTANT.

The world that counted was to consist mainly of the two vast Empires, Germany and Russia. Peaceful penetration was the method that the map-makers relied on in dealing with Russia, which could always be Germanized at leisure; Russia was barbarian and should be trained to German civilization by German culture.

Japan was reckoned with also. It

was greatly enlarged. Its "legitimate desire for expansion" was satisfied with possession of Australia, New Zealand, and all the great islands of Eastern Asia in that part of the Pacific. At the same time the existence of Japan was a menace to Russia, which would be helpless between Japan and Germany if the two latter Empires were in accord.

### GERMAN CONTEMPT FOR THE UNITED STATES.

Most of Africa, including all French and Belgian territory, was taken over by Germany. South Africa remained free and allied. The fate of India I do not remember. The United States was left out of the account. The German opinion, very emphatically expressed in private by many Germans, has always been that the United States, being devoted to peace, do not count in the world, and would submit quietly to being ignored and disregarded. There was a large Germany in South America; but I do not remember its bounds.

The British Empire had shrunk to the two islands of Great Britain and Ireland. Obviously, its sea-power had been transferred to Germany; for the harbors all over the world, on which sea-power rests, had been taken from it. German Africa and South America implied command of the ocean.

### THE GERMAN ATTEMPT TO REALIZE THEIR HOPE.

Such were the ideals to which young Germany had been trained up from childhood long before the war. Now, look how Prussian war plans in 1915 aimed at realizing the ideals, and what success they had.

Prussia seized a part of France, far less than it hoped, and it formed a line of frontier defense which France and Britain were long unable to break, for even the brilliant French victory in Champagne in September failed to break the line definitely, and Prussia retained the summit of the Hill of Tahure. The attempt to realize the ideal on the west was made, and was not successful except in a modest degree; but the idea is clearly seen in the fate of Belgium and French Lorraine.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE GERMAN DESIGNS ON THE RUSSIAN EMPIRE.

So also on the east the attempt was made to seize all "German Russia." As Russia refused to listen to the peace proposals that were made to it time and again, the seizure had to be forcible, and the plan was more successful on this side than on the west. Prussia gained—for the time—practically all that her map-makers intended; only Riga was not gained; and the line of frontier defense was not nearly so strong on this side as on the west.

Still, the plan of campaign is clearly seen. The German Army endeavored to adjust the map to suit the old ideas. It was not quite successful; but men are imperfect, and it is human to fall short of perfection. Next in the plan comes the south-eastern region. Those who called the Serbian enterprise a gambler's desperate last throw now find they were wrong. It was the orderly execution of a plan formed many years ago. It was even less successful than the throw on the west; but it was no mere venture, and it had some success, for it gained part of Serbia and all Bulgaria.

### THE GERMAN PLAN TO COMPENSATE TURKEY.

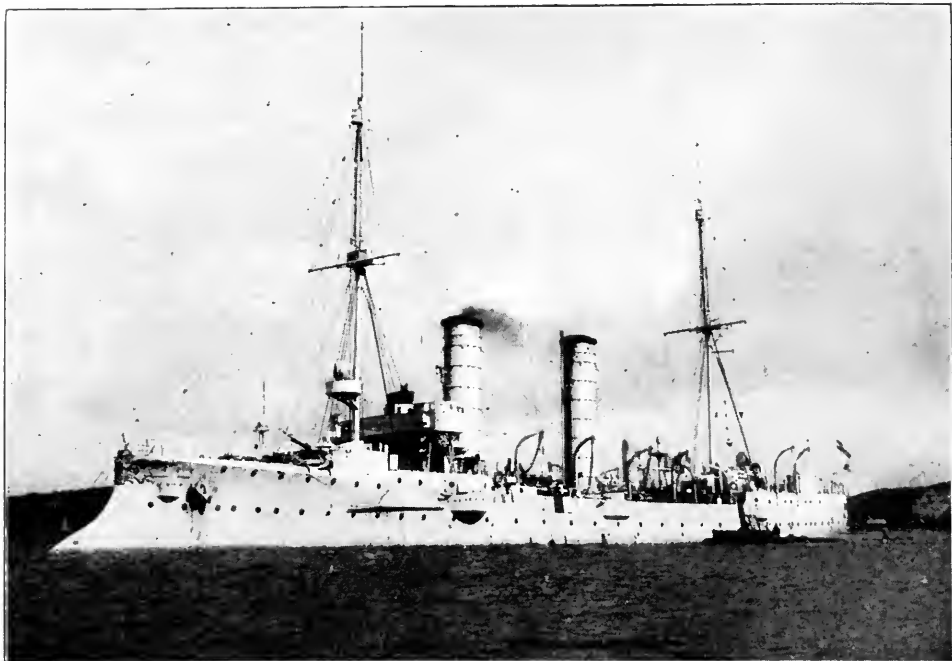
As to the other elements of the plan, the sop to Japan, the giving of Norway and Sweden to Russia, a German Africa and South America, the allied South African State, etc., their execution has been postponed to a distant future; and it is evident in each case that the consent of those various countries has not been gained. While Sweden is, on the whole, pro-German in feeling, it is so because it has been deluded into believing that Germany was its pro-

tector against Russia, and it would not favor the completion of the Prussian plan.

It was never the intention of Prussian map-makers to alienate Turkey, which was to be compensated in Asia and Egypt for the loss of Constantinople. This part of the plan was committed to General von Mackensen. There is vast wealth in Asia Minor, which was for six or eight centuries after Christ the richest region in the world—richer even than Egypt, for the wealth of Egypt was carried away every year to Rome, leaving the enslaved Egyptians poor as before, while the wealth of Asia Minor remained in the country, except for Imperial taxes, because the population was largely free. The great Imperial estates, however, which were peopled by slaves of the Emperor, were ever growing larger in Asia Minor, just as all Egypt except Alexandria was one vast Imperial domain.

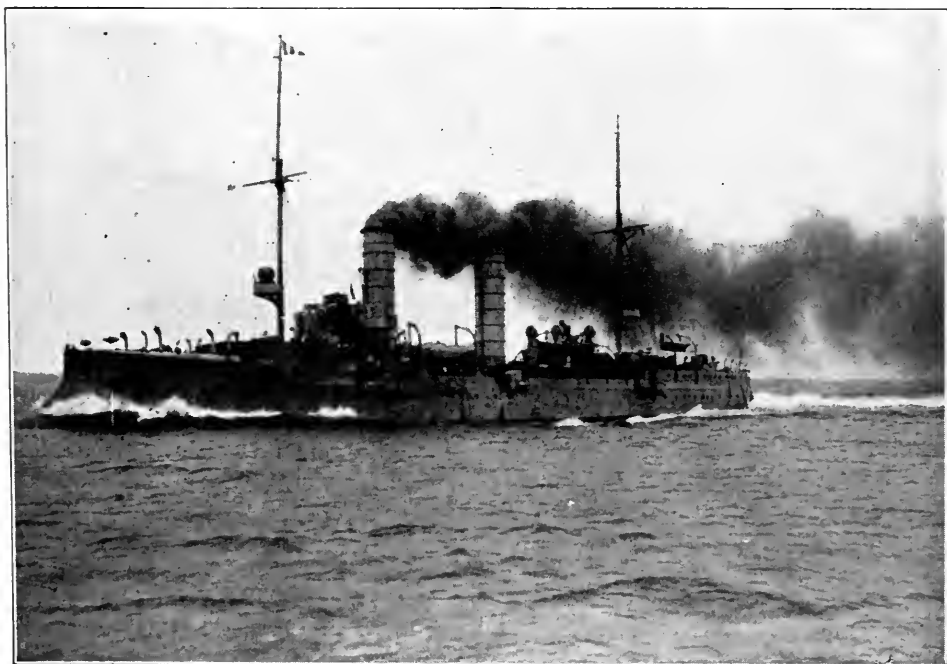
### PLANS TO REVIVE THE PROSPERITY OF ASIA MINOR.

The wealth of Asia Minor is now potential, not actual. The country produces little more than enough to feed the population; but the amount can be immensely increased, and there is much unworked mineral wealth over and above the moderate amount that is exported. Within a year after reaching Constantinople, the Germans, if permitted to remain there as masters, would have stimulated largely the produce of Turkey. Schemes for this purpose had been in process of execution for years; grandiose schemes of irrigation, and new roads and railways; and they needed only time for them to bear fruit.



**THE GERMAN LIGHT CRUISER ARIADNE**

This light cruiser and the Frauenlob below were constructed at nearly the same time (between 1900 and 1902). The Ariadne, lost by gunfire, carried ten 4-inch guns and three torpedo tubes, one of them submerged. The German naval authorities counted upon the efficiency of these submerged torpedo tubes, but they were a disappointment.



**THE FRAUENLOB, ANOTHER LIGHT CRUISER**

British boats of approximately the same tonnage built at about the same time carried lighter armor or perhaps none at all. They had fewer torpedo tubes, or perhaps none at all. On the other hand their indicated horsepower and their speed were much higher and their coal capacity was much greater in order that they might be able to be of service to any part of the world.

Henry Ruschin.



The German Torpedo Boat (Destroyer) V186

## CHAPTER LV

# Blunders of German Naval Policy

## HOW THE ALLIES GAINED ON LAND THROUGH THE ENEMY'S INACTION AT SEA

BY CARLYON BELLAIRS, R.N., M.P.

**I**F an American were asked to write this article, I think he would do so very tersely by saying that the Germans attempted to bite off more than they could chew, and that had Bismarck been in the saddle this would never have happened. Prussia had made all her conquests without naval power. Her statesmen were the keenest students of history in the world. Three facts stand out in history:

1. The economic difficulty of combining vast land armies with the expenditure required for attaining sea supremacy.

2. The jealousy of Great Britain for any Power that attempts to rival her on the sea.

3. That Great Britain's strength resides not merely in the power of her Navy but in the military rivalries of the Continent, and when the latter were absent—in the War of American Independence—Great Britain was virtually defeated.

### THE GERMAN EMPIRE ADOPTS A NAVAL POLICY.

About 1896 a pushing officer of the name of von Tirpitz, from the China station, obtained the ear of the Kaiser. He played upon his desire for aggrandizement, sea-power and empire. He was chosen to effect these things. This could not be done secretly, for

the German people had to be educated so as to grant the appropriations, and the foreign policy had to create situations in which the "tyranny" of British sea-power could be demonstrated. The educational crusade was of the most blatant character, especially in regard to the official Navy League of over one million members. At every point it flew in the face of a famous caution of a famous statesman, the great Chatham, who enjoined an ambassador in words somewhat as follows: "Above all other things, not to mention the British Navy, and so avoid giving cause for every hireling pen in Europe to inveigh against the maritime pretensions of this country." The country which a few years before had coaxed Heligoland out of Great Britain, entered upon a course of policy destined to drive the country into the arms of Germany's chief military rivals.

### ONLY SUCCESS COULD JUSTIFY SUCH A POLICY.

Such a policy could only be justified by success—that is, by the creation of a navy capable of defeating Great Britain on that sea which has never tolerated more than one master. On the land an inferior army can hold up a superior one, and the nation can pursue its manifold activities behind the security thus afforded. Such a situa-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tion is unthinkable on the sea. Consequently, a naval policy which spends several hundreds of millions and misses success is in itself a disastrous failure for a great military nation. This is now well understood by the Germans themselves, for above all other things they worship the military doctrine of concentration. If they had anticipated the possibility of failure on the sea, they would certainly have concentrated the expenditure on increasing the great military machine on shore. It is equally true that until the military rivalries of the Continent had been put down, the drain of expensive colonies abroad was also an extravagance, for transmarine colonies fall like ripe fruit into the hands of the Power with the command of the sea.

### HOW GERMANY MIGHT HAVE GAINED SUCCESS.

In other words, Germany was bound to lose her colonies and the troops and stores in them. It does not follow from this that all naval expenditure as against Britain was folly. In addition, Germany necessarily required such a fleet as could secure her the control of the Baltic against Russia. The point for Germany to have fixed her mind on was that until she had eliminated the drain of military rivalries on the Continent she could not hope to rival Great Britain on the sea. On the other hand, the latter's life-blood is her shipping, and without any of the elements of ostentatious rivalry a war against British shipping could have been prepared, which, in the circumstances actually existing in 1914, would have left Great Britain in a very crippled position. The overweening ambitions of von Tirpitz and the Kaiser were their own undoing, and the British Empire was saved in spite of its rulers.

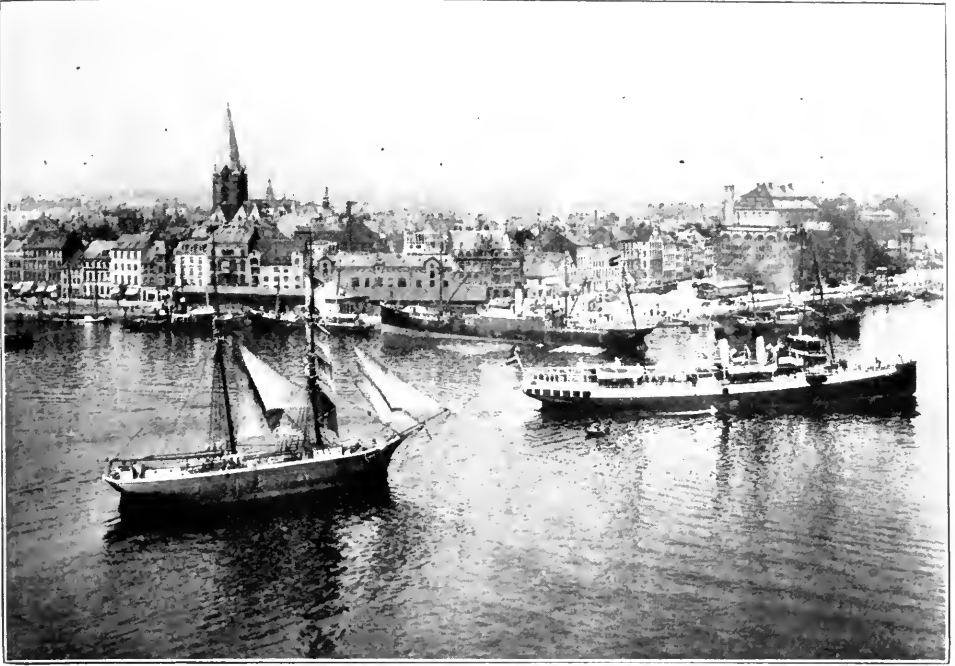
The second great mistake of Germany was in the military mind which fails to understand democratic diplomacy. It failed to understand the shock the invasion of Belgium would be to Great Britain. It interpreted Sir Edward Grey's assurance that the First Fleet was at Portland instead of being at its war base, and that Great Britain had no intention of calling out

the reserves, as a positive proof that she would not go to war, and consequently, von Tirpitz failed to prepare for the eventuality which took Germany by surprise. Both Russia and France realized and strenuously represented that only unmistakable naval and military preparations on Great Britain's part would prevent war. It was a genuine misunderstanding on both sides. Great Britain did not understand military diplomacy, and Germany did not show any comprehension of democratic diplomacy. In any case, Germany's policy being what it was, the war could only have been postponed. The capital result for us is that Germany had not more than ten war vessels and a number of mercantile auxiliaries abroad. She failed to strike, except with mine-fields before the declaration of war, and so missed the use of her favorite stroke, "the bolt from the blue." England, "which is famous for negligence," as Marlborough said, was given time to spread her net and Germany has been enmeshed in it ever since.

### GERMANY FAILED TO TAKE ADVANTAGE OF BRITISH MISTAKES.

There was, however, one direction in which similar tactics would have been equally effective whether Great Britain was in the war or not. The war was at Germany's chosen moment, and she would certainly get possession of the French industrial districts where lay the bulk of the coal and iron supplies. It would be essential in case of a war with France and Russia to invade the trade routes to prevent replacement of supplies while the whole French Navy was busy safeguarding the passage of French troops in the Mediterranean. Against Great Britain the central facts were:

1. Her absolute dependence on her shipping and sea-borne supplies.
2. The 1904 scrapping of cruisers without replacement.
3. The 1904-14 policy of cutting down cruiser strength abroad.
4. The mistaken 1904-09 Admiralty view that small cruisers were of little use, and, consequently, armed merchant vessels still more useless.



THE NEW WAR HARBOR OF KIEL, GERMANY

The War Harbor of Kiel is said to have been the best example of its kind in existence. The city itself was founded in the thirteenth century but was a sleepy old town until galvanized into new life by the development of the German Navy. Besides the Imperial shipyards there were large private establishments.



A GERMAN TORPEDO BOAT DIVISION

The term torpedo boat was retained in the German navy for the larger craft, armed not only with torpedoes but also with rapid fire guns. Such boats are called by other navies torpedo boat destroyers, or more commonly, simply destroyers. The German naval architects were perhaps less successful with this type of craft than with battleships. This uncommon photograph shows a whole division of the turbine-driven craft in a haven.

Ruschin.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### POLICY WHICH MIGHT HAVE BROUGHT SUCCESS.

Had these facts been understood by the German Admiralty, they would have scattered every cruiser and mercantile auxiliary to the distant trade routes during the period of crisis from July 23 to August 4, 1914. As a matter of fact, not a single armed vessel moved outwards. The Emden's successes were really like the bitter fruit of the tree of knowledge, for they taught only of the lost opportunities, which, owing to British negligence, were offered in profusion.

The German military mind seems incapable of any graduations of method suited to adverse circumstances. With a magnificent military machine on shore it made frightfulness an undoubtedly successful policy. It tried the same methods at sea and expected similar results. The hope was futile, for the same reason that all German frightfulness on shore recoiled on her the moment the military machine began to fail. Had Germany been a model of correct conduct in her sea campaign, every neutral would have been nagging furiously at Great Britain and endeavoring to defeat her blockade. Once Germany provoked the United States, under the submarine policy, definitely against her, Great Britain had little difficulty in dealing with the illicit trade by Holland, Denmark and even Sweden.

### SOME OTHER GERMAN MISTAKES IN PREPARATION.

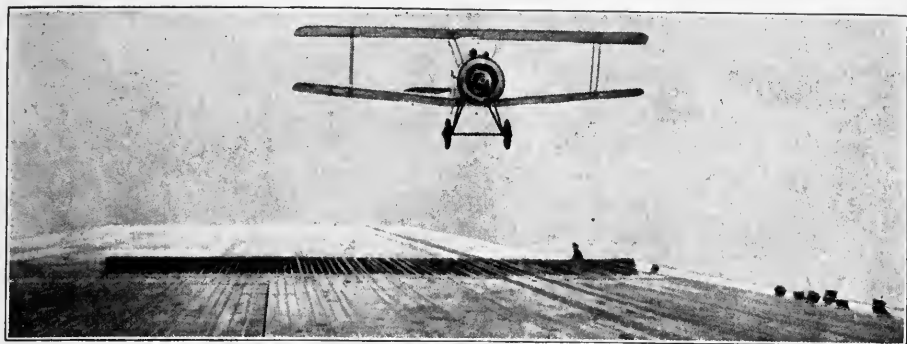
An idea seems to be held in many quarters that the Germans seldom make mistakes in regard to mechanism and this idea has been fostered by Mr. Lloyd George in debates on munitions. As a matter of fact, the preparedness of the Germans in military matters was simply achieved by the profusion of expenditure on all weapons. If they had to choose, as every nation must when not preparing for its own selected moment, they would have been forced to concentrate on what they held to be most vital. This is exactly what they had to do in naval matters. Take the destroyer, one of the most common of naval craft. Great Britain pinned her

faith to the gun, Germany to the torpedo. Indeed, in the destroyer, Great Britain was nearly right on every point so far as design was concerned. In every one of the classes of ships she adopted the correct principle of the heavier armament. Except for the naval mine and the Zeppelin, I do not know of a single case where Germany was right in the adoption of the weapon at the same time that Great Britain was wrong. British mines were of a useless design because the limit was one of cost; and no Zeppelins were built.

### NO SIGN OF A GREAT DIRECTING INTELLIGENCE.

The comparative failure of Germany arose from the simple fact that she had to compromise in regard to naval expenditure so as to get what she thought would give the best results out of a limited expenditure; but even so, we should always remember that these preparations were all directed to reach fruition at Germany's chosen moment. She was again right in her large reserve of guns and in the provision of armaments for merchant vessels and Great Britain was wrong to neglect those things, but on a broad survey it is impossible to find evidence of any great brain directing affairs, and the only conclusion one can come to is that von Tirpitz was simply a dead-weight to German policy; that the German Navy's correct function was to help win domination in Europe, leaving the overthrow of British naval supremacy to a future date, when the industrial resources of Europe or a greatly enlarged Germany could be thrown into the scale. It would have been far wiser to appoint a military leader like von der Goltz rather than von Tirpitz to be head of the German Navy. He would have understood how to subordinate its actions to the object in view, and a statesman like Bismarck, who kept the military element in subjection to the political purposes to be achieved, might even have lulled the suspicions of Great Britain until the time came for dealing with the sea-girt isle which withstood Philip of Spain, Louis XIV. and Napoleon.





Seaplane Arising from Parent Ship.

## CHAPTER LVI

# Later Developments of War in the Air

## THE AIRMEN BECOME INCREASINGLY IMPORTANT FACTORS IN MODERN WARFARE

THE history of war in the air was brought in another volume up to the end of 1915. While the war of movement lasted the function of aircraft was reconnaissance; with the development of trench warfare, the mapping out of the intricate maze of trenches and saps was added. This was done at first by patient drawing and later by aerial photography. Artillery bombardment before infantry attack replaced the former movements of armies, and aircraft, later fitted with wireless, directed the gunners.

### THE PLANES NOW TAKE UP NEW FUNCTIONS IN THE WAR.

With the deadlock both sides reorganized their air-services, remodeled and developed their machines. Swifter and more powerful aeroplanes were produced and another function developed—the destruction of enemy troops and *matériel* by weight-lifting *avions de bombardement* which towards the end of 1915 became effective. The autumn of 1915 saw a spectacular revival in German aeronautics (subsequent to Allied raids on Ludwigshafen and Karlsruhe) and the appearance early in 1916 of the famous Fokker machine. Strife for mastery in the air, so that observation and bomb-dropping could be carried on unhindered, had led to aerial combats and the perfecting of the *avions de chasse*.

### THE STATE OF KNOWLEDGE EARLY IN THE WAR.

The following letter, written from an aviation camp by the famous Boelcke illustrates the tentative character of German aeronautical knowledge early in the war:

“D. June 24, 1915

“Yesterday the Crown Prince of Bavaria inspected our camp. Here we have gathered samples of about everything that our knowledge of aviation has developed; two airplane squadrons and one battleplane division. Both airplane squadrons are equipped with the usual biplanes, only we have an improvement: the wireless, by means of which we direct the fire of our artillery. The battleplane squadron is here because there is a lot to do at present on this front (the West). Among them there are some unique machines, for example: a great battleplane with two motors; it is for three passengers and equipped with a bomb-dropping apparatus. Outside of this, there are other battleplanes with machine guns. They are a little larger than the usual run. Then there are some small Fokker monoplanes, also with machine guns.”

### ACTIVITY IN THE AIR BEFORE THE VERDUN ASSAULT.

With the concentration of troops and *matériel* in the Verdun hinterland early

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

in 1916, the Fokker was greatly used by the enemy to prevent aerial scouting over his lines. Emboldened by success against the French and British airmen, the Germans frequently came over their lines, bombing lines of com-

destroyed a Zeppelin near Brabant-le-Roi. After this preliminary aerial skirmishing, the great German attack on Verdun was launched.

The German aerial arm was furnished with a series of new machines: small, one-seated biplanes (Albatros, Halberstadt, New Fokker and Ago) with a fixed motor 165-175 h.p. and fitted with two stationary machine guns firing through the propellers. These were grouped into chasing squadrons (*Jagdstaffeln*) and were fighting units consisting of eighteen aeroplanes, which flew in groups (*Ketten*) of six each, one serving as a guide (*Kettenführer*). The French had been the first to use a group of fighting machines in the Artois offensive of May 1915, but they were used by them only in defense. They had organized them again for the Verdun attack, but its violence exceeded all expectations and after it began they were numerically unable to perform all the missions required. For a few days the Germans drove the French aeroplanes off the battlefield, forced them from their landing places by cannon, and won the mastery in the air.

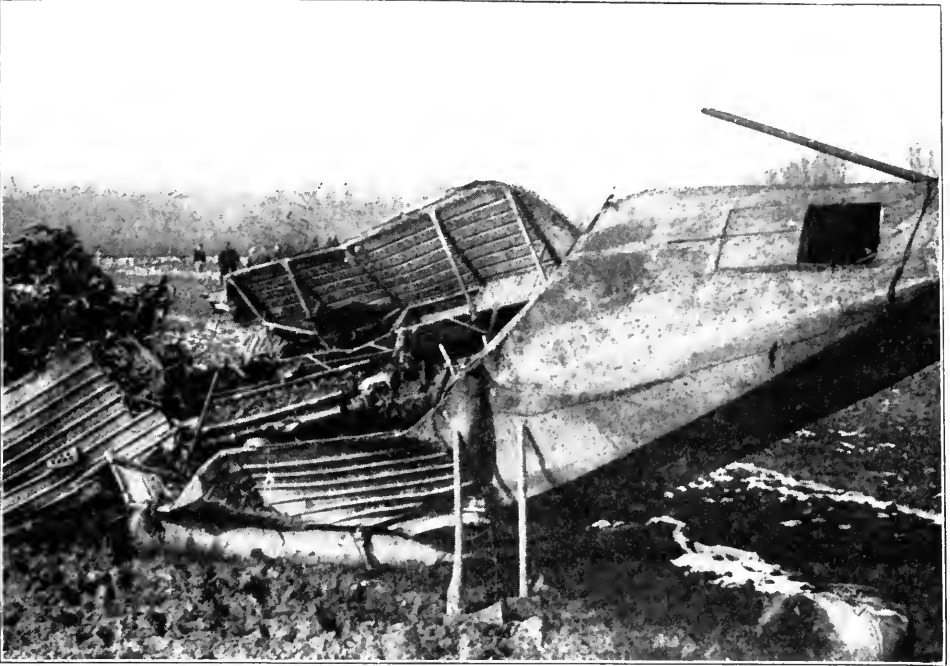
### THE FRENCH REGAIN THE INITIATIVE. AROUND VERDUN.

It was thus until Feb. 25, when General Pétain took command, restored the front and set to work to reconquer the initiative in the air. All available French squadrons were concentrated in this sector, and airmen were ordered to adopt vigorous offensive measures. When new French fighting machines of improved model and 110 h.p. arrived, the lost element was retrieved and aeroplanes engaged in regulating artillery fire and taking photographs could work in safety. Aerial combats occurred daily; the Lafayette *Escadrille* with Thaw and Lufberry and de Laage brought down some eighteen German machines and the French *Cigogne* (Stork) squadron won great distinction in this region, although their greatest "stork," Guynemer, was slightly wounded and compelled to be absent from his friends. To disguise the machines against the Verdun landscape, decorations of large irregularly placed



CAPTAIN LUFBERRY OF THE LAFAYETTE  
SQUADRON

munication and transport between Châlons and Verdun. In spite of enemy superiority, however, French airmen did succeed in getting through and beheld strange activities between Metz and Mézières. On February 21 a vigorous enemy aerial offensive took place; in one place a squadron of fifteen enemy machines was brought to a fight by the French who effected heavy damage on the raiders, and also



#### ZEPPELIN BROUGHT DOWN AT RÉVIGNY

In spite of the millions spent in trials and in bringing them to perfection, and in spite of the speed and power which they possess, Zeppelins are vulnerable: one well-placed shell is enough to destroy a dreadnought of the air. The picture shows all that was left of the car of the Zeppelin at Révigny.



#### SUPER-ZEPPELIN L32 BROUGHT DOWN IN ESSEX

Enormous crowds witnessed this combat. They saw a glow like that of a cigar appear at one of the ends of the Zeppelin. For a few seconds the vast mass of the airship remained aflame at a height of about 8000 feet then plunged swiftly to the ground. All on board perished. Some of the crew were flung out, others remained in her to the end and perished in the blaze which swept them to earth.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

spots of green and red adorned the upper part to correspond to the red clay soil and green of the spring-clad country. The aeroplane was blue underneath that it might disappear against the background of the sky. The German machines were white with black crosses, save that of the celebrated Captain Boelcke, which was black with white crosses, and did deadly execution among the French aviators. He seems to have had the force of a squadron in himself.

Boelcke remarks in a letter from the Verdun front: "The devil is loose on the front. Six Americans are up. I could plainly see the American flag on the fuselage. They were quite bold; came all the way across the front." Boelcke—to his credit be it said—caring nothing for the multiplicity of the "devil" attacked, but this time was driven home and concludes regretfully, "I only saw that the Americans were again flying where I had found them."

### THE HARDEST FIGHTING SHIFTS FROM VERDUN TO THE SOMME.

All through the spring a furious assault beat upon Verdun, but spent its strength in vain. Periodical French counter-attacks burst into flame just as soon as the German first fury was stemmed. "*Passeront pas!*" sang the soldiers, and the fliers in the clouds set the firmament echoing to the cry. Summer wore on and the attacks on Verdun died down; they had failed, failed of their purpose to capture Verdun, failed of their attempt to drive the British into a premature offensive. By July all things were in readiness, however, and the Battle of the Somme began on the flat lands on both sides of the river.

The air forces had a considerable share in this struggle. Forced, as at Verdun, to resist the numerical superiority of the enemy, they ignored adverse weather conditions and performed their functions in spite of them. Preparation had been careful: aerodromes organized and effective concentration made. During the early days of the Somme battle the one-seated aeroplane fighting singly was king of the

air, although conditions changed shortly afterwards and squadron formation became the rule. The French and British were using chiefly the Nieuport for chasing, until the Spad appeared early in September under the pilotage of Guynemer and Corporal Sauvage. These like the Fokkers were armed with a machine gun firing through the propeller. Seated in one, "free to manoeuvre at will, the solitary pilot could plan ruses, hide himself in the light or in the clouds, take advantage of the enemy's blind side, and carry out sudden destructive attacks which are impossible in groups." Later in the campaign the enemy drilled their one-seated or two-seated patrols, trained them in resistance to isolated attack and taught them how to attack the solitary machine which had ventured out beyond its own lines. Then the Allies in defense were compelled to alter their tactics and adopt group formation.

### THE FLYING FORMATION OF A RAIDING SQUADRON.

The flight of the larger migratory birds was taken as a model. The squadron flew in the shape of a great V with the leader at the apex. In a raid the heavier, clumsier bombing planes flew between the prongs of the V, guarded in the rear by another line of fighting planes. The bombers were thus enclosed by a triangle of fighting planes.

Captain Boelcke had been taking an enforced rest in the Balkans; he was brought back to the Somme in September to organize a fighting squadron, and empowered to select from the Flying Service those men who seemed particularly qualified for the service. Among others he chose the brilliant young Baron von Richthofen, who later was to attain the proud total of eighty machines brought down (the Germans counted captive balloons among their score). From letters written by von Richthofen from the Somme we can almost exactly date the formation of the first Boelcke *Jagdstaffel* of the circus type. "Sept. 16, 1916. We were at the butts trying our machine guns. On the previous day we

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

had received our new aeroplanes and the next morning Boelcke was to fly with us. We all were beginners." The following day, "Before we started Boelcke repeated to us his instructions and for the first time we flew as a squadron commanded by the great man whom we followed blindly." And later he says "Frequently we fought really big battles in the air. There were then from forty to sixty English machines, but unfortunately the Germans were often in the minority. Still the Englishman is a smart fellow. That we must allow. Sometimes the Englishmen came down to a very low altitude and visited Boelcke in his quarters upon whom they threw their bombs. They absolutely challenged us to battle and never refused fighting."

### VON RICHTHOFEN'S CIRCUS APPEARS ON THE FIELD.

Boelcke met his death one gusty morning in October, 1916, among the clouds and above those fields which he once called the El Dorado of flying men. Here too Hawker, the gallant British ace, fell a victim to von Richthofen himself. In a spectacular duel which began at 10,000 feet the two airmen manoeuvred downwards in ever-narrowing spirals until only 300 feet above the ground. Hawker, turning his machine into the wind, sought to regain his own lines. Von Richthofen followed and shot Hawker through the head so that he crashed and fell one hundred and fifty feet behind the German lines. Immelman had fallen early in July, shot down by McKubbin.

When von Richthofen had destroyed his sixteenth machine, he was promoted to flight commander, and began a sensational career in a scarlet aeroplane. The members of his squadron followed their individual preference in coloring. A machine might have a red body, blue nose and yellow wings. All were brightly colored, and were nicknamed by the British airmen "Von

Richthofen's Circus" not merely for their gaudy hues, but also for the fact that they were fully equipped with a train in which they could live if necessary and a repairing outfit including mechanics, so that they could be transferred as a unit from point to



CAPTAIN BOELCKE, FAMOUS GERMAN ACE

point of the front as pressure varied. Thus the circus might be operating at Verdun one week, the next north of Arras, and a few days later on the Somme. Whenever it pitched its tents it did its regular squadron performance, and followed it up later in the day by lone-hand raids or strafing flights by two or three. The term "circus" is now an adopted one among airmen, having this distinct meaning.

### PLANES BEGIN TO ACCOMPANY ATTACKING INFANTRY.

The skies above the Somme lands witnessed another development in aerial tactics, the successful use of contact patrols which linked artillery and infantry together. To the British

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

belongs the credit of a trial use of the aeroplane with the infantry, but the French first used it with some success at Verdun. On the Somme it filled a great want. Previous to this battle, liaison between infantry and guns was a very difficult matter. A battalion would go "over the top" and disappear behind the enemy's lines. It might need reinforcements, or it might wish to call for concentrated fire on a dangerous point, but its only means of

timed infantry attacks, but followed up the latter and revealed the situation of the enemy's new lines, his defensive works, his reinforcements and his attempted counter-attacks.

As was natural this low-flying left much to the initiative of solitary airmen, who took full advantage of their freedom and made lone-hand attacks on enemy trenches, dug-outs and machine guns. In the fourth year of the war, when the Allies retreated in the spring and the Germans withdrew in the summer and autumn, trench fighting gave place to more open warfare. During these periods, the daring swallow airman on both sides came into his own as he swooped low upon roads and railways choked with troops and transport. Similarly, in the Bulgarian withdrawal of September and October, 1918, Allied aviators succeeded in creating what was almost panic among men and beasts on the few roads open among the inhospitable mountains. During the battle of Amiens, 1918, British airmen even compelled the surrender of railway trains and, on one occasion, of a huge long-range gun.

### THE ALLIED AIRMAN IN CONTROL OF THE SOMME FRONT.

Throughout the battle of the Somme, the Allied aviators continued all their functions in the air. The French and British were flying every day in all weathers over every point of importance within thirty miles of the front, and sometimes even reaching places seventy miles distant. They were dropping bombs on trains, on ammunition stores, on columns of transport. "They dipped down low to use the machine guns on marching troops. They attacked and destroyed the enemy's observation balloons. They even slid out of the clouds and—audacity could go no further—engaged and routed the anti-aircraft guns themselves." The following extract, taken from the diary of a German lieutenant of the 180th Regiment, is eloquent upon the subject:

"August 25. Today we had a tremendously heavy bombardment which surpassed anything I have ever seen. Who can say if it was our own



CAPTAIN ALBERT BALL, D. S. O., M. C.

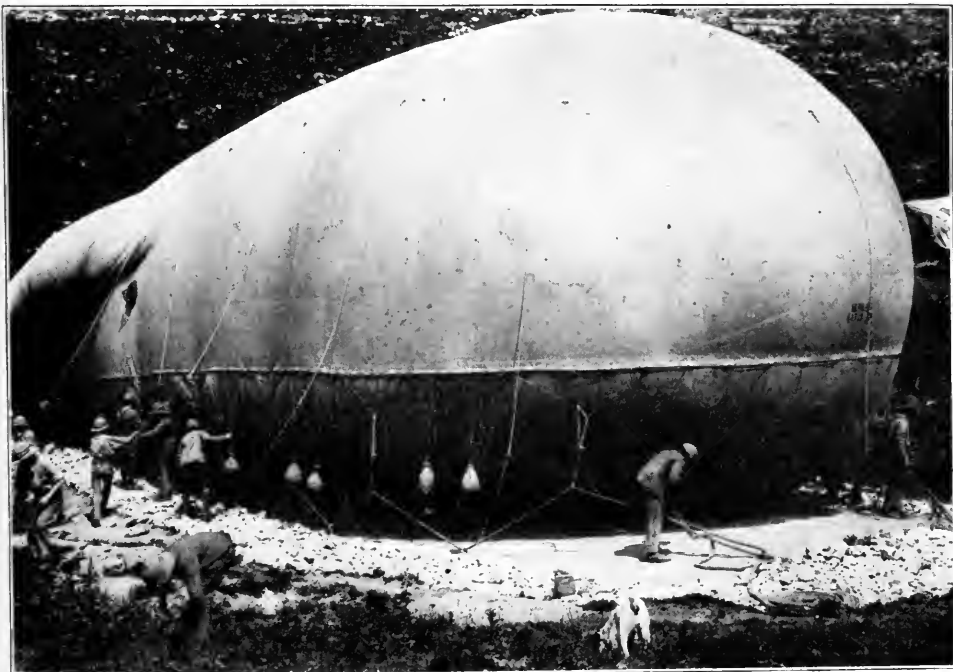
communication, telephone wires, runners, pigeons and signals, were all in the danger zone itself and liable to destruction. When the British introduced the creeping barrage of artillery fire which, as a curtain, moved a little ahead of the infantry, the need was even greater. The airmen solved the problem. Flying in stable machines equipped with wireless and Klaxon horns, they swept at a low altitude over the advancing lines, "observed all developments, signalled back guidance for the barrage and by means of message bags supplied headquarters with valuable information." Thus they not only regulated artillery fire, and





#### GERMAN BALLOON ALIGHTING IN THE WEST

This is a German military observation balloon of the Caquot type. As a director of gun fire the captive balloon was being used before the end of the war on a scale which practically displaced the aeroplane. Seated aloft in the basket the observer acted as sentinel of the sky with the keen long-range vision of the hawk. Ruschin.



#### MAKING FAST

This picture was taken with the British forces in Italy. Balloon cloth has to be very closely woven, smooth and strong so as to serve as a base for the rubberizing process. It should have a weave of approximately 140 threads to the inch both ways, and be from 38 to 45 inches wide. No "slubs" knots, or other imperfections which prevent an even surface for rubberizing may be present in this material. British Official.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

or the enemy's artillery? We stand here under the most severe artillery fire ever seen by the world, directed so accurately by twenty-nine captive balloons which venture up a bare six hundred metres high for fear of the enemy's aviators. At the same time they are so far behind, to get out of the

proceeded with little disturbance, whereas the Germans were so hard pressed that, as the diary quoted above records, they could hardly guide their own guns or collect useful information. Among the French squadrons, the first to arrive on the Somme was the Stork Squadron, which was shown to have waged from March 19 to August 19, 1916, 338 combats, bringing down 36 aeroplanes, 3 *drachen* (dragon balloons) and compelling 36 other badly damaged aeroplanes to land. Guynemer and Nungesser had survived the winter's risks and led their comrades in daring and skill. For a year more the former was to continue his spectacular career. It must be noted in this connection that the prevalence of westerly winds was a great handicap to Allied fliers in that they drifted farther over the enemy's lines as they fought, and in case of crippling were forced to fly into a head wind before they could make a safe descent.

Late in September and throughout October the foe made a savage attempt to regain his standing in the air. He produced new types of machines—among them a new Halberstadt possessing 240 h.p. with strong climbing power. It was then that Boelcke was recalled from Turkey and given the task of organizing the flying squadrons.

### A SPIRITED ACCOUNT OF A BOMBING EXPEDITION.

An account of a bombing expedition drawn from the chronicles of Mr. Perry Robinson, *The Times* correspondent at the Battle of the Somme, must complete our summary of this great period of aerial activity. It was September, 1916, and the enemy was continually shifting masses of men from all northern points of his line down to the Somme and taking his shattered divisions back to rest. Libercourt, the objective of the raid, was a railway junction of great importance, but near the station were three aerodromes which must be kept quiet if the raid was to be a success. Thus at 1 o'clock Allied aviators from behind the clouds began to bomb the aerodromes. "Immediately after the first bombs, which scattered ruin, other bombs began to



GUYNEMER, KING OF THE STORK  
ESCADRILLE

enemy's naval guns, that our artillery can scarcely be said to have aerial observers." And again, August 31, he writes: "There are thirty-four English captive balloons and one German to be seen. This is a fine state of affairs! In addition there are about fifty aviators climbing overhead."

### THE FAMOUS GUYNEMER AND THE STORK SQUADRON.

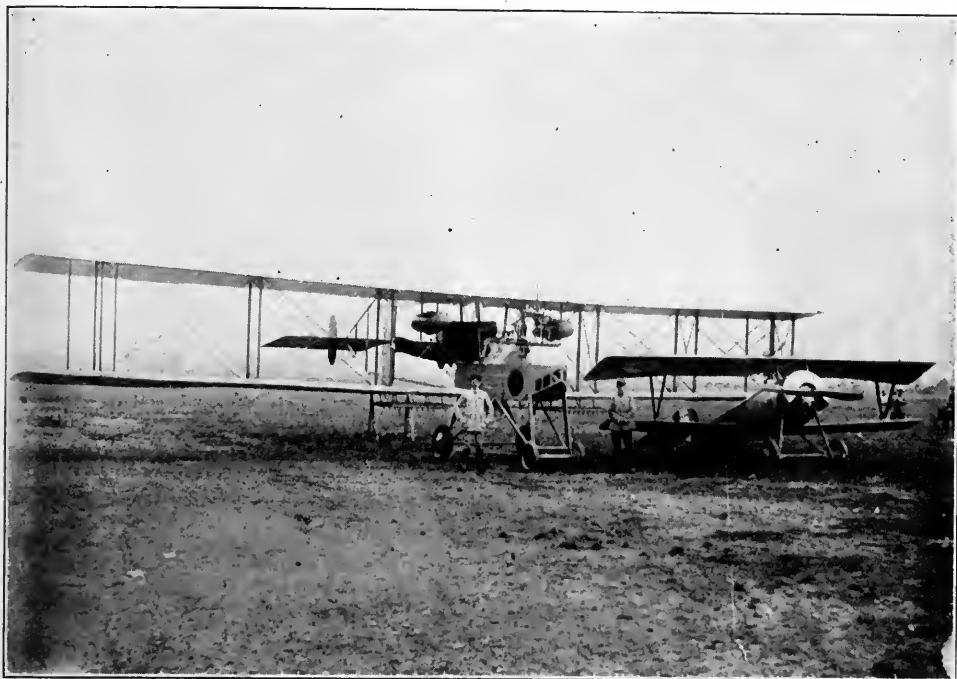
Much of the credit for this mastery of the air belongs to those who organized and those who led these fighting expeditions over the enemy country. Through their efforts, reconnaissance, artillery spotting and photography



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

fall, not dangerously explosive, but emitting thick clouds of fumes and smoke, blinding and bewildering the men below, till each aerodrome from above looked like a boiling pit. Into this turmoil the airmen above kept at intervals dropping high-explosive bombs. Meanwhile at the junction soon after 1:30 a train was seen, and two of our squadrons dipped from out of

busy. Troops as they poured out and fled southwards ran the gauntlet of machine-gun fire from the skies. Meanwhile, another aeroplane attacked Libercourt station and dropped nearly fifty bombs which fell on the station buildings, railway sidings, on the rolling stock in the yards, and spread destruction everywhere around. Overhead some of the fighting planes circled



**TWO DISTINCT TYPES OF ARMY PLANES**

This picture illustrates the contrast between the build of an aeroplane according to function. On the left is shown a bombing plane with large wing-spread to support the weight of the bombs it carries. The smaller machine on the right is a fighting plane, fitted with very powerful engines and designed to have great climbing power.

the sky until they were only 800 feet above the train and as they dropped, they saw another train coming along a branch line, and this two others went off to deal with."

Both trains were loaded with troops, and they had a dreadful time. When the engine was thrown from the rails, as a result of the explosion, the troops scrambled from the wreckage for shelter to a large wood, with the aeroplanes playing upon them as they fled panic-stricken, massed together. Wreckage of the first train blocked the approach of the other train from Lens and as it stood the airmen again grew

and kept watch in case the enemy machines should attempt to interfere, but no hostile craft appeared.

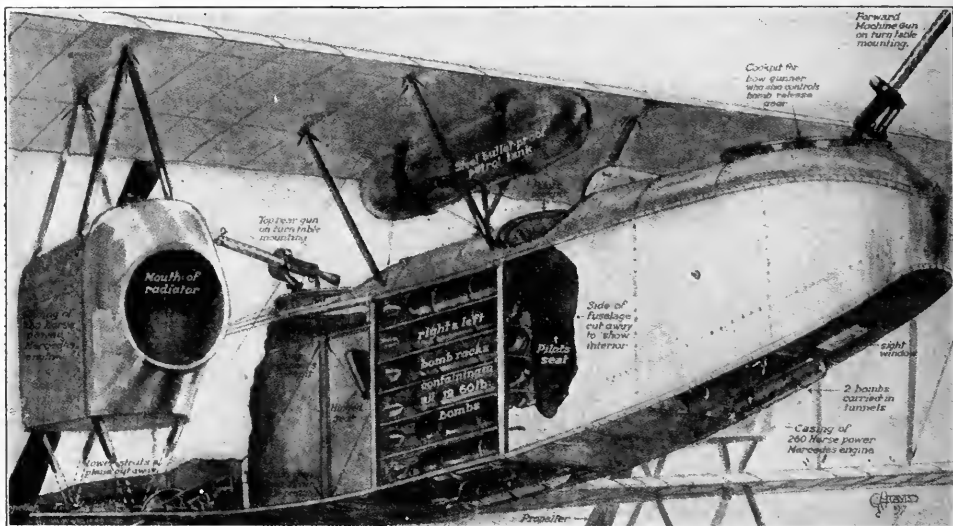
### **THE GERMANS ENTIRELY REORGANIZE THEIR AIR SERVICE.**

The French Staff in its summary of results of Allied aerial warfare for 1916 announced that 900 aeroplanes had been destroyed, 81 kite balloons burned, and 754 bombardments had taken place. The German Staff was not slow to profit by the lessons of the Somme campaign and began a thorough over-hauling of its aeronautical service. By a decree of November, 1916, the aerial forces were separated from the other forces of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

communication and classed as Aerial Combatant Forces (*Luftstreitkräfte*) under a separate staff officer, General Lieutenant von Hoepfner, who had been Chief of Staff of Otto von Below's Sixth Army, as *Kommandeur der Luftstreitkräfte*. The more than two hundred and seventy squadrons were divided into bombing, chasing, patrolling and field squadrons (of which the last were entrusted with scouting, photography, and spotting). The commander of the aeronautical section of

factories. By the spring of 1917 she possessed forty chasing squadrons of different types including a new Fokker and Albatros of 160 h. p., with a Benz or Mercédès fixed engine and two Maxim guns shooting through the propeller blades. As bomb-carriers, von Hoepfner was also responsible for the two-engine Gothas (520 h. p.) which gained such notoriety in raids over Britain, the Friederichshafens and the A. E. 9 (450 h. p.). Preparation was very careful and General von Hoepfner



### SECTIONAL DIAGRAM OF A GOTHIA FIGHTING PLANE

This particular Gotha carried two 260 h. p. Mercédès engines with propellers moving behind the wings, thus being really propulsive, not "tractor." In a turret forward a gun fired forwards, and, at certain angles above and below the wings. Two others, in grooves in transverse tubes behind the rear passenger, fired, one above the body, the other in a gun-tunnel level with the floor, in the manner shown in the diagram.

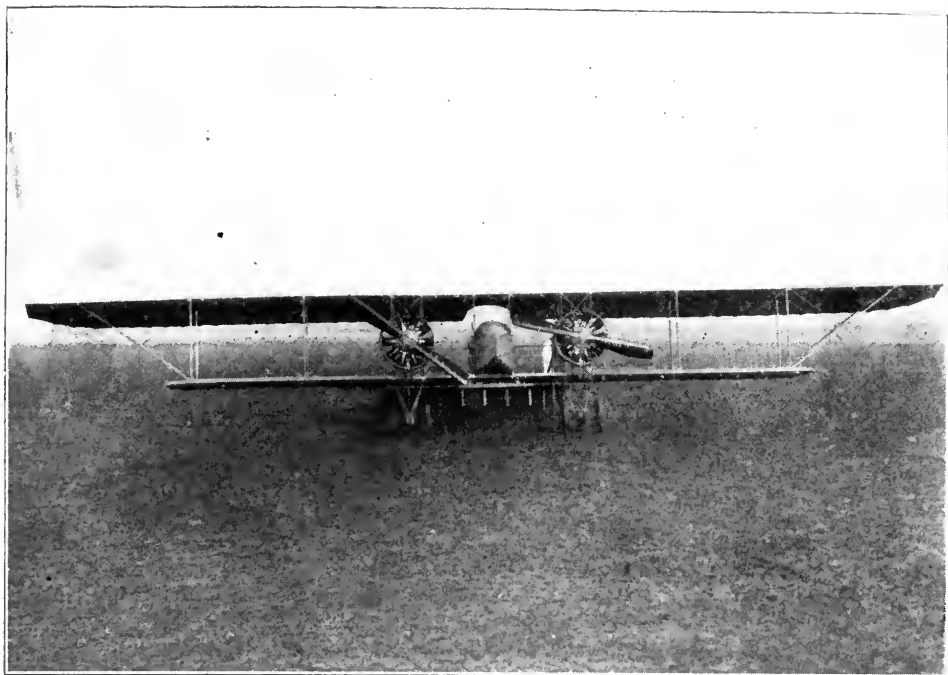
the Fifth German Army before Verdun had stated in a report that "a conscientious aviator was the only reliable informant in battle," and this statement was amplified by the Crown Prince, who urged constant association between the air service and the infantry.

This personal relation between infantry and airmen was strongly urged by Guynemer and by von Richthofen who were filled with admiration for the former's heroic work and commiseration for their hardships in the trenches. During the winter Germany strengthened her chasing squadrons, improved the *personnel* of her air service, concentrated on producing high-powered engines, and increased the output of her

told the press at the end of May, 1917, that the German airmen were unrivaled.

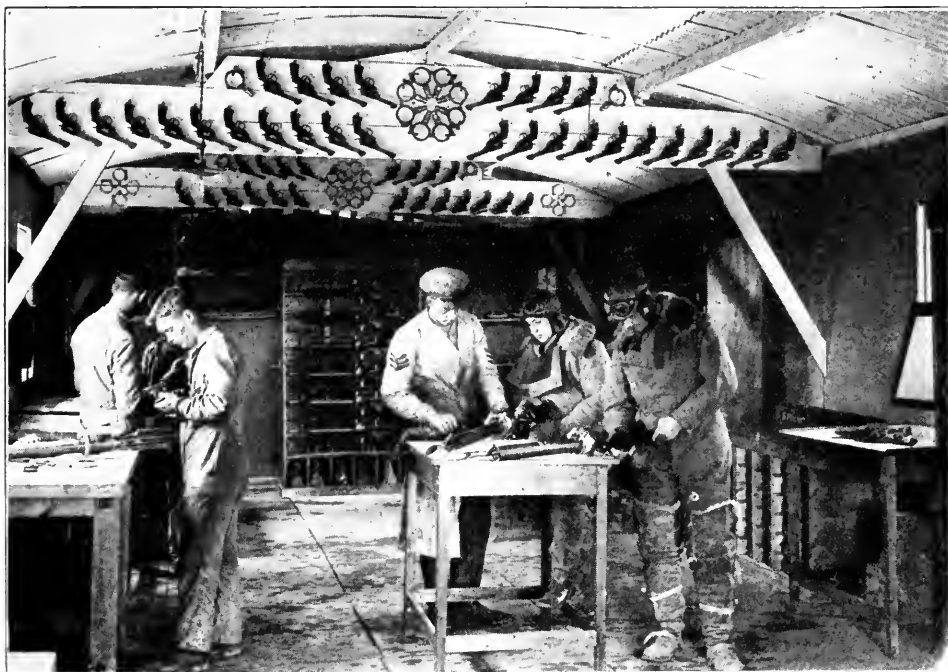
### THE BRITISH ALSO RECEIVE SOME NEW TYPES.

At the end of March the Germans began to withdraw towards the Siegfried line and during this time, activity in the air was of course very great. Before the advent of the Bristol fighters, the Sopwith triplanes and de Havillands in numbers, the British Royal Flying Corps were having a very bad time. On April 6, for instance it was reported in the Headquarters *communiqué* that twenty-eight machines had been missing for two days. The enemy, secure in his new Siegfried line by the end of the first week of April, believed that he



**A BRITISH BOMBING PLANE**

A large twin-engined biplane of the combat class which combines great weight-carrying power with high speed. The controls are situated in the fuselage and because the propellers are at the sides the observer has a less obstructed vision and clearer field of fire. This renders synchronising of machine gun and propeller unnecessary.



**ARMORY OF BRITISH BOMBING SQUADRON**

The armory of a night-bombing squadron of the Royal Air Force. Pilots and observers took the most meticulous care of their guns and pistols for they were their sole chance of safety if surprised by enemy airmen. This squadron was proud of its armory which it considered the finest in Europe.

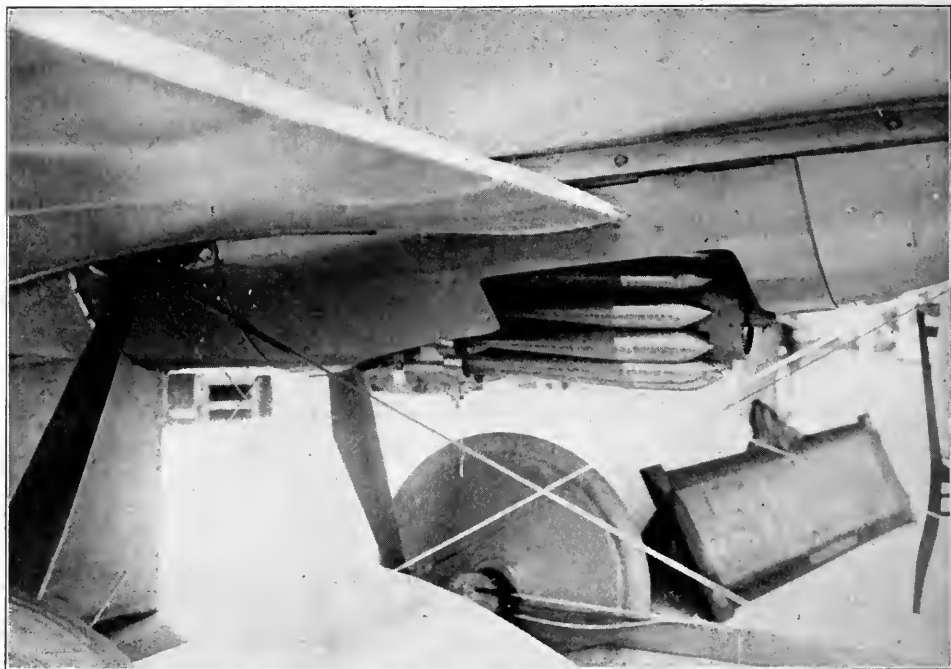
British Official.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

had gained a better position than he had lost at the Somme. But the Allies had prepared a spring offensive striking at the pivots of the new German positions, in the north around Douai and Cambrai and in the south at Laon.

Every class of machine was engaged in preparations for the great offensive. Bombing squadrons were out by day

look far into our lines and note everything that was going on. We proposed to put out these enemy eyes. We called the big, elongated gas-bags 'sausages' and the French did likewise '*saucisses*'. They floated in the air at anywhere from 800 to 3000 feet above the ground, and were held captive by cables. These cables were attached to some special kind of windlasses which could pull

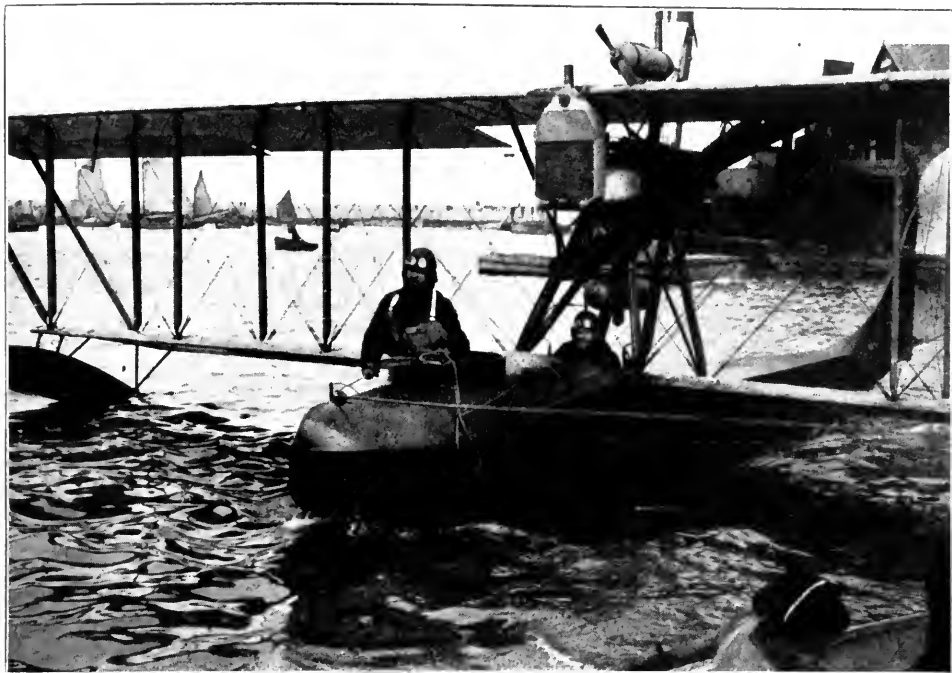


**BOMBS IN THEIR PLACE IN A PLANE**

This picture shows one mechanism for carrying and dropping bombs in a bombing plane. Mounted on a cylinder, whose rotation is governed by a trigger, the bombs are dropped at the pilot's will. Bombs were fitted with a safety mechanism and could be dropped "safe" if the aviator had to get rid of them over his own lines. Some machines carried much longer bombs than these, which are in fact rather small.

and by night when they flew over the lines with only the stars to guide them and dropped tons of explosives on German communications. Photographers were busy during every hour of sunlight and artillery observers put through long days with the guns at preliminary bombardment. Major Bishop was at this time doing some of his daring work with the R. F. C. and he speaks of an attack upon the German captive balloons. "They flew in the same place almost every day—well back of the enemy's lines, but the observers in them, equipped with splendid telescopes, could leisurely

the balloons down in an incredibly short space of time. Sometimes they could disappear as if by witchcraft. Wherever the sausages flew they were protected from aeroplane attack by heavy batteries of anti-aircraft guns, and also by what we came to know as 'flaming onions.' These 'flaming onions' appear to consist of about ten balls of fire and are shot from some kind of rocket gun. . . . Our instructions were not only to drive the enemy balloons down but to set fire to and destroy them. This is done by diving on them from above and firing some incendiary missile at them."



#### HYDROPLANE AFLOAT IN THE WATER

In a hydroplane floats replace the wheels of the aeroplane. After the war an amphibious plane was developed in which wheels and floats were both present and could be adjusted to the nature of the taking-off or landing ground. While on the water the pilot steers chiefly by means of the rudder or "tail" of the fuselage.



#### LIFTING THE HYDROPLANE TO ITS HANGAR

In this graceful machine the true "stream-line" is pronounced, and gives it the effect of a water or dragon fly. The British Royal Naval Air Service did considerable work with hydroplanes on the Belgian coast and at the mouth of the German rivers. But for satisfactory sea reconnaissance the Zeppelin or balloon was found generally more satisfactory, and in this respect the Germans were better equipped in the beginning than the Allies.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### AIRMEN EVEN ATTACK THE ENEMY IN THE TRENCHES.

On April 4 the attack was launched. That the German infantry did not relish this vigorous offensive is proved from letters taken from prisoners captured during the Arras offensive. One writes: "These British airmen are the very devil, for they come down to our trenches and almost enter our dug-outs, bombing and machine-gunning and seeming to take the greatest pleasure in doing so, and quite regardless of our rifle fire. We should not be at all surprised at any time to know that they had found a way of flying right through our dug-outs, and we have no peace from them night or day." Nor were the airmen content merely to signal back the positions of enemy guns, in some cases they shot the crews of the batteries, and instances of heavy guns being put out of action by direct bomb hits from 150 feet are known.

Von Richthofen himself remarks of these days: "During the full-moon nights of the month of April, 1917, our English friends were particularly active." One night, it seems, they raided the aviators' quarters, and awakened by the noise of barking guns, he says, "One of the Englishmen flew at so low an altitude over my habitation that in my fright I pulled the blanket over my head." At the end of the month the new British machines had arrived and began to make their presence felt. Von Richthofen, April 29, admits that the new Sopwiths and de Havillands could outclimb the famous Albatros chaser.

### THE FRENCH AIRMEN LED BY GUYNEMER DO GREAT WORK.

Meanwhile in the southern sector of the line the French offensive had been launched against the heights of the Aisne. The opening day, April 6, was snowy and wet and air observation was badly crippled, the enemy had got wind of the attack and the tanks did not achieve as much as had been hoped. The French aviators did some heroic work; it is said of Guynemer at this time that whereas on the Somme he had been one of the great French champions, on the Aisne he became

their king. Later in the Flanders offensive, the *Badische Presse* for August 8, 1917, pays the following tribute to his eagle-like flights: "The airman you see flying so high is the famous Guynemer. He is the rival of our most daring aviators, an *as*, as the French reckon their champions." On September 11, 1917, he was killed after having brought down fifty-four enemy planes.

As for the Germans, no longer on the offensive as at the Somme, they practised a strong concentration in order to secure superiority in the air in the limited sector of the front where the action took place. Prudence was recommended in scouting and patrol work; thus, if on the offensive, the order was that at the hour determined upon all available machines should rise together to a low altitude, divide into two distinct fleets, the chasing units flying above the rest. Then the two fleets were to make for the point of attack, getting higher as they went and engage the enemy above the lines with the utmost energy, not giving up the pursuit until they reached the French lines, where danger from anti-aircraft batteries would be too great. (It is to be remarked that the German offensive did not include fighting over the enemy's line!)

### OBSERVATION AND PHOTOGRAPHY THE MOST IMPORTANT FUNCTIONS.

Fighting slackened at the end of May and a new offensive, the Second Battle of Flanders, began at the end of July and raged until the following winter. In this battle the British under Plumer and Gough were supported by the French army under General Anthoine. By the middle of June, the Germans, warned by the formidable French and British preparations, had brought additional aeroplanes and sausages to the Flanders front. Through July terrible contests took place in the air, some of them duels, others battles between strong squadrons, as for instance on July 13, where there were as many as thirty machines on each side. In this fight the Germans lost fifteen machines. All this fighting was, of course, to secure for the side gaining

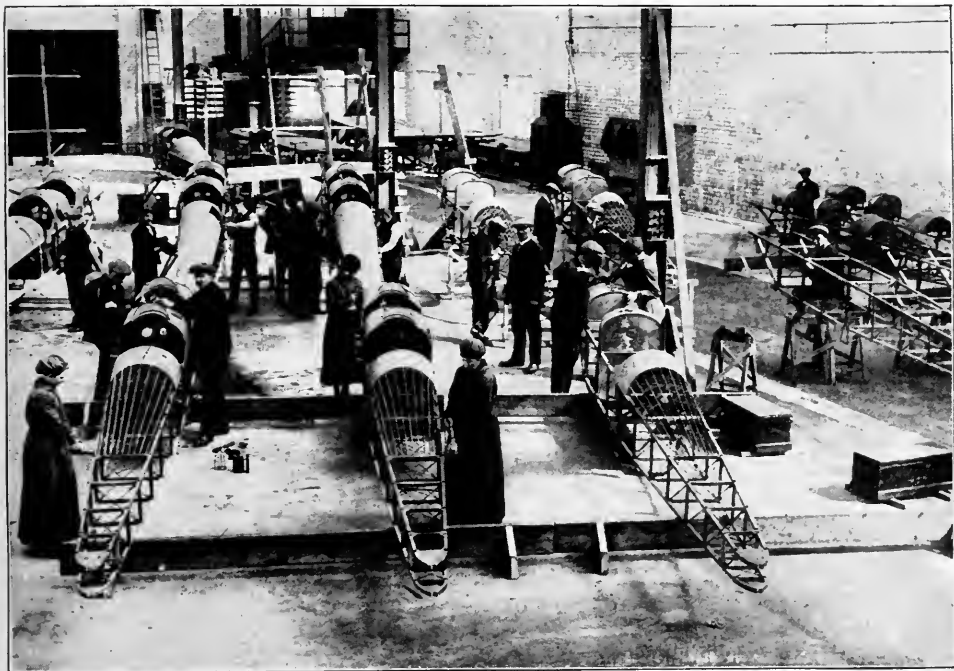


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the advantage the initiative in reconnaissance, bombing, photography and infantry control work, for after all observation was the most important function of aircraft.

During the course of the big offensive in the Ypres sector, August, 1917, *The Times* correspondent wrote of the artillery and aeroplane work: "During the 'last few days' fighting, I have heard several times the statement that

The official French *communiqué* reported that during the week-end of August 18-19, 1917, 111 French aeroplanes had dropped 26,000 lbs. of explosive upon German railheads in the Meuse district, an eloquent tribute to the increase in the number of machines used. Similar evidence of German increase was also given by the formation flights of air-raiders over England during the summer of 1917.



### IN THE SCOTTISH SHIPBUILDING YARDS

Men and women at work upon the fuselages of aeroplanes in a converted shipbuilding yard in Scotland. Manufacture of the different parts of the plane was carried on in special factories and the parts put together in assembling factories. The Handley-Page alone involved 100,000 separate parts and the magnitude of the manufacturing may be imagined. British Official.

in the course of the battle the fire of the German batteries actually grew perceptibly and continuously less as they were put out of action by our guns. This is quite credible. In the course of a single day, our artillery guided by our aeroplanes silenced 73 hostile batteries. Observation showed 21 gun-pits entirely destroyed and 35 others badly damaged. Eighteen explosions of ammunition stores were caused and fifteen other fires. These are only the items of air work in a single day of battle, but their influence on the course of victory is obviously enormous."

### GERMAN EFFORTS TO SECURE CONTROL OF THE AIR FOR 1918.

Then the battles of Flanders died down into winter rain and mud, and once more the belligerents took stock of their assets for a spring offensive. Ludendorff and von Hindenburg met the *Reichstag* in secret session and promised speedy victory. Production in all branches was speeded up for the final effort and in the early spring of 1918 Germany possessed about eighty-five squadrons of fighting planes (about 1100 machines), and perhaps an equal number attached to the army for pur-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

poses of photography, reconnaissance, infantry contact and artillery control. A great effort was made to develop the bombarding planes; the inhabitants of Dunkirk, Nancy, London, and even of Paris were victims of these improvements as the radius of action of the Gothas and Friedrichshafens was increased to 300 kilometers from home, and their bomb-carrying capacity to 800 kilograms (nearly a ton). In the Gotha, advance in speed and manoeuvring ability was backed up by improvement in armament, namely a third machine gun which was mounted under the fuselage so as to eliminate all dead angles of fire.

With the wireless, the Germans had the macrophone, a device which highly intensified sounds in the receiving telephone and made them audible in spite of engines, vibration and wind. The Allies also developed similar devices. The generator employed with the wireless was—with customary German system—put to good use in cold weather or in great altitudes in heating the resistance wires woven into the aviator's clothing. With sighting also the enemy began to employ highly efficient sighting instruments made by well-known optical firms like Zeiss and Goertz. Instrument and auxiliary tables allowed of rapid calculation of the angle of fire required, took into account wind, speed and height, guided the pilot just over his objective and automatically warned the bombardier of the precise moment to release his bombs. An ingenious invention, aimed at discounting camouflage, was the air-scout's stereoscopic camera of great power and sharpness. Built into the body at a point where it commanded an unobstructed view of the ground below, its lens could discover from an altitude of two miles whether trenches or batteries were actual or only hollow shams.

### THE GREAT WEIGHT-LIFTING MACHINES OF THE YEAR.

Another German development of 1918 was the new Fokker triplane. This, though not so fast as some of the other pursuit planes, had a climbing speed which excelled that of any

other machine at the front and rendered its attack particularly vigorous from below. In the spring drive the enemy used these triplanes in large numbers, frequently as many as twenty or thirty at a time.

The growing importance of twin or multiple-engined aeroplanes was a significant feature of aerial construction on both sides. Further, in 1918, the "ceiling," or the elevation at which planes must be able to fly, was increased from 16,000 to 18,000, and then well above 20,000 feet. The improvement in the range and accuracy of the anti-aircraft gun made this necessary. A slow machine with a high ceiling could use its power to climb out of range and dive upon its victim, or evade the unwelcome attentions of anti-aircraft guns.

Germany, and later the Allies also, constructed giant aeroplanes (*Riesenflugzeug*) of about 1000-1400 h. p. with a weight-lifting capacity of two tons. This product points to what was one of the greatest developments of 1918—namely the far-extended, continuous bombing expeditions against enemy *matériel*. The casualties from air-raids in Great Britain were heavy during 1917, and the Germans bombed British and French back areas with marked pertinacity during 1918. The great British camp at Étaples suffered seven hundred casualties in six weeks. But though 2,465 projectiles were dropped by the enemy on Allied lines and on towns behind the lines in March, British bombardiers alone dropped on enemy territory 38,118 bombs, or sixteen times as many. April saw increased German activity, but nevertheless British bomb-dropping was still ahead at the rate of twelve to one.

### THE BRITISH ORGANIZE THE INDEPENDENT AIR FORCE.

In April, the Independent Air Force was formed under General Trenchard, with the function of raiding German industrial centres in the Rhineland and Westphalia, in order to strike at the enemy's sources of supply. Much fighting took place and the I. A. F. lost 109 machines within six months, yet it accomplished a great deal both in material destruction and moral



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

effect. As early as October, 1917, raids had been begun by three squadrons in the Nancy area and this nucleus was later developed into the Independent Force as supplementary to the Royal Air Force of Great Britain. During the early period, from October, 1917, to June 5, 1918, fifty-seven attacks were made on the Rhineland, including day and night attacks on Cologne, Stuttgart, Mannheim, Mainz and Coblenz. In June, Trenchard decided to attack as many of the large centres as it was possible to reach, and the weather for the first three months was extremely favorable for this long-distance bombing, but during September, October, and the first ten days of November it could hardly have been worse for this particular work. During the summer, the force was equipped with the large Handley-Page bombing machines. The total weight of bombs dropped between June 6 and November 10 was over five hundred tons, of which 160 tons were dropped by day and 390 tons by night. At the end of June it was apparent that the enemy was increasing his number of fighting machines and during September and October the day-bombing squadrons had to fight practically from the front line to their objective and from there home again. This necessitated the most careful keeping of formation in order to avoid undue casualties as, once the formation was split up, the enemy's machines could attack individual machines at their leisure. The Black Forest region and some forty towns including Baden, Frankfurt, Karlsruhe, Mainz, Stuttgart and Wiesbaden were attacked. Towards the end of the summer a group was established in England for the purpose of bombing Berlin and other centres, but its machines were only ready

three days before the signing of the armistice.

### A DESCRIPTION OF A NIGHT BOMBING RAID.

The Independent Force at the request of Marshal Foch co-operated



CAPTAIN WILLIAM A. BISHOP WITH AN OFFICIAL  
RECORD OF 72 GERMAN MACHINES

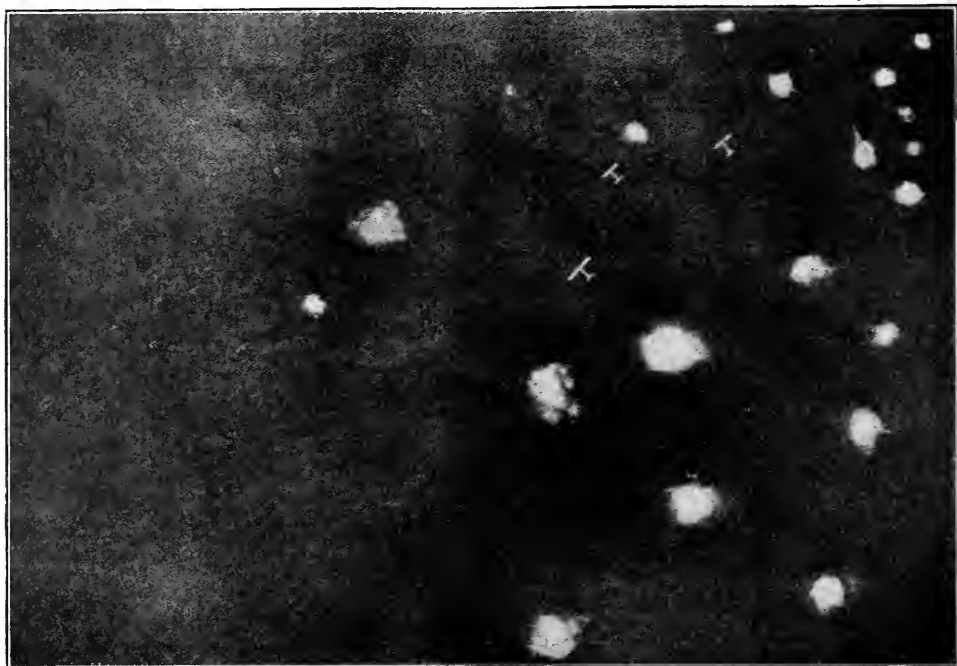
© Underwood & Underwood.

with the American First Army in its attack on the St. Mihiel salient, and it further co-operated with the armies by attacking important railway junctions behind the French lines in the combined offensive of September 26. The following descriptive account of one of the bombing raids into Germany illustrates the general nature of this kind of expedition, whether it was un-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

dertaken by French or British aviators. "Back on the green aerodrome, miles behind the lines, the big bombers were prepared for their raid. Rows of huge machines stood waiting for the finishing touches, looking in the twilight like great birds roosting on the ground. To one side were the smaller fighting aeroplanes who would escort the raiders on their long flight over Ger-

be dimly distinguished, with ponds and streams dimly gleaming through the night. They crossed the fighting lines at an immense altitude, untroubled by 'Archie' or any other terror of the sky, steadily humming toward the big German town which was that night's objective. After a good two-hour's flight a signal flared from the leading machine. The Rhine



### PERILS OF THE SKY

A remarkable picture, made by one of the official British artists at the front, of "Archies" or shells from anti-aircraft guns bursting round aeroplanes. The range of these guns grew longer and longer until in 1918 they were effective at a height of 15,000 feet. The Germans were the first to perfect satisfactory range-finders.

man territory. Tanks had already been filled, and now the huge bombs were wheeled out on trollies and fitted to the underside of the planes; belts and drums of ammunition were placed ready to use, and the engines run up to see that all was in order.

"A little before dark the pilots and gunners arrived by twos and threes. Each officer carefully examined his particular part of the machine and one by one the aeroplanes left the ground in the gathering dusk and began at once to climb. Last of all the escorting machines went up. Mile after mile they flew through the darkness. Below, the faint outlines of fields and roads could

was at hand, and everyone prepared for action. Guns were fingered tenderly, bomb-releases looked to, and sights adjusted.

### BOMBERS AND FIGHTING PLANES BOTH NECESSARY FOR SUCCESS.

"Then the first searchlight picked up the formation, and a moment later the sky was covered with puffs of smoke; shrapnel shrieked through the air, and long, wavering beams flashed hither and thither to aid the German gunners at their task. Down went the noses of the machines as they dived through the barrage, each pilot intent on keeping his place in the formation and hoping that a stray shot might

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

not reach his engine. The fighters remained on high, waiting for the German aeroplanes which would soon arrive out of the darkness. Another signal flashed out, and factories and railway stations were now within easy range. One by one and in salvos, the pilots planted their bombs. Muffled roars from below announced the arrival of tons of high explosive; red flashes showed where the explosions took

the escorting fighters had waited for. Diving through the night, they fell on their foes, shooting at close range, sending two of the Germans down in flames, to add to the terror of the town below. 'Archie' meanwhile had died away; there was as much danger of hitting friends as of bringing down foes in the wild turmoil which now filled the night.

"At last all the bombs were dropped.



ITALIAN AIRMEN SNOW LEAFLETS OVER VIENNA

A shower of leaflets falling over Vienna during the raid made by a squadron of Italian aeroplanes under Major Gabriele D'Annunzio, August 9, 1918. This striking picture taken by one of the raiding airmen, shows St. Stephen's Cathedral in the top right hand corner, and even reveals the lines of the colored tiles of the roof.

place. At one place a huge sheet of flame shot upwards, tinting half the heavens with a rosy glow. A moment later a louder boom showed the cause of the fire—the main object of the raid had been achieved: the munition factory hit and a conflagration started. Up to this point the work of the raiders had been simple. Then the German night pilots came on the scene, endeavoring to break up the formation and overpower the bombers singly instead of attacking them when they were well able to defend themselves. This was precisely the chance which

Several fires glowed in the town and at least one terrific series of explosions proved that the heart of the target had been reached. The signal to retire was given, and the formation withdrew, whilst the escort acted as a rearguard to drive off any foes who were venturesome enough to follow. Another terrific burst of shell fire greeted them as they left the town, but no damage was done and the barrage gradually died down as the machines drew out of range. Westward flew the formation, each aeroplane maintaining its position in line. Overhead the stars glimmered,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and nothing now disturbed the peace of the night except the roar of the powerful engines.

"When halfway home the leader descried another formation looming out of the darkness. He signaled to his flock to be on the alert, for he did not know whether it would prove to consist of friends or foes. The approaching machines drew closer, and were at last distinguished for bombers, like themselves, bound to the same town which had just suffered, but was to suffer again shortly."

### **BOMBING OF GERMAN TOWNS IN REPRISAL FOR PREVIOUS RAIDS.**

Such work as was done by the I. A. F. in the Rhineland and by the French over southeast Germany was in the nature of reprisal for the raids over England and France in which Germany seemed to aim at lowering the morale of civilians rather than at destruction of enemy material. It is not possible in such a chapter as this to give a detailed history of all the raids carried out by airship and aeroplane over England, who was the chief sufferer. Nevertheless a glance at some of the figures and results of these activities is of interest. Between January 19-20, 1915, and April 13, 1918, which witnessed the last airship raid, 556 persons were killed, of whom 58 only were combatants, 171 were women, and 110 children. Out of a total of 1357 injured there were 121 combatants, 431 women and 218 children. April, 1916, saw seven separate raids which extended over the East and North counties of England and in Scotland. The discontinuance of the raids after April, 1918, was probably due to improved anti-aircraft defenses.

### **A GERMAN RAIDER'S ACCOUNT OF A RAID ON LONDON.**

This enthusiastic account of these slaughters is from the pen of Mathey after his bombardment of London:

"London, seen at night from a great height is a fairy picture. . . . That night all appeared peaceful and quiet. In the twinkling of an eye, the change came. A narrow band of brilliant light burst forth suddenly and began to search the sky. A second and a third

appeared and soon criss-crossed each other like shining ribbons. Sighted from above by a Zeppelin, it seemed as though the city rudely awakened was raising its arms to heaven and throwing out tentacles against the danger that was threatening.

"I visited St. Paul's and from this point made for the Bank. Over it, I shouted through the megaphone to my lieutenant: 'Aim slowly.' Now with the dull sound and rapid flash of cannon fire was mingled the explosion and bursts of flame caused by our bombs. Arrived over Liverpool Street Station I telephoned 'Fire in salvos' and the bombs began to rain down. Some shells burst near us. . . . This was really the most fortunate and satisfying of my raids over London."

### **MEASURES FOR DEFENSE NEVER BECOME REALLY EFFECTIVE.**

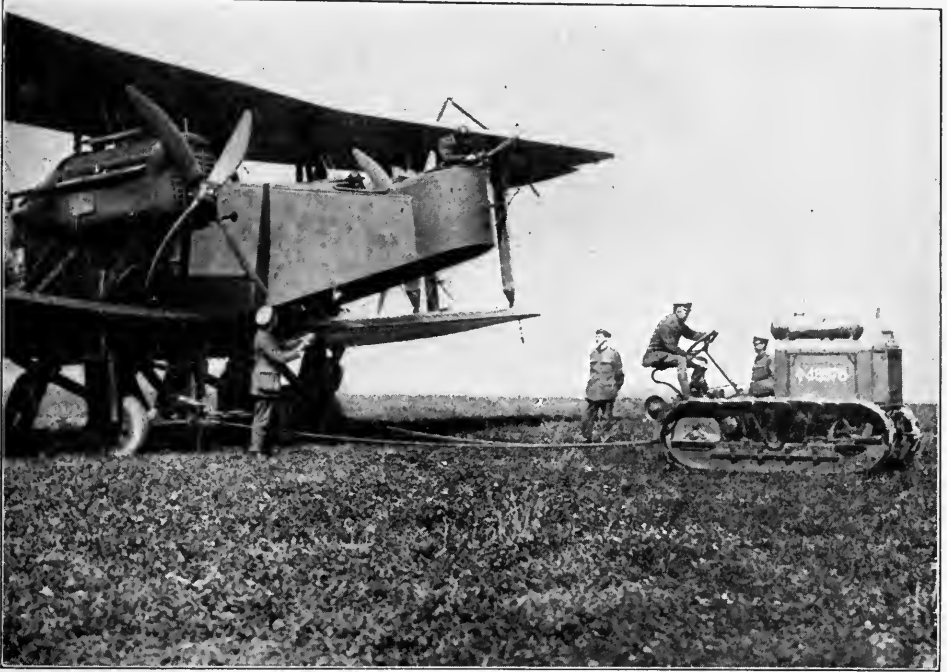
In aeroplane raids by far the worst year was 1917 and it was after this that the I. A. F. rather reluctantly undertook its reprisals. The French undertook such operations much earlier, soon after the first raids on Paris. In 1917 alone, twenty-seven separate attacks, for the most part undertaken on moonlit nights, were delivered over London and the southeast counties; 878 persons were killed, of whom 536 were civilians, and 1551 injured, 1211 of them non-combatants. In all four years of the war 2,907 people were killed and 2,050 injured by aeroplane attack.

No such advance in aerial defense was made during the war as in measures for attack. It is a truism in military science that the side which loses the initiative and is forced into the defensive is well on its way to defeat. This is strikingly evident in aerial warfare. Once the raiders have been able to come together and start, it will take a very large organization to cope with them, and even then some will get through. Half a dozen attacking machines might prevent a squadron from starting by raiding them in their sheds, when it would take a hundred planes to deal with the same number in the air. Other counter-offensive measures such as high-angle anti-aircraft

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

guns, high-powered searchlights, and balloon aprons were added to and improved upon during the struggle. The balloon aprons reduced the space to be covered by anti-aircraft barrage fire against the raiders. To make them, a row of kite balloons was sent up, their mooring cables connected by cross cables from which hung wires kept taut by small weights at their

the greatest precaution, and illumination of great cities was reduced and even abolished. Various ways of warning of the approach of hostile craft were used at different periods: Paris making use for a time of bugles, London of sound signals or flares; and warning placards with "Take Cover" written upon them in red letters were exhibited through the streets by police on motor-



**A GREAT MECHANICAL BIRD OF PREY**

This picture, taken on the Western Front, is a huge R. A. F. long distance Handley-Page bombing machine, being got into position by a motor tractor. The performance table shows a speed at ground level of 97 miles per hour, that it can climb to 7000 feet in 18 minutes, 10 seconds, or to 10,000 feet in 29 minutes, and to its "ceiling" of 14,000 feet in 60 minutes.

British Official Photo.

ends. These formed a screen from the ground up to the height at which the balloons were anchored and an uncertain hazard to be avoided at all costs by the hovering birds of prey.

### **THE STREETS OF LONDON AND PARIS IN DARKNESS.**

The defenses of Paris were better organized earlier than those of London, and partly for this reason, partly because of French retaliation, and partly because they had to fly over the French lines to reach it, Paris enjoyed greater immunity. Of merely palliative measures against aerial attack, darkness during night raids was recognized as

cycles. Public buildings were thrown open for cover, while the governments provided sandbags, and local authorities saw to their disposal in windows and apertures of the buildings thrown open to the public. The underground tube railways, in London and Paris, were used by people whose dwelling-places were flimsy. Measures for the suppression of fires were taken, and special fire-brigades organized. Finally, the governments, both of France and Britain, inaugurated a special scheme for insurance of property against aircraft and bombardment risks, and from national relief funds

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

assisted victims of raids with shelter, food, and money.

### THE INFLUENCE OF CAMOUFLAGE OR PROTECTIVE COLORATION.

On the fronts, of course, none of these counter-measures, with the exception of anti-aircraft guns and opposing aeroplanes, were in use. Friendly darkness could not be relied upon to any degree, for the use of star-shells

out among neighboring woods and fields. To conceal such objects as barracks, depôts, and cantonments, all use was made of natural shelter such as forests, and the illusion was completed by painting the roofs. Camouflage constructed false batteries, false intrenchments, false observation posts. The art could only be successfully applied to small objectives; it was not



WILD GOOSE FORMATION

Sixteen planes flying in battle formation, Rockwell Field, San Diego, California. The development of formation flying restored the single-place machine to favor, as the formation had no blind spot—the principal objection to the single seater. The end of the war found the one-man airplane more useful than ever.

United States Official.

and illuminating flares broke up its cover at most disconcerting moments. By 1917 protective coloring, *camouflage* or artificial mimicry, which would conceal military objects and *matériel* from aerial vision, was much practised. This new art, born of the war, manifested itself under every conceivable form and in any way that ingenuity could devise. Its purpose was to give to suspicious objects the appearance of their surroundings. A trench under construction could be camouflaged by covering it with painted linen; hangars were so colored that their lines and the shadows they threw would not stand

possible by day to camouflage a station or a town, but these at night must seek the cloak of invisibility. Just as an insect or animal will rest perfectly immobile to deceive the hunter, so automobiles and horses remained immobile at the roadside or under trees, artillery and infantry packed under cover, and trains shut off steam when aeroplane reconnaissance was expected. The enemy rarely moved his troops in day-time, and whenever possible effected a concentration under cover of a forest. Such a practice was not new in war. Concealment of movements from the enemy has always been important.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE AIR SERVICE AIDS IN OPPOSING THE FINAL DRIVES.

In the spring of 1918 the German aerial machine was ready earlier than the Allied in preparation for the supreme effort to break the Allied lines. It is possible that if the Allies had possessed a thousand more bombing and fighting aeroplanes in service in March, they could have prevented the German aviators from mapping the Allied positions, and have stopped the massing of such a huge body of troops as Germany had prepared for this drive. This, however, was an enormous task. To keep 1000 aviators upon the field entailed a 40 per cent replacement in men, and 100-300 per cent in machines monthly, or 400 new aviators per month to keep 1000 men operating day and night. Machines were used up rapidly and in large numbers, and numberless spare parts were necessary. Anti-aircraft guns were accurate at this time at a height of 15,000 feet, and a speed up to 140 miles per hour was necessary so that in landing at such a rate much damage was often done.

Before the German attack, British airmen had observed that rail and road communications were being improved and ammunition and supply dumps increased along the whole front from Flanders to the Oise. Raids undertaken during these weeks established the arrival of fresh enemy divisions, though no idea could be got of the real German strength. On March 21, under cover of a thick fog, the attack was launched with irresistible force against the British Third and Fifth Armies. The British were forced back almost to Amiens. "In this and subsequent fighting the debt of the British infantry to the Royal Air Force could not be over-estimated. So long as the light endured they kept at bay all enemy machines, which otherwise might have discerned the nakedness of the land." On the 26th in face of the crisis Foch was given the task of coördinating operations in the west.

### THE TIDE TURNS AND THE GERMANS RETREAT.

There followed in quick succession through April, May, and June an almost uninterrupted series of formidable battles; in April the enemy tried to break through the British front in Flanders, on May 27 to pierce the



**JIM MCCONNELL, AMERICAN AVIATOR IN FLYING CLOTHES**

French centre on the Aisne, on the following days to push forward to the West in the direction of Paris, and finally on June 9 he tried once more to break down the front between Montdidier and Noyon. The Allies paid heavy toll but the Germans lost colossally. By this time the Americans were coming into line and Foch, now in supreme command, faced the climax of the battle with an easier mind. Sir Douglas Haig's so-called Victory Dis-

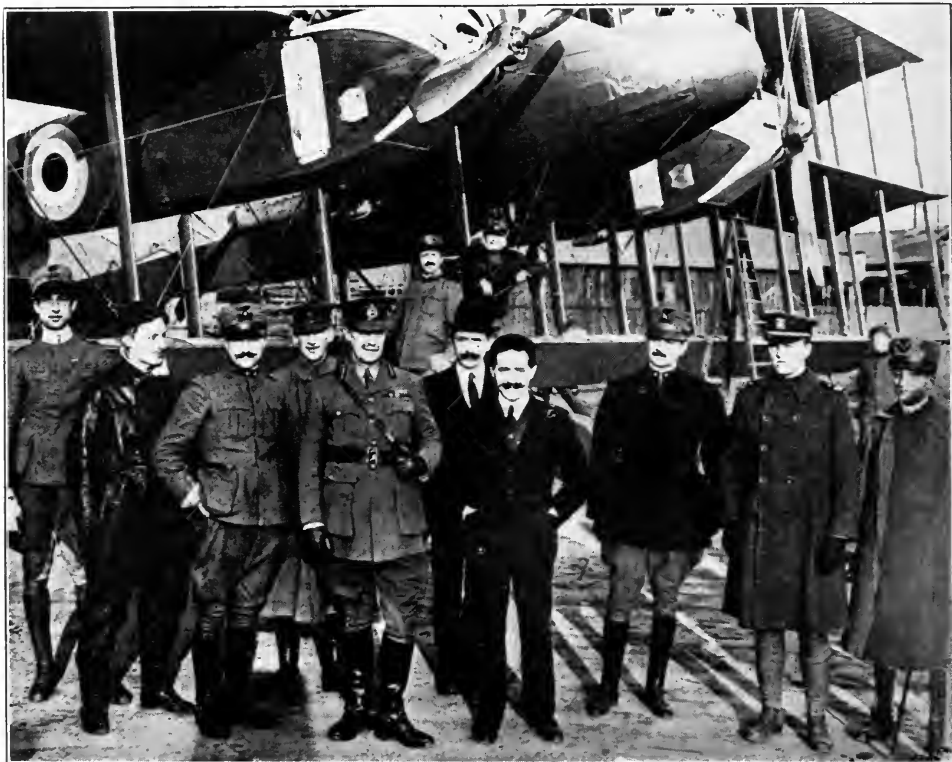


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

patch writes of the air-forces during these anxious days, "The assistance given to our infantry by our low-flying airplanes during the battles of March and April was repeated during the German offensives on the Aisne and Marne, on both of which occasions British squadrons were dispatched to the French battlefield and did very gallant service."

### THE AIRMEN WITH THE AMERICAN ARMIES.

In September the American army carried the St. Mihiel salient which had threatened France for four years. After the bombardment, squadrons of low-flying aeroplanes accompanied the infantry and the tanks. The first afternoon (September 12) a dispatch reports, "Not a single Boche plane in



SIGNOR CAPRONI AND CHIEFS OF ALLIED STAFF

Italian engineers were thoroughly competent, and Italian designers notably inventive but they lacked the coal and metal needed for quantity production. They had to rely to some extent on their allies who had been more amply provided with resources. They furnished in return inspiring ideas and admirable designs, so that Mr. Handley-Page and Signor Caproni vied with each other and with Mr. Holt Thomas in the construction of great cargo-carrying machines.

Publishers' Photo Service.

In mid-July, again at the Marne, the tide turned and Foch began his series of attacks which finally drove the Germans headlong toward the Rhine. During the German retreat the Allied airmen were everywhere breaking up the vain attempts to concentrate troops, bombing lines of communication and river crossings, blowing up ammunition dumps, and even putting artillery out of action.

the sky." General Pershing's *communiqué* of the 14th said: "French pursuit, bombing and reconnaissance units and British and Italian units, divided with our own Air Service the control of the air, and contributed materially to the success of the operations."

In the succeeding Meuse-Argonne battle lasting forty-seven days the airmen did valiant work. "The Air



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Service employed was largely American though about forty of the most experienced French airmen assisted, as well as an Italian night-bombing group. September 26, 508 aeroplanes were available for service; on Armistice Day, 475. The total number of American aeroplanes shot down was 199, and 22 American balloons. Nearly 400 enemy machines were brought down and about 50 balloons."

During the whole war British airmen destroyed 755 enemy planes and lost 357; destroyed 71 balloons and lost 43.

### HOW MANY AEROPLANES WERE THERE AT THE FRONT?

The German Armies were given no rest all along the front and steadily lost ground. Take this British report for November 5 as an example of what was occurring all down the long line: "Throughout the day the roads packed with the enemy's troops and transport afforded excellent targets to the airmen, who took full advantage of their opportunities, despite the unfavorable weather. Over thirty guns, which bombs and machine guns from the air had forced the enemy to abandon, were captured by a battalion of the 25th Division near Le Preseau."

Sir Douglas Haig in his Victory Dispatch says that the Royal Air Forces between January 1, 1918 and the Armistice destroyed 2953 hostile airplanes and 241 German balloons. Nearly

1200 more enemy machines were driven down out of control.

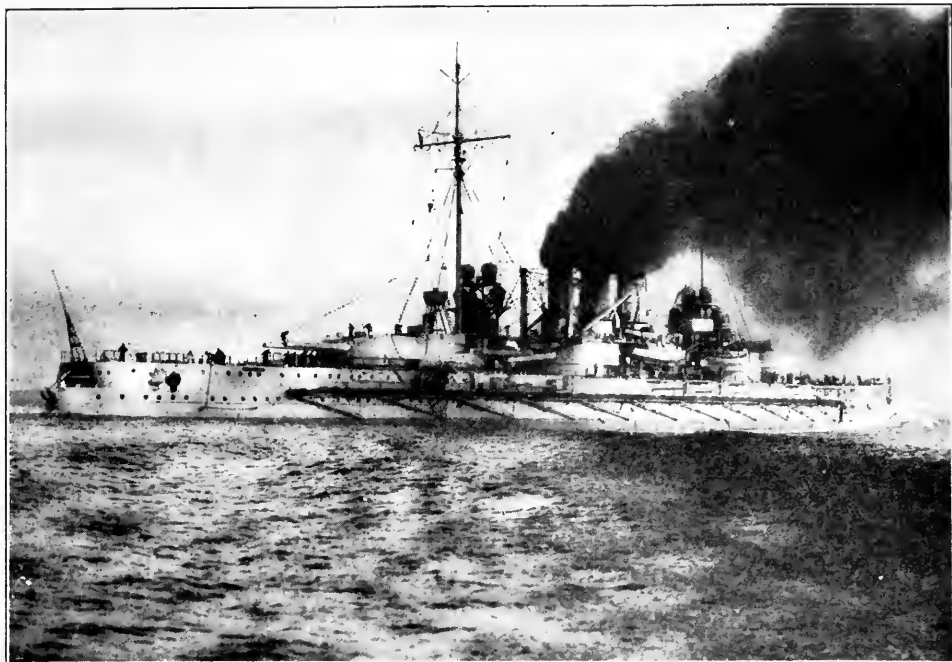
Estimates of the aircraft strength on the front were always uncertain, due to variation in the estimates of the number of planes in a squadron, but one estimate of the Allied strength on November 11, 1918, is as follows:

France	3000
Great Britain	2100
United States	740
Italy	600
	<hr/>
	6440

These figures represent fighting planes equipped ready for service, but do not include replacement machines at the front or in depôts, or training machines in France. Many other thousands had crashed to the ground or had been superseded by better models. The total number of machines constructed is unknown.

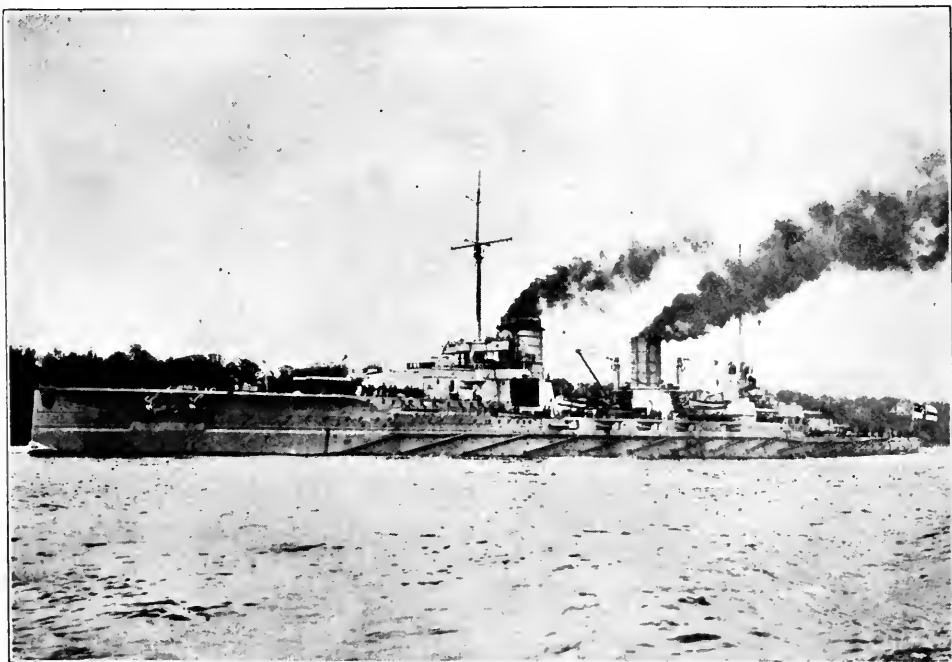
### THE AIR SERVICE VALUABLE ON EVERY FRONT.

Though more machines were used upon the Western Front than elsewhere, airmen assisted on every front. On the Eastern and Italian Fronts, at Saloniki, in Mesopotamia, in Egypt, in the Balkans, and in the African campaigns, the Air Service was a valuable arm. In no other branch was so much progress made, and in daring it was unsurpassed.



#### ONE OF A MIGHTY QUARTETTE OF GERMAN DREADNOUGHTS

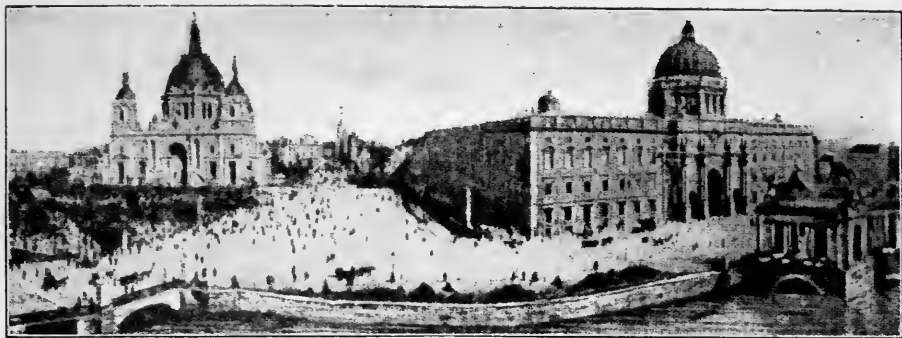
The Thüringen, the Ostfriesland, the Helgoland and the Oldenburg were all constructed according to the same plans and were completed only a few years before the beginning of the Great War. Each carried ten 12-inch and twelve 6-inch guns, and had six torpedo tubes. The Ostfriesland, badly injured in the Jutland fight, was turned over to the United States, to be studied by the naval constructors.



#### THE PRIDE OF THE GERMAN NAVY

When the battle cruiser Seydlitz was laid down in 1910 the Germans believed that it would be an exceedingly successful type. It had not only a thick armor belt but also carried ten 11-inch guns, fourteen 6-inch, and four torpedo tubes. The engine power was nevertheless high enough to produce a speed of 26.5 knots.

Ruschin.



Berlin's New Cathedral and the Royal Palace

## CHAPTER LVII

# The German Empire at War

## THE ATTEMPT TO MOBILIZE ALL THE FACTORS IN NATIONAL LIFE FOR THE WAR

"WHAT made this war different from all others was the manner in which the nations supported and reinforced their armed forces with all the resources at their disposal," declares General Ludendorff. And he continues, "It was impossible to distinguish where the sphere of the army and navy began and that of the people ended. Army and people were one. The world witnessed the War of Nations in the most literal sense of the word. The great powers of the earth faced one another in united concentrated strength."

**GENERAL LUDENDORFF BLAMES THE CIVIL GOVERNMENT FOR THE GERMAN DEFEAT.**

In reviewing his country's experiences, the German commander makes clear his own conviction that the responsibility for failure lay largely with the government at Berlin, which, in a struggle demanding the utmost effort of every individual, kept the people in ignorance of the supreme necessity resting upon them. He accuses the heads of government of being unable "to steel their wills to the point of magnetizing the whole nation and directing its life and thought to the single idea of war and victory," an accomplishment which was achieved by "the great democracies of the Entente."

**VON TIRPITZ JOINS IN DENOUNCING THE CIVIL ADMINISTRATION.**

Because of the failure of the War Chancellors, the former Chief of Staff has explained that "the mind of the German people remained rudderless and uncaptured, the prey of every influence that came." Under another metaphor, Admiral von Tirpitz, when fretting in enforced inactivity, expressed the same feeling. "Germany was," he said, "as in Luther's day, 'a fine horse, needing but one thing, a rider'." In the first months of the war the Admiral groaned with dismay over the Chancellor "oscillating in murky uncertainty," longed to have "Fredericus Rex" come down from heaven with his walking-stick, and wondered how Bismarck could refrain from stepping off his pedestal to set things right. His indignation and apprehension burst forth in words like these: "Such a lack of strong personality in the upper ranks at a time when the nation's achievement is so colossal, is astounding, and demonstrates a great blot on our statecraft, which will avenge itself bitterly, sooner or later." He went on: "Perhaps the people and the power of the people will save us. It is all up now with the rule of caste and class. Victory or defeat, we shall get pure democracy."

These, then, were the views of the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

military leader and the Naval Secretary of State, as to the incompetency of the political leaders of their country. The former, pinning all his faith to the ideal of "an inflexible and centralized system of Imperial Government, which in its essence must be military" (the words are not his own), used his influence to energize the political heads, while he bemoaned their lack of comprehension and control. As for the Admiral, frothing and fuming because his fleet, the result of his life's labor, was being kept in "cotton wool," he assures us that he was frequently attacked as a pessimist because he was the only officer in the G. H. Q. who did not believe that the war would be over before April 1, 1915.

### THE WORLD THOUGHT GERMANY A MARVEL OF EFFICIENCY.

But the spectacle presented to the world at large gave a far different impression. It showed no sign of vacillation, uncertainty, discord, or division. There appeared, instead, solid ranks of determined, efficient military millions, excellently prepared, powerfully equipped, stepping confidently forward to anticipated conquest. Nor were the unity and enthusiasm of the people only apparent. The first reaction of the nation was an eager offering of their energies to the work of defending their land from the attacks of malevolent foes (for so were they led to regard the war). In an after-war article a German writer assures us that the German people entered the conflict "an absolute unit." And General Ludendorff, looking back with the perspective furnished by three years of hard struggle, wrote, "In 1914 we were aglow with patriotism, self-sacrifice, and confidence in our own strength. We now (in 1917) needed fresh energy and impulse to make the German people forget the years of suffering and distress, of bitterness and disappointment; replenish it with ardor, strength, and confidence, and enable it to imbue its fighting forces with fresh enthusiasm."

In 1916, in his paper, *Die Hilfe*, Herr Friedrich Naumann published an article frankly acknowledging the change

in spirit resulting from two years of experience that had opened men's eyes to what war really is—years in which death and privation greater than the imagination could conceive had come to dwell among them. "Hence," he said, "the impression easily arises that one has been pushed into something which one did not really desire." In this way, according



"AUF WIEDERSEHEN"

to his explanation, had been bred a distrust of the small for the great, a feeling that the people at the top had needed the war and had required those in the lower ranks to bear the heavy burden. A soldier of the Landsturm was quoted as saying, "It must be explained to the people quite simply and intelligibly why they are still fighting, because they do not know."

### THE TRIALS WHICH BROKE THE GERMAN UNITY.

Between the days when the populace jubilantly turned their faces toward the war-god and followed his beckoning finger, in the expectation of a brief and successful campaign, and those later days when grief and care and de-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

jection had closed in about them, lay months of varied pursuits and strange developments. Instead of *der Tag* ("the day") and *der Krieg* ("the war"), words that sang themselves into many conversations in the early phases of the great experience, were heard wistful or grumbling murmurs of *Friede* ("peace"), *Essen* ("food") and *Steuern* ("taxes").

### THE WHOLE INDUSTRIAL SYSTEM AT THE SERVICE OF THE STATE.

The advantages of a highly developed military system were demonstrated in the adjustment to war conditions that at once took place in the Empire. The course of civil life fell under direction by local military authorities as minute and systematic as that of the army's movements under



ANTON LANG, POTTER, AT HIS BENCH

To Oberammergau in the beautiful Bavarian highlands the war brought loss and sorrow as to other villages. But the rumors that reached the outer world were not all true. Though other Langs and their neighbors fought and fell, Anton Lang, known as widely as the Passion Play in which he had been the *Christus*, was living quietly at home. So were others of the older characters, reported to have been killed.

Underwood & Underwood

Must we conclude that the heart of the people lacked the "spirit that quickeneth"? An American, in close touch with the life of the country, has said, "Somehow the German always made me feel that his war determination had been organized for him." There was firm foundation for such an impression in the stern control of the press and the people's unquestioning acceptance of its statements; in the official regulation of flag-flying and celebration; in the ubiquitous warnings against spies; and in the careful marshalling of all neutrals resident in the country.

its officers; for the whole machinery of the State was placed under military disposal at once, and the industrial life of the nation had to be reorganized to serve the purposes of war. This was comparatively simple in a land where every male citizen of military age was a potential soldier. General von Falkenhayn claims, "The adjustment of science and engineering, the reconstruction of the whole of industry in the interests of the war, with due regard for their indispensable work, took place almost noiselessly, so that they were accomplished before the enemy quite knew what was happening."

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The concentration of interest and effort on the one, new, all-important objective required the cutting off of non-essentials. For the efficient control and distribution of labor a joint industrial committee for the Empire was formed, with special separate committees for the special industries. By means of good labor exchanges, and with the presence of military force to prevent any serious trouble, the changes were effected successfully. One new feature in the industrial situation in Germany, as in other countries, was the introduction into many occupations of women in considerable numbers. In spite of the efficiency of the labor system, unemployment was a serious problem, especially during the first months of the war.

### THE FAR-REACHING EFFECTS OF THE RATHENAU PLAN.

As Germany was not economically prepared for a long struggle of the tremendous dimensions prescribed by modern war plans, and as the intervention of England meant inevitably a breaking off of most of the foreign trade, it became immediately necessary to take thought about supplies of food and of raw materials. Every scrap must serve to the utmost of its usefulness. What was in the country must be kept, and plans must be made for securing as much as might be had from conquered areas and from neutral sources.

Under the advice and direction of Dr. Walter Rathenau, who was at the head of an extensive electrical company, a remarkable economic mobilization was worked out. A bureau, with thirty-six sub-divisions, was created in connection with the Ministry of War. First, the total resources of the country were investigated and recorded. The distribution and use of all raw materials and half-manufactured products were carefully considered and planned. New and improved methods were sought to increase and hasten production. In cases where the materials were likely to fail, with outside supplies cut off, chemists were set at work on the problem of producing substitutes. The official personnel for so great an

undertaking was necessarily very large. Not without questioning and opposition was the new régime accepted in the industrial world, but "matters were arranged" and the great machinery of economic dictatorship set in motion.

### HOW THE PLAN WORKED OUT IN TYPICAL CASES.

In practical operation the plan was somewhat as follows. The government took into its own hands all establishments and processes that might be adapted to war uses, all raw material already in the possession of manufacturers and dealers, all administrators and scientists with specialized ability for solving the problems of the time. The industries were classified and an inventory of all stock was made. "Then to a manufacturer of cloth, or metal, the dictator would say: 'Your factory and your stock of raw material are now absolutely in the hands of the State. In order that the transition may not be too violent, you may have 10 per cent of your own raw material for private use during January and 5 per cent during February; after that you are to fill only war orders for the State.'"

When the establishments and their specially-trained brains had been commandeered by the government, manufacturers were called upon to turn the attention of their laboratory workers toward the production of certain needed materials or their substitutes. At different times, consultations upon the results of their experiments were held. In some cases extraordinary success was achieved; in others, the problem was too difficult to be satisfactorily worked out. In the matter of nickel and rubber, both of which were very scarce, there were no very helpful results. However, substitutes were found which could be used instead of cotton in manufacturing high explosives; a chemical equivalent of saltpetre, obtained from nitrogen gas, relieved the situation when it became impossible to get the usual supplies of saltpetre from South America; and zinc wire was successfully used instead of copper for conducting electricity.



#### WORKING HAND IN HAND WITH THE ARMY

Great numbers of women were employed in the munition factories where they had at least the protection of fire-proof buildings. The workers shown here were occupied in preparing wicker cases as receptacles for heavy shells. They had become a part of "the impelling force behind Germany's soldier millions."



#### STEPPING INTO THE BREACH

From the amused interest shown by the onlookers we may conclude that this picture was made before the sight of women workers employed at men's tasks had become familiar. As the men were drawn off for service at the front, their posts were taken by women, until no one was surprised to see Frau Fensterputzerin ("Mrs. Window Cleaner"), Frau Kneiperin ("Mrs. Ticket Puncher"), or Frau Briefträgerin ("Mrs. Letter Carrier").

Henry Ruschin



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE CHEMICAL INDUSTRY THE MOST SUCCESSFUL OF ALL.

Dr. Rathenau himself says of the chemical industry that, in spite of the difficulty it had in accommodating itself to "the first measures which had to be taken, it has perhaps achieved the highest place among our war industries for boldness, initiative, and inventive power. Nearly every week," he continues, "produced new arrangements. We began with metals, and after that came chemicals, jute, wool, worsted goods, India rubber, cotton, leather, skins, flax, linen and horse-hair. These industries were arranged partly on the basis of limited companies, partly on the basis of discount companies."

The War Companies formed by the German banks for the various industries received orders from the State, placed contracts with manufacturers, attended to the buying and selling of raw materials, and financed the business at a regulated rate of profit. It is estimated that, before long, eighty per cent of the German industries were engaged either directly or indirectly in the service of war.

### THE ATTEMPT TO ERADICATE WAR-PROFITEERING.

The scandal of war-profiteering next demanded attention from the government, which promised to levy special taxes upon war profits after the war. Ludendorff frankly admits that self-seeking and profit-hunting were firmly rooted. There is a note of explanation, perhaps of apology, in Dr. Rathenau's statements published in 1916:—"We have accepted the war orders, not to enrich ourselves, but partly to replace our lost peace orders and, above all, to serve the nation. We would not have been able to do this upon such a big scale if we had not had at our disposal the means laid up as the result of a careful policy of dividend distribution extending over many years."

And, further, "We all approve of the tax on war profits because no one should enrich himself through the war. During the war, when thousands are laying down their lives and other thousands sacrificing their property,

comes the time for retrenchment, reflection and renunciation. Nevertheless, the fiscal screw should not be turned too far. The strength of our industry depends upon bold enterprise, and the confidence of this daring spirit in the future should not be diminished too much."

### PREPARATIONS TO DEVELOP BUSINESS AFTER THE WAR.

The last sentence indicates a policy that concerned the business leaders in the country even in the midst of war conditions and pursuits. They were looking forward to readjustments after the return of peace. How Germany would hold her own in a world where she had created so much hostility toward herself was no simple problem.

To meet such disadvantages as resuming trade with a greatly depreciated currency, steps were taken toward developing industrial co-operation on an unprecedented and enormous scale. The government made announcement that comprehensive industrial associations would not only receive State support but that their formation would be forwarded. An "Imperial Commissioner" for after-the-war trade problems was appointed. Syndication proceeded with unusual rapidity and assumed greater proportions than before. An instance of this was the practical combination of all the aniline dyes syndicates into one body. Another was the development of huge coal combinations by Germans in Austria.

Industry, finance and shipping, too, were brought into close union, as when a coal merchant of importance became connected with the Hamburg-Amerika and North-German Lloyd lines. Men prominent as directors of banks became as well directors of great shipping companies. Plans were organized for building up the Mercantile Marine. "But it was with increasingly heavy hearts that the German industrialists pursued *preparations for victory that would square ill with defeat*, and made ready for the end of what Herr Ballin in June, 1916, impatiently described as 'the greatest, bloodiest, and also stupidest war in history'."



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

**L**UDENDORFF FINDS THIS ELABORATE ORGANIZATION UNSATISFACTORY.

Broad, complicated and systematic as was the organization of the nation's life, it did not reach up to the ideal of General Ludendorff for one vast army of the whole people under military control and discipline. His plea was, "It is necessary to throw into the scale the last ounce of our strength, either in

anxiety. He advocated an Auxiliary Service act that would include the work of women.

**T**HE AUXILIARY SERVICE BILL UNSATISFACTORY TO THE ARMY CHIEFS.

When the Auxiliary Service bill was passed by the Reichstag, in December, 1916, Ludendorff declared it to be "neither fish nor fowl" and not at all what the Supreme Army Command had



THE GRAND DUCHESS OF BADEN IN RED CROSS SERVICE

The forces of the German Red Cross were mobilized on the very day of the national military mobilization. They were systematically organized for service in the field and at home. Beside the sections working for the sick and wounded of the army, there were special departments for raising funds, for securing the welfare of prisoners for dealing with tuberculosis and other diseases and for producing better sanitary conditions in homes. Ruschin

the fighting line or behind the lines, in munitions work or other work at home or in government service."

Ludendorff found the system of control at home defective and unsatisfactory, and complained, as reports of shirking came to his ears, "I never was able to feel that in this respect things were as they should be for the sake of morale in the fields and at home." He felt that injustice was done the soldiers in that they received less for their services than did the workmen at home. Moreover, the separation allowances for their families were so small as to increase the burden of

desired. "For two years on end" he kept writing to the government concerning the amendment of the act and other measures for rounding up shirkers and slackers so as to release men for reinforcement of the fighting troops.

The bill created an Office of War (*Kriegsamt*) and called for the enrollment of men from sixteen to sixty years of age. Women were not to be called upon except as volunteers. In fact, in the case of men's work compulsion was to be reserved as a last resource in case volunteers did not "answer in sufficient measure" to the call.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Financially Germany's position was different from that of other countries at war, since she was borrowing not from outside but from her own members. When it came to a question of whether the war loans were a good investment, the answer seemed to lie with the investors themselves. If they could pay their taxes, the loans were good. As someone has expressed

countries. The government itself made purchases of all necessities. Banks no longer were held to the obligation of giving gold in exchange for paper, and paper money was made legal tender. The stores of gold inspired in people and officials feelings of pride and joy.

Dr. Helfferich, who in 1915 assumed control of the Treasury, gleefully announced in the Reichstag: "The money we use, we do not use up, it is with money as with the railroads which bring us the things we need. As the railroad cars roll along, well filled, to their destinations, so the money rolls out of the Imperial Bank, and flows back into it again by way of the war loans."

Dr. Helfferich considered Great Britain's war taxation methods "antiquated" and aimed to raise the taxes in Germany only enough to keep the balance in the ordinary Imperial Budget. But the real basis of his structure was the success of German arms. All was to be made right by the indemnities to be paid into the German coffers by conquered foes after the war had been won. "The leaden weight of billions," said Herr Helfferich, "has been earned by the instigators of this war; in the future, let them, rather than we, drag them about after them." Those "instigators" he represented (in August, 1915,) as "still struggling against the thought that their cause was lost."

### METALLIC MONEY DISAPPEARS ENTIRELY FROM CIRCULATION.

But "the more Dr. Helfferich explained German finance the greater was the depreciation of the mark in all neutral countries." It dropped until it "lost all relation to the gold standard." In 1915 and part of 1916 there was an appearance of prosperity owing to the large quantities of money in circulation—an "illusion of money prosperity which invariably accompanies currency inflation." No moratorium had been announced but special loan institutions had arisen and War credit banks had been established especially for the benefit of small traders. These, with other devices,



DR. HELFFERICH,

who in 1915 succeeded Herr Kühn in control of the Treasury, was a director of the Deutsche Bank, with a business man's point of view.

it, each was signing his own note. There was no speculation in war loans, although the business on the Boerse continued active.

### DOCTOR HELFFERICH AND THE GERMAN FINANCIAL SITUATION.

The country's "war chest," well filled with gold and silver accumulated in past years, was passed over to the Imperial Bank, and measures were taken to keep the store from depletion. Gold was hoarded at the Reichsbank; an embargo on gold set restrictions on private trading and led to the employment of paper in payment for commodities purchased from foreign



**GOLD AND SILVER OFFERINGS**

The collections for war charities were so continuous that one woman living in Berlin said almost every day was tag day there. The gold collection is said to have been started by the Empress. The cash obtained for the gold and silver presented in this offering was to be used for needy widows and orphans.



**FOOD FOR THE CRUCIBLES OF MARS**

Out of the homes of high and low came every variety of trinket and utensil made of metal, surrendered at the call of the Government, to be molten into a common mass that would eventually be shaped into guns and shells and bullets. The school made a convenient collecting station, and the teacher's desk became a sort of altar of sacrifice, when household gods gave way before the presence of Mars.

Pictures, Henry Ruschin

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

helped to sustain confidence for a time.

As the war went on and difficulties thickened, money conditions became less rosy. Paper money was employed more and more. Small change was very scarce. A correspondent arriving from Germany in 1917 said; "There is much put into circulation, but it disappears again immediately. No one can say precisely where it remains, but it is suspected that the agricultural population bury it in the earth in order not to have to change it for paper." Postage stamps, sometimes used in its place, were far from convenient, they so quickly got soiled, torn, or lost. As in industry, so in finance, the thought of the leaders was turned beyond wartime to the return of peace conditions. Schemes for contracting the currency, and the probability of peace loans were taken into consideration.

### THE GROWING DIFFICULTY OF THE BUSINESS OF LIVING.

As one after another the stores of essentials became low—rubber, petrol, copper, wool, cotton, leather, and, above all, foodstuffs, fats and oils—adjustment after adjustment had to be made, until a point was reached where the people's attention was almost wholly engrossed in a frantic endeavor to meet the elementary needs of living. Heels, tires and other articles made of rubber, when worn out, were replaced by other substances. One writer, speaking of the "hitherto undiscovered potentiality of a rubber tire for wear," says, "Those on taxicabs are believed now to be indestructible. They wore out nominally months ago, and are still serving, but for looks!" This was in 1915.

Wheels, once divested of their rubber tires, were equipped with tires of cement, tires of leather disks, or tires of coiled wire. Taxicabs were largely superseded by horsecabs, though only poor horses were left. The good ones had gone into war service. Pleasure riding by automobile or bicycle was early forbidden. Later, even sorely needed transport lorries were held back for lack of petrol or proper lubricants.

When at last benzol had to be substituted for petrol, motor service and air service were greatly reduced in efficiency. Scarcity of oil meant long unlighted winter nights in country regions, imposing a condition of forced inaction that darkened mind and spirits. When to this discomfort was added cold, owing to difficulty in obtaining coal, the pulse fell lower yet. The question of coal, as we shall see, was one of transportation rather than of actual supply.

### COLLECTIONS OF METALS, USEFUL IN MAKING MUNITIONS.

The first official collection was made in the autumn of 1915, when metals of military value were carried from hearths and shrines to be melted and moulded into instruments of death. Kitchens gave up their brass oven-doors, which had to be replaced by iron, their kettles and pots and pans; public buildings were stripped of their copper roofs; churches lost their bells, that the foundries might be fed. It has been estimated that the kitchens and roofs of Germany had stored in them enough copper and brass to furnish a supply for two years. As copper roofing had been very popular, great quantities of copper had been imported for that use. One of the buildings unroofed for its metal hoard was the Rathaus at Bremen.

The contributions were paid for by weight without any consideration of their artistic value, though heirlooms were sometimes allowed to remain in their owners' possession. As the demand for metals kept in advance of supplies, however, the requisitions became more and more severe and searching, until copper articles had entirely disappeared from private houses. A Swedish lady tells an incident that she witnessed in Berlin, at a baker's. Two policemen came into the shop and began unscrewing some brass trays which were used for displaying cakes, whereupon the baker shouted to them in excitement: "Go across to the Prince in the castle yonder, and take the door-handles from his stable doors, which have twice as much copper in them as my trays, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

leave me my things which I need for my business." But the Prince was a Captain of the Hussars and a man of great wealth, therefore his door-handles were left in place while the baker was deprived of his trays.

### THE ATTEMPT TO SUBSTITUTE PAPER FOR COTTON.

Systematic saving (*sparsamkeit*) and officially-managed collections were the order of the day, all over the country. Children carried donations to school. Women gathered up cartloads of paper. Everyone helped to collect fruit-stones for the precious drops of oil that could be extracted from them. There were imperial metal week, imperial wool week, and imperial gold week when everyone contributed treasures and trinkets of gold, receiving in exchange others made of iron. If, as has been said, the families of war profiteers were at that very time spending extravagant sums on gold and jewels, the sacrifice made by the many seems all the more poignant and impressive.

The shortage in cotton was kept from public notice as long as possible, but when Great Britain had declared this important material absolute contraband of war the strain became acute. Trade in the commodity had to be reorganized and only absolutely necessary cotton fabrics might be manufactured. By February, 1916, textile manufactures were brought under government control. Further steps included the control of clothing, distribution by ticket, and the official regulation of the length of material allowed for each garment. Fairly satisfactory substitutes for cotton to be used for high explosives were discovered, as we have seen. By 1917, fabrics made of paper were being made up into children's garments and workmen's blouses. Cellulose, thistles and hair were other substitutes used in manufacturing cloth. These textiles

were not durable but they served the immediate purpose.

The pride and interest of the nation were for a time engaged and held by the exhibitions of skill and efficiency in adaptation which they witnessed;—electrical works turned into munition factories, shells manufactured in the place of machinery, field kitchens produced by boiler makers, and water-



HINDENBURG SERVING THE RED CROSS

Crowds repaired to the Tiergarten in Berlin to drive nails into the giant wooden figure of their hero. For the privilege of adding a gold nail, one paid ten marks; for a silver nail, five marks; for an iron nail, one mark.

N. Y. Times

proof clothing put forth by umbrella manufacturers. Until real want and suffering laid hold upon body and mind, the people were pleased with the illusion of their country's self-sufficiency.

### THE GROWING SCARCITY OF CLOTHES BRINGS LEGISLATION.

When on February 1, 1916, the State took over control of textiles, part of the clothing industry was covered, too. Certain stocks were requisitioned at prices fixed by the Imperial Arbitration Office. These in-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

cluded such things as blankets, bedding, other household linen, and handkerchiefs, as well as clothing that could be used for the army, navy, men in civil service and prisoners of war. From this time uniforms were no longer issued to railway employes. A month or two later, the maximum length of material for each article of dress for women and children was prescribed by the Prussian Ministry of War, and a detailed table was drawn up by a committee of specialists.

Already, an appeal had been made to the women of Germany to show their patriotism by wearing garments that would require less material than those in fashion. Plates and model costumes were used in an effort to popularize a revival of old Viennese styles. An economical *Reform-Kleid* ("reform dress"), which was advocated also, proved too ugly to survive except as food for jokes in the weeklies. Devotion to Paris leadership was hard to kill; for women still managed to get fashion sheets and fashion news by smuggling. Clothing prescription and leather shortage did not prevent their wearing full skirts and high boots; while their hats, if there was a chance, were copies of Paris models. But isolation did in time produce a difference in styles; while ingenuity was in the end put to the test in the matter of materials, as, witness, woolen curtains and blankets converted, after dyeing, into winter gowns or wraps.

### THE CLOTHES TICKET IS INTRODUCED AND THE RESTRICTIONS EXTENDED.

June 10, 1916, is the date which marks the introduction of the clothes tickets (*Bezugscheine*), the first object of which was to protect the poor by preventing the well-to-do from buying up necessary lower-priced articles. Those who could afford to do so were encouraged to buy articles of luxury at a higher price rather than goods that were in general demand. By degrees additions were made to the list of things to be obtained by ticket only, and higher-priced articles took their places there. A ticket had to be procured in the district where one lived, and the applicant seeking a ticket for

the first time must answer many questions. If the wardrobe supply could be proven insufficient, the permit would be granted. It was then placed on file. It was non-transferable and could be used for only the sort of merchandise indicated upon it. Separate tickets must be secured for different articles. The clothes ticket bore, in all seriousness, the notice that it was "good only in the German Empire."

Throughout 1916 the system was expanding, until in the autumn, there was a general stocktaking of the clothing supplies in the whole country. By Christmas time, trade in second-hand clothing, linen and footwear came into the hands of the State. Even transactions in old clothes were carried on by local authorities, and only by means of permits. When a man bought a new suit he was required to give up his old one to be put in condition for the use of some returned soldier.

It was natural that 1917 should bring more stringent ruling. Permits for underwear and stockings were hard to obtain. The allowance of stockings for each person was two pairs in three months. In April, shoes were included in the ticket system, with not more than two pairs a year permitted to an individual. The poor quality of leather made this provision insufficient. None but the soldiers' shoes were good. A call was made upon the prosperous to give up any clothing and footwear they could spare. Then, an absolute maximum of all wearing apparel was established, and no one who already possessed the authorized maximum could get a permit for more. Household linen also was strictly limited. Hotels and boarding-houses were forbidden to make any additions to their stock of bed and table linen. Expensive articles which could be obtained without ticket (*ohne Bezugschein*) were displayed and advertised in the hope of diverting buyers from the diminishing stock of things listed.

### THE SUPPLY OF FOOD BEGINS TO BE INSUFFICIENT.

Every month brought some change, some added restraint, intended to furnish relief and postpone disaster.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The time came when only paper fabrics were allowed in shrouds, while shoes and stockings were positively forbidden for burials. To a people like the Germans, accustomed to having their affairs shaped by the State, compliance was easier than it would have been among a more independent and democratic public; but questions and doubts as to the causes of the war and the

must naturally be vulnerable in war." The British blockade, in spite of vehement submarine demonstrations of resistance, drove the lesson home.

German "hunger" was used as a basis of appeal to neutrals, long before actual hunger became a serious condition. So it played a part in international affairs. Meanwhile, at home, the nation was dealing with its prob-



**A CLOTHING BUREAU OF THE RED CROSS**

Among the extensive activities of the Red Cross organization, provision for orphans and other needy ones was included. To its doors came those who could spare, bringing garments and other useful donations. To the same doors came those who had need of help, receiving frocks, cloaks, shoes or undergarments that could not be supplied at home under war conditions. Hosts of devoted women gave their time to such helpful work.

Henry Ruschin

reasons for its prolongation grew as daily life grew more and more bitter with hardship.

Among the experiences that made for bitterness and gloom none worked more direfully than the fear that arose from a steady contraction of food supplies. At the outset, of course, no such life-and-death struggle was foreseen. But, long before the guns of the Allies ceased to speak on the battle front, the German people were learning the truth of the saying: "A food-importing nation that does not absolutely control the paths by which its nourishment reaches it from outside

lems in public and in private, meeting them sometimes wisely, sometimes with the unwisdom and injustice of partisan favoritism; sometimes courageously, and again with dismal or ugly complaining.

### **THE FARMERS REFUSE TO SELL AT THE PRICES FIXED.**

After a census of the country's supplies had been taken, as a first step toward conservation, the authorities in the autumn of 1914 issued a statement declaring: "We have bread and corn enough to feed the Army and the people until the next harvest. We must be sparing with our supplies in

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

order to start the next harvest year with the necessary reserves. We desire to be able to see the war through under all circumstances until we have won the certainty of a permanent peace." In November a scheme of maximum prices was established on the basis of somewhat over fifty dollars as the cost of a ton of rye in Berlin, prices varying with the distance from the source of supply. At this time, too, there was a beginning of the bakery restrictions, of which so much was heard later, when German "war bread" (*Kriegsbrot*) became almost a symbol. The first instructions as to the ingredients of the new bread were that at least ten per cent of rye should be put into wheat bread and at least five per cent of potato into rye bread. It was allowable to use as much as thirty per cent of potato in bread.

Weaknesses in the new system became apparent at once, when farmers withheld their stocks from market, and dealers chose to send supplies to the markets where the prices were highest (the difference in prices had no true relation to the cost of transportation). Farmers were not forced to keep the markets supplied, due to the influence of the agrarian element in the government where it was treated "too tenderly." It was said of this class, "The agrarian, the great Junker of Prussia, not only will not make sacrifices, but stubbornly insists upon wringing every pfennig of misery money from the nation which has boasted to the world that its patriotism was unselfish and unrivaled."

Landed farmers continued to maintain large stocks of cattle and pigs, feeding them (now that the fodder supply from Russia had been cut off) grain that should have been used for the food of human beings, but smaller proprietors found it impossible to feed their stock and so were compelled to kill the animals.

### THE COMMITTEE ON PIGS MAKES A GRAVE MISTAKE.

A striking mistake was the killing of too many pigs at the start. It was recommended by a committee that as many as sixty-five per cent of the

swine in the country be disposed of, in order to save the skim milk and butter-milk (albuminous foods) ordinarily fed to them. There resulted, as one writer expresses it, "first, a glut of pork, and months afterward a famine of fat." The same writer notes this lapse as a proof that German efficiency is not infallible. He says: "If you had seen, shortly after the beginning of the war, a swine conference in Berlin, at which statisticians, physicists, chemists, agriculturists, commerzienrats, and one government official sat down to determine just how many hogs would have to be killed at once to effect a permanent equilibrium between vegetable and animal food for men, with the certainty that their conclusion would be accepted as scientific and acted upon accordingly, you would have said, 'That is German efficiency.' And so it was. But they killed too many hogs, and were sorry, because new problems arose on that account, notably the problem of fat."

More than a little waste resulted, owing to hasty and careless dressing of the meat. The public, notwithstanding, was cheered by the plentiful store of pork, since they felt no anticipation of the evil days to come when there would be so few pigs that the dearth of fats would make of commonest soap a rare luxury. In those later days of want exhortations were placarded in country places, such as:—

### "FATTEN PIGS

"Fat is an essential for soldiers and hard workers. Not to keep and fatten pigs if you are able to do so is treason to the Fatherland. No pen empty—every pen full."

And the words were an offense to the small farmer who could not keep pigs or cattle because of lack of feed for them.

### HOW BREAD TICKETS WERE ISSUED AND MANAGED.

After the statisticians and other specialists had determined upon the apportionment of food materials, various plans for regulating the existing supplies were tried. Before the end



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of the year, a War Corn Company (*Kriegsgetreidegesellschaft*) was formed—the directors including industrial magnates and representatives of the State. When, in January, the government seized the corn supplies, the stocks thus acquired passed into the possession of the War Corn Company or of local municipal organizations, to be thence distributed as was judged

where about two thousand workers persisted for two hours in showing their disapproval. The form of the bread ticket, also, varied. It was divided into sections, so that rolls or small loaves might be bought instead of a single large loaf; and at the bottom of the card was a flour ticket. One had a choice between a supply of flour and a supply of bread. At one time the



**SOLDIERS ON GUARD OVER BERLIN STORES**

When provisions grew scarce and hard to get, so that one must wait in line long hours for a scant supply that would be quickly used up, the problem of obtaining food became a weariness of the flesh and a vexation of the spirit. The futile expedient of rioting was tried, with broken windows, wrecked stalls and ruined goods as a result. But the disorder was soon suppressed by police and military control.

best. After some experimenting in methods for administering a uniform bread ration, "bread tickets" were adopted, at which time a long statement of explanation to the public appealed to every individual to remember that "conscientious obedience to the regulations is a grave and sacred duty to the Fatherland."

The first bread ration allowed a little over seven ounces a day to each person. The quantity was changed from time to time, until a sharp reduction, in May, 1917, in the season before green vegetables were to be had, caused a demonstration in Unter den Linden,

butter card was placed in the middle of the bread card, and again separate tickets were used. In order to get bread at a restaurant or a boarding-house it was necessary to produce one's ticket, and be sure that one was not given short weight. But, when any one accepted an invitation to a meal, he carried his bread and butter with him.

**THEY TALK NOT OF WAR OR OF PEACE,  
BUT ONLY OF BUTTER."**

Not until the autumn of 1915, when harvests were bad and fats and oils were getting very scarce, did conditions begin to press hard. Super-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

vision of prices was taken in hand with new system; local authorities were granted larger powers, especially for the restriction of meat consumption; and separate government offices were set up for separate articles, as for instance, the "Imperial Potato Office."

Perhaps the most widely-felt deprivation of that autumn was the lack of butter. Long lines waiting for hours in front of the shops suggested the coining of a new verb to fit the experience,—*butterstehen* ("to stand and wait for butter"). Butter absorbed a large part of the national consciousness. Indeed the *Frankfurter Zeitung* complained: "Anybody who listens to the conversations of German women, no matter to what class they belong, is constantly faced with the question of butter. It is as if these women had no other care and no other yearning except butter. They talk not of war or of peace but only of butter."

There was some rioting in places,—smashing of windows, overturning of stalls, and similar demonstrations, but none of very dangerous proportions. The police were able promptly to establish order and prevent any really serious disturbances. Soon the extension of the card system to include butter, milk, meat and soap) then, later, eggs and other groceries, reduced the crowds and thereby reduced the probability of outbreaks.

### **M** EATLESS DAYS FAIL TO SOLVE THE PROBLEM.

The initial step in restricting the consumption of meat was to assign meatless days,—Tuesdays and Fridays—when no meat was to be sold in shops or served in restaurants. Evasions of the ruling, together with the rapid reduction of the meat supply, made it necessary to adopt meat cards. These remained under local control until October, 1916, when the regulation was taken over by the State. Even then the butchers sometimes had too little meat to sell. Some of them assigned different days of the week for customers holding different numbers, and so avoided embarrassment. Eggs were substituted on the menus for pork, beef, and veal, until they, too,

became so rare that cards restricted a person to two eggs a week, and eventually to one egg in two weeks. Game was eaten by those who could get it, and poultry by those who could afford it. In a Dresden restaurant a pleasing variation was offered for a limited time when an elephant which had been hurt in the Zoo, and had to be killed, furnished elephant meat, sold without ticket. As to fish and vegetables, the former finally began to soar in price and of the vegetables the most reliable were the least palatable—onions, cabbage, and turnips (the unfailing *kohlrabi*, said to be "fine for filling up space").

Before these extreme conditions were reached, a War Nutrition Office, established in May, 1916, with Herr von Batocki at its head, was given the "right of disposal" over all stocks of necessities of life, raw materials, and other commodities, and all fodder, this right of disposal including the power to regulate trade and consumption, importation and exportation and prices. In December its functions were somewhat restricted when the War Emergency Office was formed, including a department for providing food for that part of the population engaged in war work. Herr von Batocki's task, thereafter, was to administer what was left for the old, infirm, young children, and non-working mothers.

### **M** OST OF THE SUBSTITUTES PROVIDED ARE UNPALATABLE.

Through the fall and winter, 1916-1917, the sale of canned vegetables was forbidden so that they might be saved for use in the spring before fresh vegetables were available; yet in September, 1917, the already scant food ration was dropped from twelve pounds a month to nine pounds. There was danger that the bread supply would fail before the new harvest, at a time when bread and potatoes formed the bulk of the ration. Milk, long reserved for young children and invalids, had no place in the diet of a healthy adult under forty-five. As sugar grew more and more difficult to obtain, saccharine was substituted. Candy and chocolate were costly and hard to get. Pro-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

vision was made, when possible, for sweets of some sort in the dietaries of children.

Of the many substitutes placed in the market, as the natural supplies failed, milfix (to take the place of milk); egg substitutes (in powder or capsule form); and "butter stretcher" (which, added to a quarter of a pound of butter, expanded it into a half-

### STORIES OF SMUGGLING AND OF ILLEGAL PURCHASES.

There are stories told of wealthy persons in Berlin and in Vienna who, when they were able, by paying fabulous sums, to obtain a little smuggled coffee, gave parties to their friends, occasions that were considered worthy of forming the chief topic of conversation for days following. In Austria,



UNLOADING POTATOES IN THE CITY OF BERLIN

If the potato could but have its eyes opened to its own importance in world economics, it might swell with pride, and demand to be served in nothing meaner than silver. Those were dark days, during the war, when Berlin was without potatoes. Since complaints were louder in the poorer, hungrier East-end than in the more aristocratic, royalty-loving West-end, when potatoes arrived it was expedient to supply the East-end first.

pound) proved acceptable. Meat substitutes, especially those masquerading as sausage, seem to have been far from savory; while the imitation coffee (*Kaffee-Ersatz*) is declared by an American woman to have been "the most horrible stuff anyone ever tasted with the exception of the substitute they have for tea." Nevertheless, the Germans, in their devotion to the diversions of café life, accepted the ill-tasting concoction eagerly and still sat around their little tables drinking it or letting it cool before them while they talked, probably on the painful but fascinating topic of things to eat.

particularly, coffee is said to have been as "rare as diamonds" and to have cost almost as much, if we are to believe an account of a Vienna lady's journey to Trieste to buy fifty pounds of it from a woman there for eight hundred dollars.

Smuggling and illicit buying were common performances. It was the usual thing to purchase at night through back doors at forbidden prices provisions which could be had only by card at prescribed prices by day, or perhaps could not be had at all by regular processes. One foreign resident confesses that anything could be

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

bought without a card if you knew how to do it. "Most people had crooked ways of getting things, and we all were as crooked as we had a chance to be," she adds.

Smuggling, clandestine buying at high prices, hoarding and profiteering wove a web of evils in which many of the middle class and the poor of the cities were enmeshed almost hopeless-

operated where good food was sold at low prices. In already existing food-kitchens, instituted in peace days by philanthropic persons, patronage greatly increased during wartime; while new Middle Class Kitchens and People's Kitchens, established under either municipal or private control, dispensed hot, nourishing meals to waiting women and children, day by



**A FOOD KITCHEN IN BERLIN AND SOME OF ITS PATRONS**

To feed millions of hungry mouths when the nation's larder was scantily supplied required careful co-operative planning. One solution of the problem was found in the establishment of food kitchens in the cities, where nourishing food was provided. This picture shows one of the kitchens in Berlin, with a group of young patrons.

ly; for, at its best, the official ration was far below what was adequate to support working strength. Reliable reports state that producers kept back abundant supplies for themselves; that to raise the price they held back potatoes when there were plenty; that they went so far as to unload upon a hungry public a store of potatoes (advertised to be sold without ticket and ordered in advance) so bad as to be unfit for swine.

### **PUBLIC KITCHENS ESTABLISHED IN THE PRINCIPAL CITIES.**

By way of mitigating hardship in the large cities, public kitchens were

day. Some were under the patronage of women's clubs. Some, like that of the American Chamber of Commerce, were carried on largely by the voluntary help of society women. In addition to the kitchens that had a local habitation as well as a name there was the traveling soup-kitchen, or "goulash cannon," from whose steaming cauldron were ladled out into lifted cans and pails many quarts of good hot stew along the city streets. In cases of persons who could be certified as unable to pay, the distribution was free.

Since "men cling to food habits

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

when all others disappear," it was no easy task that confronted the housewives who had to feed their families with so few of the usual food stuffs and ingredients in their larders. Lectures, practical demonstrations, experience meetings, and war cook-books, offered assistance. At first the results were not encouraging. Women came to the meeting-places "in droves, listened intently, applauded enthusiastically—and then went home and, after a brief struggle against the family tastes, gave up and tried to adhere to the pre-war dietary." But housewives' guilds, that advocated a rigid economy, finally succeeded in helping to solve some of the problems by establishing consulting and advisory bureaus and by introducing such wiles as cooking parties where new recipes were presented and tried. Unusual menus, with such dishes as beer soup, plum soup, potato and cabbage pudding, appeared in the cook-books.

### PUBLIC RESTAURANTS NEVER BETTER PATRONIZED.

Water in which potatoes had been cooked must not be thrown out but kept for making soup or gravy; to perpetuate a tea flavor, plum leaves were stewed with real tea leaves before being dried to be used as a substitute; and in some families coffee grounds were used over and over as preferable to the detestable *Kaffee-Ersatz*.

It might reasonably have been expected that public eating places would decline, as food and drink deteriorated and dwindled, but not so! Rather, they flourished under the changed conditions, as people sought solace for discomfort in their accustomed haunts. "When you cannot stand it any longer," writes a foreigner in Berlin, "you take what is left of your family and purse and go to a restaurant to eat and drink moderately, but slowly, for the whole evening." Cafés, beer-halls, restaurants and hotels, like the play-houses and opera (after a brief period

of closing), were well-filled. The famous Adlon, "where everybody goes because everybody else does," claimed, indeed, that the second winter of the war started its most prosperous year.

Though service in the beer-halls was limited and the beer was not of the best, there was full demand for what was to be gotten. In a Berlin establishment only those in chairs might be served. The customers met the difficulty by carrying camp-chairs to sit upon. And in Munich, when the beer-halls were not opened until six o'clock in the evening, the undaunted Münchenerers stood at the doors knocking out tunes with their mugs from



A BOMBFUL OF PROPAGANDA

four o'clock on.

### J EALOUSY BETWEEN THE DIFFERENT SECTIONS OF THE COUNTRY.

It must not be supposed that all parts of the country felt the strain uniformly. As a matter of fact, there was sufficient inequality to cause friction, especially with Bavaria, where the regulations of the War Nutrition Office met stubborn resistance. The Bavarians, having provided a bountiful supply of meat for the army and given up great quantities of dairy products for the use of North Germany as well as for export to neutral countries in exchange for currency, were resentful that Prussian tourists invaded their health resorts for the sake of the better food to be gotten there. Munich, where bread was better than in Berlin, and where meat, vegetables, fruit, sugar and other foods were more plentiful, had its own distributing stations for the supply of Bavaria.

While the army ration was larger and better than that of the civil population, there were times when the provisions set aside for the fighters had to be shared with those at home, a necessity which Ludendorff and the rest of the Supreme Army Command deplored. A reversal of exchange between individual civilians and soldiers came about, too. Instead of receiving parcels of food from home, the men at the front, particularly officers, sent part of their own rations to their families.

#### PRODUCTION FAILS TO INCREASE IN PROPORTION TO THE NEED.

Increased production, the only real help or salvation for the land, did not keep step with the need, in spite of exhortations by the government, in spite of war gardens in city lots, in spite of soldiers sent home on leave for sowing and planting time, in spite of the substitution of artificial nitrates for foreign manures. Discouragements and obstacles held down production. "When a man has no interest in the planting, marketing, and selling price of his produce; when he knows that what he grows may be swept away from his district without being sure that it will be of any benefit to himself and his family; when, in addition, the father or sons of the household lie buried by the Yser, the Somme, the Meuse or the Drina, it is impossible for the authorities to inspire any enthusiasm for life, let alone war, even among so docile a people as those they deal with." The fixing of maximum prices and the regulation of consumption were not enough. Without control of produce distribution to markets and without the support of the agrarian producers these measures were destined to fail of their end.

#### FOOD AND SUPPLIES DRAWN FROM THE OCCUPIED TERRITORIES.

Although to record here in detail the toll drawn by Germany from the occupied areas of Belgium, France, Poland and Serbia, is impossible, a brief glance over this phase of the history is necessary for the sake of justice and balance. Having caught some idea of the need of raw material we must look at the other side of the page,

where the ruthless seizure of raw materials is pictured. In the words of General Ludendorff the Prussian viewpoint is plainly stated:—

"In such a war it was *inevitable* that the occupied territories would have to supply raw materials. *Firmness* gradually achieved a great deal in this direction. . . . It is obvious that this involved hardship for the local populations, but equally obvious that these steps *had to be taken*." He speaks casually of seizing *all* the Belgian locomotives to relieve transportation troubles, and regrets that the Russian rolling-stock could not be used because it was of a wrong gauge. With regard to scrap metal for steel production he remarks: "We removed it from the occupied districts in large quantities. *Many a factory had to be sacrificed to our war industry*, under the pressure of the blockade and the necessities of the war, in order to furnish old iron for the steel of our weapons and ammunition. The output of steel gradually became sufficient."

#### THE EXTENT OF THE SPOILIATION OF BELGIUM AND FRANCE.

Yet he would have us feel that the German attitude was almost compassionate. "In spite of all our needs," he tells us, "we acted with a *leniency that was carried almost too far* when compared with the extreme steps taken at home." Humanitarian argument he regards as "absurd," and he deplors the political propaganda developed by the democratic foes of the government out of the unavoidable "discontent" of a populace living under a really beneficent German rule. With regard to provisions concerning education, religion and administration of justice among the conquered, he is complacency itself. "I firmly believe that only the Germans would take so much trouble in a conquered country," he asserts in telling of the legal system set up in Lithuania. And, "We went so far in our desire for toleration as to give the Jews wheaten flour for unleavened bread," he claims again. Whether this has any connection with the admission, on another page, that the Jew was an indispensable middle-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

man in getting the skins, hides, copper, brass, rags and scrap-iron that were forwarded to the Home War Department we can only conjecture.

After-war investigations and reports have made it a familiar story how thousands upon thousands of tons of wool were wrested from France and Belgium to make German uniforms or help out the home market;

that if our government were responsible for the war we should be able to bear all these terrible sacrifices?"

### FIELDS AND FORESTS OF THE OCCUPIED TERRITORY EXPLOITED.

The development of agriculture in some of the occupied territory was elaborately systematized under the control of specialists. With supplies of tractor plows and other modern



"BAA, BAA, BLACK SHEEP, HAVE YOU ANY WOOL?"

Here are more than the "three bags full," of the rhyme. By commandeering from the people of the conquered areas wool in every form (blankets, Oriental rugs, clothing, filling of mattresses, etc., as seen in the picture), ransacking houses to find it, prying even into the spaces between walls where things were sometimes hidden by desperate owners, the Germans collected thousands of tons of wool, to be used in manufacturing army supplies.

how thousands upon thousands of factories (26,000 in France alone, it is claimed) were destroyed or denuded of their machinery; how horses, cattle and hogs were carried off until in Belgium there were hardly any horses left and the diminution in the remaining live-stock had reached about one-half the original number. Was there not a bond of sympathy between the poor German countrywoman who had killed her pig because she could not feed it and the Flemish peasant whose pig had been seized to help prolong the war? "We do so long for peace," exclaimed the former. "Do you think

machinery, and horses from the artillery, the work was pushed intensively. For example, sixty per cent of the arable land in Northern France was cultivated by the German Army itself; twenty per cent, by combined labor of the army and the local peasants; the remaining twenty per cent, by the peasants alone. The army took the crops from the land cultivated by its own efforts, including half of the part operated in combination. Of the thirty per cent nominally left to the peasants, much was paid for in promissory notes, redeemable and payable after the war.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Fine forests such as those of Poland invited exploitation. From the saw-mills built there, wood and pulp for many uses went forth to the armies and to the home factories, besides the valuable by-products—resin, charcoal and chemicals. With mines in France, Belgium, Poland and Serbia yielding

somewhat by the seizure of oil-wells in Rumania. Rumania furnished so valuable an asset in foodstuffs, too, that General Ludendorff does not hesitate to say, "In the year 1917 only Rumania enabled Germany, Austria-Hungary and Constantinople to keep their heads above water."



**A WOODEN PINCUSHION**

Into wooden effigies, like this of Hindenburg, the Germans drove nails of iron, silver and gold, paying so many marks for the privilege, thereby contributing to the Red Cross funds.

coal for the Germans, the chief problem in this case was one of transportation rather than of quantity produced. Although men were called in from the army to work on the railroads and stock was commandeered wherever it could be taken, the foundries at times were retarded in their output for lack of fuel, and in many homes there was great discomfort from cold. In the cities, women trundled coal in baby carriages or any receptacles they could use. One considerable factor in the transport difficulties was the shortage of lubricants, which was mitigated

### **THE DEPORTATIONS AND THE WORK OF WAR PRISONERS.**

One of the questions to be settled in the conquered lands was whether machinery and workers should be made use of where they were or transferred to Germany. Many factories and workshops were operated in the territory itself, as, for instance, those for barbed-wire production, wood-sawing and railway work in Poland. Inhabitants, in spite of protest and resistance, were employed in cultivating the fields, laboring under military engineers, and otherwise serving the conquerors. Worse than this, on the plea of economic and social benefit for the victims, oppressed by the evils of serious "unemployment caused by the British blockade," the German authorities saw fit to deport to Germany numbers of men and women who would release from the farms and shops of the Fatherland fighters for the Kaiser's army. The unhappy lot of the French and Belgian exiles is a familiar tale. From Poland and Russia, too, additional

man-power was drawn. What conscious rectitude breathes in the statement that in these matters "the military authorities were acting from patriotic duty and not arbitrarily"!

The factor, however, that counted most toward saving the industrial life of Germany was the labor of prisoners of war, principally the Russians, who greatly outnumbered all others. Working side by side with peasant women on farms all over Germany, or doing rough labor for new constructions, they were better pleased to be busy than unoccupied.





#### ELECTRICAL TREATMENT FOR THE WOUNDED

No scientific knowledge or skill was allowed to be wasted in Germany. The specialized ability and training of scientists and surgeons were at the command of the nation that they might be devoted to the work of saving or rebuilding as much as possible of the man-power of the land. The success was remarkable.



#### ORTHOPEDIC CONTRIVANCES FOR RESTORING THE INJURED

Work for the Kriegbeschädigte (damaged by war) covered a broad field. No pains were spared in the effort to reconstruct the broken strength of the men who had been thrown out of the ranks because of injury. A surprisingly large percentage of them returned to the army. Others were prepared for usefulness in civil pursuits after proper treatment and training. The Government undertook the expense and control of this work.

Pictures, H. Ruschin

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE WAR WORK OF THE GERMAN WOMEN.

Into the posts left vacant by their men stepped the women of Germany, adapting themselves to the roughest and most unaccustomed occupations until there was perhaps no task or calling that did not claim them.



#### AN OPPORTUNITY TO SHARE

The National Women's Service League is receiving offerings to brighten the Christmas of the Berlin soldiers' wives. Many volunteer workers in the League were kept busy assorting donated articles, directing repairs and alterations, and distributing gifts.

When the schoolmasters had to go, women of education took their places; and so it happened all down the scale. Women operated street-cars and taxicabs, punched tickets at stations, cleaned windows, ran elevators, delivered milk and coal, even did heavy digging for the underground railway. They acted as letter-carriers, conductors, bill-posters, street-cleaners, and drivers of ash wagons.

While among the leisure classes there were those whose attention was still held by fashion and amusements and their own selfish concerns, the

majority were eager to be of use to their country. At first they turned to knitting and Red Cross work. Then the founding of the National Women's Service League gave broader opportunities. Work for the families of soldiers covered many activities;—investigation of conditions, relief for needs, assistance in the care and nourishment of children, arranging lucrative employment for the mothers, collecting and distributing clothing. There was work for all who offered their services, and the response to the call was generous. Other organizations provided for training society women in gardening, cooking, household management, etc. Most useful results were achieved, too, in the collecting and canning of fruit and vegetables.

#### TAKING CARE OF THE MUTILATED AND RESTORING THEM.

Of their substance the people contributed freely to the unending collections for charities. Boxes were kept on the teachers' desks that the pupils might drop in their gifts to be used for the sick or distressed. And there were crowds who flocked to drive their gold or silver or iron nails into the great wooden Hindenburg in the Tiergarten at Berlin and into other smaller effigies in various places. Many well-to-do families undertook the support of orphans or provided for the recreation of poor children, partly or fully adopting them.

Nowhere, perhaps, did Germany show greater ability than in restoring her crippled soldiers to active life. She could send a man to be torn and shattered, blinded or dismembered. Then she would strive with all the resources of science and skill to put him together again and set him to work. Wonders were performed. In many cases, the patient was restored to his own trade or given government employment. Arms and legs, fitted upon the badly maimed, enabled them

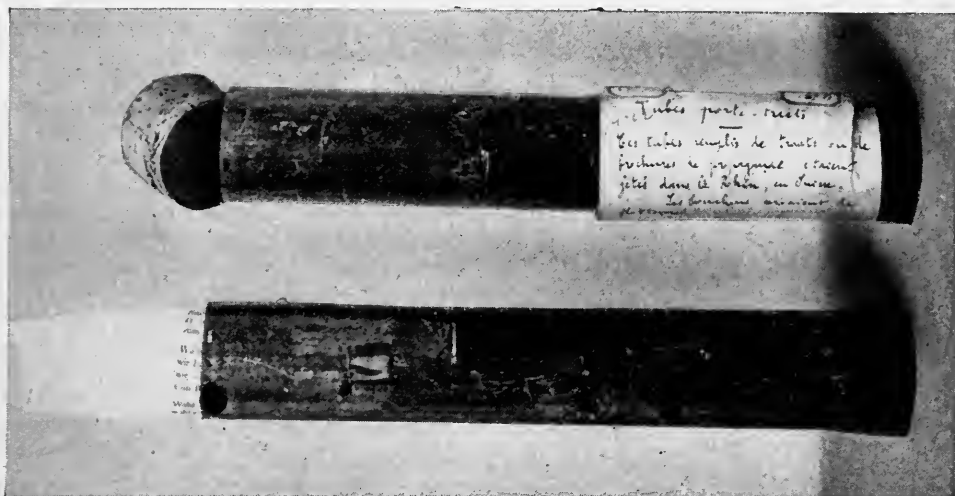
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

to resume activities. There is a case reported of a legless engineer running a fast train on an important railway. Special training was given the blinded. Training, where needed, was given without expense to the soldier; and there were new establishments that provided for the new contingencies, like a farm for one-legged men.

### WHY THE RHINE CITIES MUST BE FED FIRST.

In all the fluctuating circumstances one flaming centre was considered

times, the conditions under the driving stress of war became so unfortunate as to produce in the laborers a state of mind which was torn between hatred for England and discontent with their own hard lot. Working under martial law for eight hours a day (there were three eight-hour shifts), seven days a week, on a diet which included no fats but consisted chiefly of beans and potatoes, and sleeping, as some did, in crowded barracks, they became a lump made ready for Socialist leaven.



TUBES ENCLOSING PROPAGANDA

Propaganda played an extensive part in the war. In fact, some of the German leaders attributed their downfall in great part to the use of propaganda by the Allies. Various methods of distribution were employed by both sides. Leaflets were scattered from aeroplanes or ejected from bombs, or, as in this case, sealed in watertight containers. These particular tubes were thrown into the Rhine in Switzerland to be floated down the river.

first—the Rhenish-Westphalian cities where the war-god had his forge. There the complement of workers must be fed—more than were their brothers elsewhere, even as the fighting men on the battle-fields. In fact, they were allowed one-third more than ordinary civilians. Essen, the heart of the group of towns where the production of munitions was going on day and night, is the home of the Krupp works. This enormous plant, which had made its owner, Frau von Bohlen and Halbach (*née* Krupp), one of the wealthiest women in the world, became in war practically a Government Department. In spite of the excellence of equipment for the home life and comfort of the workers in normal

In the earlier years of the war, Hamburg, too, was a swarming hive of industry, where as many as fifteen thousand men were employed night and day, "getting ready for the Hamburg of tomorrow." The giants of the sea, the "Bismarck," of 55,000 tons, and the "Tirpitz," of 32,000 tons, grew up in the docks there, while sailor boys were in training to man an extensive merchant marine after the war. The total tonnage of new boats up to the winter of 1916 was announced to be 740,000 tons, with 100,000 additional then under construction.

### GRADUALLY UNITY AND CONCORD DISAPPEAR UNDER STRESS OF WAR.

In the first hours of the war, unity and concord, founded upon emotions

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of loyalty to the country, actuated all parties and all classes. Socialists laid aside their antagonisms to fall into line temporarily. But the years 1915 and 1916 introduced political questions that reawakened controversy and dissension; 1917 and 1918 brought actual division and disaster. Around the Chancellor, von Bethmann-Hollweg, swirled the conflicting currents of opinion, while he endeavored to keep the government firm amid the strain.

Between the Socialists, who were opposed to annexation of territory, and the National Liberals, led by Admiral von Tirpitz, who called for extreme steps to overwhelm Great Britain, the Chancellor's course was not easy to control.

The submarine controversy, as all the world knows, brought about the fall of von Tirpitz in March, 1916, when the Kaiser was forced to choose between him and Bethmann-Hollweg. The Admiral's resignation as Secretary of State for the Imperial Navy, after nineteen years in office under three Chancellors, was a circumstance that made a deep impression. Through the disputes with the United States and the various peace moves the government manœuvred. A division in the

Socialist ranks and Dr. Liebknecht's interruption of the Chancellor's speech, resulting in his court-martial and imprisonment, were significant episodes in 1916. In July of the following year von Bethmann-Hollweg, yielding to the pressure of an anti-government *bloc* in the Reichstag, resigned.

### RUMORS OF REVOLUTION SPREAD THROUGH THE LAND.

The intricacies of the political positions that followed, under the chancellorships of Dr. Michaelis, Count von Hertling and Prince Maximilian of Baden, we cannot follow here; but there was no concealing the growing spirit of unrest in the nation. Rumors of revolution were more and more persistent. Strikes and riots demanded strict policing. There were many indications that the fulfilment of a prophecy, said to have been made almost twenty years before by Carl Schurz, was drawing near. These are the words attributed to him: "I fear that some day there will be occurrences that will force the German people to wrest their destiny from the hands of the Kaiser, but by then probably it will be too late to prevent the great catastrophe."

L. MARION LOCKHART



Native Troops of the Belgian Army

## CHAPTER LVIII

# The Conquest of German East Africa

## GERMANY FINALLY LOSES A VAST COLONIAL EMPIRE AFTER DESPERATE RESISTANCE

IN a broad-lying country, barely snatched from utter wildness, where savage beasts stalking in their haunts contributed a peculiar and sensational element of hazard, the very face of nature made the game of war an adventure requiring especial fitness and prowess on the part of the players. The human participants were so few that military forces had often to be numbered by tens instead of by thousands, but there was staged, nevertheless, a scene of the World War that equaled in earnestness and courageous undertaking, though not in dimension and importance, the titanic pageant in Europe. It worked for the frustration of a vast Mittel-Afrika scheme conceived in the German Colonial Office.

### GERMAN EAST AFRICA ALMOST AN EMPIRE IN ITSELF.

From the shore of the Indian Ocean to the long, rocky-mountain-rimmed lakes of the Great Rift Valley, German East Africa covered an area of over 380,000 miles (almost twice that of Germany in Europe) including high tableland and mountain, thick forests, malarial swamps, jungles, barren stretches, and great sweeps covered with tall elephant grass. The seaboard, six hundred twenty miles in length, offered good harbors for several ports, such as Dar-es-Salaam (the capital), Tanga, Kilwa and Lindi.

But the northern section, where lie Tanga and Dar-es-Salaam, was guarded by the islands of Pemba and Zanzibar, both under British protection. Of the western lakes, the whole eastern shore of Tanganyika—more than four hundred miles—bordered the German protectorate. About one-half of beautiful and picturesque Lake Kivu was available for German use, as well as about one-fourth of Lake Nyasa.

### THE STATES WHICH BOUNDED GERMAN EAST AFRICA.

The great Victoria Nyanza, in size practically equal to Scotland, lay more than half in German territory. To the west of it Uganda, and to the east, British East Africa formed the northern land boundaries of German East Africa. The western neighbor, beyond the lakes; is Belgian Congo; while Northern Rhodesia and Nyasaland on the southwest and Portuguese East Africa (Mozambique) on the southeast, complete the tale of bordering states. Of the many rivers flowing through the region, the greater number are not adapted to navigation, and there are large areas of the country in virgin state, undeveloped and even uncultured.

### SOME OF THE COUNTRY HABITABLE BY WHITE MEN.

The part best suited for the residence of Europeans is found in the north-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

eastern districts, where the Usambara Highlands, forming a horseshoe-shaped rim of protection around a productive valley, not many miles from the sea, almost touch the frontier of British East Africa. Here, in "the garden of the colony," a group of European village communities has been developed through the private investment of German and British capital. Other such settlements are in the hills around Mrogoro, west of Dar-es-Salaam.

Two railways have been built since the opening of the twentieth century. The Usambara line runs from the sea at Tanga to Neu Moshi in the shadow of Mount Kilimanjaro, the highest peak in Africa. The Central, or Tanganyika trunk line, terminating originally at Mrogoro, was completed to its terminus on Lake Tanganyika at Kigoma (near Ujiji) in February, 1914. The introduction of the railroads, as would be expected, greatly increased the volume of export trade from a country rich in forests and in agricultural possibilities and not without minerals.

### DANGERS AND PESTS FATAL TO MAN AND BEAST.

On the British side of the border, the Uganda railway had connected Victoria Nyanza with the seaport, Mombasa, as early as 1901, although its construction had been frequently disputed and impeded by the wild creatures of the woods and river valleys. Man-eating lions nightly snatched coolies from their tents, without respect for fire or gun shots. Crocodiles snapped their trap-like jaws upon hapless bathers or drawers of water. Obstacles and impediments were on every hand. In the words of a Hindu, there were "many rocks, mountains, and dense forests abounding in lions and leopards; also buffaloes, wolves, deer, rhinoceroses, elephants, camels, and all enemies of man; gorillas, ferocious monkeys that attack men, black baboons, of giant size; . . . wild horses, wild dogs, black snakes and all animals that a hunter or sportsman could desire. The forests are so dark and dreadful that even the boldest warriors shrink from their awful depths."

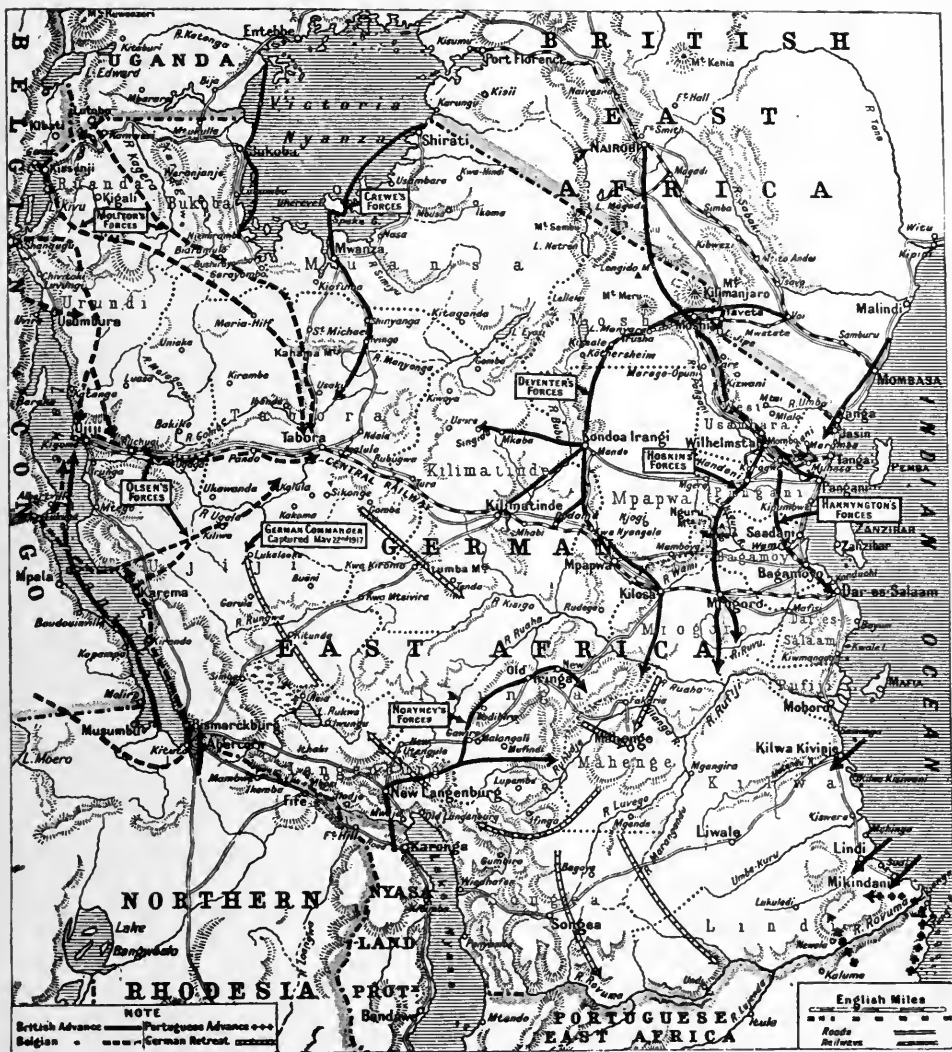
Yet this catalogue has not exhausted the terrors of the land. A British officer on duty beside Victoria Nyanza in the war, adds to the list. To quote from his letter: "Every known form of insect and some peculiar to it (the lake) alone, swarm in and around it. Tsetse fly and sleeping sickness, nine kinds of fever, each worse than the one before, revel in the district in addition to hippo and crocs, which prevent bathing on the beaches." His conclusion is, "If ever the Devil had a hand in the making of a country, this is the one he took most interest in, I fancy." Official reports confirm these impressions, as we read, for instance, that in the autumn of 1916 for a period of two months, the wastage included 10,000 horses, 10,000 mules, 11,000 oxen, 2500 donkeys; while in a single week there were 9,000 men sick in hospital.

### POPULATION OF THE COLONY AND THE MILITARY FORCES.

The population of German East Africa numbered about 8,000,000, with some 5000 whites. When the war began there were in the country visiting non-residents who had come for the opening of the completed Central Railway or Tanganyikabahn. The army that was immediately gathered together included many of these as well as members of crews of steamers that were in port, in addition to the German missionaries and residents of military age (estimated at about 3000), the military and police, native reserves and recruits, and Arabs. The Arabs had been incited to a Holy War by the German authorities, who suddenly turned from an anti-Mohammedan attitude to one of conciliatory friendliness. In all, we may place the number of troops organized under the German colors by October, 1914, at 30,000 natives and 4000 Germans. In command was Colonel von Lettow-Vorbeck who had been in Africa developing the local military organization since the spring of 1914. His able leadership, seconded by an ample initial supply of machine guns and other arms and by the strength of his native troops, kept German East Africa practically free



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



### ROUTES OF INVASION AND LINES OF GERMAN RETREAT

Here can be seen the frontiers of German East Africa, where the early border fighting took place. The general converging movement of invading forces is also plainly shown. General Smuts's force in two main columns, after the envelopment of Kilimanjaro, moved south toward the Central Railway and the Rufiji River. General Northey worked from Nyasaland north and east. Their lines approached each other near the Mahenge Plateau. Other British drives were made inland from coastal bases and, in co-operation with the Belgians, around Lake Tanganyika and Victoria Nyanza. From the northwest the Belgians pushed in upon Tabora. The southeast border the Portuguese held. The points from which General Smuts and General Northey started were 500 miles apart, and the Belgian base was 800 miles from either.

from invasion by the Allies for the first year and a half, and made it possible for the Germans to sustain the offensive during that time.

On the British frontiers of German East Africa, when the startling news of war was received, police and military bodies were recalled from distant posts,

and new forces were recruited to guard the danger points, especially the Uganda Railway, which lay perilously near the border. (The German concentration point, Moshi, was quite too close for safety.) A valuable nucleus existed in the semi-military police and the small but excellent body

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of admirably-trained native fighters, the King's African Rifles, the greater part of whom were at the time engaged in Jubaland, on a punitive expedition. These were called back to the German border, and about this centre rallied volunteers from the British and Indian settlers—a thousand or more within a fortnight. Two new regiments, the East African Mounted Rifles and the East African Regiment, took shape at once, the former becoming a really effective body. The Boer Volunteers were organized into a special separate company.

### THE NATIVES UNDER BRITISH RULE REMAIN LOYAL.

As to the probable action of the natives there was natural anxiety at first. Some of them were drawn into the ranks of the enemy—fine warriors from the Manyumwezi, the Masai, and other tribes; but the majority of those in British territory, especially the powerful Masai, remained loyal. Fears were set at rest by their offers to serve in the British army. The Arabs, too, on Zanzibar and the east coast, resisting the invitations and propaganda of their German neighbors, responded readily with financial and personal support to the necessity of the British. Among them, Lieutenant A. J. B. Wavell, who had made a pilgrimage to Mecca, was able to raise a body of recruits, who, known by the name of "Wavell's Arabs," soon made a reputation for themselves as staunch fighters.

These men who formed the thin line of resistance against German aggression—from the natives, who were bush-bred shikaris, and their officers, who had acquired skill as hunters of big game, to the settlers, who were "a sporting lot"—all had a close acquaintance with the hardships and dangers of the country. However, the available defenders of British territory in East Africa during the first three weeks probably numbered not many more than 1200. If the foe had struck with decision then, the outcome might have been serious, and there was reason for unrest until reinforcements from India could arrive.

### DESULTORY FIGHTING DURING THE FIRST FEW WEEKS.

The early fighting was of a sort not uncommon in almost any far colonial section of the British Empire. Posts were attacked and slight incursions made by small bands from each side; on the lakes and the ocean, steamers were sunk and ports were seized. The main objectives of the Germans, on the northeast, were Mombasa and the Uganda Railway, giving approach to Nairobi, the capital. The first aim of the British, beyond the defense of their own territory, was to control Dar-es-Salaam and establish naval supremacy on the lakes.

Promptly, in the second week of August, a British cruiser from Zanzibar bombarded Dar-es-Salaam ("the harbor of peace") dismantling German ships in the harbor, sinking the floating dock and a survey ship, the *Möwe*, and disabling the wireless station installed there. At the same time, on Lake Nyasa the only German steamer was disabled by a British boat. The Germans, however, were taking their first steps toward their chosen goals by seizing Taveta, close under Kilimanjaro, and Vanga, on the coast, fifty miles south of Mombasa. The arrival, on September 3, of the first reinforcements from India was opportune. Brigadier-General J. M. Stewart, who brought the troops from the East, then assumed command of the whole British force.

### THE KÖNIGSBERG FORCED TO TAKE REFUGE IN THE RUFJI RIVER.

On the southern frontier the volunteer defenders and the Rhodesian police were kept on the alert to hold their towns from capture by bodies of Germans whose numbers greatly overmatched their own. In the north, the enemy gained a tentative footing east of Victoria Nyanza, where border fighting continued at intervals with varying fortunes. But the chief effort and the chief interest centred in the section between Kilimanjaro and the ocean. Beyond the coast, indeed, the German cruiser, *Königsberg*, caused some trepidation until she was driven into the Rufiji River by the East



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Indian squadron. The damage she accomplished was the destruction, on September 20, of the Pegasus in Zanzibar harbor; she was prevented from taking part, as had been planned, in an attempt to overwhelm Mombasa.

A German attempt on Mombasa, begun on September 20, was checked at a point about twenty-five miles below the city by the determined stand of Wavell's Arabs. There, near Gazi, they held until reinforced. Then the fighting continued up to the second week in October, when the Germans withdrew. Although determined attempts to reach the Uganda Railway at Tsavo, in order to blow up the Tsavo bridge, were turned back by stiff fighting, the Germans were able to establish themselves not far from that point, as well as at Longido, northwest of Kilimanjaro (valuable as furnishing the only permanent water in a broad region), while they continued to hold Taveta.

### THE BRITISH FAIL TO TAKE TANGA BY SEA.

The coming of the second Indian Expeditionary Force, under the command of Major-General A. E. Aitken, made it possible to undertake offensive action upon German East Africa. The British transports reached Tanga on November 2, and the town was called upon to surrender. In the hours of grace that were granted before bombardment should begin, German reinforcements were hurried to the port. The fight, after a landing was made, resulted in severe losses for the British, owing to heavy machine-gun fire from the housetops and to entanglements of rope hidden in sandy paths so arranged as to release signal flags fixing the gun-range, besides assaults of bees from concealed hives. The casualties amounted to 795, nearly 150 of whom were British officers and men. It was necessary to withdraw to Mombasa.

Before the end of the year, Longido had been evacuated by the enemy and reoccupied by General Stewart; a second raid by sea had been made upon Dar-es-Salaam; and the Baganda, natives of Uganda, had established a strategic line along the Kagera River.

In 1915 there was continued fighting of the same sort on all the borders. At the end of April, the command passed into the hands of Major-General M. J. Tighe, who entered with energy upon preparations for stronger offensive measures. July was marked by the destruction of the Königsberg, which, bottled up in the Rufiji, had made a strong position on the adjacent shores,



Major-General Sir Michael Joseph Tighe, commanding in Africa from April, 1915, to February, 1916, paved the way around Kilimanjaro for General Smuts's successful campaign.

where some of her guns had been set up. When her location had been discovered by British aircraft, two river monitors were sent to bombard her. After heavy shelling on July 4 and July 11, the cruiser was entirely destroyed; but her crew, numbering about 600, and her guns went to join the land army of Colonel von Lettow-Vorbeck.

### GERMAN ATTEMPTS TO INVADE RHODESIA ARE REPULSED.

In Northern Rhodesia German attacks on Fife and Saii were repulsed with unyielding courage on the part of their garrisons, though in the latter

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

place telegraph connection had been broken down, there was scant supply of food, and water could be obtained from the river only at great peril under cover of darkness. As to the difficulties with regard to supplies and transport on this front, Viscount Buxton states: "From 1st April to 31st December, 1915, 20,000 carriers were employed in carrying over 1,000,000 pounds of supplies from distant bases, and an additional 50,000 in bringing grain from adjacent districts."

By March, 1915, British supremacy on Victoria Nyanza had been secured; but the story of the control of Lake Tanganyika (where the Belgians co-operated with their ally) involves a seemingly mad venture that was, nevertheless, carried through to success. Two motor-boats, swift and well-armed, the Mimi and the Toutou, made the journey from England to Cape Town and from Cape Town to the lake without disaster, then proceeded to work havoc among the German boats. After February, 1916, only one of any size remained, the last of the German flotilla on the lakes. This, a twin-screw steamer, the Graf von Götzen, was finally scuttled by her captain after having been bombed by a Belgian aeroplane. The introduction of motor boats and aeroplanes into the heart of Africa had been a surprise to the enemy. Some of the natives insisted upon believing that the airships were birds.

### THE DIFFICULT TRIP OF TWO MOTOR BOATS.

The trip of the motor boats from the southern point of the continent included 2300 miles by train; 150 miles by haulage over atrocious roads where the altitude varied from 2000 to 6000 feet; another short ride on trucks by rail; a 400-mile run down a river, floating under their own power; a bit of the way on lighters among rocks and shoals, and a final stage by rail. Commander Spicer Simson, in his report, pays tribute to his men and their devotion to the enterprise. He says: "Washing, and even drinking, water was voluntarily given up for use in the boilers of the traction engines in order that the

progress of the expedition should not be delayed."

For the protection of the Uganda front, General Tighe directed the capture of Bukoba on Victoria Nyanza, where the fort and the wireless installation were destroyed and valuable documents taken. But the commander's attention was most concerned with plans for invasion of the Kilimanjaro section. Because of the arid nature of the country there, it was necessary to pipe for a water supply and to build and carry tanks. The preparations made by General Tighe were so admirable as to be praised by General Smuts and, with but slight changes, carried forward on the same lines by him after he assumed command.

### GENERAL SMUTS TAKES OVER THE CHIEF COMMAND.

The change in control took place in February, 1916, after new brigades raised in South Africa had begun to arrive at Mombasa. As Sir Horace L. Smith-Dorrien, who had been appointed, was prevented by ill-health from assuming the East African leadership, General Smuts was prevailed upon to accept it. With the rank of Lieutenant-General in the British Army, he arrived on the eastern coast, February 19, to infuse with his inspiring, whole-souled enthusiasm the troops under his command and to throw his able generalship into campaigns that would rid East Africa of German armies. The first work was to reorganize the British forces, whose Indian and South African contingents held representatives from almost every continent, with a rare mixture of languages. Three divisions were formed and definite work laid out for each.

After an eighteen-day campaign for control of the border around Kilimanjaro, a concerted movement of converging forces began, with the object of pressing in upon the Germans from all sides. By consulting the map one can get a clear conception of these operations. Nearest the coast, General Smuts conducted the main column of invasion (Major-General Haskins' 1st

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Division and Major-General Brits's 3rd Division) toward Mrogoro and the Rufiji River. The 2nd Division, led by Major-General J. L. Van Deventer, advanced upon the Central Railway between Kilimatinde, and Kilosa; while from the northern end of Lake Nyasa, the reinforced troops from Rhodesia and Nyasaland under their new head, Brigadier-General Ed-

**THE GERMANS DRIVEN OUT OF ONE POSITION AFTER ANOTHER.**

The campaign around Kilimanjaro, begun on March 5, 1916, was an enveloping operation of two columns, one moving from northwest of the mountain, the other from the southeast. The latter, General Van Deventer's, advanced upon Taveta, which was evacuated on the ninth; then through the



**MAKING STRAIGHT A HIGHWAY FOR CIVILIZATION**

By such construction gangs as this was most of the labor done that opened parts of Africa to access by rail. Before General Smuts took over the command, General Tighe, in preparation for invading the Kilimanjaro region, pushed forward a branch of the Uganda Railway from Voi toward the enemy position at Taveta.

Henry Ruschin.

ward Northey, worked northeast with Neu Iringa as an objective. General Tombeur, of Belgian Congo, ready now for his first real offensive move, divided his force into separate columns, one of which operated along the eastern side of Tanganyika, while two others drove southeast upon Tabora, with the support of a British column from Victoria Nyanza, whose leader was Brigadier-General Sir Charles P. Crewe. The enemy were thus squeezed out of position after position, often escaping by some unsuspected route, concealed, even when close at hand, by the thick bush growth.

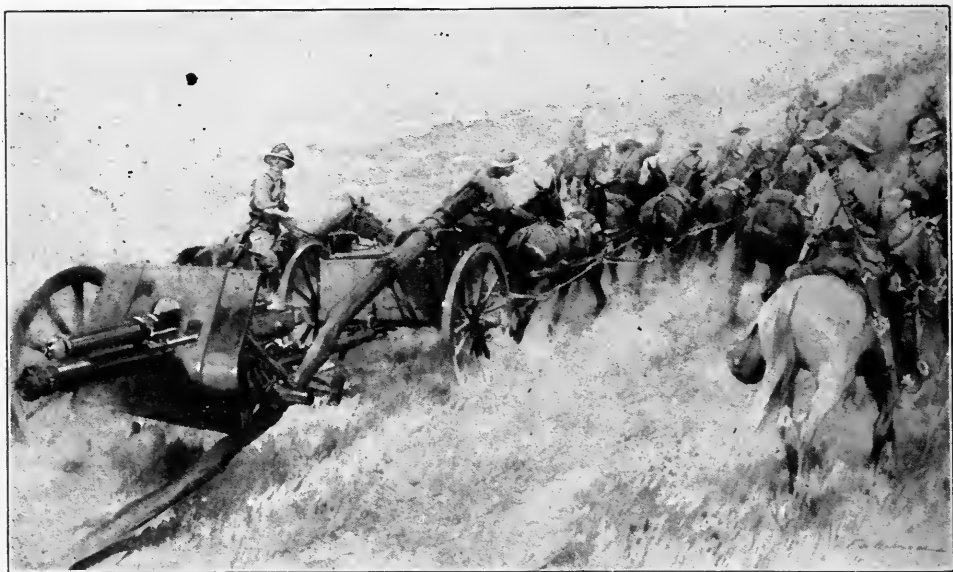
mountain pass toward Moshi, which they occupied on the thirteenth. A few days later Kahe Station, by the Pangani River, had been seized and an advance made to Arusha; but the Germans had managed to get away farther east. Now, however, a base had been established on the enemy's own soil and by quick action this had been accomplished before the rains began. The branch railway was farther extended to Kahe, to link together the Uganda and Usambara lines, thus aiding communication. The work progressed at an average of a mile a day. Headquarters were moved to Moshi.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

General Van Deventer's Division, without pausing, made a remarkable forced march across difficult country, though without adequate provisioning, to surprise the enemy at Kondoa Irangi. The position became theirs on April 19, after which they paused to recover strength, both men and horses having been thoroughly exhausted. Their movement had the effect anticipated by General Smuts, as it forced von Lettow to weaken his hold in

had taken possession of Wilhelmstal and Korogwe, whither he turned to join Sheppard's force at Handeni. They came together there on June 20, a day after Sheppard had entered the town, the Germans dropping south among the Nguru Mountains, where they began to gather together their strength. Handeni now became the seat of British General Headquarters.

By the combined efforts of land and naval forces, the coast region was



ON THREE WHEELS AND A TREE-TRUNK

Difficulties of transport were great enough, under the best conditions, in the East African treks over rough, irregular, scrubby ground; but this thirteen-pounder, having lost a wheel, is managing with an improvised runner to keep its place in the Kilimanjaro Column. It is uphill work, but neither men nor guns can be spared.

Usambara by transferring some 4000 men to the vicinity of Kondoa Irangi where a last German offensive stroke, attempted in May, ended in failure.

### THE GERMANS DRIVEN OUT OF THE USAMBARA HILLS.

General Smuts seized this moment for forcing the remaining Germans out of the Usambara Hills. His main column, including Sheppard's and Beves's brigades, pushed through heavy bush on the left bank of the unfordable Pangani River, guarded on their left by Hannington's brigade, which proceeded along the railway, while some of the King's African Rifles skirted around the Pare Mountains. By the middle of June, Hannington

cleared, during July and August, as far south as Bagamoyo. This made it possible to move the British base from Mombasa to Tanga. Meanwhile Colonel Olsen's Tanganyika division of the Belgian army on the east side of the lake, before the first week of August had secured Ujiji and Kigoma, at the western end of the Central Railway, whence they soon started eastward. Another force, crossing the lake, had taken Karema before moving toward Tabora. Colonel Molitor, with the other columns, after taking Kigali, east of Lake Kivu, had moved on the way to Tabora; and Sir Charles Crewe had secured a good base in Mwanza, on Victoria Nyanza.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

General Northey's advance from the southwest started at the end of May. While some of the forces operated in the area of Bismarckburg, clearing it of the enemy, the main body marched north from the shore of Lake Nyasa, occupying Neu Langenburg on May 30. The southern German detachment under Captain Count Falkenstein, made a firm stand at Melangali, with

### THE GERMAN COMMANDER ESCAPES FROM MROGORO.

"To bottle up the enemy in Mrogoro" was General Smuts' next aim. There were the German administrative headquarters, and there were both the Governor, Dr. Schnee, and Colonel von Lettow-Vorbeck. While General Smuts drove southward, Van Deventer came on from the west, occupying



A PATH THROUGH THE WILDERNESS

Many thousand carriers had to be employed for transporting provisions through the regions where there were no railways and no wagon roads. These natives, accompanying General Northey's column, furnish but a suggestion of the lines of human pack-bearers that were traversing the African wilds, "over hill, over dale, thorough bush, thorough brier," to supply the armies.

the purpose of preventing Northey's force from co-operating with Van Deventer's. But the Germans, including the surviving members of the Königsberg crew, were dislodged and had to give way on July 24.

Returning to General Van Deventer's line, we find that he resumed activity at the end of June, pressing forward to Dodoma. Divergent lines pushed out, at the same time, to take Singida and Kilimatinde. With the latter place occupied and Kikombo, fifteen miles east of Dodoma, as well, a hundred miles of the Central Railway had fallen under British control.

Mpapua on August 12 and Kilossa on the twenty-second. Finding Mrogoro unsafe, the enemy evacuated it on the twenty-fourth, slipping southward by a route unknown to his pursuers, and so evading a flanking turn made to entrap him. Mrogoro was entered by Sheppard and Beves on August 26. The pursuit of the retreating enemy, who fought strong rear-guard actions on the way, was pushed on through difficult hill country until the Rufiji River was reached. Van Deventer, at the same time, had advanced across the Ruaha, and Northey was not far away, reaching Iringa on August 29.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The lake divisions, turning, threatened Tabora, which the German Government had intended as the capital of the protectorate. There most of the prisoners of war and enemy aliens had been interned (and not too happily entertained). On September 19, the garrison withdrew, starting in the direction of Mahenge, although they would have to pass both Van Deventer's and Northey's armies. Sir Charles Crewe's column made sure of the Central Railway between Tabora and Kilimatinde, then, having accomplished the service required of it, this column was abolished. The German group from Tabora, commanded by General Wahle, fought various engagements with General Northey's men before breaking through, as they eventually did, to join the contingent on the healthful Mahenge plateau.

### THE WHOLE COAST IS OCCUPIED DURING THE AUTUMN.

On September 3 the former capital, Dar-es-Salaam, surrendered, whereupon the other coast towns, Kilwa, Mikindani and Lindi quickly followed. Dar-es-Salaam and Kilwa were immediately utilized as new and valuable centres. In the former place the enemy, before leaving, had done what damage they could, wrecking the harbor and the railway station and running locomotives into the sea. Numbers of bridges on the Central Railway had been destroyed, too.

At the end of the year, in order to prepare for the hard conditions of the remaining struggle, which would be largely in low malarial country, General Smuts reorganized his divisions, sending to South Africa about 12,000 white troops who had been rendered unfit by hard campaigning, and replacing them as far as possible by natives inured to the climate and its conditions. Various shifts in the command and composition of the forces were made.

A short campaign undertaken in January, 1917, to round up the enemy by cutting off his retreat at the Rufiji and preventing the sections on the Mahenge from uniting, failed of its end. Van Deventer and Northey lost

their quarry in the deep bush, and Sheppard's brigade reached the Rufiji only to discover that von Lettow-Vorbeck had destroyed the bridge and had already removed his men to the other side of the river.

### GENERAL SMUTS IS SUMMONED TO LONDON.

In the fighting that took place just before reaching the Rufiji, there fell the most distinguished of African naturalists and hunters, Captain F. C. Selous, who, in spite of his sixty-four years, had been serving with "conspicuous gallantry, resource and endurance" in the 25th Fusiliers. His death and that of Lieutenant Wavell, exactly a year before, were a loss to the world as well as to their colleagues and subordinates.

Rains, extraordinarily long and heavy even for that country, prevented any great activity for the time; and, besides, on January 26, General Smuts left for London whither he had been called to represent South Africa in the War Cabinet. His successor was Major-General Hoskins, formerly in command of the 1st Division. In May, the supreme command passed into the hands of General Van Deventer.

The sadly reduced forces of the enemy were grouped by this time in two main bodies—between four and five thousand under von Lettow-Vorbeck in the valley of the Matandu River, and between two and three thousand with Tafel near Mahenge. When foraging or raiding parties broke away they were followed by companies of mounted British. One such band, under a man named Naumann, made a wide sweep through the country, being caught after several months, about two thousand miles from the starting point.

### THE REMNANT OF THE GERMAN FORCES IN PORTUGUESE TERRITORY.

Until March 9, 1916, Portuguese East Africa (Mozambique) was neutral territory; but on that date Portugal became a belligerent, fighting with the Allies. Her part, then, in Africa, was to hold the front at the Rovuma River if an attempt should be made to escape across it. The Portu-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

guese even advanced a short distance into the territory north of the river, taking back a part that had once been theirs.

Toward this frontier, through the months of 1917, von Lettow-Vorbeck withdrew under pressure from the north and from Kilwa and Lindi, but not without vigorous fighting. Farther west, Tafel was trying to escape the encircling forces of Northey's troops and the Belgian armies. Before the year was out there had come an end to the hardy resistance of both little companies. In spite of the Portuguese patrol on the Rovuma, von Lettow-Vorbeck with some two thousand followers slipped across into Mozambique, on November 25-26. Two days later, Tafel, caught in unfamiliar country and lacking food for his men, surrendered unconditionally, giving up "19 officers, 92 other Europeans, over 1,200 askari (native soldiers), and some 2,200 other natives." On December 1, 1917, General Van Deventer reported that German East Africa was completely cleared of the enemy, and that the whole of the German overseas possessions had passed into British and Belgian hands.

### **BRITISH TESTIMONY ON THE QUALITY OF THE GERMAN RESISTANCE.**

From General Van Deventer's own words we catch something of the tone and spirit of the opposing masses engaged in battle upon the wild expanse of East Africa. He says: "The morale of the enemy never wavered, and nothing but the determined gallantry and endurance of our troops finally crushed him. To the infantry,—British, South African, Indian, West and East African,—I owe unqualified thanks and praise, and especially to the regimental officers who set an example which all have followed." Nor must the Belgians be forgotten. General Tombeur had succeeded from the first in holding back the enemy on his border, at the same time co-operating with the British in Rhodesia and on Lake Tanganyika. In the later campaigns the Belgian contingents (native soldiers with European leaders) took

their full part and suffered severe losses.

Losses on both sides had been very heavy in proportion to the numbers engaged, sickness adding many to the number of deaths. The reports show that in the period from May to November, 1917, the British lost, in action alone, 6,000; and that there were killed and captured, in that time, 1,618 Germans and 5,482 natives. It is estimated that altogether the enemy force had been reduced by nine-tenths of its personnel before German East Africa was cleared.

### **THE LAST DAYS OF GERMAN FIGHTING IN AFRICA.**

The little remnant with von Lettow-Vorbeck moved rapidly toward the centre of Mozambique, half-way between Lake Nyasa and the sea. The campaign of pursuit, directed by General Van Deventer, and prosecuted chiefly by native soldiers, King's African Rifles and a Nigerian brigade, under the lead of General Northey and others, was intended to be "one of virtual extermination." But, although the pursuing lines pressed in from east and west, the retreat was so rapid as to keep for the most part in advance of both British and Portuguese forces. Now and again there was fighting, when detachments of the opponents came together. But von Lettow-Vorbeck increased the difficulties of the pursuers by buying the favor of natives with rich gifts out of the booty he gathered from Portuguese settlements as he moved along. He was provided with food and shelter and assured that false information would be offered to the troops that were following on his track. South he hurried, then east toward the coast, north and west, even back across the Rovuma into the old territory again. Next, he turned to Northern Rhodesia and attacked Fife, on the border. November 11, 1918, the day of the Armistice, found him at the head-waters of the Congo in Northern Rhodesia. There he promptly submitted to the local magistrate, and on November 25 made formal surrender at Abercorn with considerable ceremony.



#### A BOLSHEVIST NAVAL DETACHMENT GOING SOUTH

Some of the most enthusiastic Bolsheviks came from the Navy. After killing their officers they scattered in all directions. These had boarded a train by force and were on their way to the interior of Russia to enjoy the new prosperity which was to come to every one with the triumph of Bolshevism.



#### SAILORS PLUNDERING THE COUNTRY AS THEY PASSED

Other sailors from the fleets took possession of machine guns which they mounted in an open car with iron sides. They traveled leisurely from station to station, terrorizing the people, and plundering the houses and shops wherever they stopped. Any towns or men who attempted to resist them were treated with great severity. Generally, however, the populace was too much bewildered to make any effective resistance.





Armored Cars Used by the Bolsheviks

## CHAPTER LIX

# Russia Makes A Separate Peace

FRUITLESS NEGOTIATIONS AT BREST-LITOVSK ARE FOLLOWED BY ANOTHER INVASION

**T**HE Bolsheviks were in power. Through an armed uprising, practically through a military mutiny, they had seized control of the government machinery. But for all that too much importance should not be attached to the personalities at the head of the Bolshevik Party and their doctrines. To this day the average Russian probably knows little more of Lenin's theories of government than does the average American. Furthermore, Lenin has modified and changed his policy whenever he found it not adapted to practical affairs. The Bolsheviks came into power on one very big issue, and that was the question as to whether the war should be continued, or whether peace should be made at any cost.

**THE BOLSHEVIKI GAIN POWER ON THE ISSUE OF PEACE.**

Russia was beaten far worse than Germany was beaten, when later she sued for peace. Not only was the Russian military organization smashed, the economic machinery ceasing to move, but the Russian mujik, in the uniform of the Russian soldier, was heartily sick of further fighting. He wanted to stop fighting and go home. That was why he listened to Bolshevik "propaganda," and that was why he shoved Kerensky out of power and allowed Lenin and Trotzky to get in.

All the reforms that interested him had been promised by Kerensky also. Kerensky, though quite as good a Socialist as Lenin, had been more honest, or perhaps more practical, for he had realized that a Socialist Republic could only be established in Russia by evolutionary means, and that a political revolution was only the clearing away of obstacles which were arbitrarily checking the evolutionary processes.

**LENIN DESIRED PEACE TO BUILD HIS IDEAL STATE.**

Lenin, at least, was undoubtedly sincere in his belief that peace at almost any cost was essential to the establishment of a social organization based on his theories. Some of his associates probably genuinely shared this conviction with him; those that did not at any rate realized that they must give the rank and file of the soldiers what they wanted if they were to remain in power, and that was peace.

The first informal notice of the peace negotiations which the Bolsheviks proposed to initiate was issued on November 20, 1917, when an announcement was made, stating that, "when the new government is firmly established the Cabinet will, without delay, make a formal offer of an armistice to all the belligerents, enemy and ally."

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The Commander-in-Chief, General Dukhonin, was at the same time notified to open communications with the Germans under a flag of truce, to offer a cessation of hostilities for the purpose of opening peace negotiations.

For several days the Lenin Government received neither reply nor acknowledgment from headquarters. Finally, three days later, on November 23,

allowed General Kornilov, who was still a prisoner at headquarters, to escape.

A proclamation was then issued to the army and navy ordering individual units to open negotiations with the enemy, regardless of commanding officers, though the power to sign an agreement for an armistice was reserved to the Petrograd Government.



ENSIGN KRYLENKO, ONCE THE BOLSHEVIST COMMANDER

Krylenko was a non-commissioned officer in the army who was made Minister of War by the Bolsheviks, and afterward, commanded the armies. Little information concerning him reached the western World, and after a time he disappeared from the news entirely. Apparently he was a man of little ability and could have had little military knowledge.

© Underwood & Underwood

telephone communication with Dukhonin was established.

The General wished first to know whether the proposal of a general peace had been communicated to all of Russia's allies, and whether they had replied.

"These are not questions that concern you," replied Lenin. "You are simply to obey our instructions."

Still Dukhonin insisted, whereupon he was dismissed, and "Ensign" Krylenko, who had been appointed Commissary, or Minister of War, was sent to take his place. Several days later Dukhonin was killed by his own soldiers, because, apparently, he had

Trotsky, Commissary for Foreign Affairs, then sent a note to the representatives of all the Allied belligerents, worded, in part, as follows:

**T**ROTSKY PROPOSES AN IMMEDIATE ARMISTICE ON ALL FRONTS.

"Drawing your attention to the text of an offer of an armistice and a democratic peace, based on no annexations or indemnities, and the self-determination of nations, approved by the All-Russian Congress of Soldiers' and Workmen's Delegates, I have the honor to beg you to regard the above document as the formal offer of an immediate armistice on all fronts,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and the immediate opening of peace negotiations, an offer with which the authoritative Government of the Russian Republic has addressed itself simultaneously to all the belligerent peoples and their governments."

In the afternoon of Nov. 28, 1917, a Russian delegation, preceded by a trumpeter carrying a white flag, crossed the lines near Dvinsk and began a parley with the Germans. The Russian delegation, after being blindfolded, was conducted behind the German lines, and there kept while the German commander entered into communication by wire with the German High Command. At midnight the following reply was received from German Headquarters:

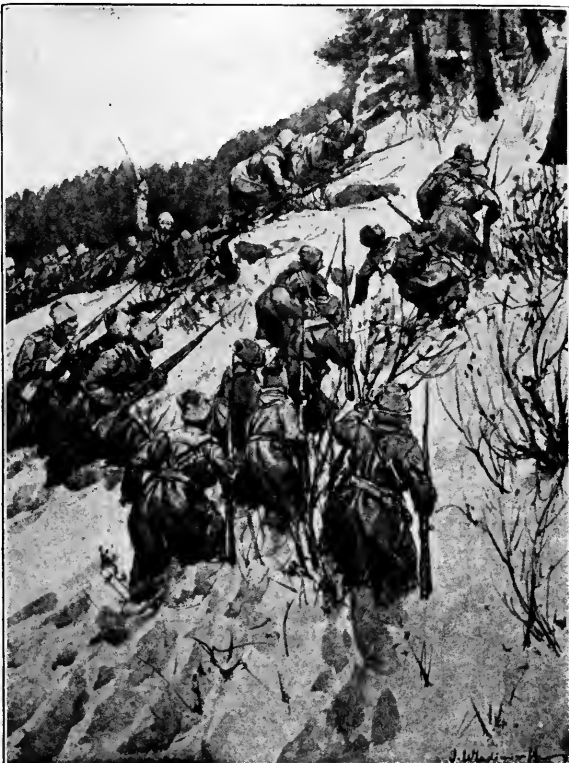
### THE GERMAN AUTHORITIES AGREE TO AN ARMISTICE.

"The Chief of the German Eastern Front is prepared to enter into negotiations with the Russian chief command. The Chief of the German Eastern Front is authorized by the German Commander-in-Chief to carry on negotiations for an armistice. The Chief of the Russian armies is requested to appoint a commission with written authority to be sent to the headquarters of the German Eastern Front. The German commander, on his part, will name a similar commission."

The date fixed for the beginning of the negotiations was December 2, at the headquarters of the German Eastern Front, at Brest-Litovsk.

Meanwhile the elections to the Constituent Assembly were allowed to take place, in spite of the fact that the Bolshevik programme recognized only such suffrage as was based on the "proletariat workers and peasants." On November 26, 1917, the election returns for Petrograd gave the Bolsheviks 272,000 votes, as compared to 211,000 cast by the Constitutional Democrats and 116,000 by the Social Revolutionists. These exact figures

are disputed, but according to all accounts the Bolsheviks fell short of a majority. The most favorable reports gave them about forty-five per cent of the whole. Some accounts give them a much smaller vote.



THE LAST FIGHTING ON THE RUMANIAN BORDER

### THE PUBLICATION OF SECRET DOCUMENTS FROM THE ARCHIVES.

During this same period, the Government carried out its policy of publicity for all state affairs by publishing the secret treaties in the archives of the Department of Foreign Affairs. Among them were some sensational documents. One plainly indicated that the Government had deliberately sacrificed Rumania, if not to help the enemy, at least to save the Russian forces. The promises of extensive territorial annexations made to Italy to bring her into the war on the side of the Allies were plainly indicated. But, on the whole, little was shown which had not already been at least rumored in the press months before.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The only resistance to Bolshevik rule at this time was in those regions dominated by the Cossack chiefs. Kornilov, it will be remembered, had escaped from Staff Headquarters, and with a small force of his faithful Cossacks, had made his way to the Don, where he joined General Kaledin, who had immediately raised the banner of revolt against the Bolshevik Government. Making Rostov his headquarter-



GENERAL VON BESELER

GERMAN MILITARY GOVERNOR OF POLAND

ters, he was able for some time to establish here an anti-Bolshevik military state.

**T**HE UKRAINE MAKES A MOVE FOR INDEPENDENCE.

More important, though of a very different character, was the action of the Ukraine. The Ukrainian people live in parts or the whole of the Russian governments (or provinces) of Volhynia, Chernygov, Kherson, Kiev, Ekaterinoslav, Podolia, Kharkov, Poltava, Taurida, and in Galicia, extending from the Black Sea to the Crimea and to the territory of the Don Cossacks.

In the early part of the Kerensky régime the Ukrainians had shown a

strong tendency to establish an independent state. Now that the Bolsheviks had risen to power, the Popular Assembly, known as the Rada, on November 26, 1917, proclaimed the Ukraine independent. This action the Petrograd Government could not protest, if it were to remain true to its principle of the "self-determination" of all peoples. Nor did it, officially, but it made strong efforts to support the Bolshevik elements in the Ukraine, who were in favor of recognizing the authority of Petrograd.

**T**HE UKRAINIAN GOVERNMENT SEEKS GERMAN AID.

The Rada represented the prosperous peasant and rich landlord class, and naturally was strongly opposed to the Bolsheviks. Later this element received the active support of Germany and its official representatives became mere puppets in the hands of the German High Command.

Finland followed a similar course. A conservative government declared Finland's independence on December 5, 1917, which declaration the Bolsheviks tacitly recognized, though here too, as in the Ukraine, they strongly supported a large and active Bolshevik element. And here, too, as in the Ukraine, in its effort to get away from ultra-radical influences, the government went over to Germany.

**R**UMANIA FORCED RELUCTANTLY TO SEEK FOR PEACE.

Deeply involved in this general situation was little Rumania, surrounded as she was on the one side by the Austrians and Bulgarians, her mortal enemies, and on the other by the Russians, who contemplated peace with those same enemies. For a while the Rumanian Government at Jassy issued proclamations, expressing a strong determination to continue the fight against the Central Empires alone. But hardly had the last of them been uttered, on December 7, 1917, when the Rumanians, too, joined the general rush to enter into negotiations with the Central Empires.

Meanwhile, down on the Caucasus front, where another independent state was proclaiming itself, the Turks took



#### ALLIED MISSIONS ON THEIR WAY OUT OF RUSSIA

After the Russian Revolution Allied missions were sent to aid the Russians in any way possible. With the triumph of the Bolsheviks and the dissolution of the army they became useless, and withdrew by way of Murmansk. Sometimes the news of the approach of Bolshevik bands caused the director to stop the trains and to prepare to repel attack.



#### FRENCH SOLDIERS CLEARING UP A WRECK

The railroad to the Murman coast had been built during the war and the track was in exceedingly poor condition. Wrecks were frequent and one occurred immediately in front of the train in which the Allied missions were traveling, toward Murmansk. Some of the French soldiers attached to the mission were sent on ahead to clear the track, as the railway force was utterly demoralized, and incapable of intelligent effort.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the initiative, and proposed to the Russian forces there that they cease fighting, which was accordingly done.

### THE PETROGRAD GOVERNMENT PROCEEDS TO ABOLISH CAPITALISM.

In Petrograd the main business of the Soviet Government was to further the peace negotiations, but it proceeded to publish some of its favorite theories. On November 26, 1917, a decree was

mittees, elected by the workers within a given district, were created to take charge of the production of commodities. This system was also a failure.

### THE CO-OPERATIVE MOVEMENT SAVES RUSSIA FROM COLLAPSE.

What saved the Soviet Government from complete economic breakdown at this juncture was the Russian Co-operative Movement, the co-operative



### BOLSHEVIKI SEEKING TO SPREAD THEIR FAITH

When the Bolshevik doctrines were spreading over the country such a sight as this was common. Parties marched from town to town attempting to make converts, peaceably if they could, forcibly if necessary. Some advocates of the new régime were as fanatical in their desire to spread their belief as ever were the followers of Mohammed.

issued abolishing all class distinctions. More important still, "capitalism" as a system was abolished, and the production and distribution of all commodities was declared to be the business of the state.

Nor was this an empty phrase. Factories, warehouses, stores and banks, through this and various other decrees, were actually confiscated and taken over by the soviets. At first the factories were turned over to the management of committees elected by the workmen actually employed within their four walls. This system proved a dismal failure. Then regional com-

societies previously mentioned which, through their federations, carried on manufacturing for their own members. During the Kerensky régime this movement had experienced phenomenal growth and development. Though the leaders of the co-operatives were strongly opposed to the Bolsheviks and had denounced their forcible seizure of power, they were compelled to accept the fact and, to a certain degree, act in co-operation with the soviets. And Lenin, on the other hand, more and more left the actual business of production and distribution to the co-operative organization, for eventually



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

he came to recognize the failure of his Marxian theories when applied to actual practice.

### ALL ARMY OFFICERS ARE REDUCED TO THE RANKS.

On December 16 a decree was issued reducing all army officers to the ranks and authorizing the rank and file to elect their own officers. This was the final blow to the morale of what was still left of the Russian Army. Truly

### THE FIRST CONFERENCE HELD AT BREST-LITOVSK.

Meanwhile the efforts to bring about a peace conference continued. As already indicated, the Petrograd Government had declared that it did not desire a separate peace with the Central Empires, but a general peace. The Allied belligerents made no reply to Trotzky's note to that effect. On the contrary, they had strongly protested



WHERE THE CONFERENCE MET AT BREST LITOVSK

After some discussion the Germans, Austrians, Turks and Bulgarians agreed to negotiate with the Bolshevik government. The German High Command fixed December 2 as the date on which the conference should open at the headquarters of the German Eastern Front at Brest Litovsk. This is a manufacturing town in the government of Grodna in old Russia.

this was the same principle on which the American militia organization was based, before the war, but in the face of such an organization of force as the German Army it was utterly impracticable.

The property of the Church was also confiscated. The actual church buildings and their equipment were declared state property, to be rented out to the priesthood. The vast estates were apportioned for future distribution among the poorer landless peasantry. In fact, the peasants in the neighborhood took possession without waiting for authority, just as the peasants had done in France during the French Revolution.

against the proposed peace negotiations but these protests had been addressed to the Russian Chief Command, at Moghilev. On November 30, Count Czernin, Austro-Hungarian Foreign Minister, addressed a note to the Petrograd Government, stating that his Government was ready to proceed to negotiate. Thus Austria-Hungary was the first to extend official recognition to the Bolshevik Cabinet.

On December 2, according to agreement, the Russian delegation again crossed over to the German lines and was escorted to Brest-Litovsk. Three days later an official account of the negotiations was issued from Petrograd.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

"The conference opened in the presence of the representatives of Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey and Bulgaria. Field Marshal von Hindenburg and Field Marshal Hötendorff charged Prince Leopold of Bavaria with the negotiations, and he in his turn nominated his Chief of Staff, General Hoffman.

"Our delegates opened the conference with a declaration of our peace aims, in view of which an armistice was proposed. The enemy delegates replied that that was a question to be solved by the politicians. They said they were soldiers, having power to negotiate only conditions of an armistice, and could add nothing to the declaration of Foreign Ministers Czernin and von Kuhlmann.

"....Our representatives submitted a project for an armistice on all fronts elaborated by our military experts. The principal points of this subject were: first, an interdiction against sending forces on our fronts to the fronts of our allies, and, second, the retirement of German detachments from the islands around Moon Sound. ....The enemy delegation declared that our conditions were unacceptable, and could be addressed only to a conquered people...."

### THE GERMAN GOVERNMENT AGREES TO SUSPEND HOSTILITIES TEMPORARILY.

On December 6 the Berlin Government announced that a suspension of hostilities had finally been agreed upon in writing, to last ten days and to affect the whole front from the Baltic to the Black Sea. During this period a regular armistice would be negotiated.

On this same day, December 6, Trotsky sent a note to all the Allied belligerents announcing that the negotiations would be suspended for seven days, to give the peoples of those countries time in which to make up their minds whether or not they would participate. This note added that no armistice would be signed by the Russians which would permit the Germans to transport their troops from the Eastern to other fronts. To this communication none of the Allied Governments made any reply.

### THE BREST-LITOVSK CONFERENCE BEGINS ITS SITTINGS.

At the end of the ten days a regular armistice was agreed upon, to go into effect immediately, on December 17, and to last until January 14, 1918. The first sitting of the actual peace conference began on December 22. At the head of the German delegation were Foreign Minister, Dr. Richard von Kuhlmann and General Hoffman. Count Czernin was the chief representative of Austria-Hungary. Popov, a member of the Bulgarian Cabinet, headed the Bulgarian delegation, while Nesimiy Bey, Turkish Foreign Minister, represented his Government. Russia was represented by "Citizens" Joffe, Kamenev, Bibenko, Pokrosky, Karaghan, Lubinski, Weltman, Pawlovitch, Admiral Altvater, General Tumorri, Colonel Rokki, Colonel Zelpitt and Captain Lipsky.

Von Kuhlmann was elected chairman. His opening speech was profusely garnished with flowery phrases, but was markedly deficient in any definite basis on which the Central Powers were willing to rest the "democratic" peace which the Russians proposed. Thanks to the policy of publicity pursued by the Petrograd Government, all the proceedings of the conference were published in detail, a proceeding which more than once roused the ire of the German Government.

### THE RUSSIAN PROPOSALS FOR PEACE PRESENTED.

The Russian delegates then presented their demands, comprising fifteen paragraphs, of which the following is the essence:

Evacuation of all Russian territory by Germany and Austria; autonomy for Poland, the Baltic provinces and Turkish Armenia; settlement of the Alsace-Lorraine problem by referendum; restoration of Belgium, Serbia and Montenegro, with financial assistance from an international fund; Serbia to have access to the Adriatic; complete autonomy for Bosnia and Herzegovina; complete restoration of Rumania, with autonomy for the Dobrudja; equal rights for Jews in all territories; restoration of the German colonies; neutraliza-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tion of all maritime straits leading to inland waters, including the Suez and Panama canals; no indemnities; forcible contributions levied during the war to be refunded; no commercial boycotts after the war; abolition of all previous secret treaties; general disarmament, militia to take the place of standing armies.

### THE GERMANS TURN THEIR OWN STATEMENTS AGAINST THE BOLSHEVIKI.

On Christmas Day the Central Powers made a formal reply of such a nature that it attracted world-wide attention. For from the verbiage in which the answer was couched, this thought stood out: that, since the Russians recognized the principle of the "self-determination of small nationalities," therefore they renounced all claims to the Baltic provinces. The future of these provinces would be determined by conditions which were obviously under the control of Germany since she was in military occupation of those territories. In plain language, Germany said: "Since you don't want those territories, hand them over to us."

Meetings in Petrograd were held and literally boiled over with rage against Germany. Trotzky, with his usual verbosity, pointed out that his "diplomacy" had forced Germany to reveal her true self from under her lately assumed robe of hypocrisy. As a matter of fact, even in the Allied countries the general indignation against the Bolsheviks for proposing peace negotiations was giving place to a milder attitude, not unmixed with approval of what was one of the plainest exposures of Germany's real war aims which had yet taken place. The situation obviously inspired the speech made by President Wilson, on January 8, 1918, in which the war aims of the United States were definitely stated.

### THE BOLSHEVIKI ATTEMPT TO GAIN CONVERTS AMONG THE GERMANS.

Trotsky, indeed, showed himself in a triumphant mood. There can be little doubt that he and his associates had not expected Germany to agree to their peace proposals. Trotsky possibly hoped to expose the imperialistic aims

of Germany to the whole world, but especially to the people of the Central Empires, in the hope that thereby he would stimulate them to initiate the great world-wide social revolution, which would sweep the "capitalist" governments out of power. To expedite this event he had instituted a system of propaganda among the German and Austrian soldiers on the



PRINCE LEOPOLD OF BAVARIA

Eastern Front on a truly colossal scale. Literally carloads of literature, printed in all the languages spoken by the peoples of the Central Empires, were shipped to the front and smuggled over the lines to the enemy soldiers. Trotsky had no doubt that this would take due effect. Here he made a mistake. The Germans are temperamentally disinclined to follow the methods appealing to the more individualistic Russians.

On January 2, after a session of the Executive Committee of the Soviet, the Petrograd Government made known its rejection of the German counter-proposals. Indeed, the German answer was made the subject of a pamphlet which was shipped across the lines as further propaganda. On that same date the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

chairman of the Russian peace delegation sent a communication to the heads of the enemy delegations, signifying his desire to continue the peace conference in a neutral country, and suggested that the next conference be held in Stockholm. This was possibly a manoeuvre to place the Germans in a still more unpleasant position, and was successful, in that it made it apparent that the Germans feared the light of publicity. At any rate, they refused to move the seat of the conference outside of territory under their control, and Trotzky's press bureau made the most of it.

### THE GERMANS SURPRISED AT THE BOLSHEVIST OBJECTIONS.

The Germans seemed genuinely surprised and pained that the Petrograd Government had rejected their counter-proposals. The German Kaiser called a conference of all the military leaders. On the following day Chancellor von Hertling addressed the Main Committee of the Reichstag and in a somewhat heated manner stated the German position. A number of Socialist members dissented strongly, and insisted that the German policy regarding the Baltic provinces was decidedly wrong.

On January 10, 1918, the next session of the conference assembled at Brest-Litovsk, and now Trotzky himself headed the Russian delegation. The Russians were now rather surprised by the appearance of a Ukrainian delegation, which disputed their right to represent the Ukraine. Later it became obvious that the Ukrainian delegation was largely a German creation, and was to be utilized as a pawn to be played against the Petrograd delegation, and this they managed to do rather cleverly.

### TROTZKY SUCCEEDS IN IRRITATING THE GERMAN DELEGATION.

The Germans seemed to resent very much the presence of Trotzky, who managed to trample upon all the traditions of diplomatic history.

"We were getting along very amiably together," remarked von Kuhlmann, in one of his reports, "when Trotzky appeared, and then the whole atmosphere darkened."

As another instance, a committee

had prepared a clause stating "that the contracting parties have resolved henceforward to live in peace and friendship, etc.,"

"Purely decorative!" exclaimed Trotzky. "That phrase does not at all express the future relations which shall exist between us."

Trotzky certainly made no effort to obtain his end by tact. His attitude continued irritating, as though his object were to excite the Germans to indiscretion. So unbearable became his behavior that at one time General Hoffmann leaped to his feet exclaiming:

"One might think that you were the conqueror, we the vanquished, and that you stood here dictating terms!"

### THE CONFERENCE ADJOURNS WITHOUT APPROACHING AN AGREEMENT.

The conference again adjourned, without having progressed one degree toward a final settlement, yet Trotzky cheerfully expressed his willingness to meet again. Apparently he neither cared for nor expected a final agreement; his object was to play for time, to extend the negotiations. For almost daily not only he, but even the Allied world, expected to hear of disturbances behind the Teuton lines. There were many rumors of an uprising in Vienna. The Germans exerted every pressure to bring about a final understanding, but Trotzky and his associates remained obdurate.

That von Kuhlmann was furious he made obvious four days later, during an address to the Main Committee of the Reichstag.

"Trotzky declared," he said bitterly, "that our authority rested on brute force. And I say that they themselves represent nothing but brute force."

"They thought we needed peace at any price," said Trotzky, on his return to Petrograd, before a Congress of the Soviets, "but they have learned their mistake. We shall insist on a democratic peace." The delegates to the Congress supported this declaration unanimously.

### THE ALLIED ATTITUDE TOWARD THE BOLSHEVIKI NOT BITTER.

At this time Bolshevism had almost succeeded in gaining a large degree of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

good will of the peoples of the Allied countries, including the United States. The attitude was, that here is a rough-clad and rough-mannered fellow, but he means well. He proposes to beat the Germans in his own peculiar way.

This general feeling received a severe setback during the period that intervened before the peace conference convened again. In the middle of January the delegates to the Constituent Assembly began arriving in Petrograd, and on the 18th the first session was held with about 500 delegates present, to judge by the voting. Though the Bolsheviks had not a working majority, they were at least the principal element. Tchernov, an old-time revolutionist, and Minister of Agriculture for a time in the Kerensky Cabinet, was elected chairman, by a vote of 244 against 151. The first session continued rather turbulent, until it was terminated by the withdrawal of all the Bolshevik delegates in a body.

### THE CONSTITUENT ASSEMBLY IS FORCIBLY DISSOLVED.

On the following day the Government issued a decree abolishing the Constituent Assembly. This action, and the principle on which it was based—that the suffrage should only be extended to workers—created a serious split between the Bolsheviks and all other radicals, so serious that many of the latter were even willing to support foreign invaders in the hope of suppressing Bolshevism. The impression created in the Allied countries was equally bad, and many Socialists who had been ardent admirers of the Bolsheviks in their peace negotiations now turned bitterly against them.

On February 1, 1918, the peace negotiations were again resumed in Brest-Litovsk. Trotzky once more heading the Russian delegation. All this time the Petrograd Government had been straining every effort to pour more and still more propaganda into the grey masses of the German soldiery across the lines.

### THE QUESTION OF THE BALTIC PROVINCES REMAINED UNSETTLED.

For nine days the delegates talked to each other across the table, but the

main point of difference remained the same. The Germans still refused to withdraw from what had formerly been Russian territory in order to allow the populations of those countries to declare themselves. The Germans took the stand that those countries had already declared themselves in favor of joining the German Empire.

On February 9 the indignation of the Russians was roused by the announcement of the Teutonic delegates that they had signed a peace treaty with the Ukrainian delegation. Some weeks previously the Ukrainian Bolsheviks had gained the upper hand in Kiev, and Trotzky had immediately taken the position that the Ukrainian delegation no longer represented the Ukraine. This was perhaps true, but the Germans had nevertheless hastened to sign an agreement with the faction which favored them. The Rada undoubtedly did favor the Germans, as their saviors from Bolshevism. And the Germans were prepared to raise their friends into power, if it happened that they were not in power at that moment.

### THE RUSSIAN GOVERNMENT REFUSES EITHER TO MAKE A TREATY OR FIGHT.

On the 10th, in the afternoon, the last session of the conference was held, and still no agreement was arrived at. With bitter invective Trotzky denounced German imperialism, declaring that Russia would not submit to the German terms.

"Russia will not sign such a peace!" he shouted. Then he added what constituted a surprising climax—"Nor will she fight. There is neither peace nor war between you and us, but the responsibility rests on you."

Neither Trotzky nor his associates believed that Germany would again dare to resume military operations against Russia. And, indeed, there was every indication that the Germans did fear such a necessity. Assuredly it put them in the position of aggressors. It seemed extremely likely, even to many who doubted the likelihood of revolution in Germany, that the German soldiers would refuse to continue a campaign of conquest into Russia. In this as in so many other supposi-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tions, they were deceived. The German soldier was not ready to revolt against the rulers he had obeyed so long

### THE UKRAINIAN RADA NOW ASKS GERMAN AID.

The disappointment of the Teutonic Governments was plainly reflected in the German and Austrian newspapers. It was at this juncture that the Ukrain-

Trotzky's reply to the last offer of the German peace negotiators received the full approval of the Petrograd Government. Krylenko, in fact, gave the order for immediate demobilization. And then the Russians sat down to wait hopefully—but anxiously. Austria-Hungary, at least, showed no indication of intending further aggression. That country no longer had a common



LEOPOLD OF BAVARIA SIGNING THE ARMISTICE

Prince Leopold of Bavaria was charged with the negotiations with the Bolsheviks, though he did not take an active part in the discussions. Here he is seen to be signing the armistice between the Germans and the Russians. The Bolshevik delegations included several women, some of whom were more radical than the men. The Bolsheviks had not yet realized the full purport of the German plans.

International Film Service

ian Rada issued an appeal for "help against the aggressions of the Bolsheviks." It was a clever trick. As a matter of fact, there was fighting in the Ukraine between the Bolsheviks and the forces of the conservative Rada, but the Bolsheviks were Ukrainian Bolsheviks, not invaders sent by the Petrograd Government. But the German and Austrian papers were instructed to make the most of this, and an appeal was published in practically all papers urging Germany to come to the rescue of the Ukrainians. Thus was created a moral pretext for a further advance into Russian territory.

frontier with Bolshevik Russia, and the terms of the peace with the Ukraine were perfectly satisfactory. On the 18th, the day the armistice expired, Vienna announced that it would not continue military operations in Russia.

### THE GERMAN TROOPS ADVANCE INTO RUSSIAN TERRITORY.

Shortly after noon, on the 18th, German troops began pouring across the bridges over the Dvina. The news of the German advance acted on Petrograd like a galvanic shock. All that evening and all that night the Executive Committee of the Soviet sat in continuous session. Two strong

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

factions developed, one led by Lenin, favoring peace on any terms, while the other, with Trotzky at its head, favored resistance, however ineffectual or costly it might be. All that night the two factions continued their heated argument and finally, as the grey light of dawn penetrated the windows of the council room, a vote was taken, and Lenin won out—by one vote.

After nearly a day's silence General Hoffman replied, saying that only a properly written and signed document could be considered, and that this should be sent to Dyvinsk at once, by courier. These instructions were complied with immediately, but another four days passed before the Germans finally declared themselves ready to consider further peace nego-



**AUSTRIAN PRISONERS RELEASED IN RUSSIA**

Many Austrian prisoners in Russia were released after the Austro-Hungarian government announced that no further operations against the Bolsheviki would be undertaken. Some of them were unwilling to go back to their homes for fear that they would again be sent into the ranks, and, therefore professed that they had been converted to Bolshevism.

Krylenko, as Commander-in-Chief, issued instructions that every Russian force which was attacked by Germans should make every endeavor to parley with the enemy and persuade them to desist. Where the enemy refused, resistance should be continued.

### **P**ETROGRAD, DISMAYED BY THE GERMAN ADVANCE, ASKS PEACE.

Meanwhile Petrograd sent a wireless message to the German High Command offering to reconsider the peace terms. The Germans, however, having begun the attack, and the German soldiers showing no inclination to refuse to obey their orders, were in no hurry to desist.

tiations. All this time the German troops swept onward, taking Pskov, Dvinsk, Werder, Lutsik and other places, which were either defended very feebly by the disorganized Russians, or were entered unopposed.

But the conditions under which the Germans were now willing to declare peace with Russia were considerably changed—they amounted to something very little better than unconditional surrender. There would be no armistice—the German soldiers would advance until the treaty was actually signed. Livonia and Esthonia must now be ceded outright to Germany, who



VILNA IN WEST RUSSIA

Vilna is an old city irregularly built at the confluence of the Vileika with the Vilna, 436 miles southwest of Petrograd. During the seventeenth century it was nearly ruined in the struggle between Russia and Poland, and was annexed by Russia in 1795. In 1915 it was occupied by the Germans. Ruschin

would dispose of them as she saw fit. Soviet Russia must recognize the conservative Rada of the Ukraine, and refrain from giving the Ukrainian Bolsheviks further assistance. Finally, Soviet Russia must demobilize completely. Even the volunteer Red Guards, the revolutionary militia which was being organized behind the lines, must be disbanded, save for such a force as was needed for police duty.

#### **R**USSIA PRACTICALLY MAKES AN UN- CONDITIONAL SURRENDER.

Again Petrograd underwent a night of hot debate, but on February 24, 1918, the Executive Committee agreed to accept the German terms. On March 3 the Germans announced that they had halted the advance of their army into Russia, as the Russian delegation to

Brest-Litovsk had signed a treaty. During the operations close to 60,000 men had been captured, nearly 7,000 officers, 2,400 cannon, 5,000 machine guns and 800 locomotives. The territory added to German occupancy was all that part of Russia lying west of a line drawn from the Narva, on the Gulf of Finland, due south to Kiev, including Russian Poland, Lithuania, Esthonia, Livonia and the outlying islands in the Gulf of Finland. Trotzky's picturesque attitude in refusing to sign the treaty had lost the Petrograd Government territories amounting to almost a fourth of European Russia, inhabited by about a third of the population. By the new treaty Germany gained practical control of Russia.

ALBERT SONNICHSEN





The Relief Ship Strathness Entering Rotterdam

## CHAPTER LX

# Belgium Under the German Yoke

## A BELGIAN'S STORY OF LIFE IN HIS COUNTRY DURING THE FOURTH YEAR OF THE WAR

BY EMILE CAMMAERTS

Author of "Through the Iron Bars"

IF we try to imagine the life of the civilians in some big town of the occupied part of Belgium—Brussels, for instance—we must never forget that the far-away rumbling of the guns can often be heard, that at regular intervals the tramping of German patrols resounds in the streets, and that there is scarcely an hour in the day when expectant food queues do not line the pavement in the populous quarters of the city. These constant features of Belgian life will at once give us the atmosphere of the picture.

### THE RUMBLING OF THE GUNS IN THE DISTANCE.

The guns sound quite near in the army zones of Luxemburg, Hainaut, and Flanders; but when the wind blows from the west, or when some important action is taking place, the drum-fire is heard distinctly as far as Brussels. The years of war have not yet dulled the people's attention to it. They stop in the street to listen to the low murmur. They wonder what is taking place. During the autumn of 1917, when the guns roared for weeks round the Ypres salient, they guessed the truth—that their masters were getting the worst of it. They even believed, in spite of the German communiqués, that the Allies had broken through,

and the rumors of a German defeat spread like wild-fire through Brussels.

### THE BELGIANS NEVER LOST HOPE IN THE DARKEST HOURS.

Since the siege of Antwerp the Belgians have lived in this state of suspense, and though they have been disappointed again and again, they have not lost, after years of German oppression, the extraordinary faculty of creating good tidings and the most extraordinary readiness to believe in them. But whatever they may have imagined, the distant roar of the guns has remained the supreme argument. Every hope, every anxiety has been associated with it. Those who had sons, husbands, or friends in the Belgian Army shivered at the sound, for they knew that any offensive, even if successful, must be costly. To them, nevertheless, the distant voice of battle—the long drawn battle which must decide their fate and that of their country—is the inarticulate message of the outside world brought into their prison on the wings of the western breeze.

For the Belgians may have given up their weapons, they may be invaded, they may even, in certain parts of the country, be driven like slaves to work for the enemy, but they do not con-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

sider themselves out of the war. They sincerely believe that they are the vanguard of the Allied armies.

**THE BELGIAN RESISTANCE A CONSIDERABLE HINDRANCE TO THE GERMANS.**

This may well be exaggerated, though it seems evident that the resistance of Belgian civilians must considerably hamper German activity in this sector of their front. It may

try with spies and secret agents, and to line the Dutch frontier with sentries and two rows of electrified wire. These strong measures did not prevent 30,000 young men from joining the colors and filling the gaps caused by the first campaign.

Sometimes, however—very frequently in the army zone, less frequently in Antwerp and Brussels—the booming



**BELGIANS FLEEING FROM THE GERMAN TERROR**

The scene on the road between Brussels and Malines could be duplicated thousands of times. Leaving practically all their possessions, many fled anywhere in the hope of gaining safety from the dangers of which they had heard.

be almost impossible to estimate its importance in terms of men, but it is easy to realize that if Germany were able to add 500,000 Belgian workers to her industrial army, to leave the Dutch frontier unguarded, and to reduce to a minimum the personnel of the police, she would derive considerable advantages from such a situation. Instead of this, she has been obliged to deport the men before getting any work out of them, which attempt has proved a failure from every point of view, to demolish industrial plants and remove the machines before using them, to place strong garrisons in the largest towns, to flood the coun-

of the guns sounds quite close to the expectant civilians. Londoners grew accustomed to the alarms and excursions of hostile air raids, but it is one thing to see the risk of war brought near by German airmen and to listen with satisfaction to the din of the barrage directed against them, and to open one's paper on the next day to read that one or two of the enemy machines have been brought down. It is another to be bombed by one's own men and to be torn between the natural anxiety for the safety of one's family at home and the greater anxiety for the safety of the pilot of the frail machine surrounded with bursting shrapnel.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### ALL MISFORTUNES ATTRIBUTED TO GERMAN DESIGN.

In March, 1917, the burgomaster and the town of Ghent were condemned to pay a fine of 10,000 marks in the following circumstances: After an aerial bombardment which had caused the death of several civilians, the *Kommandantur* issued a poster publishing the names of the victims "killed

their own lines, even for the satisfaction of killing a few Belgians. But they know also that they started bombing open towns and that, if it had not been for them, there would have been no war—in any case, no war in Belgium. Others may wander from the essential principles of the struggle—they are not likely to do so; they are too often reminded of them.



LIFE'S WEARY PILGRIMAGE

Perhaps one of the most pathetic sides of the tragic fate of the refugees seeking at a wayside station for news of loved ones who were separated in the early confusion, and who tried to leave a message for family or friends. Notice the direction of the arrows urging on to further, weary, often fruitless search.

by British airmen." During the night some patriots substituted the words: "Killed by a German Zeppelin."

The German is not only the oppressor, he is the scapegoat, the cause of all troubles, of all sufferings. I believe that, if the rain spoiled the crops, the Boche would at once be made responsible for it in some way or another. There is a rough-and-ready justice in the popular mind. The peasants know, of course, that no German can spoil the crops, but they know that he can requisition them. The citizens of Ghent know, or ought to know, that it would not pay the Germans to bomb

It might have been expected that after three years and a half of waiting, and two years of severe privation, a population completely isolated from the rest of the world and fed on German censored news would show certain evident signs of lassitude. In every Allied country the Russian collapse, by postponing the prospect of an early settlement, has more or less encouraged pacifist devices. People realize that they have henceforth to choose between some form of compromise or a prolongation of the struggle and of the hardships it implies. It would therefore be only natural if such a reaction

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

were felt particularly strongly by a nation faced with starvation and feeling all the might of foreign oppression. In spite of this, I think I may safely say that in no country of the Entente is the *morale* so sound on the war among all classes of the population. This conviction is founded on the declara-

Now that the Central Empires have been strengthened and that the industrial population has been brought to the verge of starvation, they claim again the restoration of their country in its absolute freedom and independence, the payment by the Central Empires of an indemnity for the damage done in Belgium, and the liberation of the oppressed nationalities in Europe. They repudiate indignantly the policy pursued by the Russian Maximalists and by those who, in neutral and Allied countries,

"stir up feelings of charity and humanity at the risk of sacrificing the most sacred rights of mankind." They remain convinced that "a satisfactory peace could only be concluded either through the military victory of the Allies, or through a radical transformation of ideas and institutions among the Central Powers."

The Catholics, under the energetic leadership of Cardinal Mercier, have maintained the most uncompromising attitude. The Germans are, for them, outside the pale of nations, and will remain there until they have atoned for their crimes. Again and again, in his pastoral letters and his sermons, the Cardinal has developed the idea that only punishment and repentance could wipe out the memory of the outrages committed,

and that Divine justice stands above even Christian charity.

**WHAT THE BELGIANS DISCUSSED IN THE HOME CIRCLES.**

Such questions and many others concerning the future of the country are discussed every day, for it would be a mistake to think that social life is stopped in Belgium. There are, of course, no "functions" of any kind, and no public meetings are allowed by the authorities, except those of the activists. But behind the closed shutters of the mourning mansions of the aristocracy, in the cafés—at least, in



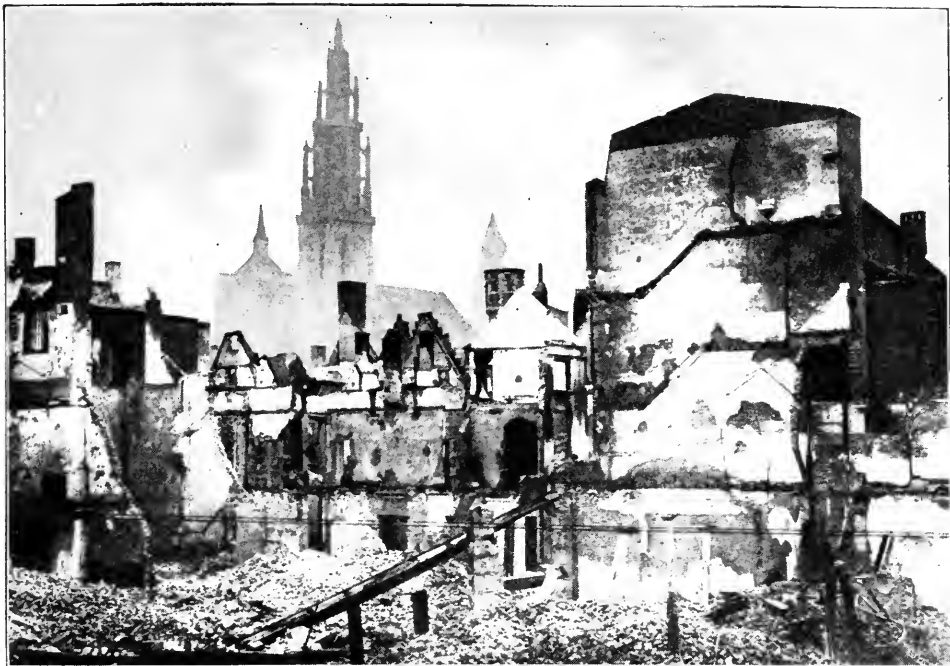
**A FEARLESS PATRIOT AND PRIEST**

Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, Belgium, whose famous pastoral letter was suppressed by the German Governor of Belgium. N. Y. Times

tions of the authorized leaders of public opinion, on the unanimous testimony of neutral observers, and even on the avowal of the Germans themselves.

### **SOCIALISTS AND CATHOLICS ALIKE FIRM FOR RESISTANCE.**

The official memoir of the Socialist Party, written in July, 1917, after the Russian collapse, is one of the most striking documents produced during the year. Already, in December, 1916, the Belgian Socialists had warned their "comrades" of the Entente against the dangers of a premature peace.



#### THE HARVEST OF GERMAN ARTILLERY

A striking picture of the destroyed shoe-market section of Antwerp looking towards the Cathedral which is the noblest and largest specimen of Gothic architecture in the Low Countries. The roof is supported by 125 pillars, and the tower, whose exquisite beauty Charles V was wont to compare to Mechlin lace, is a marvel of gracefulness. N. Y. Times



#### REFUGEES FROM ANTWERP FLEEING FROM THEIR HOMES

In the second half of the fifteenth century Antwerp was the world mart of Europe, supplanting the other great Flemish cities, Bruges and Ghent. Under Charles V, as the principal station of the Hanseatic League and the centre of the money exchanges of Europe, the city was at the height of its splendor. Sieges and battles destroyed its prosperity, and it lost half of its population. International Film Service

the Belgian cafés, which, by a kind of tacit consent, no German will enter—in the homes of the bourgeois and of the workman, people gather more frequently perhaps than before, because there is more leisure for many, and because it is the way to save light and coal.

War conditions have revived the old custom of the "veillée," when a few friends and neighbors meet in turn in one another's houses. The women knit for the prisoners, or mend the family's clothes—it has become almost impossible to buy new ones—the men smoke when some member of the gathering has been lucky enough to secure some tobacco; and there, around the slow-burning stove, under the lamp, after the last German proclamation has been ridiculed—there is one at least every week—and when the housewives have exchanged recipes concerning some wonderful new substitute, plans are made for the future of the country, and the war is discussed.

### **BELGIANS NOT ALL EITHER HEROES OR MARTYRS**

I do not want to embellish this picture of Belgian life; I do not want in the least to convey the impression that all Belgians are either martyrs or heroes. This illusion has already done too much mischief. On the contrary, no people in Europe is more deeply and more openly human, with all the qualities and the weaknesses which the word implies. Whatever the Belgians are, they show it; they carry their character on their face, and their heart on the sleeve. They are unable to exercise self-restraint and to strike heroic attitudes. There is no classicism, no style about them, and no greater mistake could be made than to compare their action at the beginning of the war with that of Leonidas. The righteous feeling of a publican evicting a drunkard who is insulting his daughter is much more akin to the wild indignation which got hold of the average Belgian on the day of the ultimatum. Of the Belgian, perhaps more than of any other nation, it would be right to say, "It takes all sorts to make a world." It is unhap-

pily true, then, that in some quarters greed has exerted its humiliating influence. The Germans have been able to buy off a few consciences and some trades-people have not resisted the temptation to make fruitful bargains with the enemy. There is a small minority, a very small minority, of traitors and profiteers in Belgium; but, strange as it may seem, there are no pacifists.

When I asked the reason of one who, by his position, had traveled a good deal about the country, and had been brought into contact with people of all classes he said: "You wonder that we keep up our spirits in our German prison, cut off from the rest of the world. It is precisely because we do not hear too much about the Allies' efforts that we never doubt their success.

"The secret of our resistance is that we stand closer to Germany. We do not expect any miraculous concession from the German Imperialistic spirit, but, rightly or wrongly, we are convinced that we are witnessing the decline of this spirit. We do not believe in German organization and German efficiency, because we can see ourselves how disorganized and inefficient it can be. We do not believe in German cleverness, because none of their tricks ever caught us napping. And we believe in the Allies' success because we see the results of their efforts without thinking of the difficulties they may experience in making them."

### **THE TRAMP OF THE GERMAN SOLDIERS IN THE STREET.**

Sometimes, at night when people talk quietly of their hopes and miseries, when their thoughts wander towards some Belgian soldier in the trenches or some prisoner in the cold hut of a German camp, footsteps are heard in the street in front of the door. It is a German patrol—a few privates, led by a non-commissioned officer; and for one moment the conversation stops and the women cease to sew. The rhythmic beating of the nailed boots on the rough pavement soon grows fainter. With a sigh of relief the women again bend their heads over their work, the men pull at their pipes, and, without

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

further notice of this small incident, the talking is quietly resumed.

For you never know. At any moment the soldiers may stop, enter the house, and arrest one or more of the party. It might be here or it might be next door. It might be for some offense against the German regulations, or for nothing at all—an anonymous letter, or the denunciation

much energy in torturing their victims when nothing prevents them from deporting them according to their own sweet will. It is true that Burgomaster Max and a few other prominent citizens were never regularly tried, and were simply packed off to Germany as “undesirable.” But, as a rule, the oppressor likes to make a show of legality and to extract from the



SMUGGLING ON THE FRANCO-BELGIAN FRONTIER

Everybody traveling on the roads in this part of the country had to carry with them a certain permission from the temporary German military government. Nevertheless numerous attempts were made to carry on an extensive smuggling of goods into France. Many arrests of persons without passports took place, with consequent confiscation of goods. Ruschin

of an “agent provocateur.” Some have left in the morning for their office or for their work and never been seen again. Once arrested, you are brought straight to the *Kommandantur*, and, if your cross-examination is not considered satisfactory, sent to the prison of St. Gilles or some other gaol and put for weeks into solitary confinement pending your trial by a German military court.

### THE STORIES THAT ARE TOLD AMONG THE PEOPLE.

Terrible tales are told about the German inquisition, and one wonders really why the tormentors spend so

“culprit” a formal avowal, and, what is of still greater value to him, the denunciation of some “accomplices.” Every possible means is used for this purpose.

Some people have been deprived of food to compel them to speak, others have been beaten, others were told that their wife or their child was dying and that they would be allowed to see them if they confessed their crime. The examinations are kept up for hours in order to exhaust the strength of the accused, and when one examining officer is tired, another takes his place.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

I could not vouch for every one of these stories. Few of those who are supposed to have experienced such torture have come back to describe them. Enough is known to render these rumors plausible, so that the people live in dread of the German police and the German spies who infest

who, for some reason or another, finds himself on their black list.

**C**ONFISCATED COPIES OF "LIBRE BELGIQUE" CAUSE MANY ARRESTS.

Their work was rendered more easy by the seizure of a certain number of copies of the newspaper, *Libre Belgique*. One of these thrown in the



AN INTERESTING GROUP

King Albert of the Belgians followed by General Dubois, President Poincaré, M. Millerand and General Joffre greeting military observers in France. He is speaking with Lieut.-Colonel Higoutchi of Japan. The remarkable physique of the monarch seems to dwarf the figures of the other chiefs, of whom several are of no mean stature. N. Y. Times

the country, especially in the large towns. They can be found everywhere, in the street, in the trams, in the cafés, in the churches, under any possible disguise. It is their business to find out who publishes and circulates forbidden papers, such as "*La Libre Belgique*," who brings news from the soldiers to their families, who helps volunteers to cross the wire, who entertains relations with the Belgian Government; and when their quest remains fruitless, as it often does, to convict of such crime any good patriot

letter-box of any suspect or slipped into a drawer could serve as a pretext for his immediate arrest. A well-dressed man called on the principal of one of the most important schools in Brussels. He told this priest that the school had been highly recommended to him, and that he wanted his two boys to be educated there. He insisted on paying beforehand the fee for the first term, and slipped, as he left, a banknote in the principal's hand, whispering in his ear, "For the '*Libre Belgique*,' you know," and disappear-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ed, after saying that he would bring his boys the next day.

Something in the man's behavior made the priest suspicious, and he promptly sent the banknote to the office of "La Belgique," one of the German censored papers subsidized by the "Politische Abtheilung," asking for a receipt. The next day the German agent reappeared, escorted by two soldiers, and declared that it was his painful mission to arrest the principal, since, by accepting the money, he had admitted that he was connected with the publication of a forbidden paper. "Which paper?" asked the priest, showing great astonishment. "The 'Libre Belgique'."

"It is the first time that I hear the name," was the answer. "I thought you meant 'La Belgique.' The money has already been taken there. I am sorry I made this mistake, but perhaps there is still time to claim it. Here is the receipt if you care to go."

The patriot avoided thus a penalty of from ten to twenty years' imprisonment or deportation to Germany. But, for one who escapes, how many false victims of their confidence?—for the German military courts of Hasselt, Brussels, and Ghent may safely be compared with the "Bloody Council" of the Duke of Alva.

### HOW THE BELGIANS SHOW THEIR ATTITUDE TOWARD THE GERMANS.

In the street, when obliged to pass before a "field-grey," the Brussels bourgeois will look in another direction, in the tram no lady will remain in the car if a German takes his seat beside her. There are Belgian and German cafés, Belgian and German shops, and, in the country, where such arrangements are not always possible, the intrusion of an enemy is invariably followed by dead silence, even orders being given by signs. On August 17, 1917, when a service for the birthday of the Austrian Emperor was celebrated

in Ste. Gudule, the great church was deserted, and when, three days later, the German Emperor crossed the town, only his soldiers and policemen were there to greet him. This complete ostracism may relax, to a certain extent, in small country towns and



**PALAIS DE JUSTICE, BRUSSELS**

This was used by the Germans as a barracks. Begun in 1866 and inaugurated in 1883 on the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of Belgium's independence, it is pyramidal in shape and culminates in a dome with a cross.

villages, where only a few old and mournful men of the Landsturm form the whole garrison, but it is unmistakable and relentless in every town where even those patriots who speak to an enemy with the idea of getting some useful information from him live under a shadow.

The Germans sowed terror, thinking that they would reap the golden crop of submission, and lo! only thistles and nettles grow on the Belgian fields. And they wonder and ask themselves and every neutral they meet: "How is it? What have we done that we should be hated thus?"

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

But, if the Germans wonder at their failure, they do not alter their methods. They know no other. They no longer publish the names of the patriots sentenced by their courts, since such practice only prompts others to follow their example. They have also ceased to bury the martyrs outside the prisons where people could come and pray on their graves and cover them with flowers, but they go on condemning them, deporting others and fining many more. According to their own admission, 100,000 sentences were pronounced in one year (1915-16), and this figure must be largely increased by now. The disproportion between the offence and the punishment is, perhaps, more suggestive of German terrorism than the most sensational stories of torture and wanton cruelty. Here are a few examples:

### SOME EXAMPLES OF THE ATTEMPTS TO BREAK THE BELGIAN SPIRIT.

Parents are daily condemned to a penalty of three to six months' imprisonment and a fine of one thousand marks for "not having prevented their sons from crossing the frontier." Anybody who, verbally or otherwise, gives news from the soldiers to their relatives remaining in Belgium is heavily fined and deported to Germany. An official proclamation has been posted in Flanders declaring that anybody who should be taken carrying any weapon—even a pocket-knife—would be shot. A citizen of Hasselt was fined one thousand marks for closing his windows when the military band was playing in the market-place. The burgo-master of Mons, for refusing to stand at attention before the military governor of the town, had to pay 7,500 francs, etc.

It is scarcely necessary to recall here the deportation of M. Max the burgo-master of Brussels and of his successor M. Lemonier, whose crime had been to defend their constitutional rights; or that of Professors Pirenne and FredERICQ, whose only offense was that of declining to help the Germans in the creation of the new University of Ghent. Under such trivial pretexts at least ten deputies and senators, fifteen

burgomasters and aldermen, eminent advocates and well-known doctors, have been banished from the country.

### THE DEMAND THAT THE PEOPLE GIVE ACTIVE AID.

The imposition of collective fines on the communes has become a regular source of income for the German war-chest. Any incident may serve as a pretext to justify such measures—a telegraph-post thrown down by a gale, the successful escape of workmen or recruits, the appearance of an Allied aeroplane over the town, or a sympathetic demonstration towards British prisoners. In the summer of 1917 Mons had to pay 500,000 marks after a British air raid, under the pretext that it followed the announcement by a Belgian paper published in Holland that Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria had established his headquarters there. The small commune of Zele, near Termonde, was condemned to a fine of 100,000 marks because the inhabitants had distributed food and cigarettes to British prisoners. Malines was fined 20,000 marks because the local authorities had refused to clear up the wreckage caused by the bombardment of the town by the enemy.

The last example illustrates particularly well the German policy pursued in Belgium. It is not enough that the people should not do anything to help their country, they should also do everything to help Germany. It is not enough that they should refrain from any demonstration of sympathy towards their Allies, they should also exert themselves to further German aims. Malines should clear the ruins wrought by German guns, deportees should be employed on military work, professors should lend their name and reputation to the German University of Ghent, patriots be compelled to dig trenches and build concrete dug-outs to shelter German soldiers.

### SOME INDIVIDUALS SUCCUMB TO THE TEMPTATION.

The tramp of soldiers has become especially loud in some Belgian towns. The Germans are not suppressing a rising. They are protecting a little band of traitors against the infuriated

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

population whose patience is exhausted. For the stubborn hostility against the Boches however burning, cannot be compared to the fierce hatred of the people against the few "activists" who, with German help and German money, are endeavoring to break up Belgium. There is a traitor in the Belgian tragedy. It is a man who, before the war, was regarded as a failure while he

features of foreign oppression that it gives them a chance to satisfy their greed and their rancor. They may be seen in Belgium to-day lecturing to the empty benches of the Ghent University, filling the most responsible posts of the deserted Flemish Ministries, going in and out of the *Kommandantur* bent on some cloudy errand. Dressed in brand new frock coats, they wander



THE UNIVERSITY OF GHENT, REORGANIZED BY GERMAN AUTHORITY

considered himself a success. He belongs generally to the intellectual class. It is a college professor whose head has been turned by the prospect of a chair at Ghent, or a civil servant who could not resist the temptation offered by a directorship, or a doctor in search of patients, a singer without voice, a painter without talent, a poet without inspiration, or merely a debtor without any money—what the French call a "rate," a man who cannot forgive his country or his Government for the scant attention given to him in the past and who is ready to sell his soul for power, money, and a top-hat.

Such people exist in every country, and it is perhaps one of the worst

through the streets trying not to see the look of hatred which follows them everywhere and not to hear the ironic greeting "Traitor! Judas!" whispered by every passer-by.

### HOW THE BELGIANS DEALT WITH THOSE WHO AIDED GERMANY.

The professors and students at Ghent, the new officials at the Flemish Ministry in Brussels, are outside the pale of society. These men were so few, and their propaganda had so little influence, that the patriots never took the trouble to attack them seriously. It seemed scarcely worth while. But the self-appointed "Council of Flanders" proclaimed the "Independence of Flanders" in January, 1918, and started

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

a violent propaganda under German protection. In spite of the ridiculously small number of separatists (there are only a few hundred "activists" among the four million Flemings), this step might have proved dangerous in creating among the German people and even among Allied nations, the illusion that a certain part of the Belgian population wanted to dissociate themselves from the rest

### WHEN THE BELGIAN JUDGES WENT ON A STRIKE.

In Brussels, a few days later, the Belgian Court of Appeal took the initiative of prosecuting the eleven signatories of a poster proclaiming the independence of Flanders. Two of them were duly arrested, on February 8th, and the judge was cross-examining them when a German major in full uniform rushed into the study of



GHENT, CAPITAL OF THE PROVINCE OF EAST FLANDERS

The city is intersected by a number of streams and canals spanned by more than 200 bridges. The older portion with its narrow streets and gabled buildings bears a decidedly Flemish aspect and possesses numerous buildings of great historical interest. Ghent has a number of old guild houses and about twenty monasteries. Ruschin

of the nation and to receive separate treatment at the peace conference. An "independent" Flanders meant evidently a German-protected Flanders. Though German statements have repeatedly assured us that they do not want to annex Belgium "violently," they might, later on, make the same answer to the Allies about Flanders as they did to the Bolsheviks concerning the Baltic provinces: "We do not care to annex an inch of territory, but we cannot decently refuse to protect large provinces, if the people there claim our protection."

M. Jottrand the public prosecutor with great clatter of sword and spurs, and, thumping the table with his fist, demanded the immediate release of the two activist leaders. M. Jottrand only consented to give the order of release when Major Schauer had given him a written document stating that he took all the responsibility for the illegal measure. And a few moments later the Belgians, assembled before the Palace of Justice, could see the German officer walking out, carrying the voluminous dossier under his arm, with one traitor on each side. I need scarcely add that

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the three presidents of the Court of Appeal were deported as "undesirable," after which all the Belgian magistrates decided to suspend their sittings.

Extraordinary country, where the patriotic judges go on strike hand in hand with the patriotic workmen, and where an archbishop and the members of the Supreme Court are counted among the foremost ringleaders!

The people are fed on substitutes when they are fed at all, terrorism is rampant, the whole country, with its wide, rolling plains and capricious hills, has become a huge prison; but laughter is not entirely dead. The Belgian's answer to the tramp of the soldiers is his laughter. Not bitter, defiant laughter, rather the broad, good-humored laughter of a man who



SALVAGING AND CLEARING IN THE HARBOR

An Antwerp diver ascertaining if a sunken ship could be raised. When the Belgians evacuated the city they sank their ships in the harbors—an action which cost the Germans many months of tiresome work, although incidentally it gave thereby great impetus to German salvaging industries, already very far advanced. Ruschin

### THE PEOPLE HAVE NOT FORGOTTEN HOW TO LAUGH.

It is very difficult to give a trustworthy picture of Belgian life in the spring of 1918 without producing an impression of gloom. The situation of these seven million men, women, and children separated from their friends and relations in the Army or abroad, completely isolated from the rest of the world, left at the mercy of a victor who is exerting all his cunning in order to extract the last ounce of their energy, the last potato of their crop, the last shilling of their money, the last breath of their patriotism, is nothing short of desperate.

would rather be ruined or deported than give up a practical joke.

### THE SPECTRE OF STARVATION NEVER OUT OF SIGHT.

"I shall never think of Belgium," writes Mrs. Kellogg, "without seeing endless processions of silent men and black-shawled women, pitchers in hand, waiting for the day's pint of soup. One and a quarter million make a long procession. If you have imagined it in the sunshine, think of it in the rain. A man may shut himself in his house and forget the war for a few hours, but he dare not venture outside. If he does, he will quickly stumble against a part of this line . . ."



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The Belgian people may be roughly divided into three classes—those who are entirely dependent on relief, most industrial workers, small shopkeepers, and a certain portion of the professional classes who have been thrown out of work or entirely ruined by the war; those who are only partly de-

### EMPLOYERS AND WORKMEN REFUSE TO WORK FOR GERMANY.

The Germans have failed to persuade the Belgians that the British blockade is in any shape or form responsible for the situation. This fallacy, propounded by the censored Press, has been repeatedly exposed by

Cardinal Mercier and the local authorities who protested against the deportations. The people know that Britain allowed the import of foodstuffs under neutral control, and that, when these do not reach the country, as was the case in the summer of 1917, it is owing to the torpedoing of the relief ships by U-boats. They are also aware that, had Germany consented to submit to the same control regarding raw material, the Belgian workshops might have been kept busy, and a half a million men would not have been thrown out of work. It is not the blockade which reduces the Belgian workers of Mons, Charleroi, and Liège to the desperate conditions in which they find themselves today. It is not even the enormous requisitions in money, food, and raw stuffs made by the enemy. It is the stubborn and splendid patriotism which made these men refuse to work against their country. The Belgian civilians are starving today for the same reason for which they were massacred in August, 1914—because they stubbornly resist



NURSE EDITH CAVELL, VICTIM OF GERMAN SAVAGERY

This woman whose life had been devoted to works of mercy was, by the order of Baron von Bissing, shot, after summary trial at Brussels on October 11, 1915, for helping British and Belgian fugitives across the Belgian frontier.

pendent on relief, including a number of the bourgeois class, whose income, though curtailed, allows them to pay the low prices of the "Comité National"; and those who are still entirely self-supporting, including the farmers, some merchants, and the owners of landed property. Out of the seven million people remaining in Belgium about four million are entirely or partly dependent on the work of the Commission for Relief.

Germany's will.

Men and women from the Liège region, unable to support their families, tramp sometimes for days in Hesbaye or Flemish Limbourg in order to obtain food at the farms and they seldom come back empty-handed. Walloon children by the thousand are found as far as the Dutch frontier in places where they cannot make themselves understood. But the voice of heart does not need translating.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE GAY TOWN LIFE NO LONGER EVIDENT.

Those who knew Brussels before the war, the gay city with its noisy streets, loud-speaking crowd, and comfortable life, would be staggered if they could wander to-day about the deserted and

must drag their cars along, and it is a painful sight to see these weak men in harness struggling to climb the steep streets. Another remarkable feature, in a town where no household was complete without some pet animal, cats and dogs are quickly disappearing.



GERMAN OFFICER PURCHASING FOOD IN BELGIUM

Elderly officer buying vegetables from Belgian peasant's humble stall in the market place. Such products could not be hoarded for the Belgians themselves, nor concealed from the vigilant Germans whose military governors were wont, if they suspected such deception, to commandeer the whole crop. Roots are largely grown in the heavy soil of the Low Countries.

Ruschin

silent thoroughfares of the upper part of the town. But for the few cars used by the *Kommandantur* and the "Comité National," no motors are to be seen; cycles have vanished; unemployment has considerably decreased the pedestrian traffic. The tramways, on the other hand, are very active. They are the principal means of transport for public services, all heavy material being conveyed in small open trucks along the line. Even burials take place in that way, the coffin being placed in the first carriage, and the family and friends sitting in the second. A few months ago a few oxen, donkeys, and old horses were still employed by private firms. Now they are seldom to be seen. The dustmen, for instance,

No regulations have yet been made in Brussels, as in Ghent, for instance, about the slaughtering of dogs, but such regulations have become useless. There will soon be no dogs left.

### THE SOUND OF WOODEN SHOES ON THE PAVEMENTS.

If there are few passers-by, they can be heard approaching from afar, owing to the wooden soles which replace the old leather ones when these are worn out. Many poor people walk in wooden shoes, and even some policemen are seen wearing this rustic footwear. The women do wonders to look neat and smart, and they succeed to a certain extent. Only their intimate friends know that their new dress is the third edition, modified and converted, of an

*and are still fighting for  
the common cause of human  
liberty so dear to every  
American woman's heart*

*Elisabeth*

## THE CLOSE OF A LETTER FROM THE QUEEN OF THE BELGIANS

old pre-war "toilette," and they do not easily confess that their best coat has been made out of an extra blanket. Owing to the requisitions, wool, cloth, and even linen have become so valuable that, in some cases, robbers have taken away the clothes of their victims, reviving the custom of the old highwaymen.

The enemy has seized every kind of brass in the cafés, tramcars, and public buildings, and even in private houses. All the brilliant copper fittings are replaced by dull iron. The shine has gone from the gay city. After the scarcity of food, this want of brightness and spotless cleanliness is perhaps the severest trial of the Brussels housewife. It was the great luxury of the poor in Belgium. Water is still plentiful—it is perhaps the only thing which has not been affected by the war—but a small piece of soap is worth four shillings.

## THE "BUSY BEES" STRIVE TO SAVE THE CHILDREN.

And still through frost and snow, through wind and showers, unexpectedly the queues of "silent men and black-shawled women, pitchers in hand," bar the way, and the wanderer realizes that out of 750,000 people who live in Brussels, from 200,000 to 250,000 are destitute. Besides these grown-ups who wait before the "soupes" there are crowds of children who gather

at 11 o'clock before the canteens for subnormal children, to take the extra meal provided by the "Petites Abeilles," the private association known in Brussels as the "Little Bees." Twenty-six thousand children are fed by 2,000 to 3,000 women of all classes who have volunteered for this work since the beginning of the occupation and looked after by one hundred and twenty-five physicians who give their services.

The "Little Bees" are all volunteers. They receive a subsidy from the Commission for Relief, and go from door to door to collect alms. They gather in this way, in Brussels alone, \$500 a week besides gifts in food, and bring their honey back to the hive. Their popularity in the town has grown tremendously, and it is believed that it is owing to their untiring efforts that the mortality among children has been kept within bounds.

## MRS. KELLOGG TELLS OF THE CHILDREN SHE SAW IN BRUSSELS.

Queen Elisabeth was the promoter and the patroness of the association before the war. But, in spite of the absence of their Queen, engaged in sterner duty on the Yser front, the workers have remained faithful to their post, and will be able, when the time comes, to render a glorious account of themselves. This is how Mrs. Kellogg describes the rush of youngsters in the canteen:

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

"It was raining outside, but all was white and clean and inviting within. Suddenly there was a rush of feet in the courtyard below. I looked out of the window; in the rain 1,662 children between three and fourteen years, mothers often leading the smaller ones, not an umbrella or rubber among them, were lining up with their cards, eager to be passed by the sergeant.

'Beaucoup, mademoiselle, beaucoup!' A few even said, 'Only a little, mademoiselle!' Everybody said something. One tiny, golden-haired thing pleaded, 'You know, I like the little pieces of meat best.' In no time they discovered that I was new, and tried to induce me to give them extra slices of bread or bowls of milk."

Though they bear other names in



BRUGES "THE SLEEPING TOWN"

Bruges has preserved to this day its mediaeval aspect. The old houses and beautiful Gothic churches, narrow canals bridge-adorned, all bear the stamp of rare beauty and quaintness. Once the entire wool trade of Flanders was in the hands of the citizens of Bruges and the town was, moreover, the seat of a brilliant cosmopolitan colony of artists. Zeebrugge, connected by a canal is the port of Bruges.

These kind-hearted, long-suffering sergeants kept this wavering line in place, as the children noisily climbed the long stairway, calling, pushing. One little girl stepped out to put fresh flowers before a bust of the Queen. Boys and girls under six crowded into the first of the large airy rooms, older girls into the second, while the bigger boys climbed to the floor above. With much chattering and shuffling of sabots they slid along the low benches to their places at the long narrow tables. The women hurried between the wriggling rows, ladling out the hot, thick soup. The air was filled with cries of,

other towns, there are "Little Bees" all over the country looking after 253,000 subnormal children, and fighting hard to protect the little ones against tuberculosis and other diseases which are the direct result of the food crisis.

### THE ATTEMPTS OF THE BELGIANS TO HELP THEMSELVES.

It is almost impossible to give an idea of the efforts made in Belgium to preserve the race and alleviate suffering. The school children (there are 1,200,000 of them) receive an extra meal at 4 P. M., given them by the schoolmasters and schoolmistresses. The "Drop of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Milk" cares for expectant mothers, and has 53,000 babies under supervision. The Clothing Relief provides several hundred thousand garments, besides giving a few hours' employment a week to 25,000 seamstresses, in Brussels alone. The lace industry—the only industry whose exports are allowed—keeps 48,000 workers busy. The "Restaurants Economiques" provide over 10,000 cheap meals a day in Brussels to the many "Pauvres hon-teux," who would rather endure severe privations than be seen in the soup queues.

All these foundations are subsidized by the communes and the Commission for Relief, and none of them could work for more than a month without the help of volunteers and the constant flow of private subscriptions. Mr. Hoover speaks of an army of 55,000 volunteer workers on relief that has grown among the Belgian and French people, "of a perfection and a patriotism without parallel in the existence of any country." It is "to the growth of the relief organization, and the demand it has made upon the people's exertions and their devotion, that its *morale* has flowered in such a fine national spirit and stoical resolution."

### THE BELGIAN ARMY AND THE BELGIAN PEOPLE.

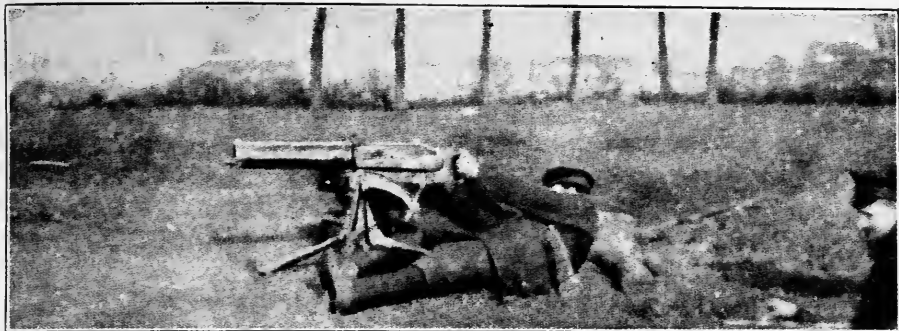
The Belgians have refused to work for Germany, but they are working for Belgium harder than ever; some of them are so engrossed in this new undertaking that they have no time to weep over the past. Their sight must clear like that of the pilot of the ship, for there is danger ahead. Never has there been so little money in the

country, and never have so many charities flourished.

The Army is worshipped. In many homes the picture of the absent soldier occupies the place of honor in the living room, and is surrounded with small household treasures. Tapers are kept burning before these shrines during the winter nights, and they are surrounded with flowers in summer. The soldiers' children and the orphans are the object of solicitude of hundreds of associations, such as the "Secours des Enfants de nos Braves," the "Obolc Populaire," the "Friends of our Soldiers' Children," the "Orphan's Flower," and the prisoners in Germany are not forgotten by "L'Adoption," the "Comité du Soldat Belge Prisonnier," while the disabled are looked after by "La Fraternelle des Soldats Mutilés."

### LAUGHING AT THEIR MISERY ENABLES THEM TO ENDURE IT.

"The great characteristic of the Belgian people," writes Mr. J. G. Blicck, in the *Amsterdammer* after spending two years in the occupied provinces, "is the unconquerable strength of their living spirit, this spirit which remains silent because obliged to do so, but remains untamed, which laughs because inclined to do so and because it knows. Yes, even in the present circumstances, the spirit of Belgium laughs! It laughs at the incongruities of life, mocking the warrior's sword, mocking its own misery. But laughter means victory; and it is precisely because Belgium began again to laugh so soon, and has never ceased to laugh since, that she will conquer. She does not even resist the evil spirit, because it has no hold upon her.



A British Machine Gunner

## CHAPTER LXI

# The German Offensive of March and April

## LUDENDORFF ATTEMPTS TO GAIN PEACE BY SEPARATING THE FRENCH AND BRITISH ARMIES

**DURING** the winter of 1917-1918 there was much speculation as to whether the Germans would venture to attack in force on the Western Front in the following spring. The collapse of the Russian front had by this time enabled them to transfer to the West vast numbers of fresh troops and a great quantity of war material—with the result that in strength they were now considerably superior. On the other hand, there were those—some of them high up in the Allied councils—who, remembering the failure of the Allies to break through in 1916 and 1917, believed that the deadlock on the Western Front was unbreakable, and that the Germans would not dare to attack. Even among the soldiers, there were many who regarded the prospect of a German offensive as too good to be true, and who believed that the Germans would continue their stone-walling tactics rather than venture on the project of a grand offensive.

### THE SITUATION AT HOME FORCED THE GERMANS TO FIGHT.

These latter views, however, were based on a false estimate of the situation. The position of the Central Powers, though temporarily favorable, was rapidly becoming critical. Austria, Bulgaria, and Turkey could not be expected to continue the struggle indefinitely; and even in Germany in-

ternal conditions were steadily growing worse. The submarine warfare, moreover, had failed to yield the results which had been promised from it; and it was clear that the intervention of the United States in the European theatre would soon become a serious factor. Obviously, it was the part of wisdom for the Germans to make the fullest use of their temporary superiority. If the British and French armies could be decisively defeated before the Americans could come to their relief, the war would be virtually won; for it was not expected that the United States, separated from the field of conflict by thousands of miles of sea, would continue the struggle single-handed.

### LUDENDORFF PROMISES VICTORY WITHIN FOUR MONTHS.

Everything hinged on whether, in the next round of the bout, the German army could administer to the combined British and French armies a knock-out blow; and it would appear that early in the winter Ludendorff, who—under the nominal leadership of the popular idol, Hindenburg—was the master-mind of the German army, had already come to the conclusion that such an achievement was feasible. At a secret session of the German Reichstag, held in February, 1918, Ludendorff appeared in person, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

after outlining his proposals, guaranteed the German people a victorious peace within four months, if his proposals were adopted. He frankly estimated the probable German losses at an appalling figure; but the Reichstag intoxicated with the prospect of victory at last, gave his project their blessing.



GEN SIR WILLIAM ROBERTSON, CHIEF  
OF IMPERIAL STAFF

**G**ENERAL LUDENDORFF'S PLAN TO GAIN  
A VICTORIOUS PEACE.

Ludendorff's plan bore witness to the power and originality of his narrow but efficient mind. It was a definite and revolutionary attempt to find a fresh solution for the stalemate which had been brought about by the war of positions. In the battles of the preceding years it had been deemed essential to prepare the way for an infantry assault by a prolonged bombardment—with the result that the element of surprise was lost, the enemy got plenty of time and warning to get his reserves

up, and the attack was not able to progress far. The bombardment was likely, also, to make the ground impassable for the artillery and supply services as the attack swept forward.

The problem had been partially solved by the British in their tank attack near Cambrai in November, 1917, where the prolonged artillery bombardment had been dispensed with, and a complete surprise had been obtained. Ludendorff did not have a sufficient number of tanks to enable him to copy the British tactics, nor does he appear at this stage to have thought highly of the tanks as an instrument of warfare; but he was profoundly impressed with the success of the British in restoring the element of surprise to the battle.

### **T**HE NEW GERMAN PLAN OF ATTACK TO BE TRIED ON A LARGE SCALE.

He could not, of course, hope to obtain a complete surprise; but he conceived that it would be at least possible to deceive the enemy as to the point at which his main blow was to fall. His idea was to effect his concentrations far behind the front line, where they would threaten several different sectors of the enemy's front; to hurry his troops forward to the assembly positions under cover of night, by every means of transportation at his disposal; to attack, after a brief but violent bombardment, in overwhelming strength at certain critical points, and thus to effect a break-through before the enemy could readjust himself to meet the sudden blow. The actual assault was to be carried out by specially trained storm-troops, who were to press forward at all costs through any gaps that appeared, and were to indicate by a carefully prepared system of signals the lines of least resistance to be followed by the dense waves of infantry, cavalry, and artillery attacking in their wake. All troops were to be furnished with several days' iron rations, and were to push on to the limit of their endurance, when they would be "leap-frogged" by fresher formations. These

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tactics had been used by General von Hutier in the East, and later at Caporetto on a limited scale.

After a personal inspection of the front, Ludendorff selected the sector on which his attack was to be made. This sector was the southern half of the British line, extending from north of Cambrai to south of St. Quentin, and coinciding with the areas held by the British Third and Fifth Armies. It was intended, however, that the main blow should fall on the British Fifth Army, at the extreme right of the British line; and the object of this blow was to separate the British and French armies, so that it would be possible to isolate the British from French assistance, to roll the British armies back on the Channel ports and destroy them; then to turn south and roll up the French line. It was an astute attempt to put into twentieth-century practice Napoleon's device of separating his enemies and defeating them in succession.

### HOW NEAR TO SUCCESS DID LUDENDORFF COME?

Just how far this plan fell short of success is a question which will probably be debated in Germany for many years to come. Certainly it did not fall far short. Ludendorff's concentration of his troops left the Allies in the dark as to where his main blow was to fall; and the preparations which they made to meet it were hopelessly astray. The French commander-in-chief, General Pétain, was convinced that Ludendorff was going to attack in Champagne; and, in order that he might strengthen his line, he induced the British to take over an additional thirty miles of front in the neighborhood of St. Quentin—the very spot where the German drive was to take place. This arrangement produced a dangerous extension of the British line; for Sir Douglas Haig, owing to the failure of the British Government to support the Western Front



THE INTERIOR OF ST. GERVAIS

Interior of the Paris Church of St. Gervais, hit by a shell during the long-range bombardment of the capital on Good Friday, 1918. One hundred and fifty worshippers were victims of this attack.

with adequate reinforcements, had actually at his disposal at the very least 100,000 fewer fighting troops than he had had a year before, when he had occupied a shorter front.

Had General Haig known beforehand where Ludendorff was going to strike, he might still have been able to counter the blow; but failing this knowledge, he had no choice but to mass his reserves behind what seemed the most vulnerable places in his line—that is to say, in the north, protecting the Channel ports, where he was not able, without disaster, to give much ground. Consequently, the southern part of the British line was very lightly held. The Fifth British Army, which lay directly across the path of the main German drive, and which was composed of only fourteen infantry divisions and three cavalry divisions, all considerably below strength, had to defend a front of over forty miles.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE REASONS WHY THE FIFTH ARMY BROKE DOWN.

The breakdown of the Fifth Army in the battle that followed has given rise to so much harsh criticism that it may be worth while, for the sake of justice, to explain in some detail the situation on the Fifth Army front. The greater part of this sector had been taken over by the British only in

and a rear zone, several thousand yards apart; he had even begun defensive works as far back as the crossings of the Somme and he had done his best to improve communications by repairing the roads, building light railways, establishing dumps, and so forth. But the number of men at his disposal was limited—so limited that he had to content himself with defending parts of



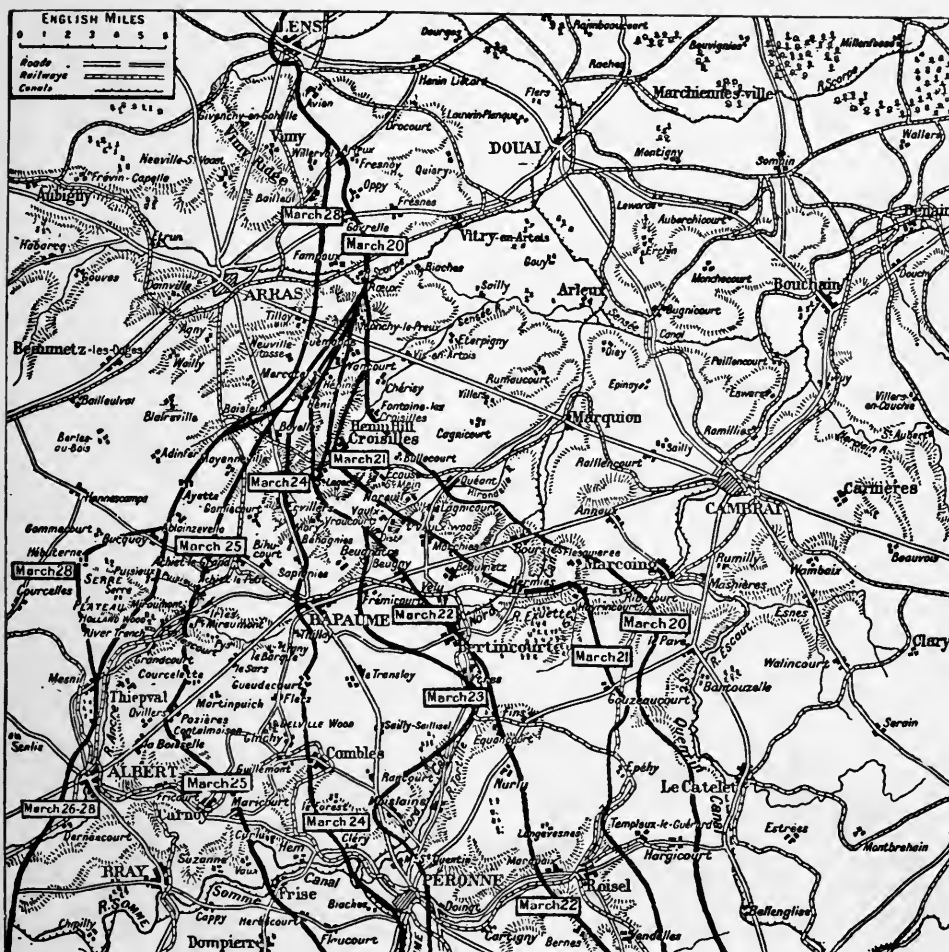
A SYMBOL IN SILHOUETTE

An Anzac sentry on guard for the Empire somewhere in France. The Odyssey of the Anzacs was perhaps written on the tortured cliffs and burning sands of Gallipoli, but their gallantry upon the fields of Western Europe, in Palestine and in Mesopotamia marks a fair page in the annals of the Empire. British Official

the latter part of January, 1918, and its defenses were in a sketchy condition. Being partially protected by the marshes of the Oise valley it had not been strongly held by the French. The country behind it, moreover, was the devastated area over which the Germans had passed in their retreat to the Hindenburg line the year before, and was seriously deficient in adequate facilities for communication and transportation. Sir Hubert Gough, the commander of the Fifth Army, had, on taking over the front, immediately set himself to improving its defenses. He had organized three separate defensive zones, an outpost zone, a battle zone

his line by means of a series of disconnected posts; and, when the storm broke, his preparations were still far from completion. To make matters worse, the early spring of 1918 was phenomenally dry; and the marshes of the Oise valley dried up, with the result that the Germans were able to make their way across them in much larger numbers than had been thought possible. Seldom in truth have troops found themselves, through no fault of their own, in a less enviable position than did the attenuated units of Gough's devoted army as the fateful end of March, 1918, which was to bring unexpected disaster, drew nigh.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



WHERE THE GERMAN BLOW FELL IN MARCH

### THE THUNDER-BOLT IS LAUNCHED UPON THE BRITISH LINE.

Up to the last minute, the British General Staff were under the impression that the main German blow was going to fall on the British Third Army; whereas, as the battle unfolded, it was found to have fallen on the Fifth Army. Against the fifteen divisions of the Third Army, under Sir Julian Byng, Ludendorff threw twenty-four divisions from Otto von Below's Seventeenth Army and von der Marwitz's Second Army; but against the fourteen infantry divisions and three cavalry divisions of Gough's Fifth Army, he threw no less than forty divisions, including the whole of von Hutier's

Eighteenth Army and the great part of von der Marwitz's Second Army. Before the end of the fighting nine more divisions were used, seventy-three in all. The importance of the southern part of the attack was further emphasized by the fact that, whereas the northern part was made by troops in the Army Group of Rupprecht of Bavaria, von Hutier's Army was in the Army Group of the German Crown Prince. Once the attack was under way, it was announced that the Kaiser was in supreme command.

The thunder-bolt was launched on the morning of March 21. At 4 A. M. the German guns opened up a terrific bombardment of gas and high explosive

shells, not only along the front of the British Third and Fifth Armies, but on many other parts of the front, both British and French. Dunkirk even was bombarded. More shells were used than in the entire Franco-Prussian war. Then, as the morning wore on, the infantry attack developed on a sixty-mile front from north of the River Sensée to south of the River Oise. In one place it began as early as 8 A. M. and it was general by 10 A. M. It did not fall on all parts of the line with equal force: some places, such as the face of the salient opposite Cambrai, were hardly attacked at all, and units fighting side by side found themselves subjected to very different degrees of pressure. It was only at certain points that the attack was pressed with especial violence; and here, indeed, it was all but irresistible.

## THE WEATHER CONDITIONS FAVORABLE TO THE GERMANS.

As luck would have it, the weather conditions were particularly favorable for the attack. The morning of March 21 broke with the front wrapped in one of those dense fogs for which the winter of northern France has become famous. This meant that, in the damp and heavy air, the fumes of the German gas shells hung long and low on the ground; and it made next to impossible any effective counter-battery work on the part of the British artillery. When the infantry attack developed, the fog prevented the British from seeing their assailants until they were only a few yards away, and so rendered abortive the carefully devised scheme of defense which the British had evolved. The idea underlying the British defenses was that the outpost line should serve to break up the cohesion of the German attack, and that the battle zone, which was composed of a series of redoubts and strong points manned by machine-guns sweeping the approaches with transverse fire, should bring the attack to a standstill. What actually happened was that the troops in the outpost line were in many cases overwhelmed almost before they were aware that the Germans were upon them; and the machine-guns and artillery in the battle

zone were robbed of their targets by the fog until it was almost too late. Nature had provided the Germans with a "smoke-screen" more effectual than any that artificial means could have devised.

It should not be imagined, however, that there was at first anything in the nature of a *débâcle*. Though the outpost line was almost everywhere overrun, and several deep dents were made in the battle zone, the rear zone was at the end of the day everywhere intact. Nor, in view of the facts, can the British resistance be described as other than heroic. Over the fate of many of the advance posts a silence reigns more eloquent than words; but we know that in others the defenders held out long after the advancing German hordes had swept past them. A typical illustration of the fate of these redoubts may be found in the story of Manchester Hill, opposite St. Quentin, which was held by the 16th Manchesters. The colonel of the Manchesters, Elstob, had issued instructions that "The Manchesters will defend Manchester Hill to the last;" and the battalion lived and died true to its orders.

## MEN IN THE ADVANCE POSTS FIGHT TO THE END.

In some localities rifle-fire was heard about the advance posts as late as midnight; and indeed in most cases the forward troops fought until they could fight no more. Though fighting against hopeless odds, they served to absorb the shock of the first German onslaught, and thus slowed up the German advance. It is significant that nowhere on the first day did the German attack reach such a depth as was reached, for example, by the later assault of the Canadians and Australians opposite Amiens on August 8. Its maximum depth of penetration was about 8,000 yards at the extreme south of the British line; and the average depth was probably not more than half of that distance.

Had the British had even a normal supply of reserves, especially on the Fifth Army front to the south, it is probable that they might have made

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

good their line of resistance on the following day. In reserves, however, they were woefully deficient. Practically all of the very slender reserves of the Fifth Army had been drawn into the fight on March 21; and in view of the progress which the Germans had made, it was deemed necessary to withdraw the right wing of the Fifth Army behind the Crozat Canal. At the same

ally "masked." Nevertheless, practically the whole front of Byng's Third Army held firm; and the thin-strung line along the Crozat Canal in the south opposed a most stubborn resistance to the German advance. It was in the centre of the Fifth Army, opposite St. Quentin, that the break occurred. This appears to have been the point at which the Germans launched



SHELTERED PIGEON HOUSE AT THE FRONT

With the declaration of war the liaison units mobilize and establish their various stations to which their carrier pigeons resort bringing the messages entrusted to them. Reserve birds, sent to the front in baskets, are held in the first line whence they can be dispatched to maintain the communications with the rear.

time, certain rectifications of the line were made farther north, especially at the salient opposite Cambrai, which had been heavily attacked at both re-entrants. These operations were carried out during the night of March 21-22, with practically no interference from the enemy.

### THE GERMANS' BREAK THROUGH OPPOSITE ST. QUENTIN.

On the morning of March 22, however, the Germans renewed their attack with great violence. The morning was again thick with mist, and once more the fire of the British guns, rifles and machine-guns was effect-

the spearhead of their attack. Under the weight of the troops which Ludendorff here poured into the battle, the British, fighting fiercely and continuously, were gradually forced back out of the battle zone and into the third or rear defensive zone. On this line they made a last desperate stand; but the omens were against them. In the neighborhood of the little Omignon River, the Germans found a gap between two British divisions; into this gap they poured large numbers of troops, and thus succeeded in effecting the definite break-through which they had in view. Since there were no

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

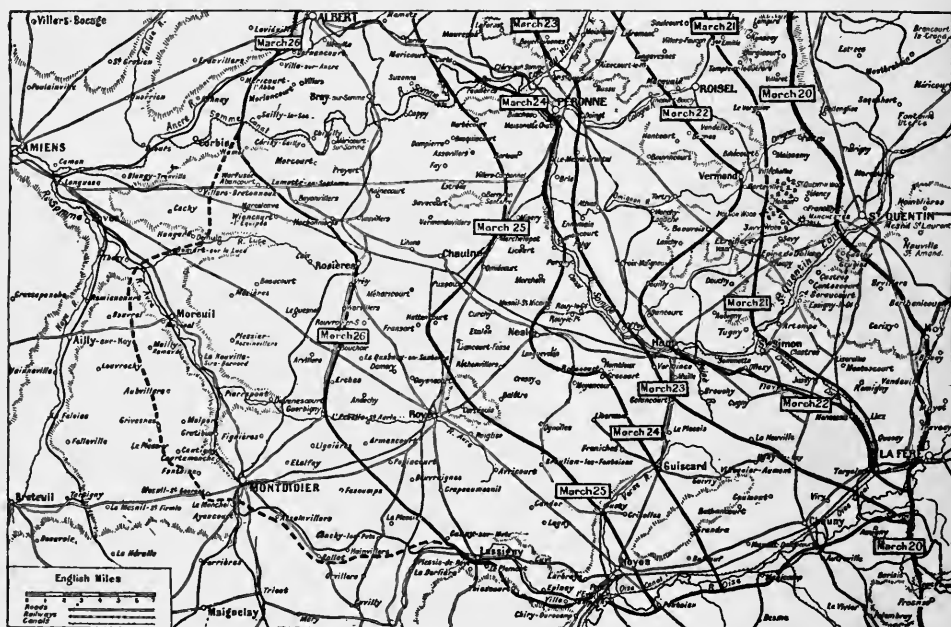
further reserves within call to be used in stopping the gap, the Fifth Army commander had now no choice but to order a withdrawal to the bridgehead positions which he had begun east of the Somme near Péronne. This he did just before midnight on March 22.

### THE WITHDRAWAL OF THE FIFTH ARMY TO THE SOMME.

To carry out a retirement under constant pressure from the enemy is one of the most difficult operations in warfare; and it is especially difficult with

Armies in the neighborhood of the River Tortille in the north, a most critical situation developed as a result of these dislocations.

In view of these facts, and in view also of reports received from the Air Force that the German front for miles back was black with advancing German troops, General Gough decided at the last minute not to attempt to make a stand on the east of the Somme, but to retire forthwith to the west bank. He felt, and perhaps rightly, that to



THE SOUTHERN PART OF THE BATTLE

troops which, like the British, were accustomed mainly to trench routine, and which had not been trained, as the German storm-troops had been, in the tactics of open fighting. As the British Fifth Army fell back toward the Somme, and the right wing of the Third Army swung back to conform with this movement, there was an almost inevitable dislocation of the front, and dangerous gaps appeared at certain points in the line. Into these gaps the Germans felt their way with an unerring instinct, and thus in some cases got in rear of the retiring British. Especially at Ham in the south and between the wings of the Third and Fifth

ask his tired troops to hold the bridgehead positions against the overwhelming forces opposed to them would be to invite disaster. In retiring over the river so precipitately, he of course greatly shortened the time available for evacuating the east bank of the river, with the result that great quantities of materials had to be abandoned to the enemy. But once his troops had the river in front of them, they were able to rally, and oppose a fairly effective resistance to the German advance. Night fell on March 23 with the Germans pressing hard upon the river line north of Ham; and even on March 24, when the Germans

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

succeeded in forcing the river crossings south of Épenancourt, the rest of the line held firm.

### BACK AGAIN UPON THE OLD SOMME BATTLEFIELDS.

Meanwhile, the front continued in movement both to the south and to the north. In the south, where the French reserves were already coming up in an attempt to staunch the ever-growing breach created as the British fell back westward, the Germans were striving to exploit their opportunities

sector were on the point of disintegration. By March 24 the Germans were already on the edge of the Somme battlefield, well to the rear flank of the British troops along the Somme south of the bend at Péronne. On March 25 they swept across the old battlefields, capturing Courcellette, Pozières, Thiépval, and many another place which it had cost the British untold blood and agony to wring from them a year and a half before; and by March 26 they were knocking at the gates of Albert itself.



BACK TO THE BASE

British wounded bound for dressing station and hospital base on light railway. Beside the track runs a duckboard along which painfully stumble the walking casualties. The severity of the weather of the spring of 1918 added materially to the suffering of the troops. The devotion of the ambulance men was a bright spot in war's dark annals.

to the utmost. Having carried the line of the Crozat Canal, they were pushing forward, and by nightfall on March 24 they had captured Chauny and were half-way along the road from Ham to Noyon.

In the north, a still more serious retreat was under way. The Germans, profiting to the full from the gap that they had found between the Third and Fifth Armies, were hustling the British back toward the old Somme battlefields of 1916. In the repeated retirements and readjustments of the line, divisions, brigades, and battalions lost touch with one another; and it seemed for a time as if the British line in this

By this time, however, British reinforcements were coming into line from farther north; and the ferocity of the German blow was spending itself. The German troops, after nearly a week of constant marching and fighting, were reaching the point of exhaustion; and the German transport was beginning to break down under the strain. On March 27 the Germans succeeded in capturing Albert—a town which had never before been in their hands; but this success was the highwater mark of their advance on this front. By March 28 they had everywhere been brought to a standstill along the line of the Ancre.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE RETREAT OF THE FIFTH ARMY SOUTH OF THE SOMME.

The rapid retreat of the Third Army and the left wing of the Fifth Army north of the Somme naturally rendered necessary repeated withdrawals of that part of the Fifth Army south of the Somme. These would no doubt have been necessary in any case; but they were rendered more difficult owing to



BRIG. GEN. SANDEMAN-CAREY

the fact that the British to the south of the Somme were a day behind those to the north in their retirement, and their left flank was therefore continually in the air. The most serious consequences of this situation were seen on March 26. On this date the British south of the Somme had taken up a position about twenty miles east of Amiens, where, despite their exhausted condition, and their poverty in reserves, they were prepared to make a desperate stand; but to the north of the river at Bray-sur-Somme, the local British commander, owing to a misconception of his orders, had already withdrawn several miles farther west, and the Germans were able to

cross the river and put themselves between the British and Amiens. Under these circumstances, there was nothing for the British to do but to retire again, which they did with such difficulty that the road to Amiens seemed open. Fortunately, General Gough had already arranged for the manning of the old Amiens defense line, from Marcelcave to the Somme, by a mixed force of details, stragglers, schools personnel, American engineers and Canadian railway troops, tunneling companies, laborers, cooks, and what not, under General Carey; and "Mother Carey's chickens," as this new Falstaff's army designated themselves, stopped the breach. By March 28 the remnants of the Fifth Army south of the Somme had fallen back into alignment with them; and here, for the time being, the German advance was stayed.

### BOTH SIDES WEARIED TO THE POINT OF EXHAUSTION.

During the week that followed, the Germans made repeated attempts, both before Amiens and north of the Somme, to prevent the British from stabilizing their line, and here and there local advances were made by them. But their offensive had lost its momentum. British airmen, who watched the last phase of the struggle from above, have described how, by this time, the infantry on both sides were so exhausted that, save in an emergency, they lay for hours opposite each other without firing. Thin as was the line that barred the approaches to Amiens, it now held; and March 28 may be regarded as closing the first phase of the German offensive in this quarter.

General Gough was just now sent to take charge of the defenses of Amiens, while General H. S. Rawlinson was given command of whatever British forces remained south of the Somme, as the Fifth Army could hardly be said longer to exist.

In the south, meanwhile, the Germans had been making notable progress. On March 25 they captured Nesle and Noyon; on March 26 they passed through Roye; and thence they struck south-west toward Montdidier,



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

in the double hope of interfering with the detraining of the French reinforcements at that point, and of finally separating the French and British Armies. In this they were almost successful, for on March 27 they captured Montdidier, in spite of General Fayolle's Frenchmen now coming up, and the Paris-Amiens railway came under the long-distance fire of the

to hold fast on the Bray-Albert line north of the Somme and General Fayolle, in charge of the French Reserve Group, was ordered to hold in the south. Though the Germans took Montdidier, they were not able to advance further. They succeeded during March 28 in progressing slightly on both sides of Montdidier; but by nightfall their progress had been stayed,



**BRITISH GUNNER COPYING INSTRUCTIONS**

Under camouflage alongside a big gun, a British gunner sits copying instructions. All "registrations," i. e. hits made upon a target, are carefully noted by the gunner for future reference. In this way a battery may turn upon a certain target within a few seconds by placing the "registered" angles and elevations upon the guns.

British Official

German guns. But by this time, now that it was clear that the whole weight of the German offensive was being thrown against the line held by the British, the French reserves were coming rapidly into the field.

On March 26 at a conference of Allied statesmen and generals at Doullens, behind the battle-front, General Foch had been appointed to "co-ordinate" the Allied forces in France; and already his influence began to be felt. With all the rare genius at his command, he accelerated the movement of the French reserves to the point of danger. General Haig agreed

and the German offensive here, as well as farther north, had shot its bolt.

### LUDENDORFF NEXT SHIFTS TO AN ATTACK ON ARRAS.

Ludendorff, however, though he had been held up in his attempt to capture Amiens and drive a wedge between the French and British Armies, still had another string to his bow. The hinge on which the British Third and Fifth Armies had swung back in their retreat was Arras; and Ludendorff conceived that if he could smash in this hinge he would renew the rearward movement of the British, and so would be able to achieve his object by a roundabout

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

route. He was nervous also about his left flank, where the French reserves were now appearing in ever-increasing numbers; and he could not allow the initiative to pass to the Allies. Consequently, on the morning of March 28—the day on which his advance in the valley of the Somme was reaching its

fense which the British had evolved was calculated to repel the most determined assaults. As the German storm-troops took up their assembly positions, they were in several places observed by the British artillery, and the severest punishment was inflicted on them; and when, after the usual



FIRST SNOWFALL IN FLANDERS

With its covering of freshly-fallen snow this stretch of Flemish fields scarcely suggests that it was near the battleground of the Western Front, in that small tract of the Belgian kingdom that was kept free from the ruthless invader. The scene with its rows of pollarded willows, distant farm buildings and cultivated ground showing through the covering of snow, suggests rather a typically peaceful countryside.

limit—he launched a powerful attack on the British defenses in front of Arras and Vimy Ridge.

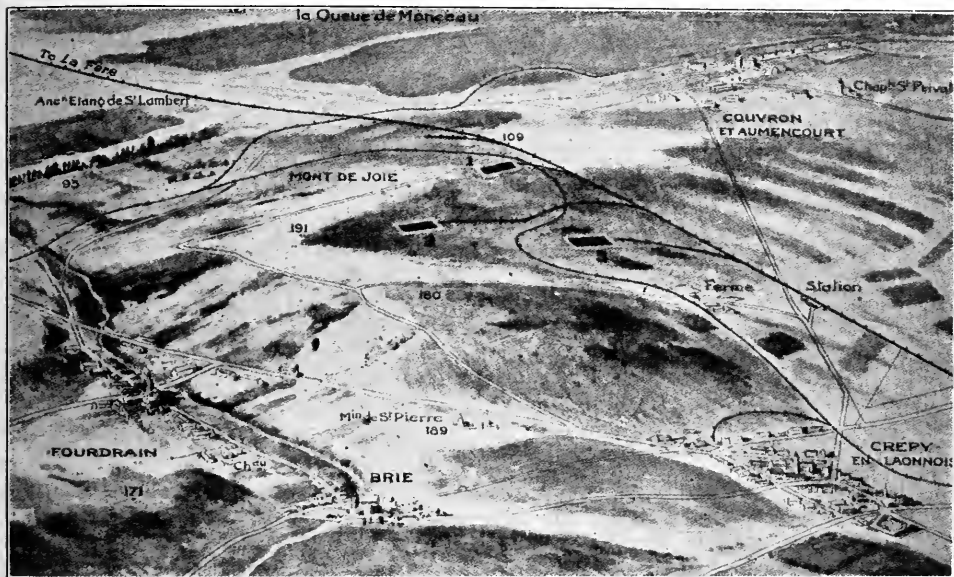
The Germans employed in this attack the same methods as they had used on March 21; and had they achieved a similar success the results must have been grave indeed. But, fortunately for the defense, the weather conditions were very different on March 28 from what they had been on the earlier date. There was no fog; and it was demonstrated that, under normal conditions, the scheme of de-

preliminary bombardment, the attack was launched, the British outpost line proved quite sufficient to break up its cohesion. The Germans advanced only to be mowed down by the transverse fire of the British machine-guns, by the point-blank fire of the British field artillery, and, in some cases, by the fire of the surviving garrisons of the outpost line, who faced about and poured round after round into their flank and rear. The result was that the attack withered away, and the day ended with the British battle zone everywhere

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

intact. So decisive was the repulse that, apart from a second and equally disastrous attack on part of the line on the afternoon of March 28, the Germans made no further attempt to advance on this front. Ludendorff's campaign up to this time had failed in spite of the ground he had won. He had made a gap, but it had been closed up. He was left with a salient too narrow for comfort.

order to find reserves to throw into the battle of the Somme, had drawn heavily on the northern part of his line, and had only partially replaced the troops he had withdrawn by exhausted divisions hastily reconstituted with reinforcements from England. Believing that the British weakness in the north now offered greater prospects of success, he reverted to it, and on April 9 launched an offensive on the



POSITION OF GERMAN LONG RANGE GUNS THAT BOMBARDED PARIS

General view of the country near Cr py-en-Laonnois where the Germans sited the "Big Berthas" with which, from a distance of about seventy-four miles they began the deliberate bombardment of the French capital on March 23, 1918. The positions of the guns—marked 1, 2, and 3 in the middle of the drawing—were discovered by French airmen, from whose data the drawing on this page was made.

### THE BATTLE OF THE LYS BEGINS TEN DAYS LATER.

Ludendorff, however, had imposed on himself an offensive policy, and he could not afford to sit still. Time was required to reorganize his much-tried troops on the southern part of the battleline; but he still had about twenty fresh divisions left from the original mass of man uvre which he had built up, and he now decided to employ these in an attack on the British line between Lens and Arment res, in the hope that he might drive the British here back on the Channel ports. He had considered such an attack when he was forming his plans in the winter, but had rejected it. Now, however, he was aware that Haig, in

Lens-Arment res sector which for a time appeared to be no less dangerous a menace to the safety of the British army in France than the drive toward Amiens had been.

The attack was heralded by a prolonged bombardment by gas shells, which began on April 7, and which was merged with a bombardment of high explosive shells as the zero hour drew near. The infantry assault developed in the early hours of April 9. Its main weight fell on the Portuguese, who held the line midway between Arment res and the La Bass e Canal. These troops, who had been in the line too long without relief, gave way before the first impact of the German attack; and their defection uncovered the flanks of the

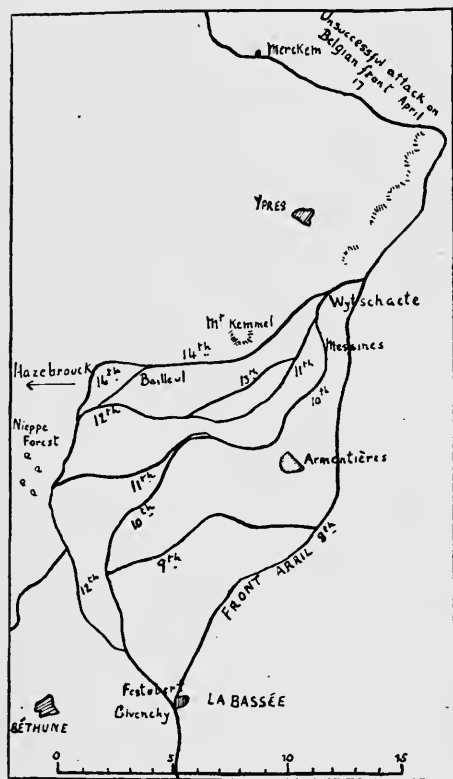
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

British on each side of them. Into the gap thus created the Germans poured, and before nightfall they had crossed both the Lys and the Lawe Rivers. Fortunately, the 55th West Lancashire Division stood firm before the important British centre of Béthune; but, to the north, the Germans succeeded in isolating Armentières, which had to be surrendered to them the next day, and they began a dangerous movement toward Hazebrouck, the chief railway centre of the British forces in Flanders.

Dunkirk, and for evacuating from these ports all non-essential personnel. On April 11, Sir Douglas Haig had issued the famous order of the day in which he appealed to his men to fight *à l'outrance*. "Every position must be held to the last man: there must be no retirement. With our backs to the wall, and believing in the justice of our cause, each one of us must fight on to the end." By April 13 the village of Vieux Berquin, not five miles from Hazebrouck, had fallen; and it seemed as though the Germans were on the eve of a great success.

But the appeal of the Commander-in-chief bore fruit. The British infantry, many of them boys of eighteen and nineteen just drafted out from England, fought with a desperate courage which was beyond all praise. At each side of the gap which the Germans had torn in the line, the British troops stood firm as a rock, the resistance of the 55th Division near Festubert and Givenchy being paralleled by the stubborn stand of the 9th (Scottish) Division on the Messines Ridge; and the slender units that sought to stem the tide of the German advance in the salient fought every foot of the ground. The crisis came on April 13. On that day the Germans had nothing between them and Hazebrouck but the remnants of two British divisions, the 29th and the 31st, strung out over a very wide front. All day they strove furiously to batter their way through; but, by a miracle, the tenuous line held, and thus time was given for the First Australian Division, which was being rushed up by rail from the Somme, to detrain at Hazebrouck and to dig themselves in along the edge of the Forest of Nieppe.

In this way the road to Hazebrouck was closed, and the worst of the danger averted. British reserves from the south now began to appear on the battlefield in increasing numbers; and by the middle of the month French reserves also began to arrive. Ludendorff, lured on by his first success, had now definitely committed himself to a trial of strength, and he still strove fiercely to extend his gains. On April



THE BATTLE OF THE LYS

So serious did this new German threat to the Channel ports appear that Sir Douglas Haig was compelled, with a heavy heart, to withdraw from the Flanders ridges (Messines, Wytschaete and Passchendaele), which had been won at the cost of terrific losses only a few months before, and to take up a new line just in front of Ypres. Preparations were actually made for flooding the approaches to Calais and



#### PORTUGUESE ON THE WESTERN FRONT

Profiting by the experience acquired by British and French construction corps the Portuguese were able to apply the best methods in making shelters, blockhouses and dug-outs on their sector of the front. They adopted the helmet used by the British Army and might thus be mistaken for troops from the United Kingdom.



#### FOOD FOR THE FIGHTERS

Bringing supplies up through communication trenches to the front lines. Robust and alert the Portuguese soldiers bore good-humoredly the arduous tasks entailed in supplying large quantities of food to men under fire. Before the war the Portuguese Army was chiefly composed of Colonial troops, when war was declared an army of 100,000 was quickly raised. They served in France brigaded with the British.

British Official

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

15 he captured Bailleul. But this and other local gains brought him no nearer to his goal; and after April 17 the battle of the Lys for the time being died down.

### LUDENDORFF'S LAST ATTACKS ON THE BRITISH FRONT.

Having been able meanwhile to reorganize his troops on the Amiens front, and having drawn off from this front some of the Allied reserves,

neux was once more firmly in British hands, and the last threat to the safety of Amiens had been removed.

Ludendorff was now like a boxer who, having failed to administer to his opponent a knock-out blow, strikes out right and left in a blind fury. The attack near Villers Bretonneux was followed on April 25 by a renewed assault on the Flanders front. This assault,



IN THE WAKE OF THE GERMANS

The cemetery was found in this condition as the British advanced. The stone slabs had been taken from the graves to construct dug-outs, and the graveyard had shared in the general destruction of the countryside, a destruction which has marred as with a long weal the fair country of France. British Official

Ludendorff now made another and final attempt to carry out his original plan. On the morning of April 23, after a heavy bombardment lasting three hours, the Germans attacked on the whole British front south of the Somme, and assisted by German tanks, which now for the first time met British tanks in action, they broke through opposite Amiens and captured the important and critical village of Villers Bretonneux. But before the Germans were able to consolidate their new positions, a brilliant night attack carried out by Australian and British troops swept them back; and by the afternoon of April 24 Villers Breton-

neux was once more firmly in British hands, and the last threat to the safety of Amiens had been removed. Ludendorff was now like a boxer who, having failed to administer to his opponent a knock-out blow, strikes out right and left in a blind fury. The attack near Villers Bretonneux was followed on April 25 by a renewed assault on the Flanders front. This assault,





### BELGIANS WITH MACHINE GUNS

The use of machine guns, in numbers hitherto unsuspected, was one of the developments of the war; after the reconstitution of the Belgian army the companies of field-gunners were so increased as to supply liberally every fighting unit. Both as an offensive and as a defensive weapon the mitrailleuse was increasingly used by both sides.

repulse discouraged the Germans from any further effort against the British front, which had once more become stable; and Ludendorff now turned his attention to the French front, in the hope of obtaining there the success which had thus far eluded him.

### THE GERMAN EFFORT FAILS TO ACCOMPLISH ITS PURPOSE.

Since March 21 Ludendorff had thrown against the British army, and against the French forces which had come to its assistance, no less than one hundred and forty-one divisions. Under this staggering blow the British army, which had a strength of only fifty-five infantry divisions and three cavalry divisions, had reeled back. Its total casualties had been more than 300,000 men, of whom about 70,000 had been taken prisoners; it had lost 1,000 guns, 4,000 machine guns, 700 trench mortars, 200 tanks, and an incalculable quantity of stores. Ludendorff had succeeded in

making an advance such as no other general had succeeded in making since the phase of trench-warfare had dawned. His staff work had been admirable, and his troops had shown a courage, a resource, and an endurance of no mean order. Yet the bitter truth was that his offensive had been a failure. Thanks to the dogged and indomitable tenacity of the British infantry, never better than when fighting an uphill fight against heavy odds, and thanks to the ready and loyal gallantry of the French, and the genius of General Foch, he had failed to strike the Allies in any vital spot. The all-important railway centres of Amiens and Hazebrouck had both defied him; he had neither destroyed the British armies nor separated them from the French; there remained nothing for him but to try conclusions with the Allies elsewhere.

W. S. WALLACE.





#### UNSCATHED AMID THE RUINS

The statue of Joan of Arc which stands before the cathedral of Rheims was not harmed by the bombardment which wrought such havoc in the city and did irreparable harm to the beautiful cathedral. The group in the picture is that of the Spanish Governmental Mission on a visit to the war zone in France.

N. Y. Times



#### THE ST. DENIS GATE PROTECTED BY SANDBAGS

View of the gate showing the protective sandbags mounting high on its base. St. Denis, only  $4\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Paris, is famous as the burial city of the kings of France. Louis VI solemnly adopted the *oriflamme* (auriflamma from its red and gold colors or standard of St. Denis as the banner of the kings of France.

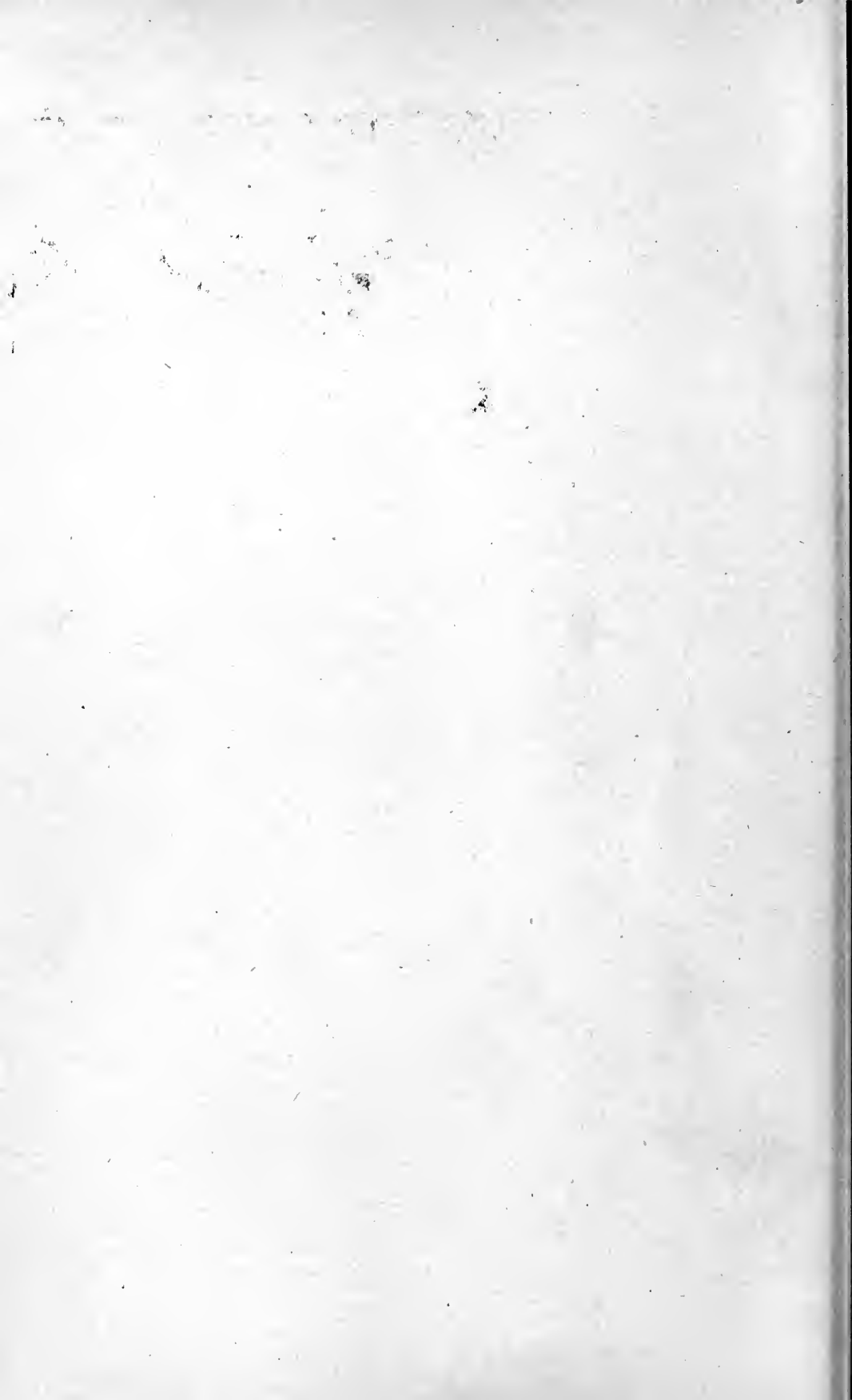
N. Y. Times



*Copyright*

MARSHAL FOCH.

In supreme Command of the Allied Forces on the Western Front, from April, 1918.





A Great French Searchlight

Listening Apparatus.

## CHAPTER LXII

# The Marne: The Beginning of Victory

## FOCH CHECKS LUDENDORFF'S THRUST TOWARD PARIS AND TAKES THE INITIATIVE

FRENCH historians include the several offensives and counter-offensives of 1918 in one campaign which they call the "Battle of France." It is probable that posterity will endorse this view for it is manifestly impossible to disassociate any one phase of it from the others, and the long-drawn-out struggle has all the aspects of a duel between two armies, two staffs, two commanders. "Wherein," writes Madelin, "one broke off only to fight again, drew back but to seek anew the vital spot, wherein suddenly one of the antagonists by an uninterrupted series of thrusts forced back the other, pinned him down and finally gave him the *quietus* of the end." Through all the forest of guns, of *mitrailleuses*, and of cannon the insistent clash of the two master-blades is never lost.

### UNITED COMMAND GIVES THE GERMANS A GREAT ADVANTAGE.

In the opening round the Germans had had the enormous advantage of united command. Eric von Ludendorff, undoubtedly the brains of the Hindenburg legend, had bent all the powers of his great mind and single purpose towards ending the deadlock upon the Western Front. In the olden days siege warfare was at an end once the enemy had broken through. In modern trench warfare, experience has

shown that the break-through is but a prelude to the battle with reserves, and upon this latter point every previous offensive had hitherto collapsed. Reversal to the theory of the "limited objective" in the battle of the Somme and later battles of 1917, where the infantry occupied only the ground won in a single bombardment, had had little effect upon the long line of the Western Front. By successfully restoring the element of surprise in his attack upon the British in March and April, 1918, and by the rapidity and depth of his "infiltration" of their lines, Ludendorff had almost achieved decision. But not quite. At the critical moment, the weariness of the attacking troops and the belated arrival of reserves had stopped the way.

### LUDENDORFF ALLOWS HIMSELF TO BE DIVERTED FROM HIS MAIN OBJECTIVE.

In his later attacks Ludendorff sought first to exhaust the reserves before he struck his main blow. In swerving from this purpose and allowing one of these diversions to become a main operation, the great commander lost the war. In May, however, he stood high, at the head of superior forces, whose whole line of thought had been carefully and successfully diverted from trench warfare to the offensive; strong moreover, in the possession of a new method already

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

triumphantly demonstrated against the Russians before Riga, and against the British in Flanders and Picardy.

### **D**IFFICULTIES IN THE WAY OF A UNITED COMMAND.

On the other side, the Allies had faced the first great German onslaught of March 21 at a disadvantage, their

the disaster of Caporetto, a supreme war cabinet known as the Versailles Council had been established, but its powers were not executive—merely advisory, and early in 1918 an executive Military Council was added for the purpose of coördinating the strategy of allied commanders. Such coördination

proved inadequate. On March 21 the Germans massed forty divisions against fourteen British divisions and in four days almost achieved their aim of separating the French and British armies. The following day at Douellens, just behind the lines, a conference of allied statesmen and generals without reference to their governments placed General Foch in partial control of the armies on the Western Front, and later his powers were extended. At this late hour by a judicious use of reserves the German hammer-blow was arrested. The protagonist had entered the lists, and throughout the succeeding phases of the battle his skillful direction is everywhere to be felt.

### **F**ERDINAND FOCH, THE NEW LEADER OF THE ALLIED ARMIES.

Ferdinand Foch was at this time in his sixty-eighth year. Before the war at the *École de Guerre* as lecturer and director, and as author of two treatises *Les Principes de la Guerre* and *Conduite de la Guerre*, he had made his name as a master

of strategy and as a brilliant theorist. When war came he had proved the soundness of his reasonings in the battle of the Marne. In 1915, however, his Artois offensive had failed, and in 1916 after the battle of the Somme he had been somewhat eclipsed. After Nivelle fell Foch became adviser to the French General Staff, and after Caporetto the counsellor of the Italians. The crisis of March 25 called him to assume the gravest responsibility, which since the days of Napoleon has ever rested upon a soldier. In a few hours he made his



**MARSHAL FERDINAND FOCH**

Commander-in-Chief of all the Allied Armies, and the universally recognized organizer of victory.

International Film Service

supreme command in the hands of a polyglot committee, whose members were responsible to separate governments, and whose ill-constructed machinery began to creak as soon as strain was put upon it. Steps towards unity of command had been slowly taken by the Allies—and for obvious reasons. If a “generalissimo” were appointed, he would, as a matter of course, be a French General, and the French were naturally diffident to press the point. The British had submitted to Nivelle, and had paid the cost in long casualty lists. Nevertheless, after

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

personality felt, forming a new headquarters rapidly, setting in motion the machinery necessary for the command of 5,000,000 men on a front of 450 miles, and rushing troops to the points of danger between French and British armies by any and every means—so that in ten days he had assembled twice as many reserves as the estimates of the French Staff had called for.

### THE DIFFERENT PHASES OF THE LAST CAMPAIGNS.

In the death-grip of 1918 five phases are to be recognized. The first phase, that of the German offensive up to July 15, includes four separate actions: against the British on the Somme, March 21; against the British in Flanders, April 8; against the French and British on the Aisne, May 27; and against the French on the Oise, June 9.

The second phase opens with the second Battle of the Marne, July 15-August 6, when Foch, having thrown back the fifth enemy attack to the east and west of Rheims, passes to an offensive on his flank, July 18, and succeeds in hurling back the enemy on to Marne and Vesle.

In the third phase, which opens August 8, the British in an offensive in the Somme-Oise sector push back the enemy to his starting-place on the Hindenburg line. During this period also the Americans drive in the St. Mihiel salient, September 12, and satisfy Foch that he can use their army as his right wing in the next offensive.

The fourth phase witnesses an attack by the Allies' centre on the famous Hindenburg line. While this is being broken the Germans are also attacked on the two wings: on the right in Flanders by the British and Belgian armies, on the left by the Franco-American group.

The last phase of all is a concentric attack converging on to the Ardennes

region by all armies, so menacing even in its conception and early stages that the enemy speaks of armistice. When attack to the east of the Moselle seems imminent, and the Flanders army having reached the frontier of Holland threatens the enemy's right wing, he capitulates.



GERMANY'S REAL COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF

General Ludendorff, in chief command of the great German offensive on the Western Front in the spring and summer of 1918.

Ruschin

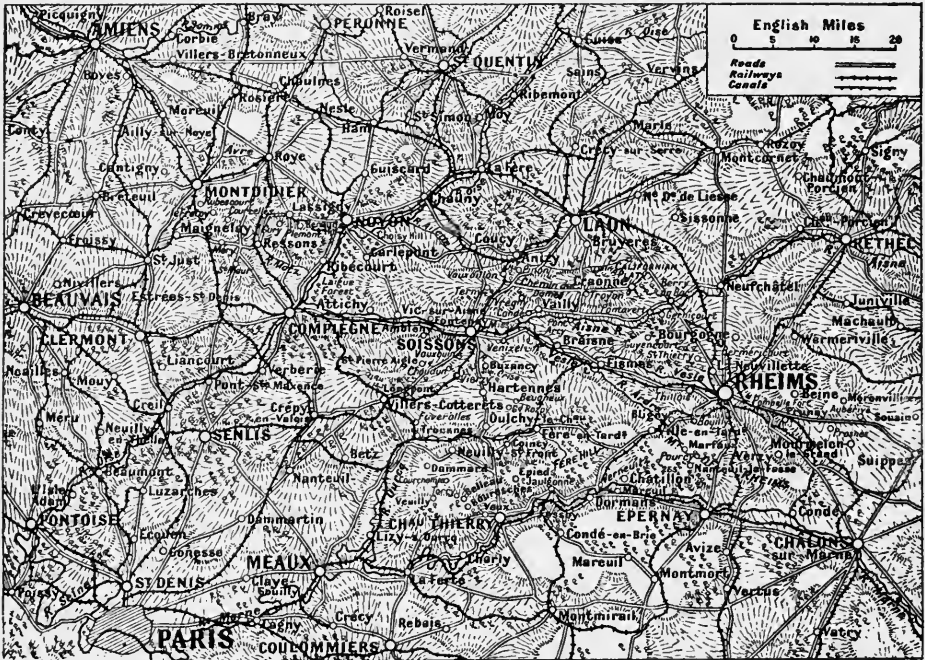
### THE SITUATION WHEN GENERAL FOCH ASSUMED COMMAND.

When Foch assumed the direction of the Allied armies Ludendorff's two thrusts against the British had succeeded in gaining considerable ground, and he had inflicted stunning losses in prisoners and *matériel*, but they had failed of their ultimate aim of destroying the British army. "In arranging for further operations," writes Ludendorff, "there was no time to lose. The initiative which we had seized on the Western Front must be kept and the first great blow must as soon as possible

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

be followed by a second." The German Chief of Staff would have preferred to strike again at the British in Flanders but the enemy there now was so strong in numbers that, perforce, he turned to the French front in a determination to exhaust its reserves, lest their intervention should, as in April and March, again save the situation. He chose the Aisne sector because it was weakly held: troops had been

For once, Foch was mistaken in his judgment of the direction of the renewed thrust, and when the blow fell the French front was very lightly held: the first lines having only one division to eight kilometres and the second lines but one to every fourteen, while behind the front between Aisne and Marne were divisions only recently brought back from Somme or Flanders battles.



MAP ILLUSTRATING THE DRIVE TOWARD PARIS

drawn off to send to Flanders and their places taken by tired English divisions who had been through the great offensives. Furthermore, advance to the plateaux of the Aisne and the Marne would threaten Paris and give point to the cry of the French for the removal of their reserves from Flanders and Picardy. The Chemin des Dames and Craonne plateau offered great natural difficulties, but to the Germans these were not so formidable as those which they had overcome on the Italian frontier in October, 1917. A secondary operation against Compiègne would suppress the salient created in the lines north of the Aisne.

### LUDENDORFF'S ATTACK ON THE AISNE SECTOR.

The region attacked falls into three distinct sectors: to the west the Craonne plateau, dominating the marshes of the Ailette and deemed almost impregnable by the Allies, was held by the French VI Army under Duchesne. Eastward, between the end of the plateau and the hills to the south of the Aisne, French failure in 1917 had left open the *trouée* or Gap of Juvincourt, and here four tired British divisions belonging to the 9th Corps were in line. South of the Aisne as far as Reims, the French V Army's forward lines ran through the low



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

land, and their support lines on the hills from Aisne to Vesle.

Against the seven or eight weary French and British divisions, Ludendorff flung twenty-eight German divisions of the VII and I Armies of von Boehn and Fritz von Below, who had been in rest billets since the middle of April training for the coming

**THE SECRECY OF THE PREPARATIONS BRINGS STARTLING SUCCESS.**

As a result, indications of the coming attack were few. The afternoon of the day before two prisoners interrogated by General Maud'huy declared that there would be an attack next day on the Chemin des Dames after violent bombardment, but Maud'huy



**BEGINNING OF A RAID**

Algerian sharpshooters starting out on a raid on German trenches over the snow-covered battlefield. French Colonial troops gained a great reputation upon the Western Front for audacity and daring in raids and attacks upon forts as in their taking of Douaumont and Fort Vaux. They suffered considerably from the west European climate. N. Y. Times

battles, and of whom many were veterans of the Aisne battles of 1917 and thus thoroughly familiar with the ground. The formidable artillery assembled, 4,000 pieces, was fully four times as numerous as the French: it was to emit sufficient poison gas to paralyze the defense. Precautions as to surprise were even more careful than in the preliminary battle of March 21. Attacking troops were brought up in darkness only, and did not relieve the troops in the front lines until the last moment. Artillery was pushed to the front with the wheels padded, and the severest penalties were laid upon the clanking of harness.

huy still reserved his order to destroy the bridges over the Aisne and Vesle. When the order was given it came too late.

On the 27th of May bombardment started, with unusual predominance of toxic shells, from Vauxaillon to the neighborhood of Rheims, aiming at the bridges of the Aisne and even at those of the Vesle. Immediately telephone communication was cut, dense fumes from explosives forbade the use of optic signalling, so that great confusion resulted.

At 3:40 the German infantry left their trenches, and found the defense—as Ludendorff had planned—half par-

alyzed by the asphyxiating fumes. The formidable region of plateaux and ravines now became dangerous to the defender under such conditions, as the enemy insinuated himself into hollows and captured crests. By noon, in spite of heroic resistance, the French and British had fallen back on to the Aisne, and because the order to destroy the bridges was given too late, the river proved no obstacle and at the end of the morning was successfully crossed. Afternoon wore on and still the French fell back, and as the late Spring twilight fell, two German divisions gained the Vesle. Night hardly stayed pursuit, dawn gave it fresh impetus. During the darkness one German division had crossed the Vesle and was advancing upon Fère-en-Tardenois. At 11 o'clock Fismes fell, but eastward the advance was somewhat slower. To the west the enemy reached the *massif* of Château-Thierry, and his right wing penetrated Soissons itself, where through the night hours fierce fighting took place in the irregular streets.

#### LUDENDORFF ALLOWS HIMSELF TO BE DIVERTED FROM FLANDERS.

"I had thought," writes Ludendorff, "we should succeed in reaching only the neighborhood of Soissons and Fismes. By the second and third days these objectives had in places been left far behind. We had gained ground especially beyond Fismes, not so much beyond Soissons." In two days German advance had stormed not only the plateaux of the Aisne, but the Aisne itself and the Vesle; had moreover, in the completeness of the surprise, taken vast numbers of prisoners and captured stores of accumulated *matériel* left for safety beneath the protection of the barriers of the plateaux.

At this juncture, May 28, Fate took a hand. German victory had revived German lust for conquest in all its power, and urged on the armies of the Fatherland to ruin. Ludendorff's plan still contemplated the separating of the British and French armies and pushing the former back against the Channel. The attack in the Aisne sector was intended only to alarm the

French and to draw their reserves from the north. After this diversion the attack was to be to the north. The overwhelming success of the Aisne attack, together with certain dynastic considerations led to a change of plan, which was to prove Ludendorff's undoing.

#### THE VANITY OF THE CROWN PRINCE DEMANDS THE DRIVE ON PARIS.

Another Crown Prince, Rupprecht of Bavaria, was holding the Flanders salient in the north; to him would belong the prestige of the drive upon the sea. The Crown Prince of Prussia desired the glory of the advance upon Paris, which the apparent dissolution of the French army seemed to open up. After the Council the decision of the staff was announced: "The attack will be pressed." Thus the march beyond the Vesle was decided: the centre to the Marne if possible, the wings to capture Rheims on the left, and after Soissons on the right the forest of Villers-Cotterets. That same day, May 28, had the German Command been given to weighing evidence from the other side and shaping its plans accordingly, their decision might have been revised. The American 1st Division, brigaded with the III French Army, attacked in the Montdidier section and took the village of Cantigny, and 170 prisoners. American troops had before this been engaged in minor actions in Lorraine but this was their first share in the main battle, and their capture and consolidation of the Cantigny position was fraught with meaning as to their fighting value in the immediate future.

The second phase begins on the morning of the 29th May. While the Allied publics thought of Paris, Ludendorff strove to broaden the ends of the "pocket" which the continued advance of his VII Army in the centre had created, and Foch concentrated on holding firm its two gateways against the hour when Germany might be taken in the great snare which she was laying for herself.

#### A DEEP WEDGE IS DRIVEN INTO THE FRENCH LINE.

Soissons fell on the 29th, but acting upon the decision of the French Staff

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

General Maud'huy hung on before the eastern edge of the Forest of Villers-Cotterets for forty-eight hours with the remnants of his unfortunate 11th Corps. On the left the Germans succeeded in encircling Rheims on three sides, but its wooded heights still offered obstinate resistance. In the centre by the evening of the 30th they had reached the Marne between Château-Thierry and Dormans.

**THE BASE OF THE SALIENT CANNOT BE WIDENED.**

Held fast by the two breakwaters the tide of battle was slackening, and though the great waves came again through the first week of June it was clear that their force was almost spent. It was time for the second thrust at Compiègne which should have been delivered June 7, coincidentally with the attack southwest of Soissons but



**FRENCH MOUNTAIN ARTILLERY, THE "65's"**

The Alpine Chasseurs were accompanied by light batteries armed with "65's," reduced "75's" with every characteristic of the famous gun reproduced but having less weight so as to ensure mobility. Loaded on the backs of mules every piece can easily be dismounted and remounted, gun, carriage, wheels, limber-box assembled in a few minutes ready for action.

The salient had been deepened—it had not been widened—and the position of its flanks was becoming more perilous with each step of advance. The deeper a pocket is driven the more dangerous it is unless the mouth is correspondingly widened. The last day of the month witnessed furious attacks: at the gate-post on the right as von Boehn strove vainly to debouch from Soissons, on the left as von Below attacked at Rheims (June 1) with tanks. At first he made gains, but a French counter-attack later in the day drove him back and captured some of his tanks.

for the delay of the heavy artillery. On the 9th von Hutier threw fifteen divisions against the Allied front of twenty-five miles between Noyon and Montdidier. The engagement formed part of the original offensive and Ludendorff's objective was Compiègne, to widen the base of his new salient and link it up with that on the Somme. The main obstacle to his advance was the Lassigny group of hills, and von Hutier strove by an advance down the stream of the Matz to turn their flank.

This time the French were prepared

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and the Germans achieved only a local success in a costly advance up the Matz valley. They captured the hills but sharp French counter-attacks were delivered on the 11th, 12th and 13th, and finally to avoid further heavy casualties the German Headquarters called off the action.

From the middle of June nearly the whole of the new front of the German

ing numbers were coming into line, Britain was restoring her army, and Foch making careful plans to check the new attack. The Germans bridged the gap in publishing a list of gains and in what they hoped was a final blow against the Italians. Its failure was a severe blow both to the Higher Command and to the military and civilian morale.



A GERMAN BARBER PLYING HIS TRADE

Although we have evidences of the absence of the barber from military life in the title of "poilus" or hairy ones bestowed upon the French troops, pictures such as this assure us that sometimes the arts of peace were pursued in the days of war—provided the trench was far enough in the rear.

Henry Ruschin

Crown Prince's group of armies became quiet. Between the Aisne and Château-Thierry some tension remained, which ever and again broke forth into local actions. Thus on the 11th the Americans made a fine advance at Belleau Wood and took 300 prisoners. But Ludendorff was resting his machine and making due preparation for a further heavy blow. The pause was necessary, in spite of elaborate winter preparations, because he had pressed his actions even when casualties became very heavy. It was going to cost him dear, for all the while the Americans in ever-increas-

### THE GERMAN PEOPLE BEGIN TO LOSE THEIR HOPE OF AN EARLY DECISION.

Watching the French political situation with eagerness for clefts in the national armor made by the late German success, Ludendorff says, "In the session of the Chamber early in June, which I awaited with interest, there appeared, indeed, no sign of weakness. Clemenceau's words were full of pride and exemplary strength, 'We are now giving ground but we shall never surrender.' 'We shall be victorious if the public authorities are equal to their task.' 'I shall fight before Paris, I shall fight in Paris, I shall fight

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

behind Paris.' " Guided in straight paths the French nation held firmly in most real peril after the terrible blows of March and May on Somme and Aisne. Yet Ludendorff knew that at home in the Fatherland—even on the front among the new battalions—a different spirit was abroad beneath the Prussian eagle. Confident of victory as they had been in the spring of the

—due not only to enemy propaganda but also to the influence of the Bolshevik—he seriously thought of relinquishing the offensive. "But I finally decided against this policy. . . . Of the two an offensive makes less demand on the men, and involves no higher loss. The offensive had the incalculable moral advantage that it could not be voluntarily broken off." Chained to



A COMPLICATED SYSTEM OF WIRE AND CABLE

A complicated system of telephone wires ran from the most advanced posts to the rear, and the wires were frequently broken by the fall of the enemy's projectiles. In the picture military signallers are repairing a wire in the middle of a crater carved out by the mighty explosion of a high-explosive shell.

French Official

year, and uplifted at the thought of overwhelming France and driving England from the seas, yet the root of German desire for victory was not for glory, nor in the first place for profit, but in reality an almost despairing craving for peace. "Easter bells will ring in peace," said the Crown Prince to his soldiers, but Easter had passed and still the *Feldgrau* must fall in thousands to satisfy the Juggernaut of war.

### FACTORS WHICH CONTROLLED THE GERMAN DECISION TO ATTACK.

And because Ludendorff was unconsciously conscious of this shaken morale

victory, then, the Commander-in-Chief in view of the fact that most of the French reserves were in front of Paris and that the Château-Thierry-Verdun front was more lightly held, decided to strike there.

His immediate objective was Rheims, to enlarge his salient and improve the rear communications of the VII Army between the Aisne and Marne. Immediately following this operation he planned to concentrate artillery, trench mortars and flying squadrons on the Flanders front and possibly attack there a fortnight later. Preparations for the fourth great offensive were

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

carried out exactly on the same lines as were those for the previous ones. The VII Army was to cross the Marne east of Château-Thierry and advance towards Epernay. The I and III Armies attacking from both sides of Rheims were to bring their right wing past the Forêt de la Montagne de Rheims to Epernay and make Châlons-sur-Marne their principal objective. Thus, Rheims attacked from two sides must surely fall, the German salient would be eased, while the French reserves would be called off from both Paris and Flanders fronts, and a choice of advance upon one or both be offered to the German High Command. A clever plan—but one which did not reckon sufficiently with the strength of Foch's growing reserves. "We reckoned," said Ludendorff, "on an enemy counter-offensive between Aisne and Marne with Soissons as its primary objective and we organized the IX Army and the right wing of the VII accordingly." But this vital exposed right flank of the Germans was *not*, as the event showed, sufficiently fortified against the enemy thrust.

### THE SUPREME WAR COUNCIL CONSIDERS THE SITUATION.

The Supreme War Council met at Versailles in July and took stock of the situation. It was undoubtedly grave. In two months the enemy had launched three successful offensives whose cost in men and territory was high. His armies lay now within 40 miles of Paris, and threatened the Channel ports. He had, seemingly, found the solution to the deadlock of modern warfare—for so far only one thing had checked the complete success of his attacks, the arrival—often belated and desperate—of precious reserves. If he succeeded in exhausting these the war would be won.

Fortunately, at this juncture the balance of man-power was at last shifting in the Allied favor. By July, the American army had twenty-five divisions in France, of whom twelve were ready or nearly ready to enter battle, and other American troops in their hundreds of thousands were arriving in ships which the submarine

warfare had failed to sink. Moreover, the delay had already given time to the stricken British army to raise up its head again. Troops from other fronts and from England had brought up the number of effective divisions in France from forty-nine in May to fifty-three in July. By increased output from the home factories, too, it was stronger now than it had ever been in artillery, machine guns, tanks and aeroplanes. Ludendorff was still superior by about a quarter of a million rifles, but in aircraft, in guns and, notably, in tanks, he was less well-equipped. Moreover, while his reserves were decreasing, those of the Allies were steadily growing.

### FOCH CONSIDERS THE PROBLEMS AND MAKES HIS DECISION.

Because of this last factor Foch was at last able to plan, and not to improvise. He had no set formula to apply to his conduct of the campaign, but he followed certain general principles which he modified for conditions as they arose. Sir Frederick Maurice says: "So Foch did not tell the Allied statesmen assembled at Versailles, in these trying days when the Germans were engaged in tuning up their war-machines for their last great blow, very much about his plans. One of them asked him point-blank: 'But, General, if the Germans do make their great attack, what is your plan?' and Foch answered by striking out three rapid blows, with his right, with his left and again with his right, following these by launching out a vigorous kick. There was the principle of the art, dramatically described." The Commander-in-Chief had determined not to repeat Ludendorff's mistake of attempting the break-through before the enemy reserves were exhausted. At this date he knew not whether he would have to wait until 1919 for the big kick, but he had determined, after arresting the German onslaught, to deliver the first punch against the right flank of the enemy's salient.

### FOCH DETERMINES TO KEEP THE SALIENT NARROW, AND THEN TO ATTACK.

To this two-fold problem of holding up the offensive and thus preserving the



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

pocket, and of breaking through between Soissons and Château-Thierry where the foe was enmeshed, Foch devoted the six weeks' pause. To achieve the first, he had to provide an answer to the Von Hutier scheme of infiltration: for the second, a method of break-through that possessed the quality of surprise by eliminating artillery preparation. He had the rudiments of the check tactics all ready to his hand, for they had been prepared for use in the March battles,

Behind the forward zone lay a vacant region where Foch planned to pour a highly complex bombardment upon the attackers. Last of all and far enough back for the guns to survive the artillery preparation, were the French battle positions whose troops would be strong to receive the weakened lines of enemy infantry, easily dispose of them and then press forward in quick counter-attack.

To achieve a break-through by virtue of surprise Foch had a new



THE FORBIDDING ASPECT OF THE NEUTRAL ZONE

Some faint idea of the horror and desolation of No Man's Land may be gleaned from this picture. It winds, a strip of bare earth, between the opposing trenches which are here only a few yards apart, and is dotted with still figures that cannot be brought in. Beyond it shells are bursting continually.

though fog forbade their employment; and in the Noyon-Montdidier offensive of June 9 they had already achieved some success. To the east and west of Rheims and eastward to the Argonne where attack was expected (for in this case German precautions against surprise failed, prisoners had been captured, letters intercepted), Berthelot with the IX Army and Gouraud with the IV were in line. Upon the latter, to the east of Rheims, the greater blow would fall and in accordance with Foch's instructions he organized a thin outpost line which would merely serve to observe and signal the direction and force of the enemy assault.

weapon ready to hand, the small whip-pet tank. Cambrai had shown that tanks could replace a long bombardment and achieve surprise, and a further small operation in July of the Australian corps of the IV British Army, had established a *rapprochement* between artillery, infantry and tanks, wherein the latter, working behind an artillery barrage, overcame the enemy's machine guns and drove the infantry into their dug-outs, where they fell an easy prey to British infantry.

### THE GERMAN PLAN OF ATTACK AND THE FRENCH RESISTANCE.

Upon July 15 the German offensive started. Von Mudra with the I German

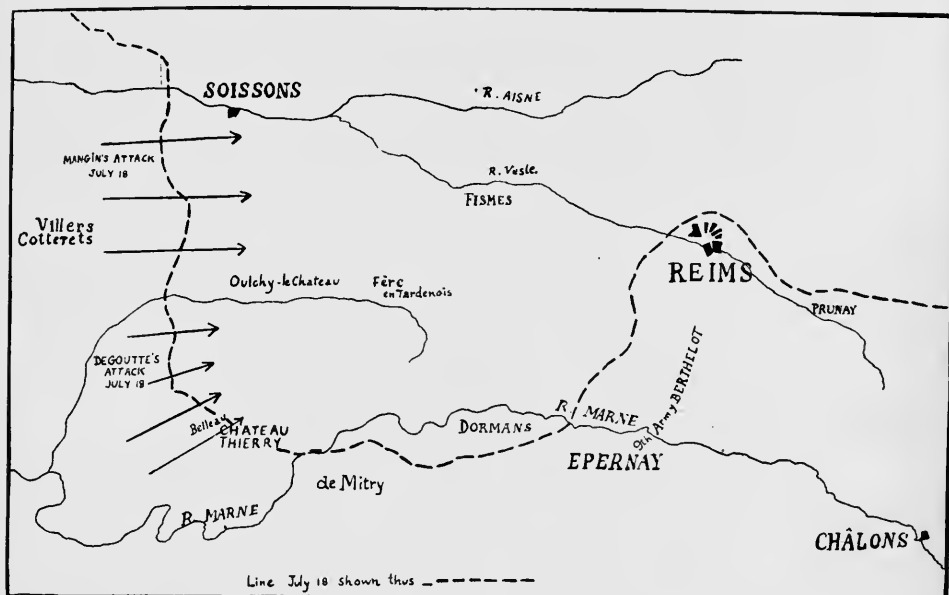


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Army and von Einem with the III struck east and west of Rheims. Southwards von Boehn's VII Army pressed across the Marne between Château-Thierry and Dormans. If these attacks succeeded, and the front through the possession of Rheims was adequately supplied with railways, the IX Army on the western face of the salient was to join in a general advance upon Paris. Coincidentally, a further blow would be struck at the capital from the Amiens salient, and

### THE ATTACK AROUND RHEIMS MAKES LITTLE HEADWAY.

Consistent with the new theory, bombardment, although terrific was brief. The German advance fell on the light forward troops, devoted men who knew their sacrificial purpose, and, having informed their comrades of the phases of the storm, died at their posts. As the attacking infantry gained the open zone it fell under an appalling storm of fire and its tanks, where they survived the artillery, foundered on



FOCH'S FLANK ATTACK UPON THE MARNE SALIENT

farther to the north in Flanders, Rupprecht could at last unloose his reserves against the British Army.

Facing von Einem and von Mudra lay the right wing and centre of Berthelot's IX Army, and the IV Army under Gouraud. Against von Boehn from east to west lay the left wing of the IX Army, and the VI Army under Dégoutte. With Gouraud was the American Rainbow Division (42d), on the Montagne de Rheims the Italian II Corps, and around the Château-Thierry salient the I American Corps: A British corps was divided between Mangin and Berthelot. At midnight on Sunday, July 14, Paris was awakened by the sound of great guns.

By the afternoon the flood had reached the French positions but failed to penetrate them. The following day Gouraud's men reentered the empty zone, and the German Headquarters ordered a suspension of the offensive which had captured no guns, but few prisoners and only such ground as Gouraud had deliberately relinquished.

Southwards (July 15-16) von Boehn was more successful, southwest of Rheims and between Dormans and Château-Thierry, but he failed to widen the salient for the Italians stood firm on the Montagne, and the Americans near Château-Thierry. The front wavered back and forth on the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

17th-18th and then stood firm, the assault exhausted against incoming reserves. Ludendorff had made a mistake which was to cost him dear. He had driven deep into the French line but he could not break through, and his flanks were exposed.

**JULY 18, THE DAY UPON WHICH THE TIDE TURNED.**

Now Foch was ready, and he ordered Dégoutte and Mangin to spring a sur-

prise by the news that a French attack had broken through his line southwest of Soissons.

Since Rheims had not been taken, the railways that passed through Soissons and the Soissons-Rheims highway were the only ones that fed the German troops in the salient. Soissons was then a vulnerable point and Ludendorff had half expected an attack in this quarter—had indeed been told

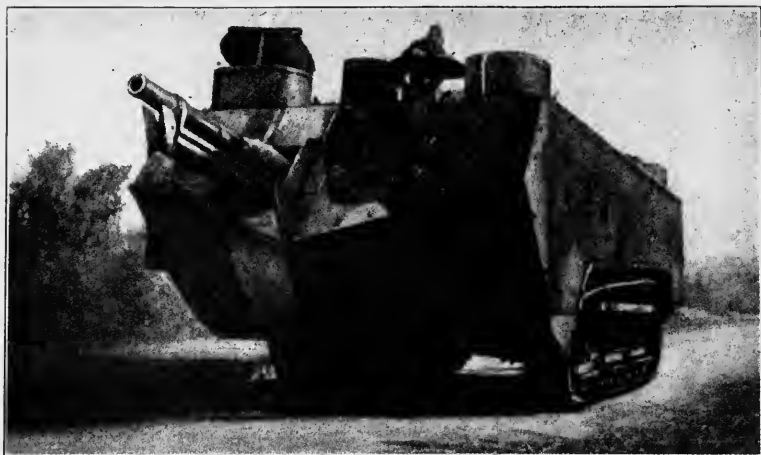


**CHÂTEAU-THIERRY ON THE MARNE**

Château-Thierry has entered into the realms of immortality. Upon its outskirts lies the high-water mark of the tide of German success. To its narrow cobbled streets will throng in days to come the generations of those whose ancestors fought here to stem the wave of conquest, and turned it back. Ruschin

prise on the western face of the salient, July 18, between Château-Thierry and Soissons on a front of twenty-five miles. The French generals believed that their numbers warranted advance on only half that distance. "We haven't the men," they expostulated. "I know," replied Foch, "still you must attack the whole of the German flank." Ludendorff was absent from the Marne for the moment: after the failure against Gouraud he had gone up to review the chances of an offensive by Rupprecht's men on the Flanders front. He was recalled

of a surprise movement accompanied by tanks to take place on the 11th, but nothing had come of the rumor. The German trenches in the area had not been made with the formidable thoroughness of their rear lines elsewhere, thrown up by the forced labor of French civilians and prisoners of war. In his own narrative for this omission Ludendorff blames impartially the influenza and the faltering morale both prevalent in the army at the time. In the event of attack the Allied Commander-in-Chief had foreseen that von Boehn would be fighting with his



IMPROVED FRENCH TANK FIRST USED IN CHAMPAGNE, 1918

head facing the wrong way, but there were strong reserves within the salient and a new army under von Eben forming in the rear, so that Foch in asking Haig both for French reserves and British supports was taking considerable risk in view of the freshness of Rupprecht's divisions in the north. Haig cheerfully agreed and sent not only the eight French divisions but a British corps as well.

#### **M**ANGIN DELIVERS THE STROKE WHICH BEGINS THE GERMAN DOWNFALL.

Using the Forest of Villers-Cotterets for cover Mangin concentrated north of the Ourcq. The Moroccan Division and the First and Second American formed the spearhead of the attack. To the south Dégoutte formed his lines between Ourcq and Marne. Ludendorff's words carry on the narrative: "After a short and sharp artillery preparation and a smoke screen, he (Foch) attacked with massed infantry and a stronger force of tanks than had ever before been concentrated in one place. For the first time small, low, fast tanks that allowed the use of machine guns above the corn were used; our machine guns were hindered by it, except when they were mounted on tripods. . . . Tanks were also observed which were used solely for the transport of men. These passed through our lines, put down their passengers with machine guns behind them, to form machine-gun nests, and

then promptly returned for reinforcements."

By the use of his reserves and by means of his tanks Foch accomplished the break-through. Though the enemy threw in three divisions, by the evening of the 19th Mangin's guns dominated both the railway and highway

way in Soissons. South of the Ourcq advance was less rapid but the situation to the north of the river necessitated a withdrawal of the troops fighting on the south bank. They were closely followed up by Dégoutte's army which included American units.

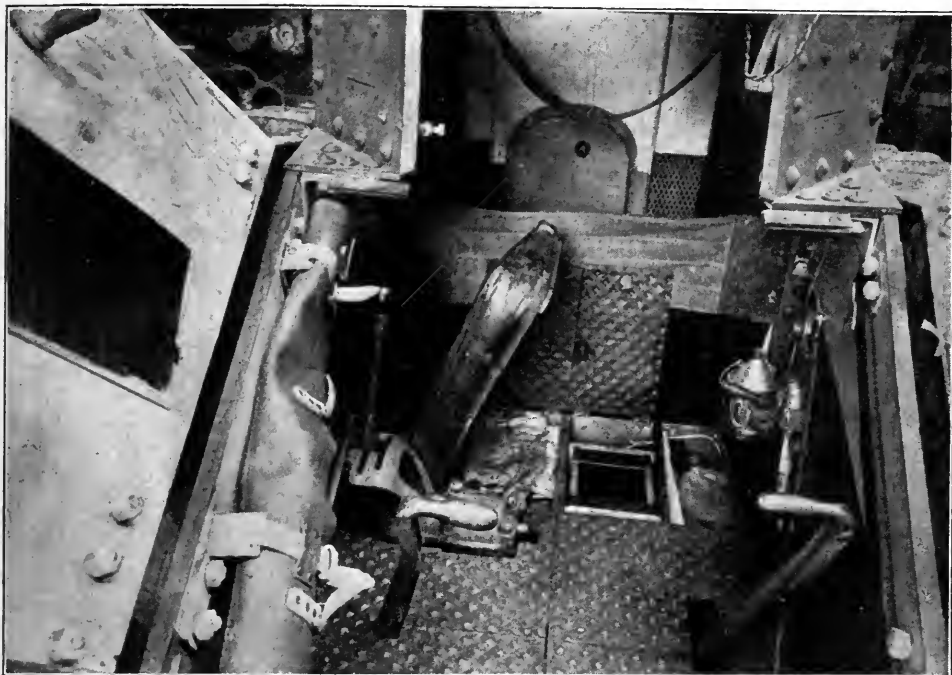
#### **L**UDENDORFF STRIVES TO EXTRICATE HIMSELF FROM HIS AWKWARD POSITION.

Ludendorff now faced a crisis. He had lost his communications; the neck of his salient was threatened; withdrawal, even over the Marne, was rendered difficult because Franco-American counter-attacks had seized the heights dominating the river. In this juncture, rushing up reinforcements, the German Commander made his men stand southwest of Soissons and west of Rheims on the Ardre, so that the troops retiring from the Marne should feel no panic. Throughout the 19th Foch attacked all around the salient, particularly at its exits; to Mangin and Dégoutte were added De Mitry from below the Marne, and Berthelot westward from Rheims, but though it was a critical day for the *Feldgrau* they were beginning to hold, and on the 20th the withdrawal of troops from the south bank of the Marne was effected in good order. Another day and it became apparent that Ludendorff would get his men behind the Vesle without a *débâcle*. It was important for him to move slowly for

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

he had stores of vital importance that he could not abandon. But at this time the Flanders offensive was definitely given up and Rupprecht's reserves were thrown in to stiffen the defense. Dégoutte was attacking now north-east from Château-Thierry, and the Franco-American troops on the point of the salient pushed the Germans back behind the Ourcq, where

strong counter-attacks but they were broken. Ludendorff finding his salient still narrowing retreated behind the Vesle (August 1) and there in strongly prepared positions faced the enemy again. By the second of the month Soissons fell, the Marne salient had been flattened out, and the enemy's line ran from Soissons to Rheims along the Vesle. He had lost over 35,000



INTERIOR OF FRENCH BABY TANK

In this Char d'Assaut, as the French called their tanks, one can see in the background the driver's seat, with a broad strap in front, and in the foreground, the two foot controls.

they attempted a stand on the line Oulchy-le-Château and Fère-en-Tardenois. Mangin, reinforced (July 23), directed another blow between the Ourcq and Soissons against the flank of the Germans opposing Dégoutte, who also at the same time received reinforcements.

**THE OFFENSIVE HAD NOW PASSED TO THE ALLIES.**

Pressed on three sides German defense between Aisne and Ourcq gradually broke down and, July 26, Dégoutte entered Fère-en-Tardenois. Rupprecht's reserves now delivered

men and more than 700 guns. Nine American Divisions (equivalent to eighteen French) had taken part in this offensive. A more detailed account of their participation will be given elsewhere. The battle, however, in spite of the presence of British and American troops, was planned and led by the French. Foch had checked the enemy's last offensive, and himself delivered his own first short, sharp thrust. He now tossed the ball to Sir Douglas Haig who, August 8, attacked the enemy on the Amiens front.

MURIEL BRAY.



#### DEFEATING THE SUBMARINE

Various posters used all over Canada to speed up production. The office of Food Controller was created in Canada in June, 1917, and in February, 1918, the Canada Food Board was established in order to secure the largest possible supply of food to the fighting forces of the Allies and to the civil population in Europe by means of increased production and conservation of food in Canada. Steps were taken to add to the production of farms. Over 1,100 farm tractors were bought and resold to farmers at cost price. Under a plan which was called "Soldiers of the Soil" 14,685 boys were enrolled and a great percentage of them placed on farms in Canada in 1918. Field crops increased 16.8 per cent in 1918, and were worth more than in any preceding year. All dealers in foods were placed under license and required to operate under the regulations made by the Food Board. A system of permits was established for the control of foods entering and leaving Canada.



Tractor for Threshing in the West

## CHAPTER LXIII

# The Canadian People and the War

## A RECORD OF SOCIAL, ECONOMIC AND POLITICAL CONDITIONS DURING A TRYING PERIOD

BY SIR JOHN WILLISON

WHEN the war came Canada was in the throes of a severe commercial depression. Many factories were on half time. In the cities and towns thousands of workers were unemployed. There was a general suspension of private and municipal building and of all Provincial and Federal undertakings involving heavy expenditures. Such Western centres as Winnipeg, Saskatoon, Calgary, Edmonton and Vancouver had enjoyed a feverish era of land trading. In Eastern Canada, Toronto and Montreal had a like experience. In many lesser communities, particularly in the newer Provinces, land values were grossly inflated and hundreds of acres of farm lands platted for building and provided with paper parks and playgrounds. Two new transcontinental railways, in which hundreds of millions of borrowed money were invested, were nearing completion and many industries had expanded beyond the immediate demand for their products. It was natural, therefore, that when war was joined to depression, and the money markets were closed against Canadian borrowings, the people looked to the future with apprehension and dismay.

One recalls the grave anxiety of bankers, the gloom on the exchanges,

the fear of general collapse and panic. But there was no division or conflict of opinion among the people as to what was the duty of Canada. It is true the common expectation was that the war would be of short duration. A three-months' war was the general conviction. That the conflict could extend beyond six months was regarded as improbable and impossible. It was thought that Canada would be required to raise an army of fifty thousand but few believed that more than one hundred thousand soldiers would be enrolled. Indeed one remembers the anxious apprehension among the second and third Canadian Contingents during the period of training that the war would be over before they could reach Europe.

### NO DOUBT AS TO THE DUTY OF THE DOMINION.

On August 1st, 1914, before war was actually declared, the Canadian Government, through the Governor General, the Duke of Connaught, sent a despatch to the Secretary of State for the Colonies, in which it was said, "My advisers, while expressing their most earnest hope that a peaceful solution of existing international difficulties may be achieved and their strong desire to co-operate in every

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

possible way for that purpose, wish me to express to His Majesty's Government the firm assurance that if unhappily war should ensue, the Canadian people will be united in a common resolve to put forth every effort, and to make every sacrifice necessary to ensure the integrity, and maintain the honor of our Empire." These and like messages from the other Dominions were acknowledged with gratitude by



**SIR ROBERT BORDEN**

Canada's premier 1911-1920 and leader since 1901 of the Conservative party in the House of Commons, he represented Canada in the Imperial War Cabinet and Conference, 1917.

the King and Imperial ministers. The action of the Canadian Cabinet was not challenged by any interest or element in Canada. In Ontario, in Quebec and in the West there was spontaneous, universal, aggressive approval of the determination of the Government to employ all the country's manhood and resources in the great struggle which the Mother Country could not escape, but in which Canada could become involved only by the free decision of its own Parliament. When war was actually declared the Governor General in a

despatch to the King said:—"Canada stands united from the Pacific to the Atlantic in her determination to uphold the honor and traditions of our Empire."

### A SOLEMN SCENE AT THE EMERGENCY SESSION OF PARLIAMENT.

An emergency session of Parliament was called for August 18th to sanction the resolve of the Government to send troops from Canada and to vote the necessary appropriations. No such solemnity has ever brooded over the Canadian Parliament as when this decision was taken, nor has any Parliament in a free country in a great decision ever expressed more faithfully the temper of the press and the people. Even more impressive and eloquent than the speech of Sir Robert Borden, Prime Minister and leader of the Conservative party, was that of Sir Wilfrid Laurier, the French-Canadian leader of the Liberal party. "Speaking," he said, "for those who sit around me, speaking for the wide constituencies which we represent in this House, I hasten to say that to all these measures we are prepared to give immediate assent. If in what has been done or what remains to be done there may be anything which in our judgment should not be done or should be differently done, we raise no question, we take no exception, we offer no criticism, and shall offer no criticism so long as there is danger at the front." Emphasizing the fact that Great Britain could have had peace by desertion of Belgium, the Liberal leader characterized the proposal as infamous and declared "There is not to-day all over the universe a British subject, there is not outside the British Empire a single man, whose admiration for England is not greater by reason of this firm and noble attitude." He added, "From this painful war the British Empire will emerge with a new bond of union, the pride of all its citizens, and a living light to all other nations."

### THE PRIME MINISTER STATES THE POSITION OF THE GOVERNMENT.

The Prime Minister described at length the causes which drove Great Britain into the war, asserted in



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

unequivocal language the moral obligation of the Dominions to support the Mother Country at any cost of blood or treasure and concluded with these eloquent sentences, "In an hour when such peril confronts us as this Empire has not faced for a hundred years, every vain or unnecessary word seems a discord. As to our duty, all are agreed. We stand shoulder to shoulder with Britain and the other Dominions in this quarrel. And that duty we shall not fail to fulfill as the honor of Canada demands. Not for love of battle, not for lust of conquest, not for greed of possessions, but for the cause of honor, to maintain solemn pledges, to uphold principles of liberty, to withstand forces that would convert the world into an armed camp; yea, in the very name of the peace that we sought at any cost save that of dishonor we have entered into this war; and while gravely conscious of the tremendous issues involved and of all the sacrifices that they may entail, we do not shrink from them, but with firm hearts we abide the event."

In Canada as in other countries when the war began the chief immediate concern was to maintain confidence and credit. Between 1900 and 1914 the Dominion had borrowed over \$1,200,000,000 in Great Britain and \$400,000,000 in the United States. These huge amounts were invested chiefly in railway, municipal and corporation securities. The Canadian Northern Transcontinental Railway System and the Grand Trunk Pacific System in Western Canada, as has been said, were only approaching completion and were still dependent upon public support. The roads had been constructed chiefly by federal and Provincial guarantees. Neither had revenues equal to interest charges and cost of operation. With the financial fabric of the world in chaos their position became desperate and in their solvency was involved the credit of the Dominion. There was also a sudden stoppage of the supply of capital for many federal, Provincial, municipal and corporate enterprises.

**H**EAVY INCREASE OF TAXATION IS AUTHORIZED BY PARLIAMENT.

At once bank notes were made legal tender. The banks were authorized to issue Dominion notes against approved securities and to make payments in notes instead of in gold.



**THE LATE RT. HON. SIR WILFRID LAURIER**  
Sir Wilfrid Laurier became leader of the Liberal Party in 1891. He held the premiership of Canada 1896-1911, the first French-Canadian to hold that post.

The Department of Finance also took authority to enlarge the issue of Dominion notes unprotected by gold reserves. Thus during the first two or three months of the war additional currency to the amount of \$15,000,000 was provided. Customs duties were increased by 5 per cent on imports from Great Britain and by 7½ per cent on imports from foreign countries, and postal charges from one to two cents for drop letters and from two to three cents on letters for general distribution. In 1916 a levy upon the excess profits of industrial, commercial

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



**SIR THOMAS WHITE**

Minister of Finance from 1911 to 1919.

and financial companies was authorized and in 1917 individual incomes were subjected to taxation. On incorporated companies with a capital of \$50,000 and over the profits tax was fixed at the rate of 25 per cent on profits between 7 and 15 per cent, with 50 per cent added on profits between 15 and 20 per cent and 75 per cent on profits over 20 per cent. On companies not assessable under the profits tax ten per cent on all net income in excess of \$2,000 was imposed.

Individual incomes were taxed four per cent up to \$6,000 with graduated exemptions, and eight per cent over \$6,000 with supplementary levies by graduated surtaxes running from one per cent to 65 per cent. From business profits taxation the return for 1916-17 was \$12,506,516, for 1917-18 \$21,271,083, and for 1918-19 \$32,970,061. For 1919-20 the estimate is \$44,000,000. The yield of the income taxes for 1918-19 was \$9,349,719 and for 1919-20 the estimate is \$25,000,000. The total war revenue, including taxes on banks, loan and trust companies, business

profits and income, with returns from the Department of Inland Revenue, for 1914-15 was \$98,056, for 1915-16 \$3,620,781, for 1916-17 \$16,302,238, for 1917-18 \$25,379,900, and for 1918-19 \$56,179,508. The estimate for 1919-20 is \$81,000,000; or a total of \$182,578,485.

### THE WAR LOANS ARE LARGELY OVER-SUBSCRIBED.

During the first year of the war the Department of Finance in order to protect the gold supply borrowed, first in London and then in New York. In all \$130,000,000 of Provincial, municipal and other bonds were marketed. Of this amount \$19,000,000 were placed in Canada, over \$85,000,000 in the United States and \$25,000,000 in the United Kingdom. Towards the close of 1915 the Finance Minister became convinced that a domestic war loan could be issued. He asked for \$50,000,000 but \$110,000,000 were subscribed of which the Treasury accepted \$100,000,000. Other domestic



**SIR GEORGE FOSTER**

Has had a long and distinguished record in Canadian politics, and during the war did great service in speeding up Victory Loans and stimulating other patriotic movements.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

loans followed from year to year, and always the amount required was exceeded. For the Victory Loan of 1919 the minimum fixed by the Government was \$300,000,000 but \$690,000,000 were subscribed. This notwithstanding that the bonds, unlike those issued during the war, were subject to taxation. Altogether \$1,800,000,000 have been raised by domestic loans and

000,000 exports. It will thus appear that from an adverse balance of \$300,000,000 in 1913 and of \$160,000,000 in 1914 we had attained a favorable balance of over \$600,000,000 in 1918 and of \$340,000,000 for 1919. At the end of the five-year period from 1914 to 1919, our total trade had doubled, while for the year 1918, which marked the highest point, it aggregated 2½



FOOD FOR THE CANNON

Basic steel, the only kind of steel made in Canada, was found by experiment to be suitable for the manufacture of shells. Under the Imperial Munitions Board the Purchasing and Steel Department bought all material entering into munitions, arranged for the forging of steel, and distributed the forgings and component parts to the machining plants situated in the various provinces.

from the bonds thus issued the holders will derive annually a total income of nearly \$100,000,000.

In his financial statement of 1919 Sir Thomas White, Minister of Finance, said:—"In 1913 the balance of trade against us was \$300,000,000. In 1914 our total international trade was \$1,073,000,000, of which \$618,000,000 was in imports and \$455,000,000 in exports. For 1918 the total was \$2,550,000,000, of which \$962,000,000 was imports and \$1,586,000,000 exports. For 1919 the unrevised figures show a total of \$2,169,000,000, of which \$916,000,000 was imports and \$1,253,-

times the trade of 1914." The debt, however, has increased from \$336,000,000 to \$2,000,000,000 and the total war expenditure is estimated at \$1,640,000,000. Before the war the annual expenditure ran from \$170,000,000 to \$175,000,000 but the main estimates for 1920 total \$500,000,000 and probably the supplementary estimates will increase the amount by \$5,000,000 or \$10,000,000. The revenue is estimated at \$365,000,000. Fixed charges represent \$159,743,000, of which \$142,281,000 are required for interest on the public debt and \$47,000,000 for deficits, maturing obligations, con-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

struction and betterments on the national railways.

### NATIVES OF THE BRITISH ISLES RUSH TO ENLIST.

When the war began no one foresaw the demand that would arise for Canadian products and for production of munitions in Canadian factories. Even during the last months of 1914 unemployment was greatly reduced if not wholly overcome by enlistment in the expeditionary regiments. Nothing was more remarkable than the immediate response of thousands of British workmen and even of British farmers to the call for recruits. It is estimated that sixty or seventy per cent of the soldiers in the first regiments to leave Quebec were natives of the British Islands. All across the Western plains and in all the industrial communities of the older Provinces they offered themselves in thousands on the instant, definite conviction that whatever might be the attitude of native Canadians they could neither hesitate nor reason when the Old Country was in danger. The example, although no example was needed, emphasized the solemn gravity of the conflict into which Canada had entered. If there were those in Canada who had thought that Englishmen were "difficult" as settlers and workmen they bowed their heads in reverence for the spirit which they displayed when their Mother Country was threatened. But if enlistment relieved unemployment it was munition contracts which set the wheels of the factories running, inspired public confidence and enabled the country to subscribe hundreds of millions to war loans and provide credits for British purchases in the Dominion.

### SHOULD CANADIAN FIRMS ATTEMPT TO MAKE MUNITIONS?

From the first Sir Robert Borden and Sir Sam Hughes, Minister of Militia, urged the War Office to place contracts for munitions with Canadian factories. But the War Office was reluctant and even many Canadian manufacturers doubted if they should take such contracts even if they could be obtained. No shells had ever been made in Canada. There was no general

confidence that the factories could be adjusted to the production of munitions. There was fear that the skilled labor required would not be available. Indeed the first contracts were taken not with expectation of profit, but in order to employ labor and in response to the very urgent appeals of the Government.

These contracts were placed by a Canadian Shell Committee but this organization was succeeded by an Imperial Munitions Board, of which Sir Joseph Flavelle was chairman, and which was directly responsible to the Imperial authorities. Through this Board there was produced and shipped to the British Government 65,340,000 shells, 45,000,000 cartridge cases, immense quantities of primers, friction tubes, fuses, copper bands and forgings of various types, 41,000,000 pounds of high explosive, 50,000,000 pounds of powder, 8,000,000 pounds of acetone, 10,000,000 pounds of acetic acid, 2,250,000 pounds of acetate of lime, 35,400,000 pounds of zinc, 18,500,000 pounds of calcium carbide, 2,000,000 pounds of nickel, 8,200,000 pounds of ferro silicon, 23,800,000 feet of aeroplane spruce, 36,000,000 feet of spruce deals and Douglas firs, 11,800,000 pounds of pulp board, 626,000 pounds of leather, 300,000 feet of leather belt, 4,000,000 pounds of asbestos, flax-pulling machines exceeding \$1,000,000 in value, over a thousand typewriters, railway waggons to the value of \$7,000,000, forty locomotives and forty-six wooden and forty-four steel vessels, aggregating 350,000 tons and costing \$70,000,000. The Board also produced 3,000 aeroplanes, with spare parts, which cost with the incidental expenditure upon training camps of the Royal Air Force over \$15,000,000. All these machines were used in Canada except one thousand, which were sold to the United States for training pilots. The total value of the orders received exceeded \$1,300,000,000 and the actual expenditure was over \$1,100,000,000.

### PLANTS ESTABLISHED BY THE IMPERIAL MUNITIONS BOARD.

The Board also established a series of national plants: one in Montreal for

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the loading of fuses, upon which over \$2,000,000 was expended; one in Trenton for the production of powder and TNT, which cost \$5,000,000; one near Parry Sound, for the production of cordite, at a cost of \$4,000,000; one in Toronto, for the production of steel and forgings, upon which \$3,000,000 was expended; and another plant in Toronto for the production of aero-

At the time of the Armistice, the production of aeroplane spruce in the Dominion represented sixty per cent of the required quantity. The Board acted in Canada primarily for the Ministry of Munitions, and was directly responsible to the Imperial Minister. During the course of the war, the War Department, Navy Department, Timber Comptroller's Department and



HELPING TO WIN THE WAR

Women working in a Toronto munitions plant, photographed in front of the factory just before starting their work. Canada manufactured every type of shell from the 18-pounder to the 9.2-inch. The first shipment of shells from Canada was made in the month of December, 1914, and by the end of May, 1915, approximately four hundred establishments in Canada were engaged in the manufacture of shells or their component parts.

planes, which involved an outlay of \$1,300,000. Over \$1,000,000 was also expended upon the Gooderham Distillery at Toronto, for the production of acetone. These national plants were organized as separate companies, all the share capital was owned by the Crown, and all were under the direction of business men who volunteered for the service.

In 1917, the production of complete rounds of shrapnel shells in Canada represented fifty-five per cent of the requirements of Great Britain. The shells were shipped direct to France and ready for use in 18-pounder field guns.

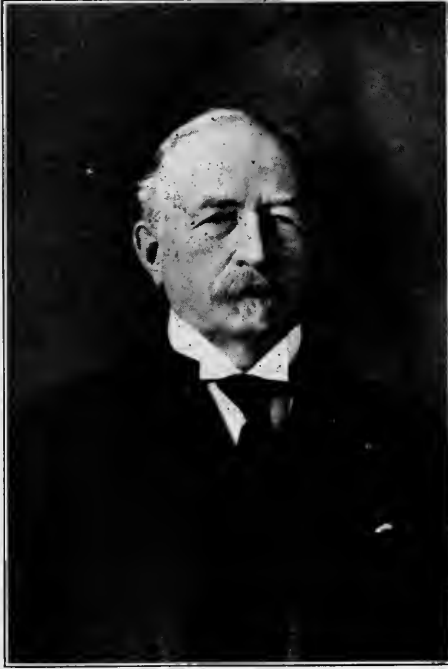
Ministry of Shipping made use of the Board's organization for services they required in Canada.

### MUNITIONS MANUFACTURED FOR THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT.

The Board also acted as agent for the United States Government in placing orders for munitions, to be produced in Canada, for the American armies. Such orders placed with Canadian manufacturers exceeded a total value of \$200,000,000, and subsequently in settling claims arising out of the cancellation of many of these contracts at the termination of the war the Board was associated with officers of the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

American Government. It is freely admitted that Sir Joseph Flavelle and his associates displayed extraordinary courage, resource and efficiency in discharge of the tremendous responsibilities they had to carry. The story of their achievements constitutes one



BARON SHAUGHNESSY, K. C. V. O.

A recent portrait of Baron Shaughnessy, president of the Canadian Pacific Railway Company, and of a number of other railways connected with the C.P.R.

of the finest chapters of the war in Canada and in the Empire. Nor was there any taint of irregularity or scandal to diminish the splendor of the great work they performed.

### WAR SERVICES OF THE CANADIAN PACIFIC RAILWAY.

Imposing and impressive is the story of the war services of the Canadian Pacific Railway. From its various departments 7,500 men enlisted. Of these over 500 were killed in action and 1,695 were among the casualties. In loans and guarantees to the Allied nations the Company gave \$80,000,000. It gave millions to the Patriotic Fund and subscribed heavily to war loans. To the Transport Service it virtually handed over a fleet of thirty-seven

ocean steamships. Its great plants were devoted to the manufacture of munitions and war supplies. It provided commissary cars for the soldiers and hospital cars for the wounded. It gave a six-months' bonus to all its employees who enlisted, all who returned were re-employed, and many other veterans taken into the Company's services. It gave reductions from 25 cents to 5 cents a word for cable messages between the soldiers and their families. When war broke out and serious unemployment threatened the Company undertook to find places for 6,000 additional workers. It has set apart ten thousand farms of 160 acres each, built a thousand barns and dwellings, dug a thousand wells, and erected 1,300 miles of fencing in Western territory to be occupied by returned soldiers. Throughout the war many of its executive officers, its experts in railway construction, its master mechanics and bridge builders were released for service with the War Department. As with the Imperial Munitions Board, so with the Canadian Pacific Railway Company, all its activities were distinguished by foresight, courage, and efficiency and inspired by complete devotion to the great cause which was the common and supreme concern.

### THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF THE CANADIAN SHIPYARDS.

Since 1915 Canadian shipyards have produced 1,000,000 tons of shipping. Aside from the vessels constructed for the Imperial Munitions Board a commercial fleet of 170,000 tons has been built for the Dominion Government, for France a tonnage of 250,000 was provided and for other countries of 90,000. For Great Britain 600 small vessels of an aggregate tonnage of 100,000 were constructed. In all, during the four years Canadian shipyards built for the Canadian and Allied Governments no fewer than 900 vessels, and Canada sold ships to other countries to a total value of \$65,000,000. In the shipyards 23,000 workers were employed and in Allied industries over 20,000. For 1919 in these industries \$40,000,000 was paid in wages and salaries. The Dominion emerges from



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the war with a fleet of vessels which will be operated in connection with the Canadian national railway system.

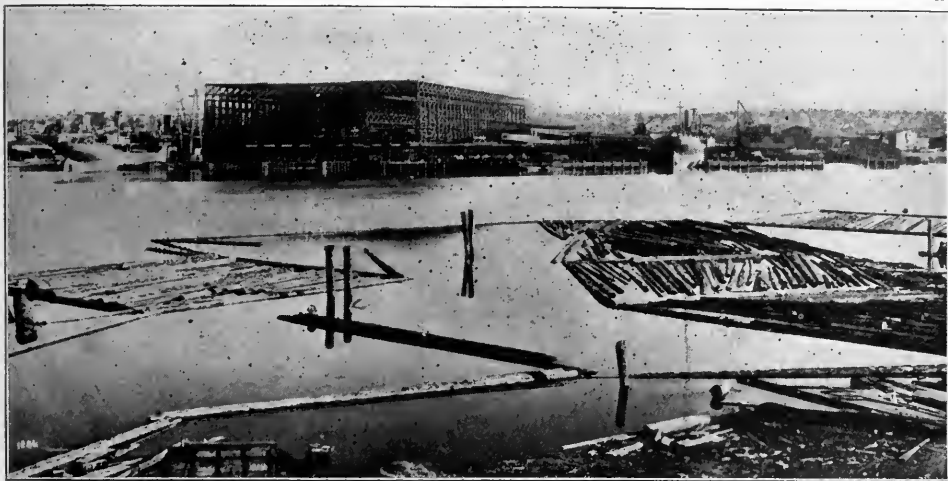
### THE SERVICES OF VARIOUS ORGANIZATIONS, AND INDIVIDUAL CITIZENS.

Many pages would be required for any adequate account of the organizations created and the voluntary services performed by individuals and groups of citizens in association with the Government and the Army between 1914 and the demobilization of the forces. Sir Charles Gordon of Montreal

for 9,000,000 people, and out of which a country that had no other thought before the war than to borrow abroad provided credits of \$909,000,000 to Great Britain. Against this amount, however, stands \$600,000,000 advanced by Great Britain for the maintenance of Canadian troops oversea.

### HOW CANADA HELPED TO PRODUCE AND SAVE FOOD.

Although there was no absolute or general fixation of the prices of food products the Canada Food Board,



SHIPBUILDING ON CANADA'S PACIFIC COAST

The war gave an impetus to shipbuilding in Canada both at ocean ports and on the Great Lakes. This industry did not come to an end with the signing of the Armistice but is making good some of the enormous losses sustained by all countries during the great struggle. The photograph is of J. Coughlan and Son's plant at Vancouver.

and Sir James Woods of Toronto held very responsible Imperial appointments at Washington and New York. Mr. Lloyd Harris of Brantford, as Chairman of the Canadian War Board at Washington, secured many contracts for Canadian factories and was influential in negotiations for exchange of necessary war materials between the two countries. A Federal Trade Board at Ottawa, whose members gave voluntary service, was an important agency in the distribution and execution of contracts for war supplies. The Banks gave invaluable assistance to the Government and to all war industries. Leaders in finance and in business united with singular energy in all the national organizations which, under the direction of the Minister of Finance, raised war loans of surprising magnitude

which was organized by Hon. W. J. Hanna of Toronto and after his resignation directed by Mr. H. B. Thomson of British Columbia, assisted materially in regulating consumption and increasing production. A rationing system was applied to public eating places. Millers were required to lengthen the extraction of wheat, bakers were restricted in the uses of fats and sugar and the supply of sugar to all manufacturers was strictly controlled. A great saving of meats for shipment oversea was effected by encouraging consumption of fish in Canada. Atlantic haddock, cod, mackerel and herring, through fast and direct freight services, were made available at low prices in the markets of Ontario and Quebec, while in the Western Provinces a demand was created for flat fish and



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

cods from the Pacific. So the fish resources of the Lakes were utilized to a far greater extent than ever before. The profits of flour mills and provision houses were regulated. In 1917 a maximum price of \$2.21 per bushel for wheat was established. For 1918 the fixed price was \$2.24½ and for 1919 \$2.15 with participation certificates which will exceed 40 cents in value and may give the farmers an additional 50 cents per bushel.

farm work. Much of this labor was unskilled, and there was an admitted scarcity of farm workers before the war, but despite the heavy enlistments in the army production was not only maintained but substantially increased. Moreover, from the activities of the Food Board there have been valuable permanent results. The fisheries have been stimulated and the efficiency of food handling and food manufacturing industries has been enhanced. The



### HARVESTING ON THE PRAIRIES

As the result of a conference between the Government and buyers and sellers of grain, the Board of Grain Supervisors was created in June, 1917. This body not only regulated the price at which grain should be bought and sold but also its distribution to the best advantage of the producers, the consuming public and overseas purchasers.

All pictures from British and Colonial Press.

The chief object of the Food Board, however, was to effect voluntary economies and to increase production. This was accomplished by organized appeal, by extensive display advertising, by co-operation with the Provincial Departments of Agriculture, and by distribution of tractors at low cost to farmers. Provincial Resources Committees were formed in the Provinces, upon which the farmers and leaders of labor were represented. Workmen from the factories were released for the harvest. High School students were enrolled as farm workers and many young women from the universities and the towns and cities assisted in the orchards, in berry picking and in other light field and

farmers in all the Provinces responded loyally to the Board's appeals and adapted production as was required to feed the army and supply the products needed to relieve scarcity in Great Britain and in Europe.

### THE ATTITUDE OF CANADIAN LABOR TOWARD THE WAR.

The attitude of industrial workers throughout the war, aside from the issue of conscription, was not distinguishable from that of other elements of the population. In 1914 the Dominion Trades and Labor Congress approved the intervention of Canada in the war, but pronounced definitely and unequivocally against conscription. This position was maintained when conscription



**FARMERETTES AT ONTARIO AGRICULTURAL COLLEGE, GUELPH**

Women commenced to take a share in agricultural work early in the war and worked on farms in all parts of the country. At first their work was mostly fruitpicking, but as the agricultural colleges put in various courses women qualified for all the branches of men's work around the farm

British and Colonial Press.



**GIRLS' CLASS IN GAS ENGINEERING, MANITOBA AGRICULTURAL COLLEGE**

These are farmers' daughters from all parts of Manitoba who are studying running, dissembling, assembling and repairing of gas engines, to be of help in seeding and harvesting operations on the farms and incidentally assist in the production of more foodstuffs. The girls in the foreground are taking to pieces an engine model supplied for the purpose; others in the background are connecting batteries and learning to start engines.



**A LEADER IN WOMEN'S MOVEMENTS**

A prominent worker in all departments of women's work in the Dominion, Mrs. L. A. Hamilton, spared neither strength nor money to help win the war. British and Colonial Press.

was actually adopted, although disapproval of organized action by the workers to resist the law was expressed. It was urged, however, that with conscription of men there should also be conscription of wealth, that the Military Service Act should not go into effect until the country had been consulted in a general election, and that if rejected, immediate repeal should follow.

In the coal mines of British Columbia and Alberta repeated strikes greatly reduced production. In the mining district of Northern Ontario there was unrest and steady pressure for higher wages. Strikes of longshoremen at Vancouver and of elevator workers at Port Arthur and Fort William interfered with shipments of wheat and supplies for the Army. But in the Western mining districts and in the gold and silver camps of Northern Ontario there are alien and Socialistic elements, associated with the I.W.W.'s and other revolutionary groups, which have never been wholly subject to the responsible

leaders of organized Labor in Canada. Generally, however, Labor co-operated with the Government in voluntary recruiting, in relief and patriotic movements, and in the organization of national, Provincial and local committees to raise the war loans; with manufacturers in production of munitions and war supplies; and with the railways to assure uninterrupted transportation. In short, the leaders of Labor exerted their full authority to prevent industrial conflict, to restrain extremists and to prevent untimely agitation. It is estimated that 22,000 organized and 130,000 unorganized workers enlisted in the Canadian regiments and altogether Labor gave devoted and effective support to the war effort of the nation.

## THE WORK OF CANADIAN WOMEN IN THE WAR.

From the first, the women of the country gave themselves with extraordinary zeal and devotion to war objects. The Imperial Order of the Daughters of the Empire raised over \$1,000,000 for patriotic purposes. The National Council of Women of Canada placed 100,000 placards urging food conservation in shops and factories throughout the country. The Women's Branches of the Western Grain Growers' Associations, the United Farm Women of Alberta, and the Farm Women's Institutes of Ontario and the Western Provinces raised many thousands of dollars for relief and patriotic purposes. A multitude of women's organizations were active in Red Cross work, and in regular shipment of supplies to the soldiers and to hospitals in England, in France, in Belgium, in Serbia, and in Mesopotamia. There was a women's association to supply nurses, Women's Thrift Committees and women's organizations to provide supplies for the navy. Every regiment overseas had an auxiliary women's association at home through which supplies were sent to the men in the trenches, in hospitals, in German prisons or in training in England.

The churches had like associations and the universities were centres of recruiting, of medical and hospital or-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ganization, and of inspiration to service and sacrifice. No other agencies indeed, than the universities and pulpits, were more influential in developing and maintaining a resolute temper in the country and in reconciling all elements of the people to exertion and endurance, to the cruel strain of indecisive battles, the long roll of casualties, the agony of losses. In recognition of the efficiency

379. Of this amount the Mennonites, who settled in Canada under a guarantee of exemption from military service, contributed \$5,705. In a few municipalities and one or two of the Provinces the money was raised by taxation but the bulk of the amount was secured by voluntary subscription. Nearly \$41,000,000 has been distributed, chiefly to the dependents of private soldiers.



RED CROSS WORKERS IN TORONTO

Every church, social club, and organization in Canada at once offered its services to the central Red Cross, and undertook whatever work was most needed for the many and varying needs of hospital work at home and abroad. Many of these societies were open every day through the winter, and in summer organized at different resorts.

of women equal suffrage, which was not established in any Province of Canada when the war began, now prevails in all the Provinces but Quebec. So women in all the Provinces, including Quebec, have the franchise in federal elections. The power of the churches in the war was expressed in prohibition of the liquor traffic in all the Provinces but Quebec, and even in the French Province only wine and beer licenses are now issued.

### CANADA'S CONTRIBUTION FOR THE RELIEF OF SUFFERING.

The Patriotic Fund, collected to provide allowances for the dependents of soldiers, reached a total of \$48,481,-

There is still a bank balance to the credit of the association of \$7,236,205. Over two thousand physicians and 1,500 dentists served the army at home or abroad. The Canadian Dental Corps was the first to be established by any country and was described as "one of the best steps taken by the Canadian Government." Canada maintained sixteen field ambulances with the Canadian forces; seven general hospitals, five in France and two in Greece; seven stationary hospitals, one in Greece, three in France and three in England; four casualty clearing stations, three in France and one in England; and administered altogether 27 hospitals



**A WORKER FOR THE BELGIAN RELIEF**

Mrs. Clarence I. de Sola of Montreal was given the order of Queen Elizabeth of Belgium, in recognition of her devoted work for the Belgians.

Photo British and Colonial Press.

abroad all of which were manned by Canadian physicians and nurses.

To the Canadian Red Cross Society Canada gave nearly \$8,000,000 in cash and over \$13,000,000 in supplies; to the British Red Cross over \$6,000,000; to the Belgian Relief Fund \$1,642,000 in cash and \$1,512,000 in supplies; and to the military work of the Young Men's Christian Association \$4,575,000. The Dominion and Provincial Governments gave gifts of flour, oats, potatoes and other foodstuffs to Great Britain to the value of \$5,469,000. Gifts to the French, Serbian and Polish Relief funds, for equipment and maintenance of hospitals or field comforts for troops oversea and returned soldiers and for various other objects, totalled \$8,000,000. It is estimated that the total of voluntary contributions from Canada for war purposes exceeded \$95,000,000.

## WHAT HAS BEEN DONE FOR THE RETURNED SOLDIER.

Only the United States of all countries engaged in the war has a scale of

pensions as liberal as that of Canada. In 1915 the pension for a totally disabled single man was fixed at \$264. In 1916 this amount was increased to \$480. There was a further increase in 1917 to \$600, while in 1918 the allowance was raised by means of a bonus to \$720. There have been proportionate increases to those not wholly disabled and to wives, widows and children. In 1919, 175,000 persons were in receipt of pensions. Of these 70,950 were disabled soldiers, 27,649 wives of disabled soldiers, 58,582 children of disabled and widows of deceased soldiers, and 17,725 widows and mothers or other relations of deceased soldiers. The total payment for pensions for the year ending March 21st, 1917, was \$1,791,566, for 1918 \$7,402,253, for 1919, \$16,589,021 and for 1920 \$23,824,265, or a total of \$49,607,055. The expenditures for re-establishment have totalled many millions and it is generally admitted that the departments concerned in fitting partially disabled soldiers for civil pursuits in which they can earn wages and recover and maintain their personal independence have been singularly efficient.

So remarkable success has attended the effort of the Government to establish soldiers in agriculture. Allowances are granted for purchase of land of \$5,000, for stock and implements of \$2,000 and for building material and permanent improvements of \$1,000. Interest on unpaid balances is fixed at 5 per cent and repayment of the total advances is required in 25 annual instalments. Down to March 27th, 1920, the Land Settlement Board had approved loans to the amount of \$58,741,605. In all over 50,000 applications have been received from soldiers who desire to go upon the land, and of these 36,000 have been approved. The average loan for each settler is \$3,700. Estimates of the Land Settlement Board for 1920-21 total \$56,017,000.

## THE QUESTION OF PENSIONS NOT CLOUD-ED BY PARTISAN CONSIDERATIONS.

The Great War Veterans' Associations are demanding additional cash bonuses for all returned soldiers, running from \$1,000 to \$2,500, according to length

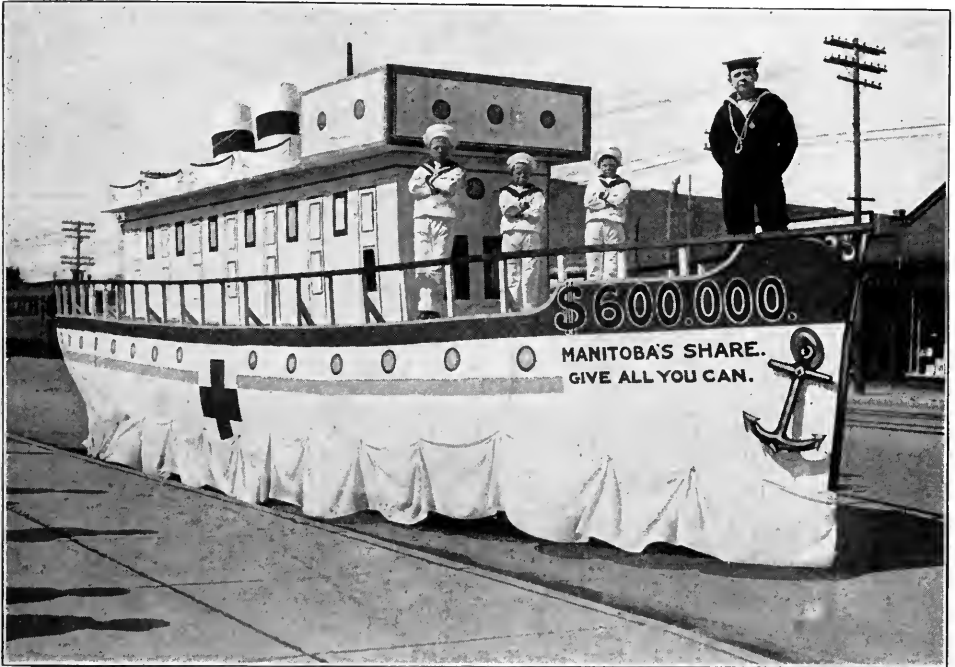
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and conditions of service, but the Government has definitely intimated that the demand cannot be conceded. It is estimated by the Veterans that the total amount required to give such bonuses would be \$250,000,000 but the Government holds that the total charge would be between \$500,000,000 and \$800,000,000. It is expected, however, that in special cases additional bonuses

ous as the condition of the finances will permit, and as yet there is a universal public opinion behind all the legislation for their benefit which Parliament has enacted.

### THE POLITICAL TRUCE IN PARLIAMENT IS FINALLY BROKEN.

There was no such observance of the "political truce" as was anticipated from the spirit displayed in the first war



### GIVE ALL YOU CAN

The T. Eaton Float in a big Red Cross Parade in Winnipeg. The ship represents the sunken Hospital ship "Ewan" which was torpedoed by a German submarine, although fully marked with the signs of her calling. The sailor on deck is not masquerading but an ex-navy service man, having a medal and two stripes to his credit.

will be granted and that pensions to widowed mothers with children will be increased. From the first, pensions have been considered by a select committee representing all parties in Parliament. Its recommendations have been unanimous and have been accepted with few changes by the Government and by the House of Commons and Senate. The clear and wise object is to avoid partisan competition and conflict over the country's duty and obligation to the soldiers. It is recognized that their services and sacrifices can receive no adequate recognition or reward. But the country demands provision for the soldiers and their dependents as gener-

session of Parliament. Before the war the country had been greatly divided over proposals to assist in the naval defence of the Empire. In 1910 the Laurier Government had asked Parliament to sanction the organization of the nucleus of a Canadian navy. It was provided that the vessels should be built in Canada, and that the fleet should be under the absolute control of the Canadian Government. In 1909 Parliament had unanimously declared in favor of a Canadian navy and there was, therefore, every reason to expect that the Laurier programme would have the support of the Conservative Opposition. But a wing of the Con-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

servative party insisted that the programme was inadequate, the extreme French element of Quebec, under Mr. Henri Bourassa, organized an inflammatory agitation in that Province against any appropriation for naval defense, and gradually the Conservative representation in Parliament was consolidated against the proposals of the Government. Hon. F. D. Monk, French Conservative leader in the House of Commons, joined Mr. Bourassa in organizing and energizing the Nationalist agitation in Quebec, although in 1909 he had supported the joint Parliamentary resolution in favor of a Canadian navy.

Quebec has produced few men of greater genius for popular agitation than Mr. Bourassa. While he sat in the House of Commons he was perhaps its most brilliant orator, whether he spoke in French or English, and he was even more effective on the platform. He had resigned his seat in Parliament in protest against participation by Canada in the war in South Africa and had established an organ whose chief mission was to resist all Imperial projects and maintain the claims and pretensions of the Ultramontane element among the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Excited by the passionate appeals of Bourassa, the sober, deliberate reasoning of Monk, and the extreme utterances of a group of the younger Quebec politicians, a multitude of French-Canadians were convinced that the naval proposals revealed a conspiracy, inspired from England, to destroy self-government in Canada and involve the Dominion in the quarrels of the Empire in Europe.

### THE BITTER DISCUSSION OVER A CANADIAN NAVY.

In the general election of 1911 in which a reciprocal trade agreement with the United States was the chief issue, the Nationalists united with the Conservatives of the English Provinces and overthrew the Laurier Administration. But while Reciprocity was the issue in the English Provinces, in Quebec the Nationalists directed their whole attack against Laurier's naval proposals. It may be that between the Conservatives and the Nationalists there was no

actual alliance but there was co-operation which wrested a score of constituencies from the Liberal party. When Sir Robert Borden formed his Government three Nationalists, representing a solid French *bloc*, were included. One of these was Monk, who had deserted the Conservative party in order to assist the Nationalist agitation in Quebec. This practical evidence of an alliance between French Nationalists and Conservative Imperialists excited bitter resentment among Liberals and goes far to explain the desperate resistance of the Liberal party to the emergency naval programme which, after consultation with the Imperial Government, Borden submitted to Parliament. Substantially the Conservative Government proposed to build three Dreadnoughts for the Royal Navy to constitute an integral portion of the British fleet until Canada should evolve a definite permanent naval policy, when they would be subject to recall if the final decision should be in favor of a Canadian navy rather than a central navy under common Imperial control. After weeks of angry and bitter obstruction and the final adoption of a system of closure for the Canadian Parliament, the proposals were carried in the House of Commons but were rejected by the Senate where the Liberal party commanded a majority.

### THE GERMAN MENACE LONG UNRECOGNIZED IN CANADA.

During the tumultuous naval debates there was much denunciation of the suspected designs of British Imperialists, strenuous protests against "contribution" and "centralization" and an alliance in sympathy but not in action between Quebec Nationalists and the Liberal party which had suffered so sorely from Nationalist attacks in the general election. With the Nationalists Laurier would have no co-operation. Bourassa and his allies he never ceased to denounce while he lived. But during the naval controversy he insisted again and again that there was no "emergency" before the British Empire, that Germany desired only good relations with Great Britain, and that the German Emperor was a bulwark of peace in



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Europe. This was the situation in Canada when war came and Sir Wilfrid Laurier and the Liberal party were obliged to admit that they had misunderstood Germany and were required to co-operate with the Conservative Government in all measures necessary to create an army, provide for its support, and place the country generally upon a war basis.

appointments, however, there was no discrimination against Liberals, nor was there any preference for Conservatives in the constitution of Relief and Patriotic organizations.

If there was no movement in the first years of the war to admit Liberals to the Cabinet it must also be stated that there was no demand from the Liberal press or the Liberal parliamentary



THE LARGEST POSTER EVER MADE

This poster was put up in Montreal, facing Victoria Square, and some estimate of its size can be obtained by comparing it with the automobile and man standing before it. It was difficult to overlook, and hard to get away from the accusing finger and eye. Montreal held a distinguished place in each of the loans.

### NO EARLY SUGGESTION OF A COALITION MINISTRY.

For twelve months, however, there was co-operation between the parties in Parliament for all war and patriotic objects. But in a section of the Conservative press there was frequent attack upon Laurier and provocative resurrection of his pre-war utterances. There was no thought of a coalition Government such as was established in Great Britain, nor any disposition among the Conservative leaders to associate Liberals with the conduct of the war or to relax in any degree the strictest ministerial control over expenditures and patronage. In military

party for any partnership in the responsibilities of government. It has been said that Sir Wilfrid Laurier would have agreed to enter a coalition if he had received such a proposal from the Prime Minister in 1914 or 1915, but if this be true the fact was not suspected nor is there any reason to believe that Conservative ministers would have joined forces with the Liberal leaders even if they had been convinced that proposals for a coalition would be entertained.

### DIVISION UPON SUBJECTS NOT CONNECTED WITH THE WAR.

So upon all questions not actually related to the prosecution of the war the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

parties divided according to pre-war prejudices, preferences and convictions. There was, therefore, throughout the war an atmosphere of partisan conflict in Canada, a disposition among leaders of the Liberal party to turn every untoward incident to political account, and a manifest desire among Conservative leaders to interpret Liberal criticism as dictated only by partisan considerations. The masses of the people, however, resented every symptom of political warfare and thought only of the war and the high necessity of union and co-operation in order that the participation of Canada in the conflict should be effective.

For this reason the Government did not venture to order a general election. In 1915 and again in 1916 ministers had definitely decided to appeal to the constituencies. Five years is the legal and constitutional life of a Canadian Parliament. A general election was held in 1911 and thus in 1916 the mandate from the people was exhausted. It is the custom to dissolve Parliament at least twelve months before dissolution becomes imperative. Notwithstanding the provision of the constitution four rather than five years represents the actual average life of Parliament in Canada. Under normal conditions, therefore, the Government would have sought a renewal of public confidence in the autumn of 1915 and certainly not later than the summer of 1916. But the Liberal party, clearly supported by public opinion, opposed a war election. Sir Wilfrid Laurier declared that although he was confident the Government could not survive an appeal to the country he was unwilling to open the portals of office with "a bloody key." The Liberal press was united, energetic and fervent in protest against any proposal to plunge the country into the bitterness and turmoil of a general election while Canadian soldiers were dying in the trenches and mourning and desolation pervaded thousands of Canadian households.

### **PUBLIC SENTIMENT OPPOSED TO A WAR ELECTION.**

Patriotic and recruiting organizations joined in the protest and voices

from many pulpits pleaded for an agreement between the parties to extend the life of Parliament. In the Cabinet also there was division as apparently among Liberals there was less unanimity than was suggested by the attitude of the parliamentary party. It has since been stated that at the Liberal caucus which agreed to extension Sir Wilfrid Laurier submitted with reluctance to the decision of the majority. "I think it would be much better" he told the caucus "to stand on the solid bedrock of the constitution and to have elections as the constitution provides." A student of Lincoln as Laurier was, he probably had knowledge of Lincoln's speech from the White House when he was elected as President for a second term in the crisis of the Civil War. "We cannot have free government without elections," he declared "and if the rebellion could force us to forego or postpone a national election it might fairly claim to have already conquered and ruined us. The strife of the election is but human nature practically applied to the facts of the case. What has occurred in this case must ever recur in similar cases. Human nature will not change. In any future great national trial, compared with the men of this, we shall have as weak and as strong, as silly and as wise, as bad and as good. . . . . But the election, along with its incidental and undesirable strife has done good too. It has demonstrated that a people's government can sustain a national election in the midst of a great civil war. Until now, it has not been known to the world that this was a possibility."

In Canada, however, as in Great Britain, public feeling was resolutely against a war election and twice the Government submitted even against its own desire and judgment after a majority of the Cabinet had definitely determined to consult the people. There was this difference between the situation in Canada and in Great Britain. In the Mother Country Liberals, Unionists and the Labor party had united to form a Coalition Cabinet. In the Dominion government by party still prevailed. Moreover, the Opposi-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tion would agree only to an extension of Parliament from year to year and thus there was always the temptation to manoeuvre for party advantage and power in the Opposition at the termination of any agreement to force a general election.

### CRITICISM OF THE CONDUCT OF THE WAR IS VARIED.

Even of the conduct of the war there was unceasing criticism. The distribution of shell contracts and the Ross rifle were special objects of attack. It was contended that the Ross rifle manufactured at Quebec was a sporting and not a military weapon, that it was too delicate for service in the trenches, and was unreliable and "jammed" in action. Ample evidence has accumulated that there was substance in these charges. It is certain that the Canadian weapon was unpopular with the Expeditionary Army. Many were abandoned in the field when British rifles could be secured as substitutes. Under attack and pressure of public feeling the Ross rifle finally was replaced by the Lee-Enfield and manufacture of the Canadian arm discontinued.

Into the charges that favorites of the Minister of Militia had profited improperly through shell contracts there was inquiry by a judicial commission and substantial vindication of the Minister. If the Minister was insubordinate and autocratic and later withdrew from the Government over differences with his colleagues it is admitted that he displayed remarkable energy and resource in organizing and equipping the first contingents and that no evidence of corruption in office ever was produced. There were acute differences also over railway policy and over methods of taxation. Unable to borrow in the United States or Great Britain the Canadian Northern Railway and the Grand Trunk Pacific Railway had to be assisted from the public treasury. A loan of \$45,000,000 to the first road was resisted by the Opposition as a concession to favorite capitalists upon inadequate security and they were joined in the debate and the division by Mr. R. B. Bennett of Calgary and Mr. W. F. Nickle of Kingston, among the most

influential Conservatives outside the Cabinet in Parliament. A motion by Mr. Nickle to abolish hereditary titles in Canada was supported by Sir Wilfrid Laurier, who declared his readiness to make a bonfire of his own parchment, and by a formidable wing of Conservatives. An amendment to abolish all titles save those bestowed in recognition



HON. N. W. ROWELL

Who was leader of the Liberal Party in the Province of Ontario from 1911 to 1917, and as such has promoted an advanced programme of social legislation.

of war services was only defeated by the blunt and resolute statement of the Prime Minister that if the motion carried the Government would resign. Defeated for the moment, the proposal was renewed in a subsequent session during the absence of Sir Robert Borden in Paris and adopted by a substantial majority of Parliament. As has been said the Opposition strongly opposed increase of customs duties as a method of raising additional revenue and Sir Wilfrid Laurier himself was never wholly favorable to taxation of excess profits. But none of these issues greatly excited the country or cut down to the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

roots of old political relationships as did the acute quarrel over conscription.

### THE QUESTION OF CONSCRIPTION FINALLY BECOMES IMPORTANT.

There was no thought of a draft in Canada when the war began. Sir Robert Borden as leader of the Government and Sir Wilfrid Laurier as leader of the parliamentary. Opposition declared again and again that compulsion

effect. There was no prospect of peace in the near future. There was no suggestion from any group or party that the strength of Canada in the field should be reduced. Even those who opposed the draft insisted that adequate reinforcements must be provided. It may be that compulsion would not have been applied if voluntary recruiting could have been main-



"EN ROUTE TO VICTORY"

This is a float supplied to a Victory Loan Drive parade in Toronto by the T. Eaton Company. In 1919 the Government asked for a subscription of \$300,000,000 but the loan was over-subscribed and \$690,000,000 was raised. Altogether during the war \$1,800,000,000 was obtained in Canada by domestic loans, but this amount does not include all of the national debt so heavily increased by annual war expenditure.

would not be employed. But from month to month and from year to year the call for men was continuous and insistent. When we had organized an army of 100,000 another 100,000 was required. When 200,000 men had enlisted there was an appeal for 300,000. When 350,000 had enrolled a Canadian contribution of 500,000 was authorized. By voluntary enlistment 437,000 were secured and by midsummer of 1917 322,000 of these had crossed the sea.

Thereafter appeal and persuasion ceased to bring any considerable response, although not wholly without

tained, but with comparative failure of voluntary recruiting the Government became convinced that there was no alternative. In the last phases of the voluntary system arguments were used and devices employed of dubious propriety and doubtful dignity.

### THE MILITARY SERVICE BILL IS INTRODUCED.

Under these circumstances the Military Service Bill was submitted to Parliament and carried by 118 to 55. Nine Conservatives and 37 Liberals from Quebec voted against the Bill but the minority contained only 12 English speaking members from all the Prov-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

inces. In offering an amendment that "the further consideration of this Bill be deferred until the principle thereof has, by means of a Referendum, been submitted to and approved by the electors of Canada," Sir Wilfrid Laurier said, "Would anyone believe that if the Government had told us in 1916 that

they contemplated introducing the new radical principle of conscription, Parliament would have been extended? When this Government asks this moribund Parliament to pass such a law as this, it is an abuse of the authority which has been placed in their hands by the people of Canada. Parliament has not been in touch with the country for two years and more, and it seems to me that this is an additional reason why we should not proceed with this Bill. There is in all the Provinces of this Dominion at the present moment amongst the working classes an opposition to this measure which is not wavering but which is becoming stronger every day. There is another class who have been strongly opposed to conscription and I must deal with them. I refer to the French Canadian portion of the population. I ask which is the course most conducive to success in the war — compulsion with irritation and bitterness and a sense of intolerance and injustice, or consultation with consequent union, and universal satisfaction all around. . . . What I propose is that we should have a referendum and a consultation of the people upon this question. When the verdict of the people has been given, there can be no further question, and everybody will have to submit to the law. I repeat the pledges I gave a moment ago on behalf of my own Province, that every man, even although he is to-day opposed to the law, shall do service as well as any man of any other race." Later developments showed, however, that the Liberal Party was not united.

### LIBERAL REVOLT AGAINST THE LEADERSHIP OF SIR WILFRID LAURIER.

The Parliamentary division over conscription accentuated the revolt among Liberals in all the English Provinces against Sir Wilfrid Laurier's leadership. For some time such powerful Liberal journals as the *Toronto*



WOMEN WORKERS IN THE C. P. R. ROUNDHOUSE, TORONTO

A group of women engine-cleaners who made good in the war. Previous to their employment sixteen Japs had covered six engines per day. These eight women did eight engines per day. They began scraping off the grease, hosing out the tenders and polishing the nickel and brass.

*Globe* and the *Winnipeg Free Press* had been calling for a Union Government and the substitution of the Militia Act, which authorized conscription by ballot and which was adopted when Laurier was Premier, for the voluntary system of recruiting. These demands had the vehement support of Mr. N. W. Rowell, leader of the Liberal party in the Ontario Legislature, and other influential Liberals in the constituencies. It is not too much to say that the Liberal newspapers of the English Provinces were practically united in support of a

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

measure of compulsion and a Union Cabinet. A representative Convention of Western Liberals at Winnipeg, however, failed to pronounce in favor of conscription, substantially endorsed Laurier and unequivocally rejected Borden. But it soon became clear that except under Borden no coalition could be effected. A caucus of Conservative members of the Senate and House of Commons so intimated in language which the country could not misunderstand. Borden himself offered to withdraw in favor of Sir George Foster, whom it was directly intimated Western Liberals would accept, but to this neither Foster nor caucus would agree.

Thenceforward Borden set himself with patience and energy to the organization of a Union Cabinet. Naturally he first made direct advances to Sir Wilfrid Laurier. Substantially he proposed that the leader of the Liberal party should enter the Cabinet and select one half of its members. Laurier did not give an immediate answer although there never was any real prospect that he would accept. When he did reply it was in effect that he could not enter a coalition to enforce conscription and that he should have been consulted before the Military Service Act was forced through Parliament. Failing with Sir Wilfrid Laurier the Prime Minister turned to that section of the Liberal party which had supported conscription and been foremost in the agitation for a Union Government.

### **PUBLIC OPINION SWINGS TOWARD A UNION CABINET.**

National Unity Conventions were held at Montreal and Toronto, many patriotic organizations adopted resolutions in support of conscription and union, and many of the Liberal newspapers became steadily more hostile to the position taken by the Liberal leaders. Gradually an irresistible movement of public opinion was developed and the Prime Minister immensely strengthened in the difficult task to which he had set himself. The Western Liberal leaders who had declared adhesion to Laurier at the Winnipeg Convention reconsidered their position and entered into direct negotiation

with Borden and other Conservative ministers. Very influential in the movement was Sir Clifford Sifton, one of the virile figures in Canadian affairs, who from the first had subordinated all other considerations to the war, and the *Winnipeg Free Press* which put all its power of persuasion, appeal and argument at the service of the Unionists. In Ontario also the *Toronto Globe* and the *Toronto Star*, reluctant as they were to separate from Sir Wilfrid Laurier, were hardly less effective in creating a public temper which could not be resisted.

### **LIBERAL REPRESENTATION IN THE CABINET AS FINALLY FORMED.**

In the Union Cabinet as finally organized by Sir Robert Borden, there was a formidable Liberal representation. Among the ministers were Hon. N. W. Rowell, Liberal leader of Ontario, Hon. Arthur Sifton, Liberal Premier of Alberta, Hon. J. A. Calder, Minister of Public Works in the Liberal Government of Saskatchewan, Hon. T. A. Crerar of Manitoba, leader of the Western Grain Growers, Hon. A. K. Maclean of Nova Scotia, Hon. F. B. Carvell of New Brunswick, Hon. C. C. Ballantyne of Quebec and Hon. Hugh Guthrie and Hon. S. C. Newburn of Ontario. Of these only Mr. Carvell, Mr. Maclean and Mr. Guthrie had seats in the House of Commons. Whether or not Laurier exerted pressure upon his followers it is certain that few even of the Conscriptionist Liberals in Parliament could be persuaded to enter the Union Cabinet. Only two French Canadians had seats in the Government and both of these were defeated in the general election of December 1917 which followed its organization.

In the electoral contest conscription was the overshadowing issue alike in Quebec and in the English Provinces. But Quebec was with and the English Provinces against Laurier. In many of the speeches of Unionist candidates and in much of the Unionist literature there was denunciation of Quebec as hostile to conscription, slack in recruiting, and indifferent to the fortunes of the decimated regiments in France and Flanders. To racial feeling among the

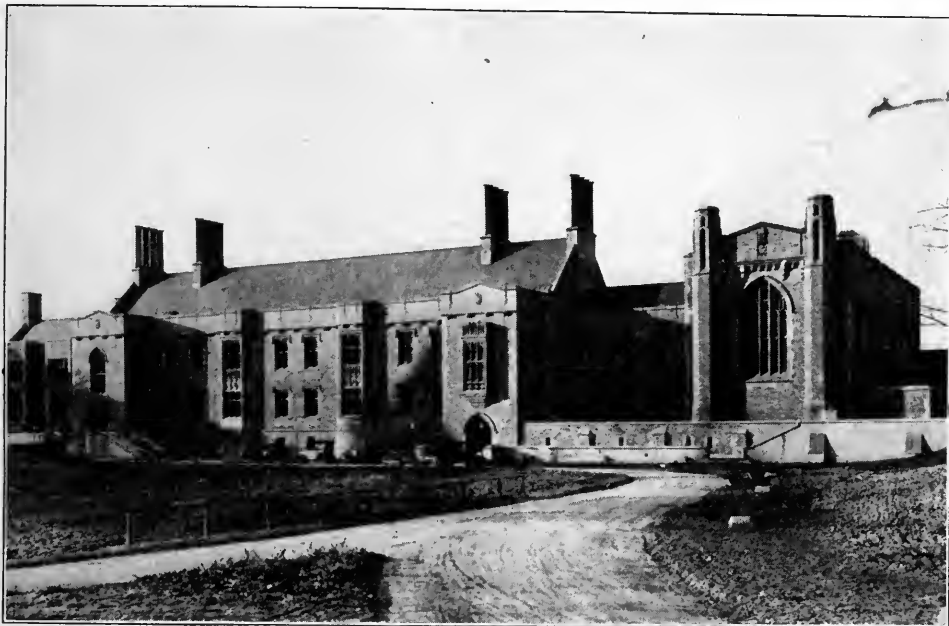
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

English-speaking people was added the emotional appeal for reinforcements for the army. The favorite slogans in English constituencies were, "Stand by the boys at the front" and "Shall Quebec govern Canada?"

### THE RESULTS OF THE ELECTION SHOW PUBLIC OPINION.

Quebec bitterly resented these aspersions and attacks and settled more

Liberals and 22 Unionists. In Quebec, out of 65 seats only three Unionists were returned. Many Unionist majorities ran from 5,000 to 20,000 but the majorities for Liberal candidates in Quebec were not less decisive. The soldiers overseas, in England and in the field, and in camps in Canada voted overwhelmingly for the Government. The Unionists had a total majority over



HART HOUSE, TORONTO UNIVERSITY

Presented by the Massey family to Toronto University for the purpose of an undergraduate club house, Hart House, although not quite finished upon the outbreak of war was turned over to the Government that they might use its exceptional facilities for the recreation of soldiers. Here also were set up courses for the re-education of crippled soldiers. After the war it was returned to the University.

firmly and angrily into its established attitude of personal devotion to Laurier. The Liberal leader himself although in his seventy-sixth year displayed remarkable vigor and energy. He crossed the Dominion from Ottawa to Vancouver, speaking at all the chief centres, and always to great and apparently sympathetic audiences. But while it was made clear that there was a great reserve of affection among the Canadian people for an attractive and picturesque figure, the result demonstrated that personal regard could not be translated into political support. In all the West, Laurier carried only three seats out of 56 and only seven in Ontario. The Atlantic Provinces elected eight

the official Opposition of 362,000 and a plurality over Liberal, Labor and Independent candidates of 264,216. Of the military votes 206,626 were recorded in favor of the Government and 15,016 for opposing candidates.

### THE OPERATIONS OF CONSCRIPTION CAUSE CONSIDERABLE IRRITATION.

There was no serious resistance to the draft in any portion of the Dominion. But there were evaders and deserters and subsequent prosecutions. Among farmers a good deal of exasperation and anger was produced. During the general election definite pledges were made by the Government that owing to the scarcity of farm labor and the urgent need of greater food production farm-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ers' sons would not be drafted. It was found, however, in Canada as in Great Britain that to exempt any class was impracticable. The prospect of exemption drew too many people to the land who had no connection, or thought of any connection, with agriculture until the draft was instituted. The military tribunals, therefore, ignored the Government's pledges, and thousands of farmers who had supported the Unionists strongly resented what they regarded as deliberate and wanton violation of a positive contract. In Quebec also, where conscription was so generally opposed, there is enduring resentment over the attacks during the contest upon the loyalty and patriotism of the French people. No candidate of the Government has since been elected in Quebec and all advances by Unionists are rejected. The Prime Minister was anxious to have greater French representation in the Cabinet but no candidate willing to take office under Sir Robert Borden could have been elected in a French constituency. It has to be said for the former Prime Minister, however, that he was ever conciliatory in his attitude towards the French Province and even during the general election abstained from any harsh or censorious utterance. But Quebec was devoted to Laurier and as yet will have no association with the political group which he opposed and the measures of policy which he resisted. His death ended a political era in Canada but there is reverence for his memory among Liberals equal to that which exists among Conservatives for the personality and achievements of Sir John Macdonald.

### THE ALIEN ENEMIES IN CANADA DURING THE WAR.

Although there are over 600,000 Germans and Austrians in Canada they were so tractable throughout the war that only a few thousands were interned. In the West the vigilance of the Mounted Police gave an effective guarantee of order and security. In cases alien enemies were suspected of incendiarism and destruction of property but seldom was definite evidence to convict or even to justify suspicion obtained. In the

general election of 1917 Germans and Austrians who had not lived more than fifteen years in the Dominion were disfranchised. This legislation was vigorously opposed by the Liberal party and is still denounced as a fundamental violation of the right of citizenship.

### VIGOROUS MEASURES FOR RECONSTRUCTION UNDERTAKEN.

In measures of reconstruction the Government has been vigorous and courageous. Over \$100,000,000 was provided for credits to Rumania, Greece, France and Belgium to purchase grain and manufactures in Canada, \$50,000,000 to Great Britain for timber supplies from British Columbia, \$25,000,000 to assist in the construction of inexpensive houses, \$10,000,000 for good roads, and \$500,000 is recommended for a National Scientific Institute at Ottawa. Manufactures were assisted through a Canadian Trade Commission in London to place export orders in foreign markets and the wheat crop satisfactorily marketed through a National Wheat Board which ensured the farmers \$2.55 a bushel for the crop of 1919. A Board of Commerce was also instituted to regulate prices of necessities, to restrict profiteering and to prevent illegal industrial combination with results not very different from those which usually attend such legislative experiments. The Government has acquired the Canadian Northern, Grand Trunk and Grand Trunk Pacific Railways, and now operates 22,000 miles of national railway extending from Windsor in the southern peninsula of Ontario to Vancouver and Prince Rupert on the Pacific.

Parliament has affirmed Canada's adhesion to the League of Nations and asserted the new national status of the Dominion in the determination to appoint an Ambassador to Washington. Indeed the war has vitally affected the constitutional position and the political outlook of Canada. Between 1914 and 1920 Sir Robert Borden was in close and continuous consultation with Imperial ministers. An Imperial War Cabinet was created to ensure understanding and co-operation between the Dominions and the Mother Country. An Oversea

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Minister of Militia represented Canada in London. Authority was taken by the Imperial Government to attach oversea ministers from the Dominions to the Imperial Cabinet. Sir Robert Borden and other Canadian delegates attended the Peace Conference and representatives of Canada signed the Peace Treaty. Henceforth the Dominion will be represented in the Assembly of Nations and in Imperial Conferences not as a subordinate colony but as an equal nation under the Crown. What lies in the womb of the future it is impossible to foresee but the British Empire never again can be just what it was before the war and only the gods know what form of political structure the new forces and conditions will develop.

### THE POLITICS OF CANADA AS YET UNSETTLED.

In the meantime political conditions are unsettled. The long absences of the Prime Minister in England and France affected the cohesion of the Unionist party. Bye-elections have gone steadily against the Government. The farmers have organized as a national political party and in association with a Labor group have secured control of the Legislature of Ontario, and established an Independent group in the House of Commons. Sir Robert Borden, broken by the long strain of the war, and the perplexities and difficulties inseparable from political leadership, has withdrawn from public life, and has been succeeded by the Honorable Arthur Meighen. The United Farmers and the Liberals demand a lower tariff and unquestionably in the next general election, as in so many other political contests in Canada, that will be the chief issue between groups and parties. It is possible that we shall have a period of government by groups instead of by the two-party system which has prevailed since Confederation. Taxation is very heavy but the Government

has determined not to resort to further borrowing. New taxes just imposed are expected to yield an increase of \$70,000,000 in revenue. They include taxes on sales over definite amounts,

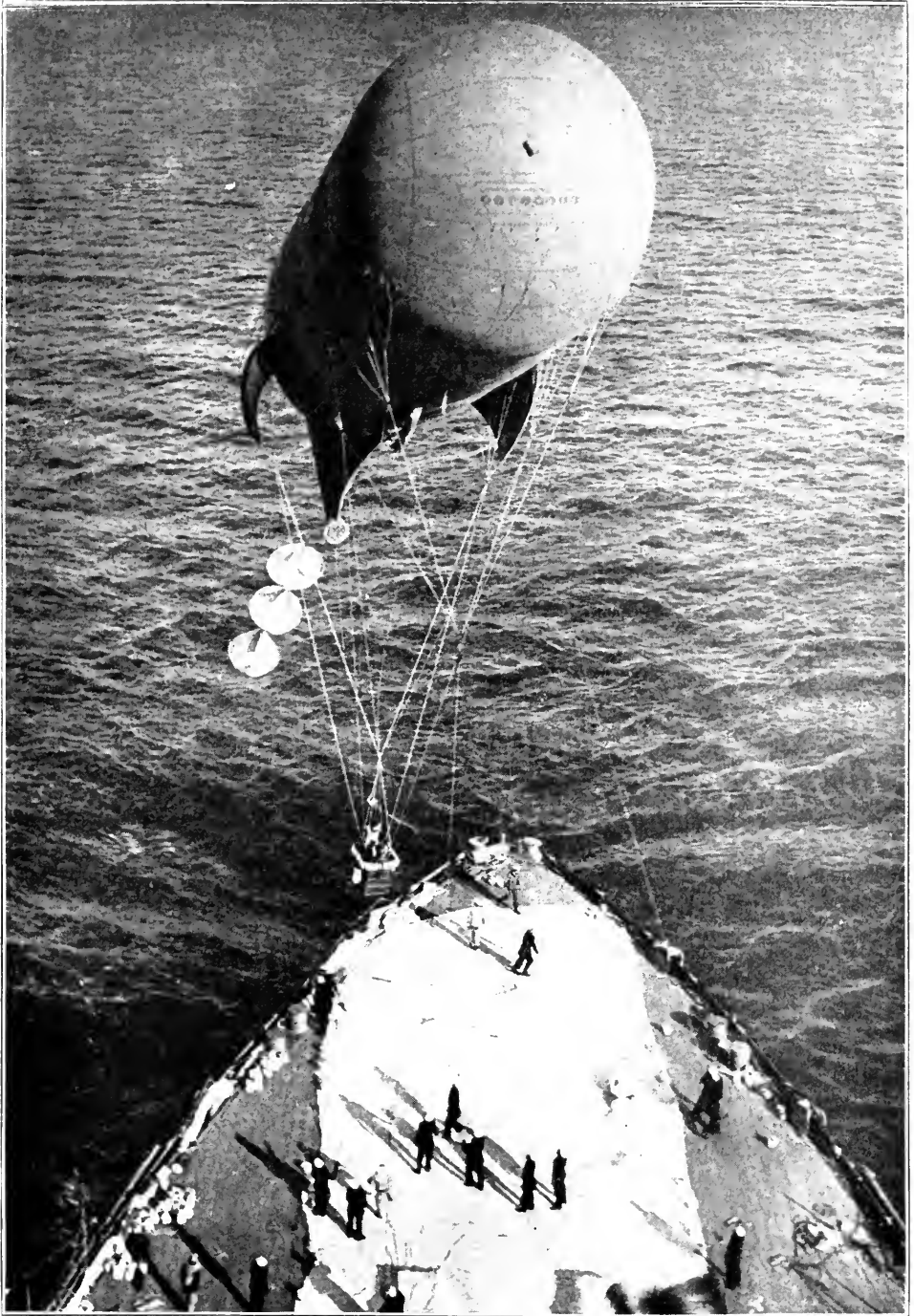


CANADA'S NEW PREMIER

The Hon. Arthur Meighen, who succeeded Sir Robert Borden as Prime Minister of Canada. He was formerly Minister of the Interior of the Dominion.

Photo by British and Colonial Press, Toronto.

heavier taxation of incomes above \$5,000, increase in stamp taxes, in taxes on promissory notes and bills of exchange, in excise taxes on automobiles and on beer, wine and spirituous liquors and a tax of two cents per share on stock transfers, with customs and profits taxes only very slightly reduced. But the temper of the country is firm and buoyant and whatever may be the immediate fortune of political parties the great burden which the war has laid upon the Canadian people will be carried without repining and without fear of the future.



#### OBSERVATION BALLOON ATTACHED TO U.S.S. OKLAHOMA

The value of lighter-than-air craft, which could hang stationary above the stretches of water where enemy activities were suspected, was fully demonstrated by the German dirigibles over the North Sea during the war. The Allies were not slow to heed this lesson and in the second and third years many ships were furnished with observation balloons. The one shown in the picture that has just risen from the deck of the U.S.S. Oklahoma, is of modern type with its hawsers secured to a "net" encasing the balloon envelope. The Oklahoma is a dreadnought of 27,500 tons displacement. She was laid down in 1912, carries 10 14-inch, and 21 5-inch guns and 4 torpedoes.

© International Film Service.



U. S. Destroyer Henderson Making Smoke Screen

## CHAPTER LXIV

# The United States Naval Forces in European Waters

## A SUMMARY OF THE ACTIVITIES OF THE UNITED STATES NAVY DURING THE GREAT WAR

BY REAR ADMIRAL WILLIAM S. SIMS, U. S. NAVY

**T**HE effectiveness of Sea Power has always been measured by the degree of success with which it fulfills its mission in the support of Land Power. Sea Power is, in effect, the foundation upon which Land Power exists, for which reason the basic mission of the United States Navy during the Great War was to further a successful decision on land. Command of the sea does not, in itself, insure ultimate victory; but it is absolutely indispensable to a successful decision on land, for, once it has been established, the resources of allied and neutral nations are made available for the maintenance of those armies dependent upon supplies from overseas for their effective operations.

### **H**OW COMMAND OF THE SEA MAY BE ESTABLISHED.

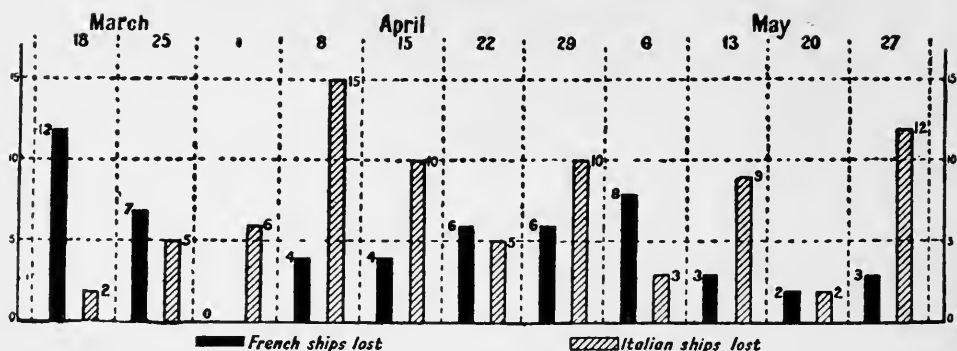
Command of the sea may be established by the actual destruction of the enemy naval forces, or by effectually "containing" them with an overwhelmingly superior force. This latter state of affairs existed at the time the United States declared war against Germany, on April 6, 1917, for the Allies had actually established partial command of the sea, inasmuch as the enemy's surface craft were effectually contained within the immediate vicin-

ity of his home waters. Although the enemy commanded the Baltic, and was at all times perfectly free to enter the North Sea, no operations in those areas could have had any serious influence upon the success of land operations, the court of last appeal, unless such operations were successful in defeating the British Grand Fleet, which was highly improbable.

### **T**HE GERMAN FLEET RENDERED IMPOTENT BY THE BRITISH GRAND FLEET.

The German High Seas Fleet was rendered, to all intents and purposes, impotent by the mere existence and readiness for battle of the British Grand Fleet guarding the exits of the North Sea. On the other hand, the sub-surface command of the sea had not been established by the Allies; and enemy submarines were, therefore, free to enter the Atlantic and prey upon commerce in their attempt to starve the Allies into submission and eventual surrender. Submarine Warfare was, in effect, directed against Land Power; and, inasmuch as it could be overcome only by naval forces, the relationship between Land Power and Sea Power is apparent. The success or failure of the Allied Armies depended entirely upon the success or failure of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



**FRENCH AND ITALIAN LOSSES BY ENEMY SUBMARINES, 1917**

Diagram showing the destruction of French and Italian shipping through a period of the eleven most critical weeks. The fluctuations were more marked than in the British losses. Many of the Italian vessels sunk were only small craft.

the submarine warfare being waged indirectly against them. To the Navies, therefore, fell the task of overcoming the submarine menace, and of preserving in this way the integrity of the Armies in order that ultimate victory might be achieved.

The enemy in making submarine warfare his principal naval effort was thus conforming directly to the basic mission of employing the naval forces at his disposal to further a successful decision on land.

### **MAINTAINING LINES OF COMMUNICATION THE MOST IMPORTANT TASK.**

In view of the foregoing, it will readily be understood why the principal naval effort exerted by the United States during the Great War was that of safeguarding from enemy submarines the naval lines of communication to Europe. If not before, certainly after the Battle of Jutland, the Central Powers realized that they could never gain the control of the surface of the sea; and they accordingly concentrated every effort in their attempt to gain the sub-surface command of the sea, and thus establish an economic blockade which would eventually starve the Allies into submission and eventual defeat on land.

To appreciate this situation it must be understood that the Allied Armies and, later, our own Army as well, were chiefly dependent—not only as regards their fighting efficiency, but for their very existence—upon supplies from overseas. The maintenance in France of the American Army alone required

the delivery in French seaports of approximately 50,000 tons of supplies a day, from which it is evident that the very life, not to mention the effectiveness, of the combined Allied Armies required an immense and continuous supply of fuel, food and munitions from overseas. The interruption of the flow of these supplies even for a short time would have seriously handicapped the fighting efficiency of the Allied Armies on all fronts; success in actually severing the naval lines of communication, would infallibly have resulted in the victory of the Central Powers. This was fully realized, and therefore they were willing to risk all upon the chance

### **THE SUBMARINE CAMPAIGN REALLY A FLANKING MOVEMENT.**

A very apt comparison may be drawn between these naval lines of communication and a number of electric light wires carrying current to a group of electric lights. One has but to cut the wires to extinguish the lights; and, in precisely the same way, the successful cutting of the naval lines of communication would have forced the surrender of the armies at the front. Realizing the futility of even attempting to wrest the control of the surface of the seas from the Allies, the Central Powers instituted the ruthless submarine campaign against merchant shipping as a means of obtaining a military decision on land. In reality, this was in the nature of a flanking movement, for, when two armies face each other, the best strategic practice con-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

sists of one army outflanking the other and cutting its lines of supplies. The submarine campaign was instituted with this end in view; and it was, therefore, in a sense, an auxiliary arm of the army.

### THE DESPERATE SITUATION IN THE SPRING OF 1917.

Due more especially to the geographical location of Great Britain and

tonnage necessary to the very existence of the Allies had been carefully figured, and an estimate made of the probable losses for succeeding months, and from this information a simple arithmetical calculation gave the number of months the Allies could continue the prosecution of the war. Once the figure of available tonnage fell below that actually required, the war was over,

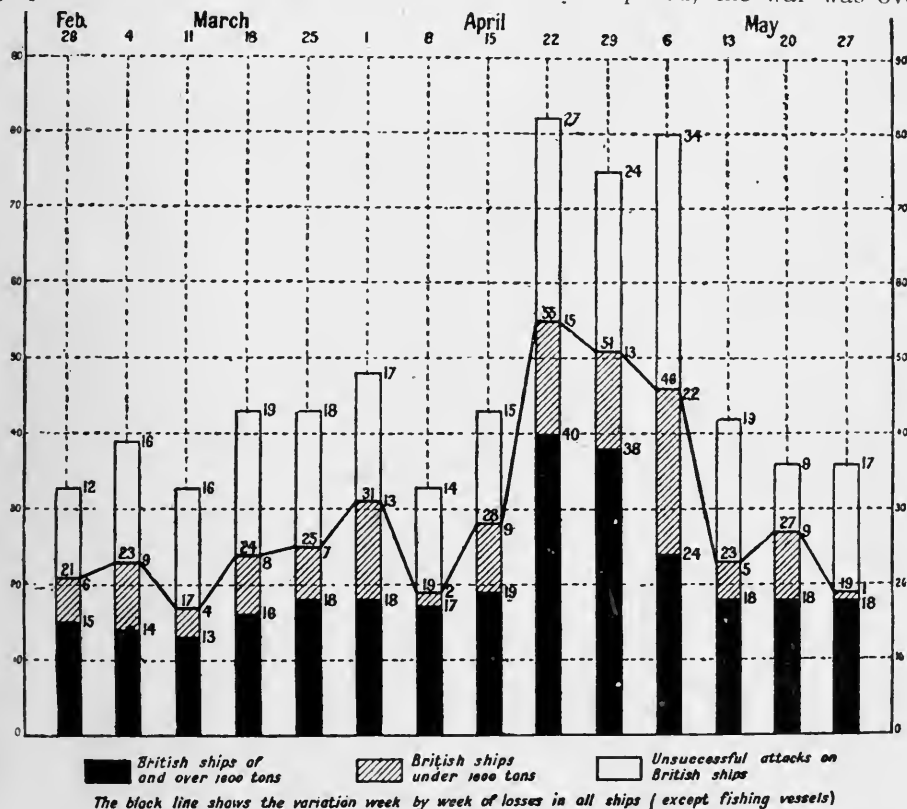


CHART OF THE INTENSITY OF THE SUBMARINE WAR, 1917

to her degree of dependence upon outside sources for food, the situation, when the United States declared war against Germany in the spring of 1917, was desperately critical. The enemy submarine campaign had assumed the most alarming proportions. Neutral and Allied merchant tonnage was being destroyed at a rate far exceeding that of construction; and the world's available tonnage was being taxed to the elastic limit in order to maintain the armies at the front in an efficient operating condition. The amount of naval

and over in favor of the Central Powers.

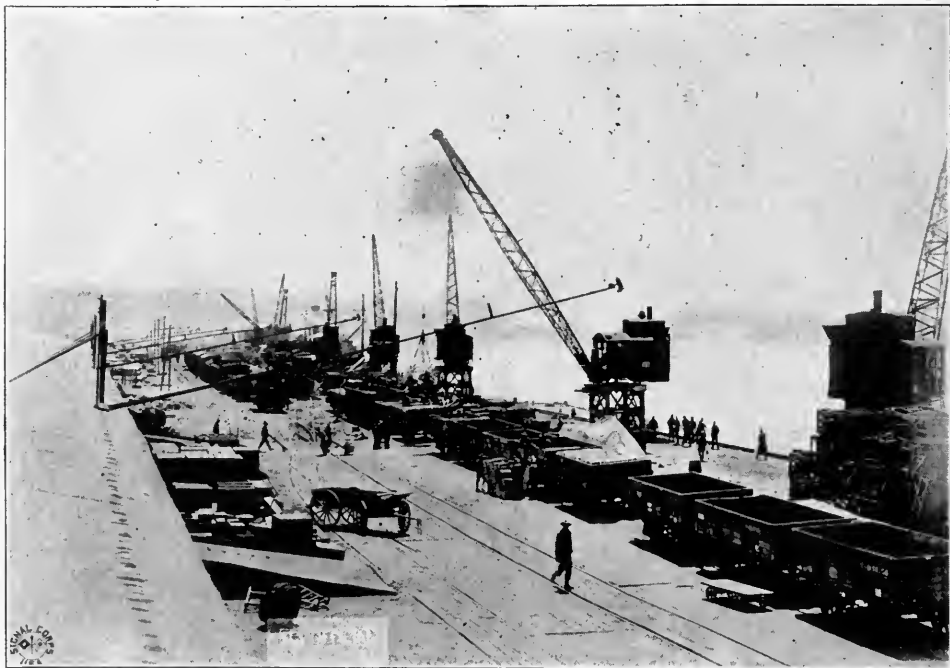
The breaking point had been sighted in the spring of 1917; and, just as a beleaguered fortress is starved into submission and eventual surrender, so, too, were the Allies facing that same fate at the hands of the enemy submarines. True to their highest traditions, however, the Allies were standing fast under the most terrific punishment imaginable, with that courage and steadfastness of purpose which eventually carried them to victory.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE VALUE OF THE TORPEDO BOAT DESTROYER IN THE WAR.

Due to the fact that, throughout the entire period of the war, the Allies retained the control of the surface of the sea, they were free to employ any and all available types of small craft in the anti-submarine campaign, without fear of considerable destruction at the hands of the enemy. Although the enemy

operating. These areas were principally the approaches to those restricted waters through which shipping had to pass en route to ports of charge and discharge, as, for example, the English Channel, the entrance to the Irish Sea, and the waters adjacent to the north of Ireland and Scotland—the neck of the bottle, so to speak, through which millions of tons of ship-



THE AMERICAN DOCKS AT THE PORT OF BORDEAUX

Several French ports were given over almost entirely to the use of the American Army and at several others a special section of the port was assigned to the American forces. Here are the great cranes by which the supply ships were unloaded at Bordeaux. At first use was made of French railway equipment, but an increasingly large number of heavy American locomotives and freight cars was sent over.

suffered heavily at the hands of these small anti-submarine craft, our losses were comparatively slight. The U. S. destroyer Jacob Jones, and the converted yacht Alcedo, were sunk by torpedoes fired from enemy submarines, and the destroyer Cassin was seriously, but only temporarily, damaged by an enemy torpedo. The loss of life in each case was small.

Torpedo boat destroyers were generally acknowledged to be the most effective anti-submarine vessels, but, unfortunately, in 1917 the numbers available were almost hopelessly insufficient to patrol all of those areas in which the enemy submarines were

ping converged from all over the world.

### DESTROYERS THE FIRST CONTRIBUTION OF THE UNITED STATES.

In view of the foregoing, it was, therefore, logical that the initial American effort should consist in sending a number of torpedo boat destroyers to European waters to augment those of our Allies employed in hunting down submarines.

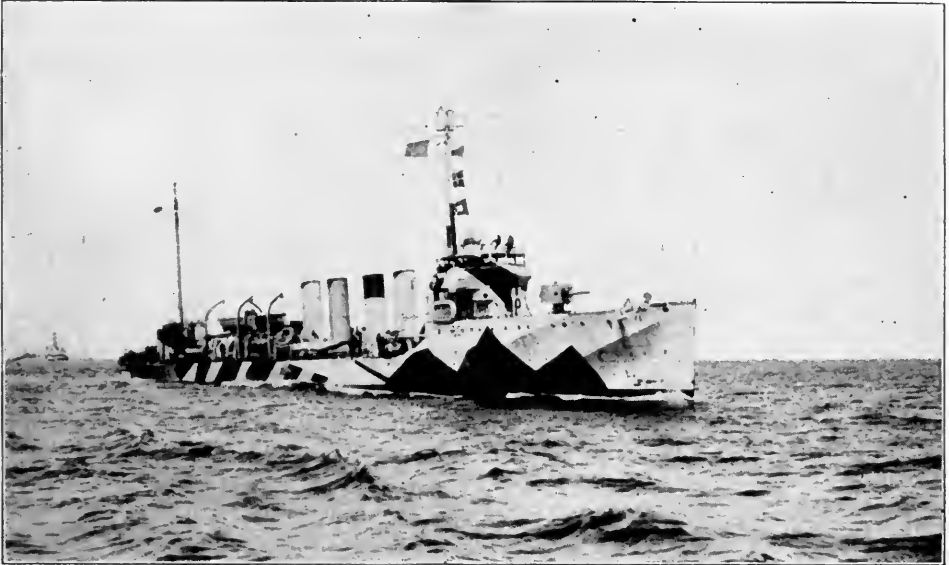
I had been relieved from duty as President of the Naval War College in the latter part of March, 1917, and ordered to London to estimate the situation and to report the result of my observations to the Navy Department.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Two days before my arrival in Europe the United States declared war against Germany, so that I was received by the officials of the British Government as the representative of an ally, and, as such, given all the facts and figures which had not been issued to the press. I was appalled at the seriousness of the situation. The Central Powers were winning the war and the means of preventing them had not been developed. The ruthless submarine campaign bid

who, when asked by the British Vice-Admiral commanding the Coast of Ireland when his command would be ready for duty, replied with characteristic American energy, "We are ready now, Sir!" This spirit was typical of the entire naval forces operating in European waters. It was the revival of the old spirit of courageous defiance to unlawfully constituted authority, that made our presence in the war felt by the enemy as a most decisive factor.



**A UNITED STATES DESTROYER ON PATROL DUTY**

Dazzle painting was intended particularly to confuse an observer through a periscope. The reflections of the sun and sky on the water made it difficult sometimes for a hasty observation to determine the kind of ship, or the direction in which it was moving. Sometimes the submarine commander mistook a destroyer for a harmless fishing boat with decidedly unpleasant consequences. U. S. Official.

fair to defeat the Allies unless it was frustrated, and the only way to accomplish this was to render the submarine impotent either by actual destruction or by so protecting merchant ships that they could not be sunk without grave risk to the attacker. Accordingly, I summarized all of my reports to the Navy Department with the statement that the United States should immediately assemble all of its destroyers and other light surface craft and dispatch them to assist the Allies in the prosecution of the anti-submarine campaign.

The first of these American destroyers reached Queenstown, Ireland, on May 4, 1917, under the command of Commander J. K. Taussig, U. S. Navy,

### **THE MORAL FORCES OF THE UNITED STATES IN EUROPE.**

These pioneer American forces were followed by other naval craft, of the over and undersea types, until, at the date of the signing of the Armistice, on November 11, 1918, the U. S. Naval Forces operating in European waters, consisted of approximately 5,000 officers and 75,000 enlisted men, operating upwards of 375 men-of-war. These included battleships, cruisers, gunboats, transports, destroyers, submarines, submarine chasers, converted yachts, tugs, trawlers, tenders, mine-layers, and minesweepers; a naval aviation force operating air stations in England, Ireland, France and Italy;

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and a complete 14-inch railway battery, which was placed under the operational command of General Pershing, commanding the American Expeditionary Forces in France. In addition, there were established a number of large naval bases or operating centres, for a navy in war, as well as during peace, is dependent to a very great extent upon shore facilities. The operations of our ships at sea were directed from these shore bases, for the use of wireless telegraphy makes it possible to maintain close and intimate connection with all forces at sea, no matter how widely they are scattered.

This great force, sub-divided into several operating units, was located throughout Europe from the White Sea to the Adriatic, and was controlled as a whole from Naval Headquarters in London, which city was, in reality, the centre of all maritime information and the heart of naval operations. With reference to that portion of the American Navy which I had the honor of commanding during the Great War, I consider that an important accomplishment to its credit was the degree and the character of co-operation with which it carried out its joint operations with the British, French and Italian Navies. This was an accomplishment difficult, if not impossible, to appraise in the form of specific statements, nor can it be reduced to statistics.

### THE NECESSITY FOR COMPLETE CO-OPERATION WITH THE ALLIED FLEETS.

It was only natural that the personnel of an independent Naval Service, with its own peculiar methods and, to a great extent, its own traditions, should desire to put into practice, under actual war conditions, the methods of its many years of peace-time training and preparations. It was furthermore only natural that such an independent service should, at first, be inclined to resist amalgamation with another force. However, inasmuch as the war was approaching its third year when we cast our lot with the Allies, it was the part of wisdom, and the dictate of mature deliberation to make such use of our naval forces as would bring the maximum possible force to bear upon

the enemy in a combined Allied campaign against him. It was perfectly evident from the very beginning of our participation that, in order to be effective in overcoming the enemy submarine menace, we must co-operate and co-ordinate our efforts with those of our Allies. This demanded the suppression of personal ambitions, and the pooling of all common resources against the enemy.

The mere statement of such a policy sounds quite simple and easy of accomplishment, but there are many who served in Europe during the war who are only too well aware to the contrary. It would take a great many pages to give adequate expression to the difficulties and sacrifices involved in the execution of this policy. Our forces were widely scattered, our peace-time practices and methods were often ruthlessly abandoned, and situations of the most varied and complex character, for which no precedent whatsoever existed, were encountered and successfully met.

### MANY PRACTICES AND METHODS ABANDONED FOR THE SAKE OF UNITY.

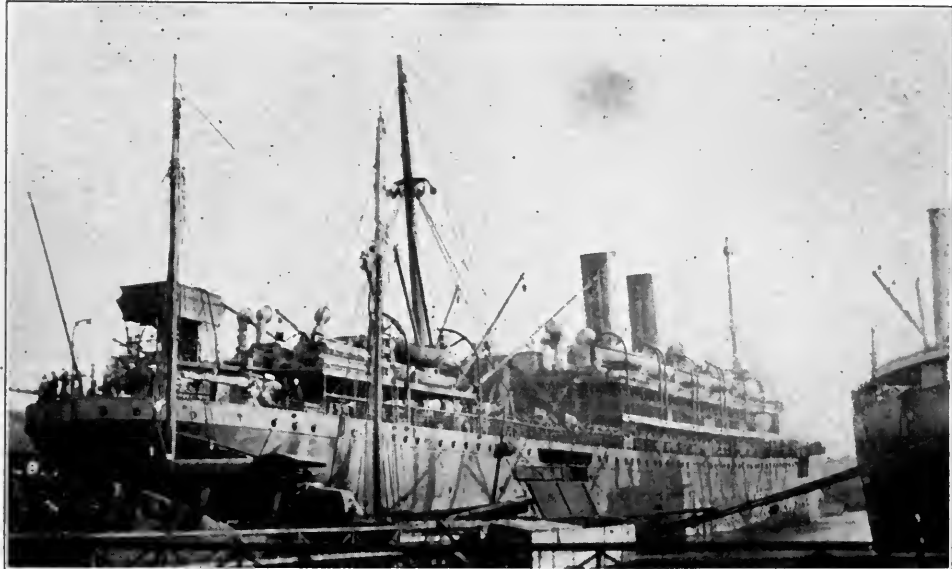
Our officers naturally found certain methods in use in Allied Navies which they considered to be inferior to those of our own Service. Some few felt that the efficiency of our vessels would be lowered unless our own methods were maintained in lieu of adopting those of the Allied Navies with whom we had so intimately associated ourselves. Even granting some of these contentions to have been sound, the facts remained that our naval forces were very much in the minority, and that the greatest war of all times had reached a critical stage of development which made it highly advisable that our co-operation should be complete in all respects; that there should be no changes that would even risk slowing down the joint campaign. As we were so greatly outnumbered in ships, men and general war material, it was perfectly apparent that even a possible sacrifice of our own efficiency could not be compared to the detrimental effect on the efficiency of the combined campaign of attempting joint operations with different methods of signaling and the like.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The difficulties of combined Allied operations in time of war, that is, the difficulties of close and effective co-operation and co-ordination of effort between foreign services operating together, are well known to all students of history. The Great War was no exception in this respect. There is no doubt whatever that the American Navy operating in European waters established a new precedent in the degree and character of the co-opera-

of the convoy system, the introduction of the depth charge, and the invention, or more properly the increased effectiveness, of the hydrophone or listening device, by means of which a submarine running beneath the surface could be detected and located with considerable accuracy.

The convoy system is in principle as old as naval warfare, but it was resorted to during the Great War only as a matter of necessity, because modern



AN AMERICAN TRANSPORT ENTERING A FRENCH HARBOR

The principal French harbors used by the American Expeditionary Force were those of western France, especially Bordeaux, La Pallice, and St. Nazaire, though Brest alone was capable of receiving the largest ships. All of these ports were improved and enlarged by the Engineer Corps, and much labor-saving machinery was installed.

U. S. Official.

tion which it succeeded in putting into actual and efficient practice. Never before in the history of the world have the navies of great nations co-ordinated their efforts in such an effective manner. The principle adopted was "unity of command and of purpose," which principle was later effectively employed by the Allied Armies when they were placed under the command of an Allied Generalissimo.

### THE WAY IN WHICH THE SUBMARINE WAS OVERCOME.

The submarine warfare continued to threaten the integrity of the naval lines of communication for some months after our entry into the war, but this menace was finally overcome by means

warfare had so altered conditions at sea that many naval officers did not consider it possible for merchant seamen to operate large convoys of ships sailing in close formation without exposing them to greater damage through collision, grounding, etc., than would be occasioned by enemy submarines operating against individual ships. Unfortunately, the majority of merchant seamen shared in this opinion and felt themselves incapable, by reason of insufficient specialization in the work required, of manœuvring by signals great numbers of unwieldy and slow moving ships in close formation, particularly at night without lights, in fog, and heavy weather, etc. Necessity,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

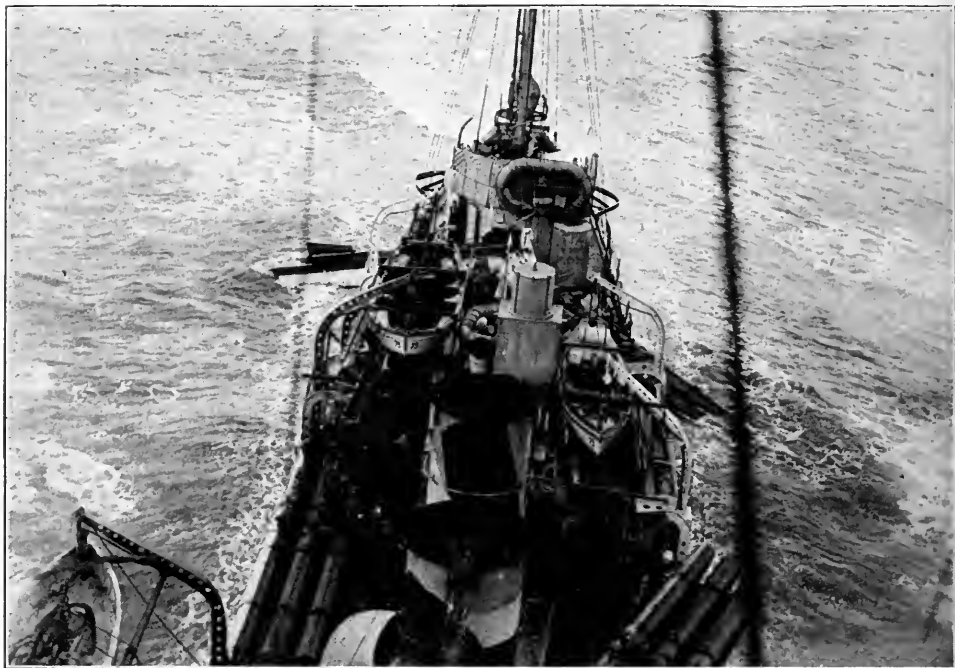
however, demanded a trial, which proved to be so successful that the convoy system was adopted during the summer of 1917, and maintained until the close of the war.

### THE CONVOY SYSTEM AND THE DEPTH CHARGE MOST IMPORTANT.

The convoy system across the Atlantic Ocean was, in reality, but an enlargement of that used by the British

that building rapidly overtook destruction, and we were also able to transport over 2,000,000 troops to Europe in safety, and so defeat the very purpose for which submarine warfare was instituted.

The depth charge, a cylindrical steel container charged with from 300 to 600 pounds of high explosive, was the most effective weapon invented for use



THE U. S. DESTROYER "LITTLE" WITH A CONVOY

This view of the destroyer "Little" taken from above shows the torpedo tubes swung out ready for use. The United States battleships are generally named for states, cruisers for cities, and destroyers for naval men of the past. Some of these names lack euphony. U. S. Official.

in protecting the naval lines of communication from England to the Continent, by means of which about 20,000,000 souls were escorted during the four years of war without a single loss of life from enemy action. Had the United States and the Allies possessed destroyers in sufficient numbers to make it possible, an equally effective convoy system could have been established through the submarine zone. Unfortunately, such was not the case, which accounts for the fact that Atlantic convoys were not entirely immune from attack by submarines. They were, however, eminently successful in so decreasing the losses of shipping

against a submerged submarine. This contrivance was exploded by a hydrostatic piston, which could be adjusted to operate by the pressure of the water at a depth previously determined. They were carried by all anti-submarine craft in considerable numbers, and could be released instantaneously by means of a hydraulic pump operated from the bridge.

### SMALL CRAFT EFFECTIVE AGAINST THE SUBMARINE.

The hydrophones, or listening devices, never actually reached the stage of perfection before the close of the war. They were, however, extremely useful and of material assistance to us in

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

detecting the presence of submarines, and in assembling surface craft for an attack. Undoubtedly, had the war been prolonged, these scientific devices would have been greatly improved and extensively employed in hunting submarines.

As already explained, the Central Powers were not making war against the Allied Navies, but rather, and properly from their point of view, against Allied and neutral merchant tonnage in an attempt to establish an economic blockade and, in this way, bring about a decisive land victory. With the exception of the Battle of the Jutland and a few isolated raids, the German High Seas Fleet was, to all intents and purposes, paralyzed throughout the war. This condition permitted the Allies and ourselves to make free use of every available type of anti-submarine craft that were sufficiently seaworthy and sufficiently armed to oppose the submarines' guns. These small craft were most effective in protecting commerce, and in destroying submarines by means of the guns and depth charges they carried. Had it not been for the difficulty of crossing the Atlantic, the contribution by the United States of anti-submarine craft of the smaller types would have been considerably greater than it was.

### THE ORGANIZATION OF THE NAVAL FORCES OF THE UNITED STATES.

The overcoming of the enemy submarine menace was accomplished by direct and indirect methods, as will be indicated in succeeding paragraphs. American destroyers, converted yachts, submarines and submarine chasers, were organized into anti-submarine squadrons, and, in co-operation with the Navies of our Allies, operated in those areas through which shipping had to pass en route to ports of charge and discharge. The principal anti-submarine bases were located at Queenstown, Ireland, Brest, France, and Gibraltar. In addition to these, submarine chaser bases were established at Plymouth, England, and at Corfu, Greece, from which these small 110-foot gasoline driven vessels operated with success.

The United States naval forces at

Queenstown were placed under the operational command of Admiral Sir Lewis Bayly, Royal Navy, the Commander-in-Chief of the coast of Ireland. I was represented at this base by Captain J. R. Pringle, U. S. Navy, who was charged with the internal administration, supply, discipline and up-keep of all American vessels based on that point. As Chief of Staff of the Queens-



VICE-ADMIRAL HENRY B. WILSON

Admiral Wilson commanded the forces based on Gibraltar before his transfer to Brest. U. S. Official.

town destroyer flotilla, and as a member of Admiral Bayly's staff, Captain Pringle served in a dual capacity and rendered exceptionally meritorious service in a position of great responsibility. Our naval forces at Brest were placed under the command of Rear Admiral William B. Fletcher, U. S. Navy, who was subsequently relieved by Rear Admiral Henry B. Wilson, U. S. Navy, who had commanded the Gibraltar forces until relieved by Rear Admiral A. P. Niblack, in November, 1917.

### LIFE ABOARD ONE OF THESE SMALLER VESSELS.

Prior to the introduction of the convoy system, in the summer of 1917,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

American vessels were employed in patrolling those areas in which enemy submarines were operating. After the introduction of the convoy system, however, they were employed as convoy escorts, and in this way formed a screen around the convoys, which proved to be almost invulnerable to attack by submarines.

Life on board all of these small craft was strenuous to a degree. Operating

craft operated, and as an illustration of the strenuous life demanded of those who operated them. It is gratifying to realize that in no instance was there recorded a case of failure of personnel. All manner of hardships were cheerfully endured, and every sacrifice made for the common cause. Personal ambitions were sacrificed in the work of winning the war, and I desire to take this opportunity of expressing my high-



### PREPARING TO DROP DEPTH CHARGES

These sailors are unloosening depth charges so that they may be dropped overboard at a second's notice. Naturally such destructive instruments were fastened tightly except when the ships were in a zone where submarines might be expected. Even if they were not in the immediate vicinity of a submarine when they exploded, the concussion was so great that it often disarranged the delicate machinery of the undersea craft. U. S. Official

under the strictest war conditions, steaming at high speeds, without lights at night, made navigation a difficult problem, and although there were accidents it was remarkable how few collisions impaired the efficiency of this force. The schedule of operations, as a rule, was from five to seven days at sea with two or three days in port. To realize the extent of this work, destroyers leaving their base at Queenstown to meet a convoy and escort it into port, covered approximately a distance equal to that from New York to Chicago, thence to Philadelphia, and back to New York to refuel, and, after three days of rest, repeated this same trip. I mention this as some indication of the extent to which these anti-submarine

est tribute to those gallant officers and men of the anti-submarine forces.

### HOW THE VESSELS ARRIVING IN EUROPE WERE DISTRIBUTED.

As has been mentioned, the mobilization of the American Navy in European waters was accomplished gradually. No great Armada cleared from our home ports when we declared war against Germany, but, on the contrary, our naval forces were sent abroad in small detachments and at various intervals. There existed at all times a pressing need for more and more ships, especially for destroyers and tugs. The Navy had not been mobilized on a war basis before we entered the conflict, for which reason delays were inevitable. A great many

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

vessels had to be built and crews recruited and trained before they could be sent overseas. As these anti-submarine craft arrived from the United States they were allocated to one of the three principal European naval bases which we had occupied at Queenstown, Brest and Gibraltar, according to the

of the surface of the sea. This meant that there was no danger of their being attacked by enemy surface craft.

### THE DISTRIBUTION OF ESCORT AND CONVOY WORK.

The work done by these vessels was excellent and played a most important part in bringing the War to a success-



GEORGE WASHINGTON, AMERICA AND DE KALB

Steaming in formation. These three were German ships, which were in United States ports when that country entered the war. The first two bear their old names, but the De Kalb was formerly the Prinz Eitel Friedrich.

necessity for reinforcements at those points.

When the Armistice with Germany was signed there were a total of 105 naval vessels suitable for escort or anti-submarine patrol duty attached to those three bases without counting the submarine chasers, which will be mentioned later. These included 2 cruisers, 68 destroyers, 25 armed yachts, 5 gunboats, and 5 Coast Guard cutters. They were used solely as convoy escorts or in hunting enemy submarines, for, with the exception of the destroyers, they were not regular men-of-war. They were well equipped, however, for fighting submarines, and we were perfectly free to employ them on this duty, inasmuch as we maintained command

ful conclusion. During the period from April 6, 1917, to November 9, 1918, they escorted 27 per cent of all United States, Allied and neutral tonnage carrying cargoes to France, England and Italy, and, in addition, escorted 62 per cent, or about 1,250,000 men of the American Expeditionary Force, to Europe without a single casualty from enemy action. The combined American Naval forces operating from Queenstown and Brest escorted 710 convoys, representing a total of over 7,000 ships, and in addition over 600 individual merchantmen operating singly. Those operating from Gibraltar supplied 27 per cent of the escorts for 383 local convoys in the Western Mediterranean, representing a total of over 4,000 ships.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

A conservative estimate based on the best available figures gives the distribution of convoy escort work about as follows: by England, 70 per cent, by United States, 27 per cent, and by France, 3 per cent. These figures are only approximate, but serve to indicate in a general way the degree of support furnished by the American Navy to the convoy system.

### UNITY OF COMMAND THE RULE IN THE NAVAL FORCES.

Destroyer and other escort vessels were assembled and operated according to the general plan of pooling our resources against the common enemy, and in many instances representatives of the United States, Great Britain and France worked side by side on this duty, under the command of the senior naval officer present afloat, regardless of his nationality. The broad general plan had been prepared by the base commander, but the details of its execution were left entirely to the escort commander at sea.

In order to appreciate the gigantic task accomplished by Great Britain and America in the transportation of troops to Europe, it should be understood that up to January 1st, 1918, there were less than 300,000 American troops in Europe, and that this figure was increased to over 2,000,000 by November 11th, 1918. In other words, over 1,700,000 men of the American Expeditionary Force were transported overseas during the first eleven months of 1918. Of these 2,000,000 men 53 per cent were carried in British transports, 45 per cent in American transports and 2 per cent by the French. A few Italian transports were chartered and operated by the British Government, and are therefore classed as British transports. Those Dutch vessels which were requisitioned by the United States are classed as American transports.

During the summer of 1918 there were at times upwards of 150,000 troops on the ocean en route to Europe. The largest troop convoy that was assembled carried 36,000 men in 15 ships. The high water mark in troop transportation was reached in July, 1918, when 318,000 men were landed in Europe

during that month, not including a few British Colonial troops and a few thousand enlisted men of the United States Navy.

### THE CONVOY FURNISHED PROTECTION AGAINST THE SUBMARINE.

Although escorted convoys were not entirely immune from submarine attack, the presence of the escorting vessels made it almost impossible for a submarine to deliver an attack with any chance of success. In short, submarines found it very dangerous to attack a convoy escorted by destroyers armed with depth charges. There was always, however, the possibility of one or more enemy raiders making good their escape from the North Sea to prey upon commerce in the Atlantic. As a protection against this, convoys were escorted across the ocean, until met by destroyer escorts, by vessels of the cruiser class, commonly referred to as "ocean escorts" to distinguish them from the smaller vessels that escorted them through the submarine zone. The American Navy furnished these ocean escorts for 166 convoys from the United States to England and France, of which 84 were troop convoys. All but two of these ocean escorts were based upon United States ports.

An inspection of the charts comparing the sinkings by enemy submarines in April, 1917, with those of April, 1918, is indicative of the fact that the convoy system not only greatly decreased tonnage losses but was successful in forcing the submarines into inshore and restricted waters, so that they might attack those vessels which had been dispersed from large convoys and were proceeding independently to their several ports of discharge. In April, 1917, vessels were being sunk as far as 600 miles west of the English Channel, whereas in the corresponding month of the following year, almost all sinkings were in the close vicinity of land.

### THE CONVOY SYSTEM FORCED THE SUBMARINE CLOSE TO SHORE.

This important change in the conduct of the submarine campaign was primarily due to the fact that it was exceedingly difficult for enemy submarines to locate convoys at sea, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

furthermore very dangerous to attack them. They were thus forced to limit their operations to those restricted waters through which shipping had to pass, as for example, the English Channel or the Irish Sea, to the obvious advantage of our Allies, who patrolled these restricted waters with thousands of small craft capable of carrying depth charges, but not sufficiently seaworthy to operate in the Atlantic.

### SUMMARY OF THE VALUE OF THE CONVOY SYSTEM.

Reviewing the convoy system, the principal advantages derived from its adoption were:

(a) It furnished a great measure of protection to ships at sea by making it difficult for enemy submarines to find shipping. When convoys were sighted successful attacks by submarines were made most difficult. A convoy of 50



GERMAN SUBMARINE SURRENDERING TO U.S. DESTROYER FANNING

There was a further reason for submarines operating close inshore, for practically all shipping at sea was assembled into convoys, whereas vessels proceeding from one port to another along the coast usually sailed independently through only partially patrolled waters. This coastal trade was very heavy and the number of vessels available for escort duty was wholly inadequate. All of the great coal trade, for example, from Cardiff to France, passed along the Cornish coast independently as far as Falmouth, where it was assembled into convoys for the cross channel passage to France.

ships is a very small dot on the surface of the ocean, whereas 50 ships steaming on various courses cover a very considerable area.

(b) It reduced the losses of shipping to about one-tenth that of the losses of independent sailings.

(c) As submarines found difficulty in locating convoys on the high seas they were forced to operate in restricted waters where Allied anti-submarine craft and aircraft were most effective in sinking a large number of them.

(d) It protected shipping against the gunfire of enemy surface raiders and particularly of submarine cruisers carrying large calibre guns, as each convoy

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

was escorted by one or more "ocean escorts" or cruisers.

(e) The protection afforded by ocean escorts gave the mercantile marine a great sense of security and of confidence. Furthermore, as the ocean escorts carried powerful wireless equipments and were thoroughly familiar with the rules for handling secret publications and telegraphic codes, instructions of a very secret nature could be sent from Lon-



A SUBMARINE CHASER

don direct to the convoy escort commander and in this way routes of convoys could readily be changed to avoid submarine activity further along the intended route. Ocean escorts exercised rigid control over the convoys and prevented the display of lights, unnecessary use of wireless, throwing garbage overboard and the many other indiscretions which might have indicated to the enemy their presence. In a similar manner reports could be received from convoys through the medium of the ocean escort.

**THE TINY SUBMARINE CHASERS WERE VERY EFFECTIVE.**

Of all the vessels employed in the anti-submarine patrol, the American

sub-chasers appeal most strongly to one's imagination by reason of their small size and the fact that they were operated almost entirely by volunteer crews. A total of 170 of these boats were based on ports in the Irish Sea, English Channel, and the Adriatic Sea, where they assisted in the offensive and defensive warfare directed against enemy submarines. They were operated in groups, and the personnel were especially trained in submarine hunting by means of especially constructed listening devices. Five special and three auxiliary bases were constructed to support these vessels and to maintain them in an efficient operating condition.

These sub-chasers were 110-foot gasoline driven boats, which were built after the United States entered the war. They displaced 60 tons and carried one 3 inch gun and 12 depth charges, with a crew of 2 officers and 23 men. These small craft crossed the Atlantic by way of Bermuda and the Azores escorted in convoys of 12 to 24, sailing as fast as they were fitted out and commissioned. The length of the trip necessitated fueling the boats at sea, and towing them for part of the trip.

**LISTENING DEVICES INCREASE THE EFFECTIVENESS OF THESE VESSELS.**

Thirty-six of these chasers operated from Corfu, Greece, forming part of the "barrage" across the Straits of Otranto. Others operated from Plymouth, protecting the western end of the English Channel and hunting submarines in that locality. A third detachment operated from Queenstown, Ireland, using Wexford and Holyhead as auxiliary Irish bases, and Berehaven as an auxiliary base for the southwest coast of Ireland. Finally, when Austria signed the Armistice, 18 of them, which were then at the Azores en route from the United States, were ordered to Gibraltar, where they did valuable work against the German submarines which were forced to leave the Mediterranean for lack of operating bases. The operations of these boats were essentially different from that of most other anti-submarine vessels. They carried as part of their equipment American listening devices which enabled them to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

follow and attack submerged submarines with considerable success. At night they drifted noiselessly with their listening devices manned and could hear a submarine at a distance depending upon the speed at which it was going. Many of their most successful attacks were made in this manner, for at night the submarines lost the protection of sight, while remaining equally vulnerable to detection by sound.

By day they patrolled, stopping at intervals to listen for submerged submarines. This form of patrol was not as successful as the night work, though several good encounters took place. In addition to their strictly anti-submarine work, they frequently assisted in the forming of convoys, helped torpedoed vessels to reach port, and destroyed drifting mines.

### THE SMALL CRAFT AT THE BOMBARDMENT OF DURAZZO.

Perhaps the most spectacular performance of the chasers was their participation in the bombardment of Durazzo. In this affair they were the covering force for the Italian and British vessels engaged in the bombardment. Though one division was between the fire of the Austrian forts and the bombarding vessels, to protect the latter from submarine attack, they escaped unscathed and had the distinction of beating off the submarines. The Italian Naval General Staff expressed their appreciation of the chasers' work, and credited them with sinking two enemy submarines. The Commander of the British Adriatic Force in expressing his appreciation credited them definitely with destroying one submarine, and damaging and probably destroying another. He added "They thoroughly enjoyed themselves." Subsequently the chasers participated in the taking of Durazzo and did valuable work along the Dalmatian coast in protecting our interests, and assisting in the maintenance of order in the occupied territory.

### STRICT CONTROL OF MERCHANT SHIPPING FOUND NECESSARY.

From the beginning of the war it became necessary to control shipping. As all vessels were required to proceed

without lights, it was necessary to regulate their movements so as to avoid collisions, not only between east and west bound vessels, but also between these and the vessels crossing their tracks from north and south. Furthermore, it was necessary to know the positions of all shipping at sea so as to divert it as necessary away from enemy submarines and mined waters. To this end wireless war warnings were regularly



EXPLOSION OF A GERMAN MINE

sent out. These warnings were always in cipher to prevent their being read by the enemy.

It was evident in the beginning that a single control of all shipping must be exercised in order to prevent confusion, avoid collisions, prevent interference in war warnings, divert vessels to safe harbors, and so forth. As the British had the largest organization and the greatest interest in shipping, and as the communication service to London was the most complete in Europe, and further as the British Intelligence Service was a very highly developed one, the British Admiralty naturally became the centre for controlling the movements of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

all shipping, each nation being represented in this control through their naval organizations in London.

### HOW THE MACHINERY OF CONTROL WAS EXERCISED.

In order to exercise a rigid control over the sailing of ships, and particularly in order to route all ships and convoys to the best advantage, naval officers were stationed in all the principal ports in the Atlantic and in the Medi-

had grown to large proportions. A great deal of secret printed instructions had been promulgated by the Admiralty on behalf of the Allies and distributed to Allied shipping, and, of course, America took advantage of the system already organized and in operation and entered into this joint control through the headquarters in London of the Commander of the U. S. Naval Forces.



CREW OF A SUBMARINE CHASER MAKING PLAY OF WORK

The submarine chasers were manned chiefly by men and boys of the Naval Reserve which included many college men. This chaser was stationed in the Mediterranean and the crew in somewhat abbreviated costume is shown making a joke of the task of swabbing the deck. These chasers were one of the successes of the war.

British Official.

terranean to advise ships as to routes and to furnish them the latest sailing directions.

When the Germans began the intensive submarine campaign it became necessary to prescribe in greater detail the route that each ship should take in approaching European ports. The necessary information was sent out from London to the various organizations in the principal ports of the world, and communicated by these organizations to all Allied ships before sailing. This unity of control was maintained from the beginning of the war, and when America entered the war the system described was in full operation and

### CONVOY CONTROL ALSO EXERCISED CHIEFLY FROM LONDON.

Thus all shipping controlled by the Allies was handled in the same way, and as vessels sailing from South America, Africa, New York, France, etc., were guided by similar instructions, issued in French and English, the system was operated with the minimum chance of error. After the opening of unrestricted submarine warfare it soon became evident that the method in use of protecting the shipping by patrolling dangerous areas and letting ships proceed independently was not satisfactory, and the losses—particularly during the spring and early summer of

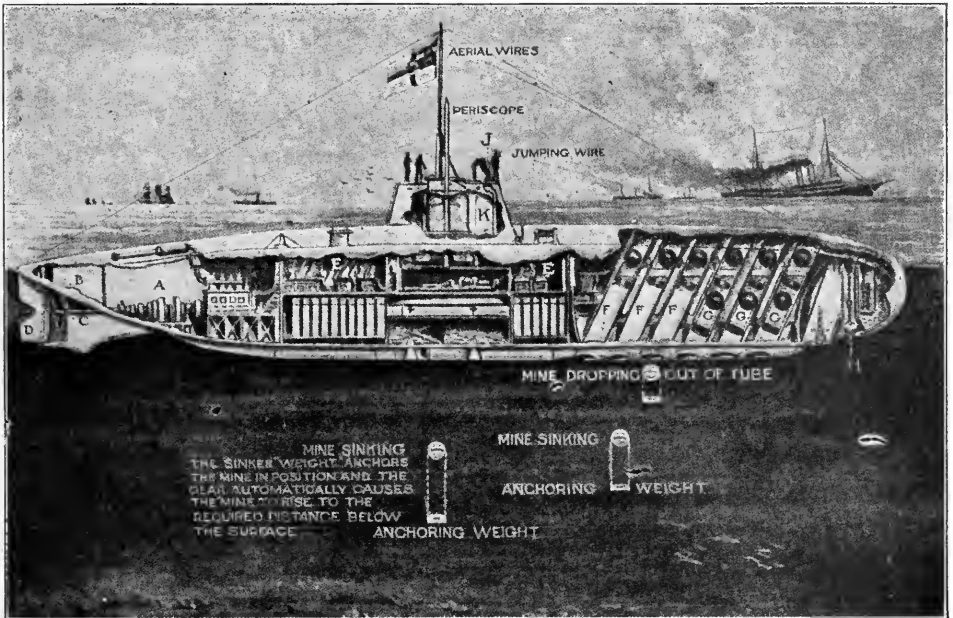
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

1917—became so serious as to necessitate a change in methods.

The convoy system was adopted and put into effect in the summer of 1917. The same reasons for strong central control of all shipping obtained more in the case of convoys than in the case of vessels sailing independently, for as all vessels were sailing without lights and as convoys frequently consisted of upwards of thirty vessels, the serious consequences of a collision caused by

THE PROPORTION OF CONVOYS FURNISHED BY THE UNITED STATES.

The details of the organization of convoys—providing them with signal manuals, instructions as to how to manœuvre while in formation, how to proceed in a fog and heavy weather, etc., and all other details of handling, were worked out and issued from London. The U. S. Navy furnished convoy commanders for all American troop convoys, also for some convoys carry-



A GERMAN MINE-LAYING SUBMARINE AT WORK

one convoy meeting another by night or in a fog were at once evident. In order to eliminate the danger of collisions, as well as to give convoys safe routes, each Atlantic convoy was routed from London and the route cabled in cipher to the port from which the convoy sailed. Furthermore, as the destroyer escorts were necessarily all based in Europe the schedule of convoy sailings was necessarily determined in London, and the sailing dates from various ports were regulated so as to make a co-ordinated system in which the most efficient use was made of available destroyers, and congestion of ports avoided by separating dates of arrivals of convoys.

ing our Army stores. All other convoys were commanded by officers of the British Navy.

By means of secret codes, wireless orders could be sent to any distance and the convoys diverted from their routes as necessary to avoid enemy submarines or other convoys. This control from London applied to all convoys in the Atlantic, and in the Mediterranean, whether bound for France or for the United Kingdom, and to all troop and cargo convoys, including those carrying U. S. Troops, as well as to the schedule for the sailing of all convoys. The advantages of such a system are manifest. All confusion and difficulty were avoided, and the





NAVAL RESERVE DRILLING AT THE PELHAM BAY STATION

most efficient use was made of the various port facilities. The accumulated experience of the Allied mercantile marines was available in London for dissemination to all the Allies, and invaluable aid to shipping was given by the Admiralty Intelligence Division, which saved thousands of tons of Allied shipping by timely warning to the convoy section of the position of the enemy.

The foregoing remarks apply only to the control that was exercised with the object of rendering safer the passage of shipping at sea. As the submarine war progressed it became evident to all the Allies that the success of the Allied campaign was entirely dependent on shipping. To effect greater economy in its use and, particularly, to make the most efficient war use of all available shipping, there was set up the Allied Maritime Transport Council, whose function was to recommend the best allocation of ships, regardless of their nationality. Under this organization, certain British shipping was allocated to France and Italy, and British vessels not only carried American troops to Europe in large numbers, but also supplies from America to France for the U. S. Army.

## WHY THE SUBMARINE COULD NOT DESTROY AMERICAN TRANSPORTS.

The public in general is much interested in the reasons why German submarines failed to interrupt the flow of troops from the United States to Europe. We cannot assume that the Germans were averse to sinking transports, as they torpedoed the *Tuscania*, *Moldavia*, *Persic*, and other troopships in the Mediterranean. At least three

other troop convoys were ineffectually attacked by submarines, and the German press commented gloatingly when they thought they had sunk the *Leviathan*, though they discovered later that it was the *Justicia*. There is no possibility of mistaking transports for cargo vessels, as the two types are quite distinct. Transports in general have two or more smoke-stacks, and their superstructure decks and higher speed makes it easy to distinguish them from cargo vessels. The main reasons why submarines were unable to hinder the flow of troops are as follows—

### a. Speed of Transports.

In general, no vessels were permitted to carry troops that were unable to maintain a speed of at least 12 knots, and many of the transports had speeds of 15 knots up to 22 knots. It must be understood that high speed in itself does not render ships immune from attack. High speed, however, makes it much more difficult for a submarine to get in a favorable position to deliver an attack. Unless a submarine is almost in the course of a fast ship it will have little chance of getting in position for attack, as the submerged speed of submarines is only 7-8 knots. Furthermore, in order to hit a high-speed vessel the torpedo must be fired farther ahead than in the case of a slow vessel, and as the torpedo reveals itself by its wake there is more opportunity for a fast ship to avoid the attack by manœvering than in the case of a slow vessel. A considerable degree of immunity, therefore, was insured by selecting vessels of good speed to serve as transports.

### b. Destroyer Protection.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

In general, transports were assigned a destroyer escort, which was about *three* times as strong as the escort assigned to cargo vessels. In some cases of particularly valuable transports the escort was ten times as strong.

### c. Darkness.

During darkness, the periscope of the submarine is useless, and submarines must come to the surface if they desire to deliver attack. While on the surface submarines become subject to attack by destroyers surrounding the convoy. During the ordinary dark night visibility does not exceed more than from half-a-mile to a mile, and, as the convoy is completely darkened, the probability of a submarine finding a convoy at night is extremely remote, and there is considerable risk to the submarine if he attempts to attack. For the foregoing reasons troop convoys in general, while in the open sea, were brought through the most dangerous submarine areas during darkness.

### d. Routing of Transports.

As only about 15 per cent of the vessels in Atlantic convoys carried troops it was the practice, when possible, to route troop transports in special lanes through which cargo convoys did not pass and these lanes were constantly shifted according to the known positions of the submarines. This greatly increased the safety of troop transports, as it practically forced submarines to concentrate their efforts in the areas through which cargo vessels (comprising 85 per cent of the shipping) passed.

If a submarine took station in one of these troop transport lanes he might have remained for weeks without even sighting a convoy. Even if the submarines had known at all times the positions of these troop lanes and had concentrated their effort in them, they would have found in each convoy a



THE MINE-FIELDS OF THE NORTH SEA

The German mine-fields were laid early in the war. The British laid mines across the Straits of Dover, off the German ports, and off Scotland and the Shetland Isles. The mine-fields in the form of an angle between Norway and Scotland were chiefly laid by American mine-laying ships.

relatively small number of ships, all of high speed, and hence difficult to attack. Furthermore, the destroyer escort was three times as strong as the escort protecting cargo vessels.

### FAILURE TO DESTROY TRANSPORTS CAUSES TROUBLE IN GERMANY.

In the summer of 1918, when the transport of troops reached such large

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

proportions, it became evident to the enemy that this flow of troops, if uninterrupted, would shortly reverse the military situation on land, and consequently there were great clamorings in the German press against their Admiralty for the failure of the submarines to sink the transports. Whether or not such action was justified on sound military grounds, the failure to accomplish this led directly to the fall, in August, 1918, of the Minister of Marine, von Capelle. The new Minister, Admiral von Mann, presumably catering to public opinion, apparently made a determined effort to destroy troop transports en route to France. If this was his intention it failed miserably for the sinkings of merchant tonnage continued to fall off steadily until the end of the war.

The question has often been asked why we did not destroy those enemy naval bases from which submarines operated—"Dig the rats out of their holes" was the popular demand. We did bomb those bases from aircraft but with only indifferent results, for they were heavily protected and strongly fortified. The possibility of such attempts being made was naturally foreseen by the enemy, with the result that precautions were taken to guard against raids which would have been futile on our part. It would have been like butting one's head against a stone wall in the attempt to knock it down. The British Navy did succeed, however, in blocking Ostend and Zeebrugge by a determined and masterful stroke, thus temporarily closing these ports.

### THE PLAN TO BOTTLE UP SUBMARINES IN THE NORTH SEA.

It was, however, possible to bottle the submarines up in the North Sea and in this way prevent them from operating against shipping in the Atlantic and in its approaches. The British Navy, after years of effort, succeeded in blocking the Straits of Dover to such an extent that submarines were unable to pass through them. It then remained to block the Northern exits from the North Sea and the submarine menace would be reduced to almost negligible proportions. It was decided that this

should be done by a joint operation of the U. S. and British Navies, and accordingly we established two large mining bases at Inverness and Invergordon in Scotland from which to conduct operations.

This work involved the designing of an entirely new type of mine and its manufacture in the United States. We agreed to invent the mine and build it, which we did. To lay these mines a squadron of American merchantmen were converted into special mine carrying vessels and were sent to Europe under the command of American Naval officers and manned by Naval crews. The execution of the general plan was accomplished in close co-operation with the British Navy, for during the actual mine-laying operations our ships were protected by British destroyers. This material co-operation was necessary, for at no time during the War did American destroyers operate in the North Sea. They were naturally based on those ports nearer their source of supplies at home, and from which they could operate most effectually in escorting troop and merchant convoys.

### LAYING THE GREAT NORTH SEA MINE BARRAGE.

When the Armistice with Germany was signed this American Mine Force, under the command of Rear Admiral Joseph Strauss, U. S. Navy, consisted of 300 officers and over 6,000 enlisted personnel, who operated the two principal shore establishments at Inverness and Invergordon, and in addition the following vessels comprising the mining squadron. This squadron was composed of the mine planters

BALTIMORE	CANANDAIGUA
SAN FRANCISCO	ROANOKE
QUINNEBAUG	SARANAC
HOUSATONIC	SHAWMUT
CONANICUS	AROOSTOOK
Tugs (mine sweepers)	
PATUXENT	PATAPSCO

Tender

BLACK HAWK

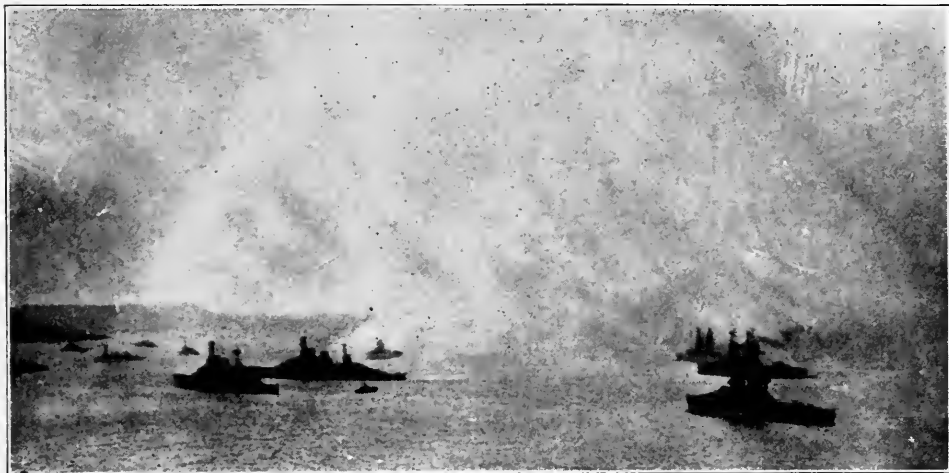
which had arrived in Europe between March 17 and June 29, 1918, and was commanded by Captain R. R. Belknap, U. S. Navy.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The laying of the "Northern Mine Barrage" was undoubtedly the largest single mining operation ever undertaken. The total barrage was approximately 240 miles long and 30 miles wide. It consisted of 15 "fences" of mines laid about 100 yards apart. Active operations were begun on June 8, 1918, and when the Armistice was signed the U.S. Navy had planted 56,571 mines. In one operation a field of 5,520 mines was laid in 3 hours and 51 min-

from a German source, these cases must still be considered as "possibilities" only. There is reason to believe, moreover, that at least ten enemy submarines ended their careers at the barrage before the middle of October, 1918.

Of one thing we are certain and that is that this barrage had a very destructive effect on the morale of enemy submarine crews and that no small amount of panic was created thereby. Although the expense involved was considerable,



**THE SIXTH BATTLE SQUADRON OF THE GRAND FLEET**

Five United States battleships were attached to the British Grand Fleet, and became the Sixth Battle Squadron of the fleet. They were good ships, though not the latest type, as the scarcity of oil in Europe made the sending of ships burning coal preferable. This picture was made among the mists and fogs of the Firth of Forth.

U. S. Official.

utes, or at the rate of 1,440 mines per hour, a feat unparalleled in the history of mining operations. The average number of mines laid per trip or "excursion" was 4,343. The total cost of this barrage, 70 per cent of which was laid by the American Navy, up to the cessation of hostilities, was about \$48,275,000.00.

### **WHAT THE EFFECTS WERE OF THIS GREAT BARRAGE**

Although but few concrete results can be credited to this great mine barrage, it is definitely known that at least 6 enemy submarines were seriously damaged whilst attempting to cross it, and it is quite probable that several submarines were sunk. Owing to the difficulty of establishing these facts as absolute, however, and until more conclusive evidence is obtained, probably

the results achieved more than compensated for the expenditures made, for it was doubtless a powerful factor in assisting the enemy to make up his mind to quit before the quitting got any worse. Had the war continued, additional "fences" would have been added to the barrage, thus increasing its density and rendering passage across it more and more dangerous.

### **NAVAL GUNS UNDER A REAR ADMIRAL IN FRANCE.**

Early in the winter of 1918, the Navy Department offered to supply for use on the western front a number of 14-inch, 50-calibre guns which had been built for the six battle cruisers whose construction was arrested by our entry into the war. This offer was accepted by the army. Accordingly the railroad gun carriages, special locomotives, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

all other necessary equipment was designed and contracted for, and by the early spring five complete mobile land batteries were ready for shipment to Europe. These units were placed under the command of Rear Admiral C. P. Plunkett, U. S. Navy, who, with characteristic energy, completed his preparations for sailing in record time and arrived in France in the summer of 1918, and at once set about assembling his guns for active duty at the front.

Although manned and served entirely by naval personnel this unit was placed under the operational command of General Pershing. The first gun was mounted on August 5, 1918, at Saint Nazaire, France, and on August 13 a request was received from General Pershing to send two of the guns at the earliest possible date to the front for an important mission. Guns No. 1 and No. 2 accordingly left Saint Nazaire for the Western Front on August 17 and 18, but unfortunately their objective, the German long-range gun which fired into Paris, had been moved before they got into position.

These guns were the most powerful artillery units on the Western Front. Their range was 42,500 yards, or about 24 statute miles, and it is particularly noteworthy that the shooting done was remarkably accurate for such long ranges. Each gun was a complete self-sustaining unit, consisting of one locomotive, one railroad gun carriage and a number of cars. The cars carried the ammunition and were equipped with ample accommodations for the operating personnel. In all, these guns fired 646 rounds from seven different points, principally from Soissons, Charny and Thierville, between September 2 and the Armistice.

### THE SIXTH BATTLE SQUADRON OF THE GRAND FLEET.

During the winter of 1917-'18, a division of American battleships consisting of the New York, Florida, Wyoming, Texas, and Arkansas, under the command of Rear Admiral Hugh Rodman, U. S. Navy, was attached to the British Grand Fleet as reinforcements. These vessels were chosen because they were of the coal-burning

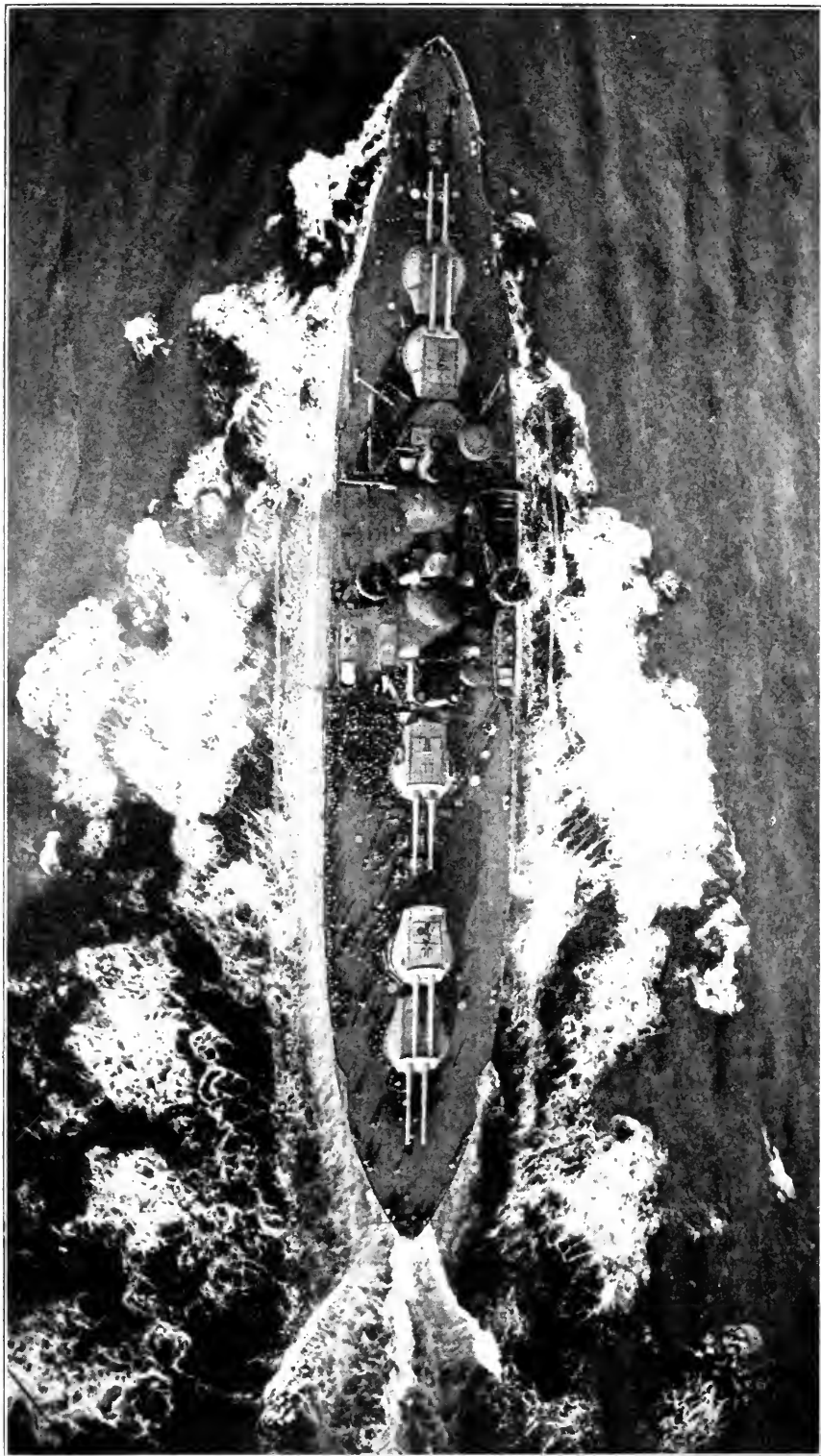
type, in preference to those burning oil—the supply of which was limited. These battleships were incorporated as an integral part of the British Fleet and were officially designated as the "Sixth Battle Squadron." Their co-operation with the British was excellent in all respects, and they would certainly have reflected the greatest credit to the country they represented had the German High Seas Fleet given them a chance to prove their worth. As it was, the Sixth Battle Squadron rendered valuable duty in the North Sea, taking its regular turn in escorting convoys to and from the Scandinavian countries.

### OTHER DREADNOUGHTS STATIONED ON THE IRISH COAST.

In addition to those battleships which were attached to the Grand Fleet three American dreadnoughts were based at Berehaven, Ireland, and there held in readiness to oppose any movement on the part of the enemy battle cruisers or heavily armed ships directed against commerce in the Atlantic. There was always the possibility of the enemy making a sortie of this nature, which had to be guarded against by the employment of these ships. German naval authorities had been severely criticised by their own press for their failure to interrupt the transportation of troops and munitions crossing the Atlantic. It would have been natural for the German Admiralty to attempt to sever the naval lines of communication by sending out one or more fast battle cruisers to prey on commerce—a forlorn hope, to be sure, but at the same time, a possibility. Although the enemy raiders never appeared, this American squadron, consisting of the Utah, Nevada, and the Oklahoma, under the able command of Rear Admiral T. S. Rogers, U. S. Navy, did excellent work in escorting a number of troop convoys as an additional precaution against the possibility of an attack by enemy raiders.

### THE NAVAL AIR SQUADRONS IN ENGLAND, IRELAND, FRANCE AND ITALY.

A great deal has already been written about "The Flying Sailors," and of the splendid work to their credit. With but very few exceptions, all of our naval air



**A PHOTOGRAPH MADE FROM A BALLOON A THOUSAND FEET IN THE AIR**

This picture shows the U.S.S. New York with her decks cleared for action and steaming at full speed in the North Sea, where she formed a part of the Sixth Battle Squadron of the Grand Fleet. The photograph was taken from an observation balloon 1,000 feet directly over her. The New York's ten 14-inch guns can all be plainly seen, some of the twenty-one 5-inch ones are obscured by the smoke, and if enemy aircraft or shipping were in the vicinity more would be concealed by the smoke screen she could put up with soft shells. In addition, she carried four torpedo tubes, and an 11-inch armored belt. Times Photo.

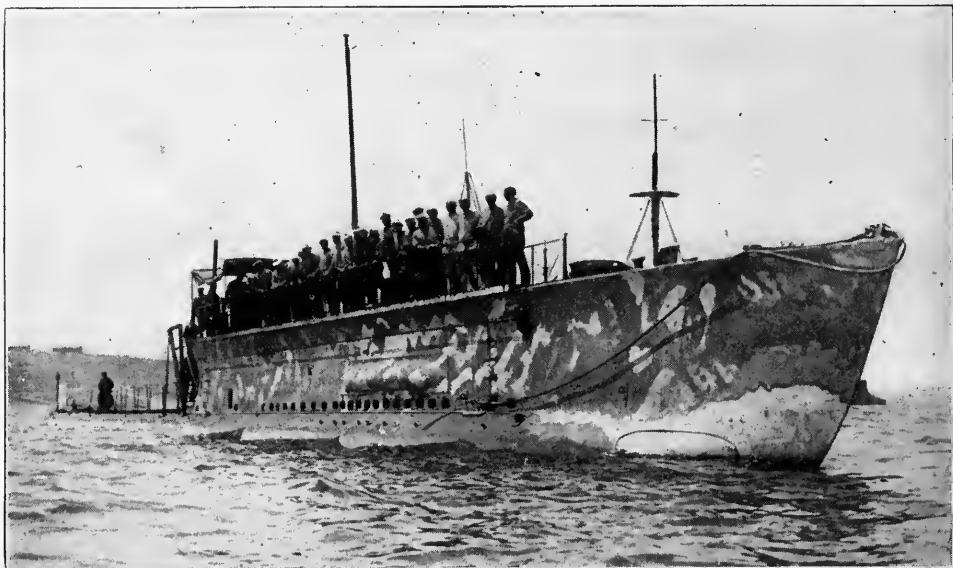
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

stations in Europe had to be built from the ground up. This took considerable time and, in consequence, United States naval aviation in Europe was only just beginning to function on a large scale when the Armistice with Germany was signed.

Large naval aviation establishments were erected in England at Killing-

the anti-submarine campaign being waged against him.

Seaplanes were especially valuable for escort duty by reason of their great radius of action and their ability to see the submarine at a distance. They were, furthermore, extremely useful in preventing submarine mine-laying operations close inshore. It is difficult to



REVELATIONS OF NEW TYPES AFTER THE WAR

Latest type of French cruiser submarine showing unusual lines. Although the end of the war did not reveal so many varieties in undersurface craft as in aerial vessels, yet there were submersible merchantmen like the *Bremen*, and decoys trimmed up as fishing boats or trawlers, while the speed, armament and safety devices of the ordinary attacking type had been improved.

holme and Eastleigh; in Ireland at Queenstown, Lough Foyle, Wexford and at Bantry Bay; in France at Dunkerque, Traguier, l'Aber Vrach, Brest, Ile Tudy, Le Croisie, Fromentine, St. Trojan, Arcachon, Guipavas, Paimbœuf, Gujan, La Trinité, La Pallice and Paulliac, and, in addition, a large bombing group in the Flanders area; in Italy at Porto Corsini and Pescara, and even greater projects were in process of formation when the end came. Much of the work accomplished was done in the North Sea, and consisted in escorting convoys, patrolling mine fields, and reconnaissance flights. The establishment of naval aviation in Europe was one of the determining factors in bringing the war to a successful conclusion, for the enemy appreciated what a powerful force this would be in

estimate the exact value of the seaplane in the Great War, but there can be no doubt that it was a very distinct asset, and its use against the enemy submarine was in a very large measure responsible for the success attained in overcoming that menace.

### THE "MYSTERY SHIPS" AND THE ANTI-SUBMARINE CAMPAIGN.

Without doubt the most interesting and the least-known type of vessel used in the anti-submarine campaign was the "mystery ship." As the name implies, mystery, or more properly, secrecy, was essential to its successful operation, for in reality the mystery ship was nothing more than an ordinary merchant ship carrying concealed guns and torpedoes, which could be brought very quickly into action by dropping false sides or laying aside other ingen-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ious contrivances devised to conceal their existence.

Their method of operating against the enemy was to trick him into the belief that they were harmless merchantmen, and then, at the right moment, to deal the death-blow from a hidden gun or torpedo. This work required the very highest type of physical and moral courage, for which reason crews were selected always from volunteers and with the greatest care. Every possible precaution was taken in the reconstruction of the ship to insure its remaining afloat as long a time as possible after it had been torpedoed. Interior compartments were filled with wood so as to increase the buoyancy and thus prevent sinking or increase the time interval between torpedoing and sinking.

### HOW THE MYSTERY SHIPS INVITED ATTACK.

Disguised as a harmless old merchant vessel, the heavily armed decoy-ship would invite attack by cruising at slow speed back and forth through those waters in which enemy submarines were likely to be encountered. Sometimes she would be attached to a large convoy of ships and, pretending to have engine trouble, would drop astern in the hope that a submarine would torpedo her as a defenseless lame duck.

When a submarine was sighted, its presence would be ignored. The mystery ship would continue on her course as though she didn't know that a submarine was in the vicinity. This was part of the game and gave the enemy an excellent opportunity to get into the best position for launching a torpedo.

After the ship had been hit the procedure was as follows: one-half of the crew, officially known as the "panic party," would be ordered to abandon ship in apparent confusion and panic,

thus simulating the actions of a merchant crew abandoning their ship to its fate. The other half of the crew would remain hidden in the vicinity of the concealed guns or torpedo tubes awaiting the word from their captain to open fire.

The submarine, after circling the ship several times, with only the tip of its periscope exposed, would generally come to the surface to interrogate the survivors, or in reality the "panic party," drifting around in their boats. It was part of a submarine command-



**DEPTH CHARGE DROPPED BY A DESTROYER EXPLODING**

The depth charges were cylinders containing from 300 to 600 pounds of high explosive and were usually called "ash-cans" by the sailors. They could be set to explode at any depth.

er's business to obtain as much information as possible relative to the character of the ship he had torpedoed, its cargo, destination, and all other pertinent facts. This was necessary in order to prove his claim of having sunk her.

### THE SUBMARINE, EXULTING IN ITS VICTORY, IS CAUGHT.

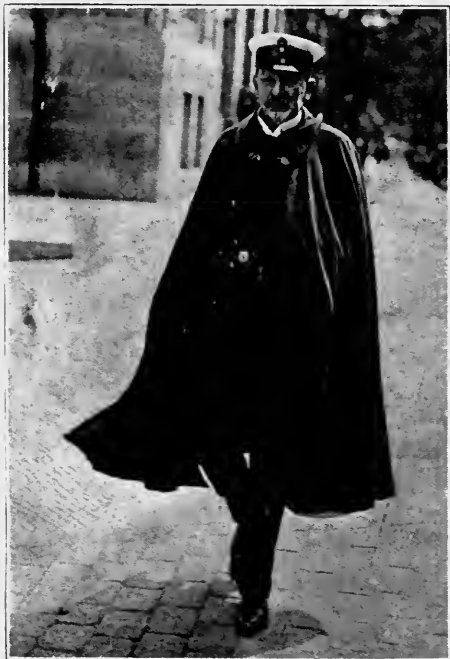
In the meanwhile, the crew remaining on board the mystery ship would watch every movement of the submarine through peep-holes here and there, just as a cat watches a mouse before it springs to the attack. The unsuspecting submarine, full of satisfaction and flushed with the wine of victory, would be lying on the water interrogating the apparently grief-stricken survivors, when suddenly, from his concealed position on the bridge, the captain of the



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ship would give the order to drop the false sides and open fire. The result was generally disastrous to the submarine.

The work of the mystery ships was hazardous to a degree and reflects the greatest credit on the entire English-speaking race, for the percentage of casualties was great. Notwithstanding this, however, there was never any lack of volunteers, for the duty was considered one of honor and glory.



ADMIRAL VON CAPELLE

The American Navy operated one mystery ship, officially known as the U. S. S. Santee, commanded by Captain David C. Hanrahan, U. S. Navy, and manned with a volunteer crew from the destroyers based at Queens-town. After several weeks of preparation, the Santee left Queenstown on the afternoon of December 27, 1917, en route to Bantry Bay for training. At 8:45 that night she was torpedoed by a submarine and completely disabled. The submarine evidently suspected the Santee of being a mystery ship and made no attempt to interrogate the survivors or to investigate the results of her attack. Fortunately, no one was injured, and on the following day the

Santee was towed into port. By this time the enemy was thoroughly aware of the existence of these decoy ships, and as the trick could no longer be successfully executed, no further mystery ships were operated by the American Navy.

### THE SUCCESS OF THE MEASURES AGAINST THE SUBMARINE.

Above we have considered the methods employed in destroying submarines. Let us now consider the results accomplished.

The most effective measures used against the submarines are given below in the order of their value:

- (a) Depth charges.
- (b) Mines.
- (c) Torpedoes fired from the submarines.
- (d) Mystery ships.
- (e) Gun-fire.

A total of 205 German submarines were put out of action during the war. Of these, ninety per cent were destroyed by Great Britain, five per cent by the United States, and five per cent by France and Italy. These figures are an approximation, but they are the most accurate available at this time.

Contrary to the general belief, the number of enemy submarines operating at any one time was not great. The average number for the months of June, July and August, 1918, for example, was about thirty-three, of which twenty-three were operating around the British Isles and in the vicinity of the French coast, eight in the Mediterranean, and one or two off the American coast.

### THE AVERAGE LENGTH OF A SUBMARINE CRUISE.

The average stay at sea of a submarine was about twenty-seven days for the U-boats, twenty days or less for the smaller or UB-boats, and from three to four months for the larger cruiser type of submarines. Almost two-thirds of this time was spent in making the passage to and from the operating areas, except for those boats which operated in the North Sea.

This great proportion of time spent on passage made it impossible for the enemy to maintain more than an aver-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

age of about eight or nine submarines to the westward of the British Isles and France. The popular impression seems to be that those areas were literally swarming with submarines and that they were attacking merchantmen in flotillas.

The following figures are of interest to the student of the Great War, and indicate very clearly the gradual decline of the submarine menace:

### REVIEW OF THE GERMAN SUBMARINE SITUATION AT THE END OF THE WAR.

1. Number of Submarines available at beginning of the War. 28  
Average number of Submarines available during Summer of 1917.....152  
Number of Submarines available at end of the War. ....168  
Number of Submarines built during the War.....340  
Number of Submarines building and fitting out at the end of the War..... 70  
Number of Submarines lost during the War.....205
2. German Submarines on hand or available at the end of the War, according to types:  
U-type..... 73  
UB-type..... 60  
UC-type..... 35  
Total.....168
3. Summary of all German Submarines at the end of the War:  
Losses.....205  
Surrendered at Harwich.....138  
Inspected in Germany..... 23  
Building and fitting out. .... 70  
Miscellaneous..... 8  
Total.....444
4. Summary of all Austrian Submarines at the end of the War:  
Total built..... 35  
Obsolete units..... 10  
Losses..... 7  
Total available..... 18
5. German Submarine Situation in January, 1917, as revealed by the statement of Captain Persius in the "Berliner Tageblatt," published November 18, 1918:

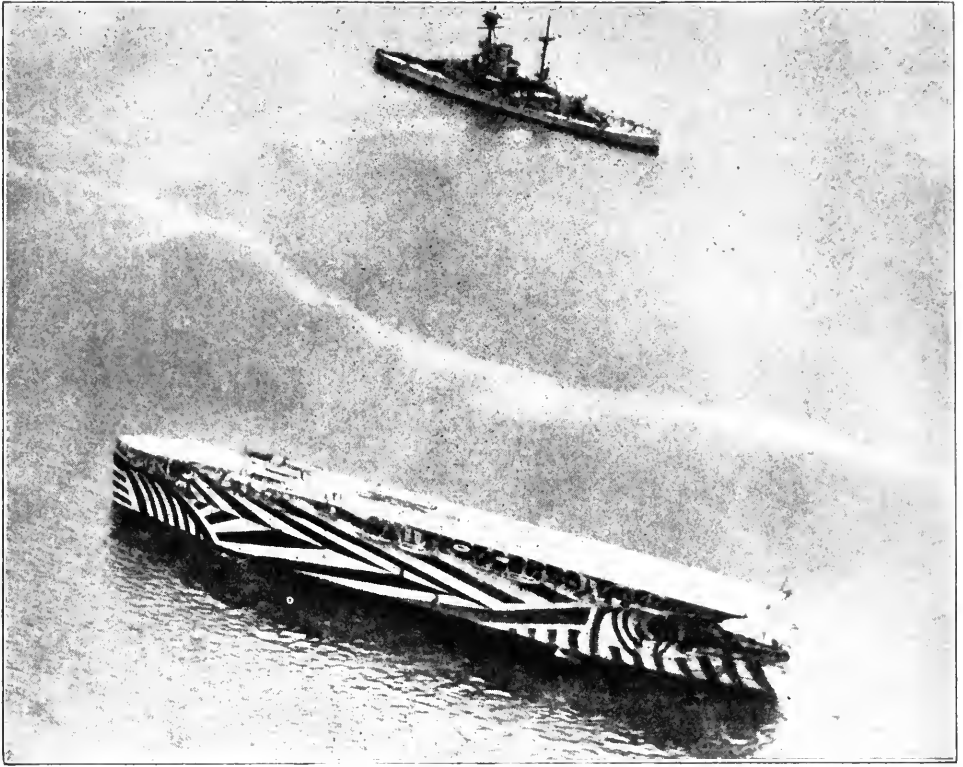
Average number operating during January, 1917.....	16
or 12% operating	
Average number under repair during January, 1917.....	28
or 20% under repair	
Average number resting during January, 1917.....	41
or 30% resting	
Average number training during January, 1917.....	53
or 38% trials and training.	

It is apparent from the foregoing that the American Navy was successful in supporting Land Power and furthering a successful decision on land, which, as was said in the beginning, was the chief mission of the fleets. How well we co-operated with the British Navy is expressed in the following letter which I received on November 16, 1918, from the First Sea Lord of the British Admiralty, Sir Rosslyn Wemyss, R. N., and which reads in part as follows:

"We recognize with feelings of gratitude the debt we owe to the United States Navy for its wholehearted support during the past eighteen months, not only in the anti-submarine campaign and extensive mine-laying program, but also in sending its battle squadron to reinforce the Grand Fleet.

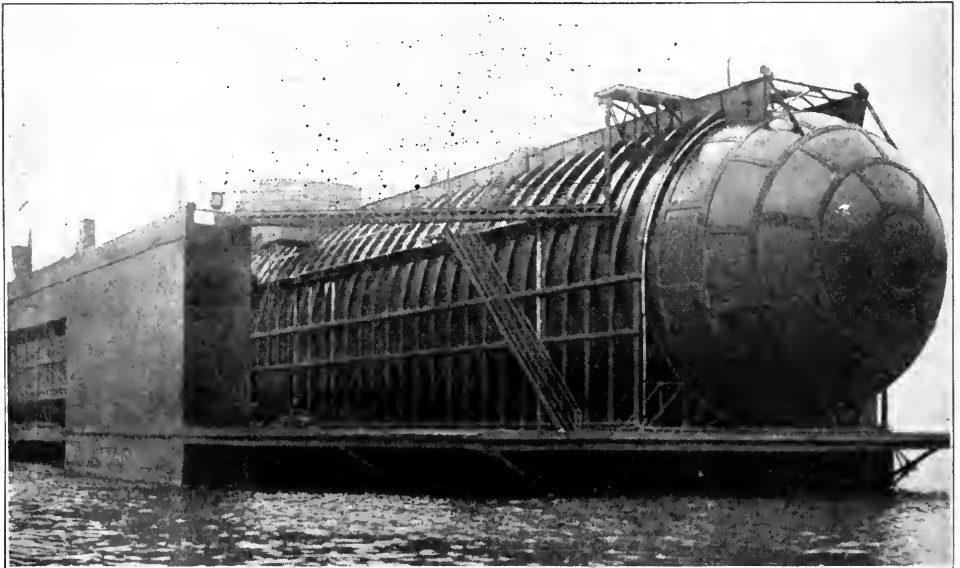
"We do not forget that your destroyers came to our assistance at a moment when our small craft were feeling the severe strain of three years' continuous warfare; we admire the singleness of purpose which has actuated your every effort and appreciate to the full the loyal way in which you have worked with us throughout.

"The close co-operation between our two services has, I venture to think, been one of the outstanding features of the war, and I sincerely trust that this association has been as agreeable to all of us as it has been to us. Future generations in both navies will always remember that their predecessors stood shoulder to shoulder during these momentous times to uphold the cause of Right and Justice."



#### "ZEBRA OF THE OCEAN WILDS"

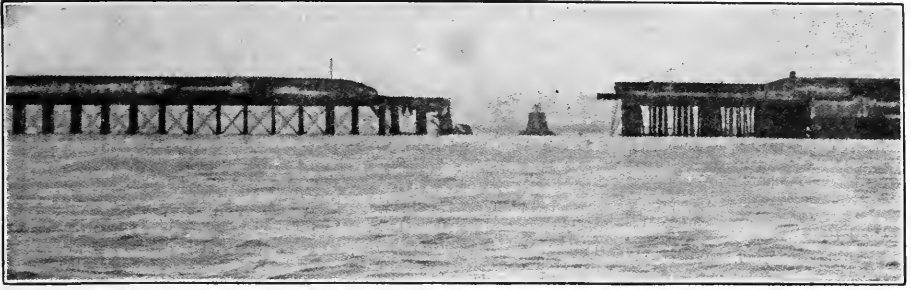
H. M. S. Argus, aeroplane carrier to the British Navy, with her super-deck specially constructed so that the machines may take off from it. She forms a strange contrast to the battle-cruiser beyond, but her dazzle painting makes her otherwise conspicuous bulk less of a mark for the enemy.



#### A GERMAN WAR SECRET REVEALED

An immense submarine tester surrendered by the Germans which was displayed at Harwich, England. It was capable of accommodating three submarines at the same time. This huge dock was used to test the strength of the U-boats by means of air-pressure corresponding to the pressure of water.

Central News Service.



Torpedoed Mole at Zeebrugge

## CHAPTER LXV

# Zeebrugge and Ostend

## A NAVAL EPIC OF SAINT GEORGE'S DAY

**A**FTER Jutland the High Seas Fleet kept closely to its base, and there was no naval engagement in which large ships participated. A British convoy was lost in the North Sea in October, 1917, and another in December. Some German patrol boats and an auxiliary cruiser were sunk and the Germans bombarded Yarmouth for the third time early in 1918, but generally only the ceaseless vigilance demanded from the fleets prevented the months from becoming unbearably monotonous. The brilliant operations against Zeebrugge and Ostend afforded a welcome relief.

These raids were contrary to an approved axiom of war, namely that ships cannot fight against forts without the co-operation of a land force. But in April British land forces were pre-occupied with Ludendorff's Flanders offensive, and it behooved the Senior Service to achieve its objectives unaided. There is a quality of almost impudent audacity in the plans evolved by Vice-Admiral Sir Roger Keyes, and a spirit of glorified "daredeviltry" among the bluejackets, marines and officers who volunteered for "an enterprise of unusual danger."

### **ZEEBRUGGE AND OSTEND FORM ADVANCED BASES.**

As the Belgians retreated in October, 1914, the Germans advanced and occupied Zeebrugge and Ostend. The coast between these two ports forms the base of a triangle, whose other sides are two canals connecting Bruges with

Zeebrugge and Ostend. To Bruges came overland from Germany submarines and light surface craft which, fitted together, passed outwards to the sea (particularly through the Bruges-Zeebrugge Canal which was deeper), and constituted a grave menace to the sea communications of the British Army and the sea-borne trade and food supplies of the United Kingdom. The triangle provided an advance base for enemy raiders, fully 300 miles nearer to objects of attack than North Sea ports like Emden or Bremen.

### **THE AUDACIOUS PLANS TO REMOVE THE MENACE.**

As early as November, 1917, plans for removing the peril were begun at the Admiralty under Sir Roger Keyes, and these were far enough advanced in February and March to allow of the intensive training of the *personnel* to proceed. Volunteers from the Grand Fleet and from other naval units shared the honor with the Dover Patrol.

The canals at Zeebrugge and Ostend are continued seawards by artificial harbors. At Zeebrugge as a precaution against the silt, a mole a mile long and about 90 yards wide curves like a protecting arm before the harbor's mouth. Its shore end is formed by a viaduct through whose piles the tides run freely.

The object of the projected expedition was to block the mouths of the canals where they ran into the harbors by sinking ships in the channels, and effect as much damage as possible upon the harbors, the mole and the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

fortifications. Several factors made the problem a difficult one. Near the Belgian coast the water, shallow and shoal-strewn, can be navigated only by vessels of light draught, which are usually small and slow. Darkness was absolutely essential because of the range of the shore batteries, and with

upon the eve of St. George's Day, April 22. There were monitors to shell the coast batteries, destroyers to "keep the ring" and engage any enemy force that might emerge to interfere, old gun-boats filled with cement to act as block-ships, motor launches to weave the curtain of smoke ahead and lay navigation signals, coastal motor-boats to act as rescuers, obsolete submarines, ex-ferry boats and ubiquitous air-craft. All had their place in the plan. At Zeebrugge where the situation was more complex than at Ostend, three block-ships were to sink themselves across the exits of the canal. To make a diversion in order that the block-ships could get into the harbor far enough, two attacks were planned against the mole. At the sea-end landing parties were to do as much damage as possible to the batteries and to the sea-plane station and sheds upon the mole. Nearer the shore two obsolete submarines were to blow up the viaduct.

At a prearranged place the force divided, steering separate courses for Ostend and Zeebrugge, where already the motor launches were at work close inshore laying their smoke wreaths. The coastal motor-boats in the darkness had mapped out the inshore course and laid aids to navigation. Because of the long range of the

coast batteries at least an hour and three-quarters for getting away before morning twilight was required, and working from this fact backward the expedition went according to programme in a very remarkable way. "For England and St. George!" signaled the Admiral-in-charge, Sir Roger Keyes, from the destroyer Warwick, as the Zeebrugge contingent faded into the oncoming darkness. "And may we give the dragon's tail a damned good twist," the Vindictive responded as she swung shorewards. Ahead of her rolled the smoke-screen, wrapped about her by the small craft.



**SIR DAVID BEATTY, G.C.B.**

While Vice-Admiral in command of the Battle cruiser fleet.

slow boats it was necessary to start at least three hours before dark. Thus the enterprise might be discovered by airplanes, Zeppelins or scouts, at the outset. A light on-shore wind to carry ahead the artificial smoke-screens, low visibility, and high water to allow of the approach of the block-ships to the canal mouth were other indispensable conditions.

### **CONDITIONS FINALLY ALLOW THE EXPEDITION TO START.**

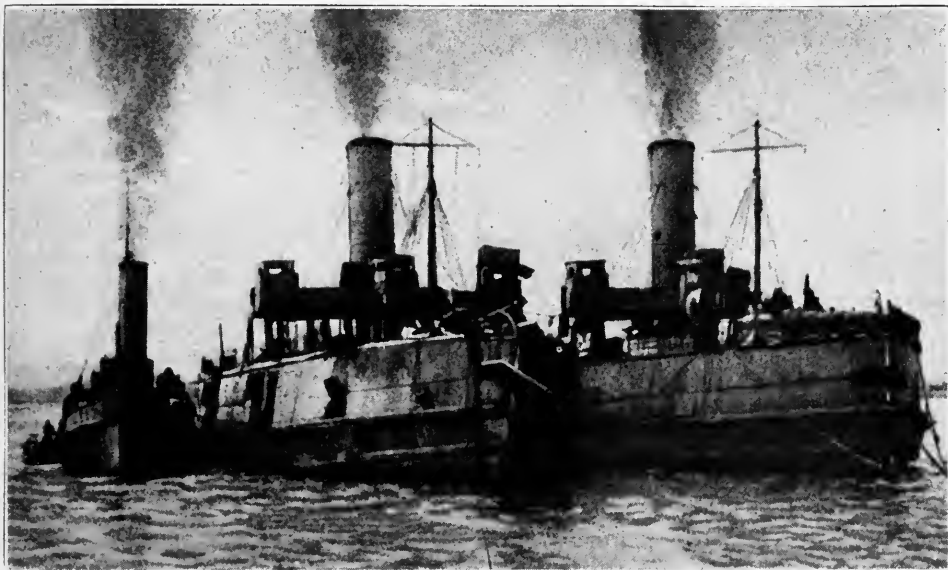
Finally after two attempts—unsuccessful because of the absence of one or other of these favoring elements—the expedition assembled its various units

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE SHIPS WHICH LAID ALONGSIDE THE MOLE.

The Vindictive, an old cruiser commanded by Captain A. F. B. Carpenter, and the Daffodil and the Iris, two ex-Liverpool ferryboats chosen for their great capacity, unsinkableness and light draught, were due to lay alongside the mole at midnight. Before St. George's Day was a minute old the cruiser was grating her fenders in the swell that surged across the outer wall.

gun-fire and shattered by the tossing of the ship—might reach the top of the mole. There had already been fearful destruction among the close-packed ranks awaiting disembarkation, but now the men swarmed across the narrow planks sheer into the guns' mouths carrying bombs and bayonets, mortars and scaling ladders. Then they disappeared into the smoke and the fire and the din, fighting their way along the mole, bombing sheds and



THE ONE-TIME FERRY BOATS, IRIS AND DAFFODIL

The Iris and Daffodil were quite unlike their slender Spring namesakes either in build or in function, for they were squat, buoyant and capacious, fit to navigate shallow waters, and satisfactory transports for considerable numbers. Their slow gait imposed a handicap (as did that of the miscellaneous small craft accompanying the contingent).

When she left the Warwick the wind had been onshore, but before she got in it shifted and began to blow the fog out to sea so that the apprehensive enemy sought to illuminate the dark night with the unearthly glare of starshells and "flaming onions." Seawards the monitors now roared forth their shells, shorewards the flames were leaping.

The Vindictive was fitted on one side with a high false deck and light drawbridges with a hinge in the middle. These were lowered on to the mole but the current was strong, and it needed all the force of the Daffodil to pin the Vindictive bodily alongside so that the bridges—many of them splintered by

men, and even a destroyer surprised at anchor inside the sea-wall. The Iris was provided with grapnels but she could not grip the mole, although three officers lost their lives in heroic endeavor to fasten her in. Captain Carpenter, therefore, ordered her to push in on the far side of the Vindictive and such men as could scrambled across the bigger ship on to the mole.

### THE TWO REMAINING FEATURES OF THE PLAN SUCCEED.

Fourteen minutes after the Vindictive's arrival, there was a tremendous roar and a huge tower of flame and débris and bodies shot up into the black sky. Submarine C3 (Lieutenant Richard D. Sandford) had accom-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

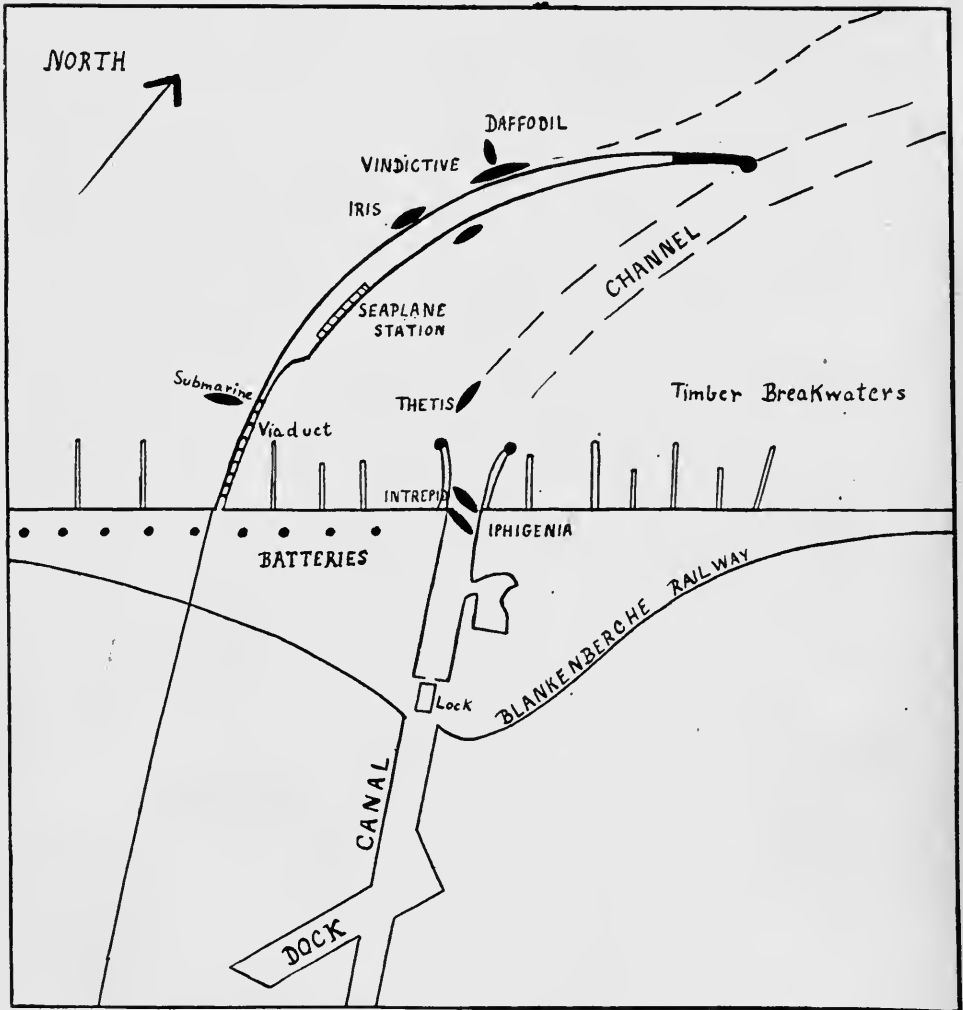


DIAGRAM OF THE HARBOR OF ZEEBRUGGE

plished its mission. Running beneath the viaduct under a hail of machine gun fire from the Germans above, her commander lighted the fuses and slipped into a motor-boat. The propeller was fouled and the men had only a couple of oars and a couple of minutes between them and death. Though all were wounded, yet they made good their escape and were picked up by a motor launch beyond the harbor.

The block-ships in the meanwhile had made the entrance, and led by the Thetis under a tornado of fire, made straight for the opening of the canal, where the latter fouled her propeller

in the defense-nets, and ceased to make way. She fired a green rocket, thus signaling to the Intrepid and Iphigenia to pass her on the starboard and avoid the nets, and then sank slowly, engaging the nearest shore battery until her own smoke made it impossible to continue firing, and by a final effort swinging her head so that she obstructed the dredged channel of the canal. A motor launch embarked the surviving members of her crew and then ran the gauntlet of the harbor mouth out to sea.

The Intrepid reached the mouth of the canal, and went right in with guns



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

firing point-blank at her from both banks. Then her commander, Lieutenant Bonham-Carter, calmly manoeuvred her into position and fired the charges which sank her. Her crew abandoned the ship, rowed down the canal in two cutters and a skiff, and were picked up in the harbor by a British destroyer and a motor launch.

only the Daffodil's little hooter was left. At last all who could come were aboard and the vessels shoved off. While the Vindictive lay against the mole, though her super-structure received fearful punishment, her hull had been safe. Now this was in danger as the big shore guns spat forth viciously and the retreating ships put



THE PARAVANE INVENTED BY LIEUTENANT BURNEY

The paravane was an effective contrivance used against mines and submarines. One kind was a torpedo set to swim at a fixed depth which was dragged behind a ship to destroy submerged submarines. The other variety was attached in pairs like kites to the bow of the ship. If the wire anchoring a mine touched the cable of the paravane it slid down until it reached a saw edge on the paravane, by which it was cut, and the mine rose to the surface.

N. Y. Times.

The Iphigenia in the wake of the Intrepid rammed a dredge with a barge in tow, crashed through and drove the barge ahead of her into the canal. Lieutenant Billyard-Leake then steered his ship into a gap between the Intrepid and the eastern bank, and sank her.

### THE SIGNAL IS SOUNDED TO RECALL THE STORMING PARTY.

Meanwhile the landing parties from the Vindictive had spent a feverish hour upon the slippery blood-strewn deck of the mole. As soon as Captain Carpenter saw the block-ships sunk he gave the signal for recall. The Vindictive's siren had been shot away and

on every ounce of steam and set their smoke-boxes emitting dense clouds of smoke to screen themselves until at last they ran out of range. Thus the Vindictive turned and made for home—"a great black shape, with funnels gapped and leaning out of the true, flying a vast steamer of flame as her stokers worked her up, her the almost wreck—to a final display of seventeen knots. Her forward funnel was a sieve; her decks were a dazzle of sparks; but she brought back intact the horseshoe nailed to it, which Sir Roger Keyes had presented to her commander."

The wind that blew back the smoke-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

screen at Zeebrugge served the expedition against Ostend even worse. The coastal motor boats had lighted the approaches and the ends of the piers with calcium flares and made a smoke cloud which hid this fact from the enemy. Suddenly the wind changed and revealed the navigating flares to the Germans who promptly extinguished them with gunfire. Thereafter in the darkness the two ships, Sirius and Brilliant, could not find the entrance to the harbor, and instead were forced to sink themselves at a point about four hundred yards east of the piers. Their crews were taken off by motor launches.

### THE VINDICTIVE FINALLY SUNK IN THE OSTEND CANAL.

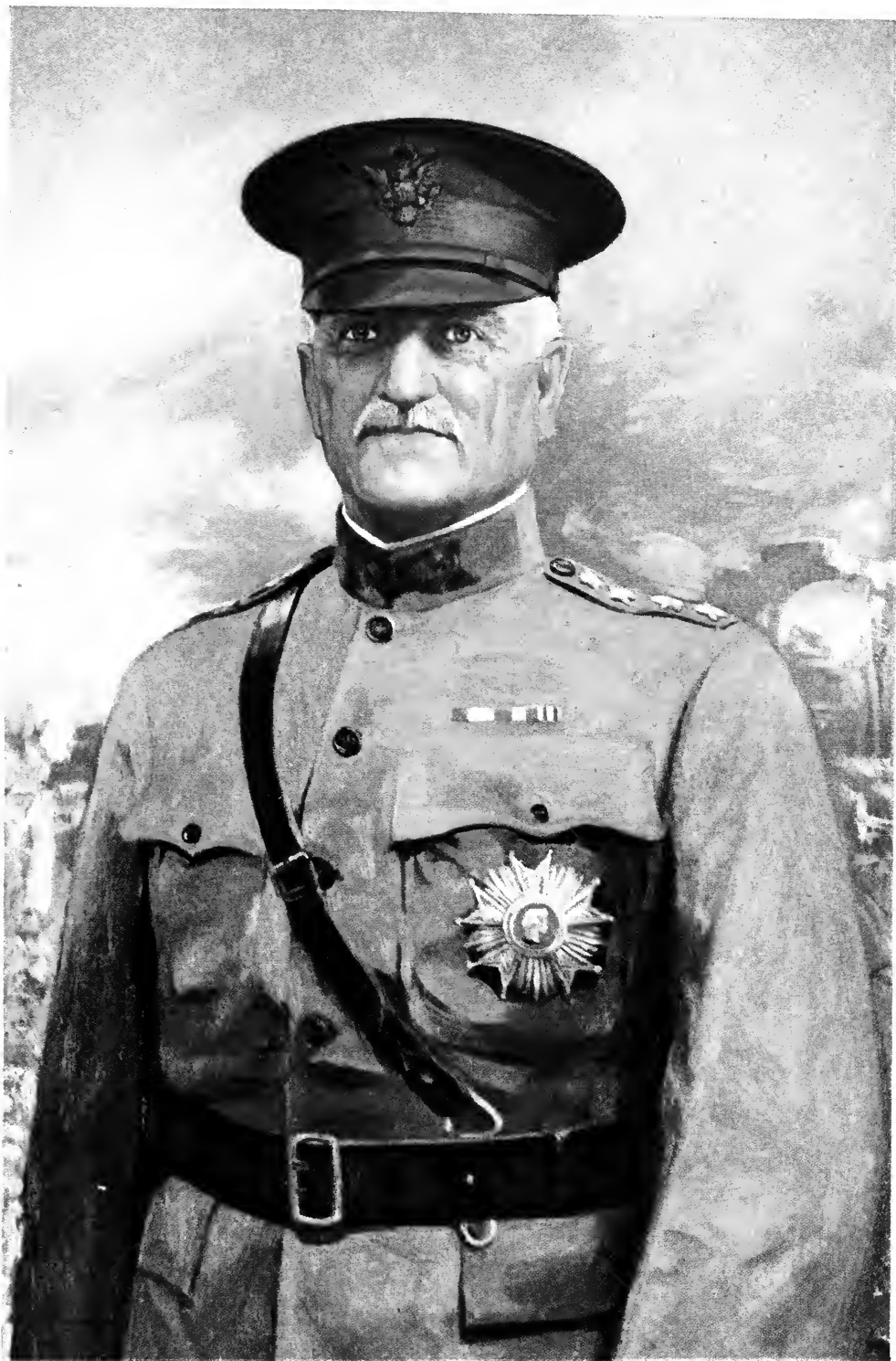
Some three weeks later in the early hours of morning in renewed attempt the Vindictive groped her way through the smoke screen off Ostend harbor and headed for the entrance. This time there was no preliminary bombardment. The Vindictive found the flagship's light-buoy and bore up for where a coastal motor boat waited by a calcium flare. Fifteen minutes before she was due at the harbor mouth the signal for the monitors far out to sea and the siege batteries of the Royal Marine Artillery in Flanders to open

fire was given. There was a while of tremendous uproar and through it all the old Vindictive was working toward the entrance. Then a sea-fog came on and blanketed the lights, and in darkness the Vindictive twice crossed the entrance to the harbor. At her third turn there came a rift in the mist and she saw the entrance clear, steamed in. Guns found her at once. She was hit every few seconds after she entered but she laid her nose to the eastern pier and prepared to swing her 320 feet of length across the channel. Then a shell from the shore batteries struck the conning tower and she began to sink at an angle of about forty degrees to the pier and refused to answer the helm. She was hard and fast so the explosive tore the bottom plates and bulkheads from her and she sank on to the bottom of the channel, her work done.

As was afterward learned the channels were not permanently blocked, but the Germans were subjected to much inconvenience. For a time only the smaller vessels could go out and dredging operations were made difficult. Later a channel was dug around the blockships which served as a means of escape. The exploit itself is one of the most stirring in naval history.

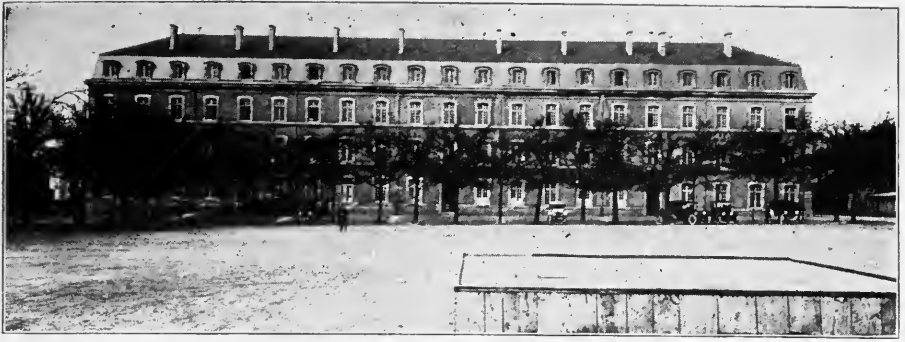


"H. M. S. VINDICTIVE AT DOVER AFTER ZEEBRUGGE"



GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING  
Commander-in-Chief, American Expeditionary Forces





General Headquarters A. E. F. at Chaumont

## CHAPTER LXVI

# The American Army in France

## A PERIOD OF TRAINING FOLLOWED BY FIGHTING UNDER FRENCH DIRECTION

EDITED BY MAJOR GEORGE C. MARSHALL, JR.  
General Staff, U. S. A.

**W**HEN the United States entered the Great War it is probable that no one dreamed of the extent of the effort that would be expended within the next nineteen months. During that period the armies of the United States were increased from something like 200,000 men in the Regular Army and National Guard taken together to the immense number of 3,757,624 men of whom 2,086,000 (including forty-two divisions) were transported to France. In all during the period of the war the combatant forces of the United States, Army, Marines and Navy, amounted to about 4,800,000 men. Behind these were other millions of registrants from whom additional millions of soldiers might be drawn.

### WHY AMERICAN TROOPS WERE SENT TO FRANCE EARLY.

The first plan of the American military authorities had been to train an army in the United States, and afterward to transport it as a unit to Europe. The urgent request of the French Mission that American forces be sent immediately to France to counteract the serious depression created by the failure of General Nivelle's offensive in April 1917, led to a change of plan, and it was determined to conduct a part of the training in France. In

May, 1917, Major General John J. Pershing was summoned to Washington and ordered to select a staff and to proceed to Europe there "to command all the land forces of the United States operating in continental Europe and in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland," and "to establish, after consultation with the French War Office, all necessary bases, lines of communication, etc., and make all the incidental arrangements essential to active participation at the front."

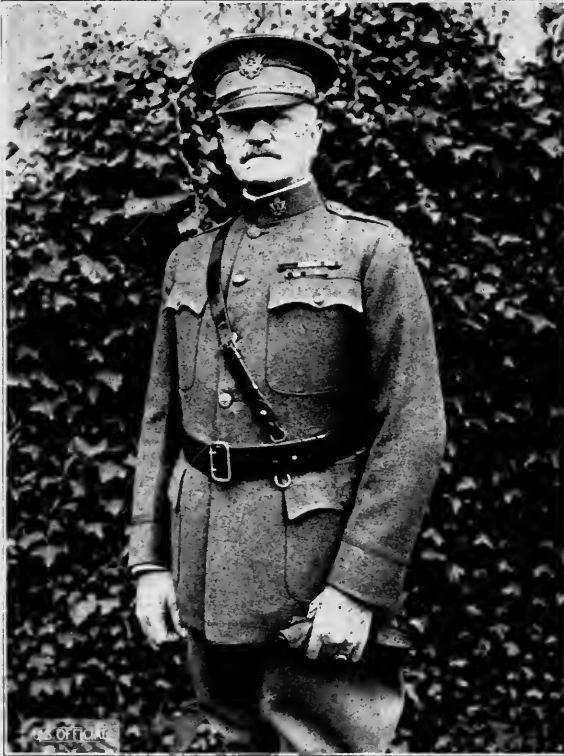
### GENERAL PERSHING GIVEN LARGE AUTHORITY IN EUROPE.

These instructions were simple but at the same time inclusive. In effect they made Major General Pershing (soon raised to the rank of full General) dictator of American military affairs in Europe. It is probable that never before had a Commander-in-Chief been given such absolute freedom from the restraints of civil administration. Certainly no previous commander in any of the wars in which the United States had been engaged had ever had such authority as was exercised by General Pershing during the period of his command in Europe.

On May 28th, 1917, General Pershing with a small staff embarked on the Baltic, and landed in Liverpool

twelve days later. After a few days in London, he proceeded to Paris, arriving on June 13th. A day or two of public receptions, and staff headquarters were established on the Rue de Constantine, and all went to work upon the plans to make American participation in the war effective. Frequent consultations

ity of offensive warfare, the warfare of movement as contrasted with the warfare of position, to which the Allied forces had so long been condemned. He believed in the American soldier, his bravery, his aggressiveness and his intelligence, and foresaw that the American forces when they had arrived in sufficient numbers and had been properly trained, would be able to stand against the foe and eventually to drive him back out of his entrenched positions and into the open.



GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING

with the experts of the French Ministry of War were held, and with General Pétain at the front.

### THE VISION OF A GREAT AMERICAN ARMY IN FRANCE.

General Pershing either carried with him or else soon formed certain definite conceptions of what American participation should be. These he did not change, though sometimes forced by circumstances to delay their execution. One was the vision of a great self-contained American Army, taking its place in the long battle line on an equality with the British and French organizations which had held so long. Another was a firm belief in the desirabil-

ity of offensive warfare, the warfare of movement as contrasted with the warfare of position, to which the Allied forces had so long been condemned. He believed in the American soldier, his bravery, his aggressiveness and his intelligence, and foresaw that the American forces when they had arrived in sufficient numbers and had been properly trained, would be able to stand against the foe and eventually to drive him back out of his entrenched positions and into the open.

Though only 1308 men had arrived in May, 14,912 in June, and 3,900 in July, the American commander saw them as the advance guard of a great host and the staff made plans accordingly. The war presented for the United States many difficult and unusual problems. For France the transport of men and supplies was comparatively simple. The organization of the Ministry of War was complete. The plants for the manufacture of munitions and other supplies already existing had been greatly enlarged. For Great Britain, the distance across the Channel was so small, that with proper guard against submarines, the service was little more than a ferry.

### THE DIFFICULTIES IN THE WAY OF WAGING WAR IN EUROPE.

The soldiers and the supplies of the United States had to be brought across 3,000 miles of sea. Previously they had to be collected from a country quite as wide. The Allied supply of food, homegrown and imported, was barely sufficient for their own needs. Manifestly it was necessary to bring across not only the men themselves, but the greater part of their supplies. The northern ports of France were occupied by Great Britain who had built up an elaborate service of supply between them and the front. The central district of France was occupied by the French depots and services, and the railroads could do no more. There

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

were left then for the United States only the western ports and the section of the country south and east of that occupied by the French and British. This meant an additional railway haul of approximately 500 miles.

Facilities at the western ports of France were inadequate, but capable of development. For various reasons

intermediate between the base and the front immense construction projects were also undertaken. At Gièvres was built the most extensive series of warehouses ever erected, containing four and a half million square feet of storage space and 243 miles of railroad track. Other warehouses were constructed at Tours, Blois, and Orleans, great baker-



AMERICAN SOLDIERS CLEANING UP A FRENCH VILLAGE

Army rules regarding sanitation and the long-established habits and customs of peasants did not always agree. The inhabitants of the little villages in which troops were billeted looked with amazement upon the scrubbing, sweeping and splashing of their strange guests, who did not hesitate to remove their manure piles and clean out their stables.

New York Times

the American choice fell upon St. Nazaire on the Loire, and Bassens, a suburb of Bordeaux, on the Gironde, though use was also made of Nantes, and La Pallice in the same regions as the former. Later Brest was developed, particularly as a landing place for troops, and Rochefort and Marseilles were used to a less extent. Le Havre was the port for men and supplies coming through Great Britain. More than three fifths of the supplies however were landed at St. Nazaire and Bassens, where piers were built and heavy cranes installed.

Large warehouses were constructed in this base section. In the section in-

ies were built at Dijon and Gièvres, and at Tours was located the salvage depot.

### THE IMPORTANT WORK OF THE ENGINEERS IN FRANCE.

There were dozens of other places at which remount stations, motor service and repair parks, and ordnance depots and repair shops were established, as at Tours, Bourges, and Nevers, for example. Hospitals were located near every important station, and also several large hospitals were erected in Auvergne in anticipation of future need. All of these projects were undertaken by the Engineer Corps of the A. E. F. The labor was chiefly per-

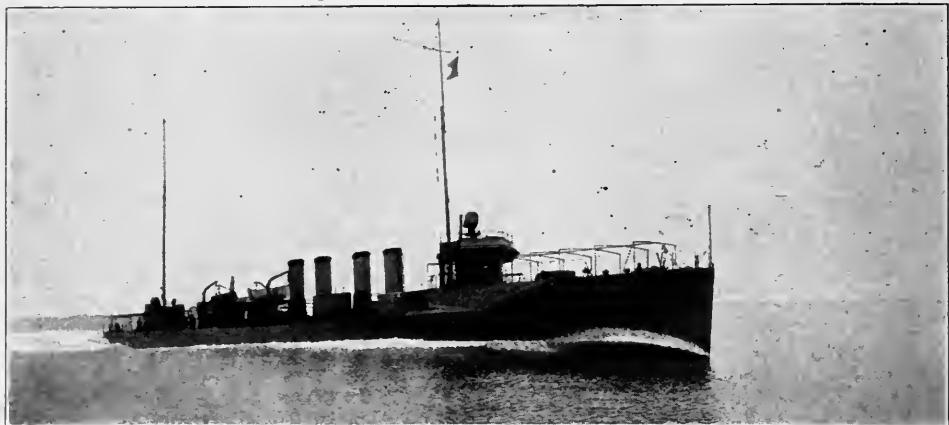


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

formed by American soldiers, and German prisoners, though civilians and Chinese coolies were also used whenever available. In all, 831 separate projects had been undertaken by the Engineers before the signing of the Armistice, and the principal part of the work had been completed.

### HOW SUPPLIES REACHED THE SOLDIER AT THE FRONT.

The standard-gauge roads carried men and supplies into the intermediate zone, and frequently into the advanced zone. From the intermediate warehouses and supply stations, narrow-gauge roads (about two feet be-



THE DESTROYER JACOB JONES, TORPEDOED, DECEMBER 6, 1917

### THE QUESTION OF TRANSPORTATION VITAL TO THE ARMY.

Transportation was vital to the Army, and a commission of experts was sent to France to study the existing French railway system. They found the track generally in fair condition, but a deficiency of rolling stock. Contrary to the general impression little new trunk line track was constructed, though, in some cases, a third track was added to existing facilities. The thousand miles and over of new track was chiefly in and around the ports and warehouses in order to expedite loading and unloading. American locomotives and freight cars were shipped to France. In some cases it was necessary to enlarge tunnels or raise bridges in order to allow these larger units to pass. Mr. W. W. Atterbury, General Manager of the Pennsylvania Railroad, was commissioned Brigadier General and made Director of Transportation, and did magnificent work. Transportation was organized after the manner of a great American railway system, though, of course, without the necessity for showing a profit from operations.

tween rails) were constructed, which carried supplies further, but the chief reliance was upon the mobile motor truck which was used to a greater extent in this war than ever before. The tables of organization for each division called for 650 trucks and the various trains, including ambulances, etc., on the march stretched out for a distance of nearly thirty miles.

It may be said here that the A. E. F. never had enough trucks. They were on the docks in American ports but the cargo space was never available to ship a full supply. Meanwhile the Signal Corps constructed independent telephone and telegraph lines linking all the ports, warehouses, and stations with the General Headquarters which General Pershing established in September, 1917, in the permanent barracks of a French Infantry regiment at Chaumont.

### THE FIRST DIVISION IS ORGANIZED AND BEGINS TRAINING.

The troops which arrived in France in June and July, 1917, were the 16th, 18th, 26th and 28th Infantry regiments of the Regular Army (though containing seventy per cent of recruits),

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and two regiments of Marines, a brigade of artillery, a regiment of engineers, together with Signal Corps and Aviation units. A Battalion of the 16th Infantry paraded in Paris on July 4, and aroused tumultuous enthusiasm. All Paris was interested in the stalwart men with broad hats and the strange uniforms who swung along the boulevards. These troops (except the Marines), composed the First Division under command of Major General W. L. Sibert, and were transferred from

This unit of 28,000 men was about twice the size of the French or German division.

### THE ARMY GOES TO SCHOOL TO LEARN THE NEW WARFARE.

The American soldier, even the veteran, had much to learn of the new character of warfare, and the same is true of the officers. As additional units which had received little training in the United States came over, this need was more and more felt. A system of training schools was worked out



FRENCH SOLDIERS INSTRUCTING U. S. MARINES

the vicinity of St. Nazaire to the Gondrecourt area for training in the complexities of trench warfare. Here they were housed not in tents, but were billeted upon the inhabitants of neighboring villages. A French Chasseur division, the Forty-seventh, was placed beside them to serve as a guide. The American Artillery had gone to Valdahon, but the French division had its guns, and worked with the American infantry.

The old American division was unsuited to the conditions of this war. General Pershing after much thought and consultation with the French and British authorities fixed upon the size and organization of the American division which is described in Chapter LI.

when not more than 40,000 men were on French soil and was still in the process of development and enlargement when the Armistice was signed. Many of the earlier instructors were British and French officers detached for this purpose.

The schools included the General Staff College at Langres for the training of staff officers and over 550 officers were graduated. The School of the Line for the training of line officers graduated four classes; the Infantry Specialist School for officers and non-commissioned officers graduated nearly 5,400; while the Machine Gun School graduated over a thousand men, and the Army Engineer School trained 13,400 men.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

**WHERE SOME OF THE MANY SCHOOLS WERE LOCATED.**

The Signal School, the Sanitary School, the Gas School, the Anti-Aircraft School, the Intelligence School, and several others for special branches were established. In addition there were Army Candidate Schools at Langres and La Valbonne to train men for commissions. There were Artillery Schools for officers at Haussimont (soon transferred to Angers), and at Saumur, and at the latter place enlisted men were also given training to qualify them for commissions. A Tank School and a Tractor Artillery School were also established.

There were also three large Corps Schools. Fifteen aviation centres were created, some of which dealt with balloons while others devoted themselves to instruction and practice in observation, bombardment, artillery direction, aerial machine-gunnery, etc. The largest were at Tours and Issoudun. Later an instruction centre was also established at Foggia, Italy.

The principal Ordnance School was at Is-sur-Tille, but there were four others. The Gas Defense School was at Chaumont, and there was a School for Military Police at Autun, a School for Motor Transport at Decize, a Pigeon School at Saizerais, a Military Music School at Chaumont, a Railway Transportation School at Angers, and a Chaplains' School at Le Mans. While these schools were being established, full use was made of the French schools and of the instruction offered by the British.

At all of these schools men who had supposed that their pupil days were over set themselves seriously to learn. In fact the determination and the seriousness of these students, some mere youths, others mature men of established position in times of peace, were often noted with approval by their French and English instructors.

**OTHER DIVISIONS SOON FOLLOWED THE FIRST TO FRANCE.**

Meanwhile the units composing the First Division were followed by the Twenty-sixth Division (New England National Guard), next came the organ-

izations which formed the Second Division, which contained a brigade of Marines and a brigade of Infantry, then the Forty-second (National Guard from twenty-seven states), and the Forty-first (National Guard from the Pacific Coast). These were measurably complete before January 1, 1918, though lacking in certain equipment. The Second was sent to the Bourmont zone for further training, the Twenty-sixth (Yankee) to Neufchâteau, and the Forty-second (Rainbow) first to Vaucouleurs then to St. Blin and finally to Rolanpont. The Forty-first was assigned to base and replacement duty, and did not participate as an organization in front line operations, though certain of its artillery units aided the Seventy-ninth.

It may be well here to mention the numbering of the divisions which were the real combat units. It was planned that the numbers from one through twenty-five should indicate Regular Army divisions, the next fifty numbers should be assigned to National Guard divisions, while the numbers above seventy-five should be assigned to the National Army of selected men. As a matter of fact it was found necessary in order to fill the ranks to assign drafted men to all the organizations, so that a division nominally composed of Guard units from one or two states often contained, during the last months of the war, men from widely separated sections of the country. The order of the War Department of August 2, 1918, abolishing all distinctions and consolidating all three into the Army of the United States was logical under the circumstances.

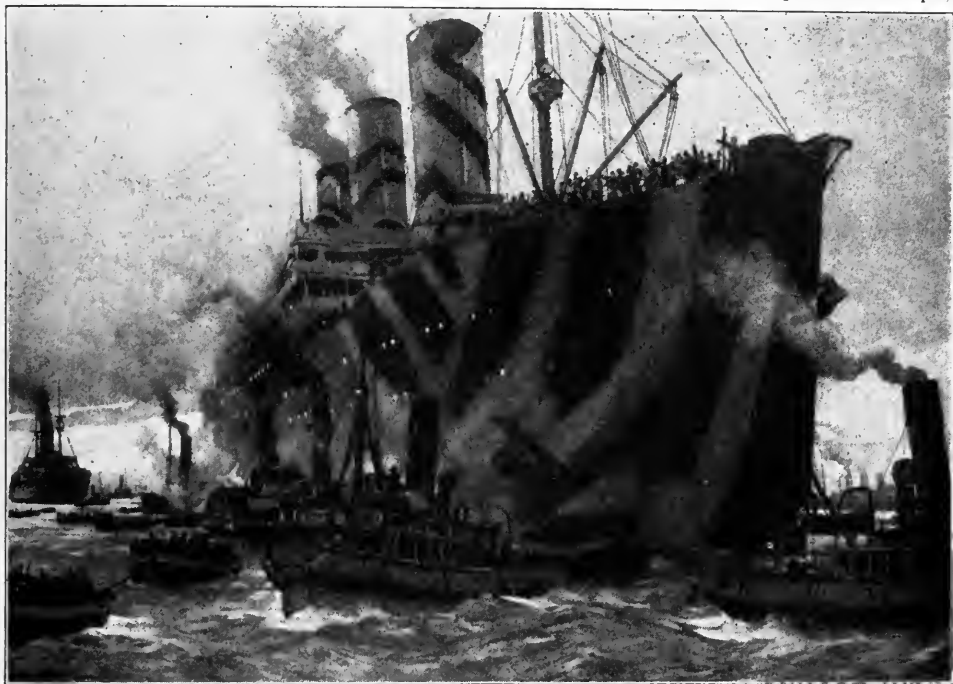
**MEN HURRIED TO FRANCE DURING THE SUMMER OF 1918.**

Meanwhile owing to shortage of transportation, the number of men sent to France did not increase proportionately in the first months of 1918 over the last three months of 1917. Gradually, however, other divisions appeared in France. The Thirty-second and Third were the first to arrive during the new year and April saw the arrival by way of England of the Seventy-seventh, or Metropolitan Division,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

composed chiefly of drafted men from New York City and Long Island, the first of the National Army divisions to reach France, and of the Fifth Division *via* Bordeaux. From this time the movement was so rapid that the arrival of separate divisions can no longer be chronicled here. Troop arrivals in France passed 100,000 in April, 233,000 in May, 230,000 in

infantry and machine-gunners killed, wounded or captured. Only from the United States could any considerable number of men be had and English shipping was hurriedly placed at American disposal, but at first only for the transport of infantry and machine-gunners. The resulting check in the flow of American artillery, engineer, aviation, and other special troops,



THE LEVIATHAN, FORMERLY THE VATERLAND, AS A U. S. TRANSPORT

June, until in July the stupendous total of 313,410 arrived in France. The number fell a little in August, reached 310,765 in September, and was still above 200,000 in October.

For this sudden increase there was good reason. The collapse of Russia had permitted the transfer of more than fifty enemy divisions to the Western Front, and with these reinforcements the great German offensives initiated on March 21st, crushed the Fifth British Army, cut vital rail lines connecting the French and British, and quickly absorbed all the Allied reserves. The German losses were heavy but their opponents' were enormous, particularly in guns, and in

agreed to by General Pershing at the urgent demand of the French and British, was later seriously to embarrass him in forming an American combat army and in the development of the Service of Supply to meet the increased requirements of the two millions of Americans who reached France.

### HOW TWO MILLION MEN CROSSED THE ATLANTIC.

The crisis was exceedingly grave. Allied morale had suffered a serious depression and the enemy was triumphant. The American troops already in France had shown their quality in minor operations. Even if not ready for active fighting they could relieve veteran regiments in quiet sectors in

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the line and in reserve. The Army transports were crowded and the German ships taken over were converted into transports. The Shipping Board purchased all suitable ships it could procure, the British and French governments diverted to troop transportation all the vessels they could spare. Eighty-seven Dutch boats in United States ports were commandeered and considerable Japanese and

plies was New York, with Newport News second. Smaller numbers and amounts were shipped from Baltimore, Philadelphia, Boston, Portland, and from Canadian ports. Over a million men were landed in Great Britain, principally at Liverpool and transported across the Channel. Not a single American vessel was torpedoed on its eastward voyage. The whole accomplishment is unique in history.



AMERICAN TROOPS AND MASCOT IN LORRAINE

Scandinavian shipping was chartered. Meanwhile the construction of the American shipyards was beginning to be important.

Including the cross-Channel fleet in European waters the American army had at its disposal for men, animals and supplies, a tonnage of 3,800,000 tons. In all 5,150,000 tons of freight were transported before the Armistice, the greater part in American vessels. Of the troop transportation, forty-nine per cent were carried in British vessels, forty-five per cent in American, and the remainder by Italian, French, and Russian vessels. The principal embarkation port both for men and sup-

### THE FIRST AND THE TWENTY-SIXTH GO INTO THE TRENCHES

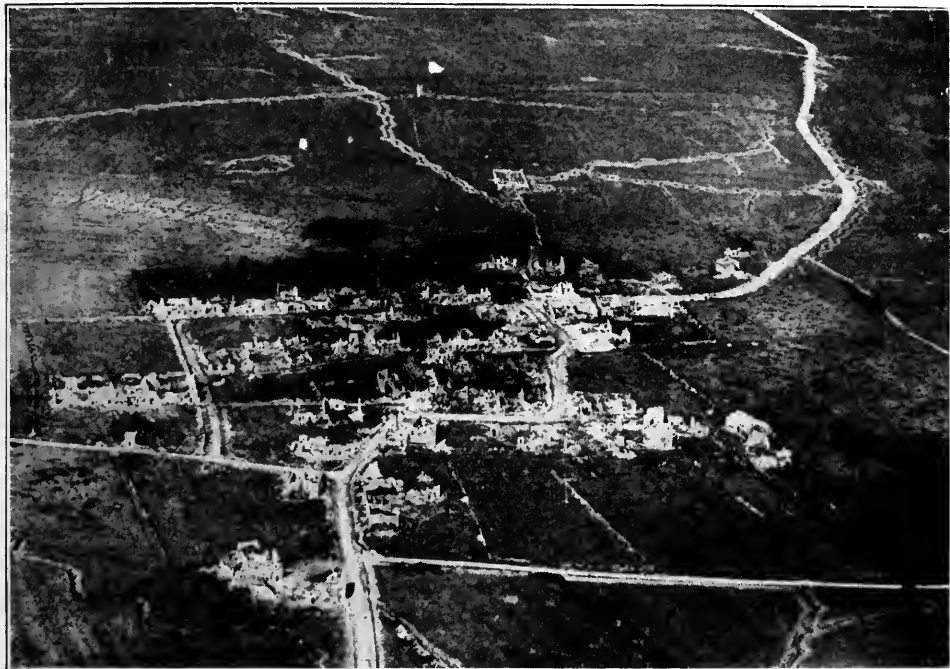
Now let us turn to the soldiers undergoing training in France. The First Division was naturally the first to reach the trenches. After some weeks of training in the Gondrecourt area it was moved to Sommervillers, east of Nancy. The battalions then went into the line between French units and worked under the direction and advice of French officers. On the morning of October 23, Battery C of the Sixth Artillery, fired the first shot. Soon a German trench raid occurred, and the Americans lost three men as already mentioned on page 751. When all the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

battalions had had their turn in this quiet sector of the Lorraine trenches they were withdrawn, November 21, for further training in open warfare, after which the division went into line north of Toul on the front of the Thirty-second French Army Corps, leaving one Infantry Brigade in reserve near Gondrecourt.

The Twenty-sixth, the first National Guard division in the line, passed into

in the sector north of Toul, as the latter division was ordered to the great battle in Picardy. On April 20, after a heavy bombardment a German attack was delivered upon the trenches around Seicheprey. The 102nd Regiment of the Twenty-sixth was forced to fall back, with considerable loss, though resisting tenaciously. Fighting continued through the next day when the trenches were recovered. This so-



SEICHEPREY SHOWING THE SURROUNDING TRENCHES

The little village of Seicheprey on the southern side of the St. Mihiel salient, saw some bitter fighting as the opposing trenches ran all around the village. Here a part of the Twenty-sixth Division was attacked April 20, 1918, and driven back, but the town was soon recovered. During the St. Mihiel operation, the town was destroyed.

N. Y. Times

the organization of the Eleventh French Corps in February, 1918, north of the Aisne, on the Chemin des Dames. This sector had been calm for several months following the desperate fighting of 1917, but the newcomers soon enlivened the every-day operations, by a series of patrols and trench raids. A considerable German raid was repulsed and the New Englanders began to feel that they were ready for anything. The Twenty-sixth was withdrawn from the Chemin des Dames March 18, for its open warfare training, but it was suddenly ordered to relieve the First

called battle of Seicheprey was the most important operation in which American troops had been engaged. The initial German success was much exploited both to hearten the Germans and to discourage the French.

### THE FORTY-SECOND AND THE SECOND HAVE THEIR TURN.

The Forty-second (Rainbow) Division went under fire for the first time framed by the Seventh French Corps near Lunéville, and had much the same experiences as the other two divisions. A company of the 168th Regiment was attacked near Badonviller, on the



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

night of March 4, but did not lose a single prisoner, and inflicted a loss of fifty men. On March 19, the First and Forty-second were inspected by Secretary Baker, then in France, and the next day he visited the Second.

The Second Division, after finishing its preliminary training in the Bourmont area, was sent into the line for trench warfare instruction in March,

More were in training in France, about 300,000 in all, and more were arriving. It seemed that the dream of an autonomous American Army was to be realized. Just then came the great German offensive, threatening the Allied existence, which postponed this hope for months. The American military authorities from the first had favored a unified High Command, but the Brit-



### FRENCH RECOGNITION OF AMERICAN BRAVERY

General Gaucher of the French Army is here shown decorating Major (later Colonel) William J. Donovan, and Private James Quigley of the 165th regiment (the old 69th regiment, New York National Guard) at Croismare, France, on March 18, 1918. This regiment was a part of the famous Forty-Second, or Rainbow Division, composed of units from many states.

U. S. Official

1918, and headquarters were established at Sommedieue, near those of the Tenth French Army Corps under which it was to work. Here it broke up the quiet of the zone by frequent raids into No Man's Land, and repulsed a small German raid near Maizey. The French officers had difficulty in moderating the ardor of the troops.

### THE GERMAN DRIVE HINDERS THE FORMATION OF AN AMERICAN ARMY.

General Pershing now (March 21) had four divisions which had been under fire, one of which, the First, being ready to participate in battle.

ish and the Italians had held back. Now in face of imminent disaster all hesitation ended and General Foch was placed in supreme direction of the British, French and American armies.

Before the final decision had been made General Pershing hastened to General Foch and placed all the American troops at his disposal. The British and French commanders would have preferred that these forces be used as reinforcements and replacements for their armies already organized. General Pershing, while ready and willing to give every assistance necessary to save the situation, insisted



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

that no organization smaller than a brigade or a regiment be framed within the larger foreign organization and that no action be taken which would later prevent the organization of a distinctively American army. As a result, the First Division moved from the St. Mihiel front to Picardy and was attached to the Fifth French Army, then in reserve. This division was now

broken over the Chemin des Dames in a great surprise attack and were on their way toward the Marne and Paris.

**WHAT THE BATTLE OF CANTIGNY MEANT TO THE ALLIES.**

The battle of Cantigny, compared with the Somme or Verdun, was insignificant, but the results were hardly less important. It demonstrated the fighting qualities of the American sol-



**STARTING OUT TO RAID THE ENEMY TRENCHES**

American units were generally brigaded for a time with French units or incorporated in a larger French organization while undergoing training in trench warfare. Here are a few men from the 168th Infantry, (formerly the 3d Iowa) Forty-second Division, in company with French instructors undertaking a daylight trench raid near Badonviller on March 17, 1918. U. S. Official

commanded by Major General R. L. Bullard, later to command an army himself. After a week of rest and training it was ready for action and marched north to relieve two French divisions of General Debeney's First French Army on the battle front near Montdidier. The artillery was very active and on May 28, the 28th Infantry of the First Division, assisted by French tanks, captured the village of Cantigny, and held it against strong German counter-attacks. The news of this first American offensive was a welcome stimulus to British and French morale. Only the day before the Germans had

dier—that he was brave, aggressive and tenacious. Both General Pétain and Premier Clemenceau appeared to congratulate the division. It meant that the four divisions of which so much has already been said could furnish 100,000 men for front line work, and General Pershing insisted that those whose training had not yet been completed would soon prove themselves equally efficient. Already behind the French front were the Thirty-second, the Third and the Fifth. Behind the British front were ten divisions, lately arrived, the Thirty-fifth, the Eighty-second, the Thirty-third,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the Twenty-seventh, the Fourth, the Twenty-eighth, the Eightieth, the Thirtieth, the Seventy-seventh, and the Seventy-eighth. Of these the Twenty-seventh and the Thirtieth remained with the British Army to the Armistice, and their record is told in Chapter LXXIV.

### FIGHTING UNDER FRENCH COMMAND FOR TWO MONTHS.

For nearly two months the American units fought chiefly under French

Paris road, to fill a gap in the line of the Sixth French Army. Here it blocked the advance of the enemy on Paris and bent back his line near Bouresches.

Next Belleau Wood was bombarded and on June 10th, a portion of it was taken by the assault of the Fourth Brigade (Marines). The central portion was captured the next day and held against violent counter-assaults. Later, on June 25th, the remainder of



### HONORING THE DEAD OF THE SECOND DIVISION

The first important operation of the Second Division was the capture of Belleau Wood by the Marine Brigade in June 1918. The brigade was cited in general orders of the Sixth French Army and the name of the wood changed to the Wood of the Marine Brigade. A French memorial society is decorating the graves of the fallen.

U. S. Official

direction. The Second Division, commanded by Major General O. L. Bundy, was transferred from the Sommedieue sector near Verdun, to a position in reserve northwest of Paris. On the night of May 30th the Division was under orders to march northward the following morning to relieve the First Division at Cantigny, when the plans were suddenly changed and on the following day the division was rushed by motor trucks and marching to a position on the north bank of the Marne across the Château-Thierry-

the wood was taken and the Commander of the Sixth Army issued a General Order changing the name of Belleau Wood to the 'Wood of the Marine Brigade.' The Third Brigade (Infantry) carried the village of Vaux and the wood of La Roche, an operation equally important, on July 1. Both brigades were cited. The Division had engaged five German divisions in whole or in part in one of the most dramatic incidents of the American participation in the war. On July 10, after more than a month of continuous



#### A VIEW OF VAUX FROM AN AIRPLANE

There are several towns named Vaux in France. This is the Vaux, near Château-Thierry, which was snatched from the Germans by the Third Brigade, Second Division, on July 1, 1918. For this and the capture of the Wood of La Roche, it was cited in General Orders of the Sixth French Army, as the Marine Brigade, the other infantry brigade of the Division, had been for the capture of Belleau Wood.

U. S. Official



#### VIEW OF FAMOUS TOWN OF CHÂTEAU-THIERRY

Château-Thierry on a bend of the Marne is a town of which few persons in the United States had ever heard before 1918. As it stood at the point of the German salient the fighting which took place on both sides of the salient for many miles is often vaguely called the battle of Château-Thierry though as a matter of fact the fighting in the immediate vicinity of the town was not so hard as at other points.

U. S. Official

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

fighting, it was relieved by the Twenty-sixth Division.

### THE THIRD DIVISION TAKES ITS STAND ON THE MARNE.

Meanwhile the Third Division under Major General Joseph T. Dickman had been about to relieve the Twenty-sixth in the Southern Woevre sector, when it received orders to join the Sixth French Army and was assigned to rein-

Foiled in the attempt to cross the Marne and drive on Paris, the desperate Germans attempted, July 15th, to widen the Marne salient, by cutting the French lines between Epernay and Châlons, on both sides of Rheims, hoping to destroy General Gouraud's army in the Champagne. The story is told in Chapter LXII. In this action the Forty-second near Suippes, and



CAMOUFLAGED HEADQUARTERS OF TWENTY-SIXTH DIVISION

The Twenty-sixth, or Yankee Division, composed of National Guard units from the New England states was one of the first divisions to reach France and was engaged at several points, including the Second Marne, St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne, east of the river. Here are the camouflaged headquarters while in a comparatively quiet sector. U. S. Official

force the Thirty-eighth French Corps, between Château-Thierry and Dormans. On the morning of June 1st, the motorized machine-gun battalion aided in repulsing the attack on Château-Thierry. For more than a month until the Germans gave up hope of crossing the Marne, the machine-gunners of the Third Division, with the other elements of the Division which came up piecemeal and took their places among French troops wherever needed, were holding the river. Later the division was concentrated on the river at Mezey, and for nearly two months was continuously engaged.

the Third at Mezey, took a brilliant part. Several units of the Twenty-eighth were also engaged, mingled with French divisions. All received high praise from the French officers. The 38th Infantry (Third Division) east of Mezey, was attacked in front and on both flanks, but successfully repulsed Germans belonging to six different regiments. Of this regiment General Pershing said: "On this occasion a single regiment of the Third Division wrote one of the most brilliant pages in our military annals \*\*\*\*\*. Our men, firing in three directions, met the German attacks with counter attacks at

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



was launched at four forty-five A.M., July 18, and these three divisions at a single bound broke through the enemy's infantry positions and overran his artillery, precipitating a general German withdrawal from the Marne. The First and Second lost heavily but succeeded brilliantly, capturing nearly 7000 prisoners and 134 field guns. This operation marked the turn in the final tide of German invasion. This was north of the arrow on the map.

critical points and succeeded in throwing two German divisions into complete confusion, capturing 600 prisoners." July 15 was a black day for the Germans. Their losses were heavy and their final assault had failed. Three days later, on July 18, the offensive passed to General Foch by whom it was never afterward relinquished. The arrival of American reinforcements had saved the cause of the Allies.

**NINE DIVISIONS ENGAGED IN THE SUMMER OFFENSIVE WHICH FOLLOWED.**

In the following summer offensive two American Army Corps and nine American divisions were engaged, the First and Third Corps and the First, Second, Third, Fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-second, and Forty-second, and the Seventy-seventh came up into the line August 12th, and helped push the Germans to the Aisne.

Foch's plan was to crush in the side of the Marne salient at Soissons as told on page 1037, but this is the story of American participation. The First and Second Divisions, hurriedly relieved from the line at Cantigny and Belleau Wood, were assigned to General Mangin's Tenth Army, and with the Moroccan Division, made up the Twentieth French Corps. The assault



THE BATTLE LINE JULY 15, 1918

The arrows show in general where U. S. soldiers had been engaged before the beginning of the great offensive movement.

**ALL THE DIVISIONS WIN THE PRAISE OF FRENCH OFFICERS.**

As part of Degoutte's Sixth Army to the south, units of the Fourth Division were mingled with the French, while the First American Corps operated against the point of the salient with a French division and the Twenty-sixth. The attack of this Franco-American force was timed with the assault of the Tenth French Army nearer Soissons and made increasingly rapid progress as the enemy's decision to withdraw became evident. On July 22, the relief of elements of the Fourth Division commenced and on July 29 it was assigned to the First Corps as a reserve. The Twenty-sixth division advanced about ten miles, before its relief by the Forty-second on July 25.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

On the south side of the salient along the Marne the advance was taken up, the Third Division crossing the river on July 20 and pursuing the retreating enemy northward, forcing him back to Ronchères Wood where the Thirty-second Division entered the battle. A brigade of the Twenty-eighth relieved a French division on this portion of the front July 29, and

often within a stone's throw of each other, and the bodies of German and American dead in the same machine-gun nests were a further testimony of the mutual stubbornness of the conflicts."

**THE GERMAN LINE FINALLY BEGINS TO STIFFEN.**

The Ourcq was forced, however, July 28, and August 3 the Forty-



**A BABY CANNON AND ITS CREW**

The French 37 mm. gun had a bore of about an inch and a half, and fired a projectile weighing about one pound. It was of considerable use in breaking up machine gun nests as it was quite accurate and the force of it was considerable. This is the crew belonging to this gun, which is stationed in the Champagne region. U. S. Official

engaged in the fight for three days. The Germans were retreating from the salient but fighting strong rear-guard actions. As they approached the Ourcq River they determined to make a strong stand. Here the Forty-second Division saw some bitter fighting: "On the yellow wheat fields that gradually slope eastward from Meurcy Farm, on the heights of Hill No. 184, which dominated Fère-en-Tardenois, remained innumerable evidences of the stubbornness of the fighting. The bodies of our men often lay in rows, not twenty yards from the German fox-holes, the opposing lines were

second was relieved by the Fourth which marched to the Vesle almost without resistance and crossed on August 6. Meanwhile the Thirty-second to the right, had advanced against strong opposition to the Vesle, where it was relieved by the Twenty-eighth on the same day. The direction of the Fourth and Thirty-second Divisions was taken over by the Third American Corps on August 3. The Fourth was relieved by the Seventy-seventh, the first of the National Army divisions to enter battle, on August 12. For a few days a brigade of the Third Division held a part of the





**TWENTIETH CENTURY CLIFF DWELLINGS NEAR ST. MIHIEL**

At Flirey, on the southern side of the St. Mihiel salient, where for nearly four years the lines had remained unchanged, the American 89th Division was occupying these quarters in September, 1918, when the French and American forces began to wipe out the salient. The picture shows a section of the 3rd Line known as Gas Hollow.



**RESTING IN PUP TENTS IN THE ST. MIHIEL REGION**

Company B of the 101st Infantry, 26th Division, are here shown using pup tents for shelter. They are somewhere between Mouilly and St. Remy on the western side of the St. Mihiel salient. The time is September, 1918, and the ground on which they camp had been recaptured by the Americans after four years of German occupation.

Pictures U. S. Official



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

river line. Both of these divisions attempted to establish bridgeheads on the northern bank against fierce German counter-attacks. Some progress was made especially as Franco-British attacks near the Oise had disturbed the Germans. By September 6 the Seventy-seventh had reached the Aisne and held this position until September 17. The Twenty-eighth was relieved by French units on September 7.

The Thirty-second, after a short rest, was transferred to the Tenth French Army, and on August 27 attacked Juvigny, which was captured after desperate fighting August 29-31. After receiving a citation from General Mangin, the division was withdrawn.

### GENERAL PERSHING RECALLS HIS DIVISIONS AND FORMS THE FIRST ARMY.

During this period a few American units had been engaged on the British front. Two regiments of the Thirty-third took part in an attack on Hamel, July 4, and were again engaged on August 9. The Twenty-seventh and the Thirtieth took part in operations on the British front in parts or as a whole from July onward to the Armistice as mentioned elsewhere.

General Pershing though dispersing his forces by sending his divisions or brigades to assist the Allies wherever necessary, never gave up for a moment his purpose to form an American combat army. Now that the enemy's advance had been thrown back and his armies driven northward, Pershing announced the organization of the First American Army under his personal command on July 24. Nominally the Army assumed control of a part of the Vesle front on August 10, but in fact plans for concentration in the St. Mihiel sector were already under

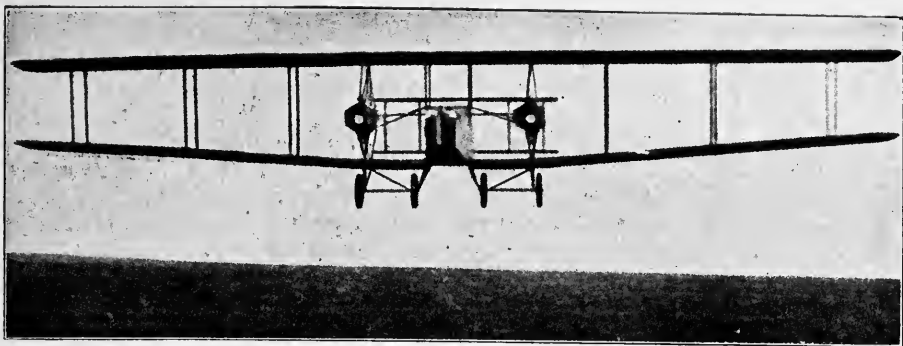
way, and the movements of concentration commenced immediately.

Up to September 1, seven American Army Corps had been organized wholly or in part. Of these the Second was on the British front, and the Seventh in the Vosges. The Sixth had just been organized and was not yet ready for action. The First, Third, Fourth and Fifth were organized.

### PREPARATIONS FOR THE ST. MIHIEL OPERATIONS UNDERTAKEN IN EARNEST

For the St. Mihiel Operation, General Pershing had available fifteen divisions of which seven had had experience in battle or in active sectors, five more which had been in quiet sectors, two which had completed training in the British zone, and one more whose training was completed. There were also in France at that time, two divisions on the British front, three on the French active front, four more in the Vosges, five divisions in process of training, six replacement divisions and a colored division, the Ninety-third, which had been split up and its infantry regiments distributed among French divisions.

Several of the divisions however, were not yet supplied with their organic artillery brigades. The Allied Council during the Spring crisis had insisted that the greatest possible number of infantry and machine-gunners be sent over, even if other arms had to wait, promising to supply artillery and horses. It was not possible entirely to fulfill this promise and the American forces lacked many things. The higher staffs were as yet inexperienced, but nevertheless, General Pershing planned to attack positions which the Germans had held against all assaults during four years, confident in his belief that the American soldier would rise to the emergency and welcome the battle.



A Handley-Page Bombing Plane in Flight

## CHAPTER LXVII

# The Collapse of the Balkan Front

## THE BULGARIAN LINE IS BROKEN AND UNCONDITIONAL SURRENDER FOLLOWS

**T**HE deposition of King Constantine and the entrance of Greece into the war on the side of the Entente have been told in Chapter XLIII. Greek soldiers soon appeared on the Saloniki front in increasing numbers, and during 1918 the Greeks in arms numbered 300,000. This gave the Allies the superiority, and the withdrawal of some of the German troops to the Western Front weakened the Bulgar power still further. Both British and French units were likewise withdrawn for the Western Front but not to the destruction of Allied superiority.

### THE OCCUPATION OF THESSALY BLOCKS THE GREEK ROYALISTS.

While the measures leading to the deposition of the King were being taken Thessaly was occupied, both because the harvest was needed by the Saloniki forces and also in order to prevent it from falling into Royalist hands. There was little resistance to the French troops who furnished the greater part of the force of occupation, as it was thought better not to use the Greek Nationalists. Considerable quantities of grain were gathered, and the danger of a Royalist demonstration in the flank was definitely ended.

After the abortive offensive of May, 1917, little had happened on the Macedonian Front save the shifting of troops and changes in command. In

December, 1917, General Guillaumat superseded General Sarrail, and in turn was succeeded by General Franchet d'Esperey, in June, 1918. The Bulgars had prepared strong defensive positions on the slopes of the mountains, and though favorably placed to take the offensive—for they held the inner lines and were well possessed of roads and railways—they had contented themselves with checking any movement of the Allied Army that might snatch from them the fruits of their victories of 1915-16. And because the Allies had been so long inactive the Bulgars believed that the engagement would end in a kind of stalemate which would leave them with their gains. Such an attitude is not productive of keen spirit and there were indications in the summer of 1918 that the Bulgar, ill-fed and tired, was weary of fighting a war into which he had been dragged by a prince whom he little respected and whom he regarded as the tool of Austria and Germany.

### KING FERDINAND THE EVIL GENIUS OF BULGARIA.

It had been an evil hour when Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg-Kohary was selected to fill the throne of Bulgaria. His first achievement had been to procure within a few years of his accession the murder of the strong man Stambulov, to whom he chiefly owed the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

throne. He was incapable of inspiring affection or respect but with devilish ingenuity set to work deliberately and systematically to debauch and corrupt the small governing class in order to secure a blackmailer's hold upon it.

All that was best in Bulgaria was being dragged reluctantly down the

units were withdrawn from the Macedonian front, leaving the fighting to be done by their useful ally. Furthermore, by the Peace of Bucharest the Dobrudja had been placed under a condominium of her Allies, and Bulgaria saw no indication that things were going her way. Turkey's attitude



ROUTE-MARCHING AMONG THE HILLS

A Highland battalion on the march during manoeuvres at Saloniki. In the long interval between their occupation of Saloniki and the opening of hostilities in August, 1916, the troops were kept in hard training for the arduous work before them. Such a road as that shown in the photograph had first to be made or restored before it was practicable for military movements.

inclined plane and unfortunately there was no unity of purpose, no strong leadership among the Allies to which they could rally. Ferdinand's treachery to the Balkan League had precipitated the Second Balkan War, and its failure had enabled him to frame a specious appeal to Bulgarian nationalism, still smarting under defeat. He had saturated the Bulgarian army with the spirit of Prussian militarism, and it was only too ready to believe with him that in following the German War Lord it was treading the path to easy victory and assured revenge. But disillusionment had come, as the German

over Thrace was threatening and passed unrebuked by Germany.

### THE CENTRAL POWERS REALIZE THE WEAKNESS OF KING FERDINAND.

In August King Ferdinand had some conversation with the Kaiser in Germany, and after it the kings of Saxony and Bavaria visited Sofia with the object of influencing the Bulgarian monarch. Their visit taught them that the real power was no longer in the king's hands and that unless something were done to give Bulgaria material support and recreate a fighting spirit among the army Ferdinand would be powerless to avert the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

threatened defection. Nevertheless the members of the Bulgarian government visited the front and used every effort to encourage the army, but in vain. The number of deserters largely increased. Later information showed that certain units were in a state bordering on mutiny and refused to obey orders.

### THE ALLIED COMMAND PLANS THE CAMPAIGNS IN SYRIA AND MACEDONIA.

As to the general situation in Europe, the Allied High Command, while it was raining blows on Ludendorff in the west, saw that the destruction of Turkey and Bulgaria in the east might undermine the staying powers of the Central Alliance, and accordingly the



MULE TRANSPORT ON THE GREEK FRONT

A convoy of foodstuffs belonging to the Alpine Chasseurs Corps. In the mountains of Greece as in the Vosges the contingents recruited in the Alps of the Dauphiné and Savoy were especially valuable for their endurance of climatic extremes, and the sure-footedness of men and beasts, their skill in the warfare waged on mountain-height and in steep ravine.

Germany and Austria were unable to spare troops at the time. The only alternative was for Turkey to send reinforcements to the Saloniki front. Talaat agreed at a price. A German loan for £T45,000,000 was to be made to Turkey, the Turks were to be allowed to occupy Baku, and the Maritza frontier question was settled in Turkey's favor. In return she was to send troops from Asia Minor and Europe to assist Bulgaria in repelling the expected attack. Talaat's bargaining was not accepted by his colleagues in Constantinople, however, and when the blow fell no Turkish troops were in line or even on the way.

double campaigns in Syria and Macedonia were planned and entrusted to Allenby and Franchet d'Esperey respectively.

D'Esperey had been given very full information as to the strength of the Bulgar position by his predecessor Guillaumat, and his own study of the situation suggested the key to an offensive. He saw that if Uskub could be seized a wedge would be driven between the Bulgarian forces lying east and west of the Vardar. It was not possible to advance up the narrow lobby of the Vardar, so the hills on the right and left must be turned. On the right the great barrier of the Balkans ran

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

generally east and west, but on the left where the direction was north and south there seemed more chance. In the autumn of 1916 the Serbians had forced the frontier line into Serbia and by capturing the dominating height of Kaymakchalan had taken Monastir. It had been difficult to debouch from this position because of the semi-circular bend of the Tchernia on the east en-

have expected the Allied offensive to come from Monastir and Lake Doiran rather than in this region, and Bulgarian reserves were reported to be in the Vardar Valley. To prevent their withdrawal the British and Greeks who held the sector east of the Vardar were ordered on September 1 to make an attack, and the 27th Division captured a portion of the enemy's line west



TURKISH FIELD ARTILLERY READY FOR ACTION

closing the Selechka Mountains. The region between the Vardar and Tchernia was difficult and arduous and the heights commanding the passage of the Tchernia were solidly held by the Bulgars. D'Esperey planned, nevertheless, to attack these positions, cross the Tchernia from the east, secure the heights across the river and thereby open up the road to Prilep. Beyond Prilep lay the Babuna Pass and when that was taken the way to Uskub was clear.

### THE BULGARS EXPECT ATTACK IN ANOTHER QUARTER.

So strongly were the Bulgars established on the crests of some and on the southern slopes of others of the Dobropolye Mountains that they seemed to

of the Vardar. A week later the Hellenic Corps in the Struma Valley advanced their posts.

It will be remembered that in the redistribution of the Allied forces which occurred during the summer of 1918, all the line east of the Vardar was held by British, and the Greek 1st Corps and two other divisions. West of the Vardar and between it and Monastir was a force of French and two Greek divisions, then a centre consisting of Serbians, Greeks, French and Jugoslavs, and west again leaning on Monastir General Henrys' French Army. Beyond Lakes Prespa and Ochrida were Italian forces in Albania against the Austrian divisions. The defense



#### SERBIAN VOLUNTEERS FROM THE UNITED STATES

These men were mobilized chiefly from Serbian communities in Indiana and were officered by Frenchm<sup>en</sup>. They carried with them to the Serbian front three American flags consecrated in the Serbian Orthodox Church in Indianapolis before their departure. The photograph shows them at a French port on their way to join the Army of the East. N. Y. Times



#### ON THEIR WAY TO CAMP

Italian troops who have safely eluded the submarines and landed in Saloniki shown en route for camp. The first force arrived in August, 1916, and further contingents followed. In the fighting the Italians occupied the western end of the front opposing Austrian forces in Albania, where the country was particularly difficult.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of the line west of the Vardar fell to the Eleventh German Army which constituted a half of the enemy's forces. Though this army had a German general and a German Staff the men were chiefly Bulgars. East of the river were the Second, Third and Fourth Bulgarian armies with the First Bulgarian Army in reserve.

On September 14, a general bombardment of the whole 80-mile front from Lake Doiran to Monastir began, particularly on that sector of the line running northeast from Kaymakchalan. At 5:30 A.M. of the following day the French 121st and 52nd Colonial Divisions, with a Serbian division "went over the top." Later in the day



WHERE THE ALLIED ARMIES DEFEATED THE CENTRAL POWERS

A Franco-Serbian force held the centre of the Balkan front in the mountain region east of Monastir. On the right between Vardar and Struma stood the British Saloniki Army with several Greek divisions. On the left French, Greek and Italian divisions extended to Lake Prespa. West again to the Adriatic were French and Italian divisions, with Albanian detachments at Koritsa.

**T**HE MOUNTAIN PEAKS ARE SUCCESSFULLY STORMED.

General Franchet d'Esperey's plan aimed at taking the enemy by surprise on a narrow front, if possible capturing the Sokol, Dobropolye, Vetrenik and Kozyak peaks so as to reach the Vardar by the shortest possible route, and to turn the loop of the Tcherma which could be crossed more easily there than in the lower valley. He hoped that the Anglo-Greek offensive in the neighborhood of Lake Doiran would cloak his preparations for the attack on the hill positions, and then when that was fully launched, it would be the function of the Greeks and British first to hold hostile reserves in the Vardar Valley, and then if the central attack succeeded become a basic offensive against Strumnitza.

another Serbian division and the Jugo-Slav division followed. The assaults were successful beyond hopes, the Serbians won all before them, the French were delayed a little by the razor-back of Sokol but within twenty-four hours a wide breach was opened in the formidable rampart of mountains from which for over two years the Bulgars had looked down upon the Serbian Army patiently abiding its time. Now from these vantage points the defenders were either dislodged or dragged down as captives to the nether plain.

**T**HE DIFFICULT NATURE OF THE GROUND FOUGHT OVER.

The next day the front was enlarged to 16 miles when the 3rd Greek Division and the First Serbian Army entered the battle on the left, and the Allies advanced five miles. Some conception



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of the arduous nature of the battleground may be gathered from the following short extract from the official report: "Access to the chaos of rocks that forms the peak of the Sokol is possible only by two narrow roads upon which the enemy artillery and machine guns are concentrating their fire. On the left the granite rises perpendicularly; the attacking units depart for

on the 18th energetically supported the central attack amid the granite cliffs of the Dzena. The objective of the centre was won when the Tchernia was crossed by the Serbs pushing towards Prilep, and strategic exploitation of the gains began with the advance of the two wings on Tchernia and Vardar and by pursuit to the north. Cavalry entered Poloshko and the con-



STREET SCENE, SCUTARI

Albanian pedlar with his wares on one of the roughly cobbled pavements of Scutari. As the capital of the Ottoman Vilayet of Scutari this city was in the hands of the Turks until April, 1913, when it was captured by the Montenegrins. It was incorporated in the newly created Principality of Albania, and during the war occupied respectively by the Montenegrins, the Teutonic Allies and the Army of the Orient. Ruschin

the assault, carrying ladders. Balancing themselves on the irregularities of the cliff, the men climb up under a barrage fire of extreme violence \* \* \* The battalion clings to a foothold 150 yards from the summit. During the whole day it resists the enemy's counter-attacks. Only at 10:30 in the evening does it gain the summit by a vigorous effort." This was an attack which seemed to grow in momentum as it advanced, for, on the 17th, the Jugoslavs pushed forward to the crest of Kozyak and captured a large number of prisoners, and the Franco-Hellenic detachment under General d'Anselme

nection between the enemy's right and left armies was almost severed.

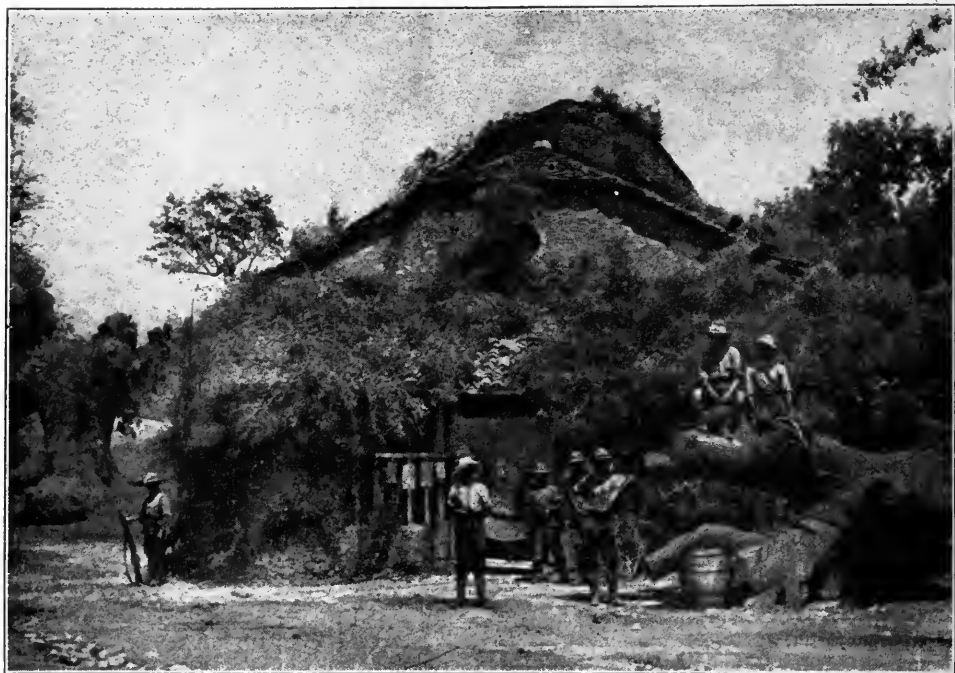
**THE BRITISH AND THE GREEKS ALSO SUCCEEDED TO THE EAST.**

On that same day the British and Greeks around Lake Doiran recommenced their fighting. Their main operations were directed against the "P" Ridge and the neighboring heights west of Lake Doiran which had been the scene of the battles in the spring of 1917. Simultaneously with the main attack a secondary and surprise attack was made around the east and northern sides of the lake against the Bulgarian trenches on the Beles range. The Bul-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

garian front was of exceptional strength in this area, as the following extract from General Milne's dispatch indicates: "There are steep hillsides and rounded hills. There is little soil. The hard rocky ground makes consolidation of a newly-won position difficult, and gives overwhelming advantage to the defender, well-dug into trenches that have been the careful work of three

fought with great determination and the Greek soldiers showed remarkable valor and tenacity. For nearly four days the Grand Couronne baffled the Allied attack but on the night of the 21st, the enemy started a retirement on the Vardar Valley, with the British and Greeks before daylight in full pursuit. The way lay through very hilly country and to some extent the Bulgars



THE USES OF WAR

The entrance to an old monastery near the British Balkan Front, which has been screened with brushwood and used as a canteen for the troops. One of the ever-present difficulties of the Army of the East was the question of the commissariat the supplies for which had to be sent almost entirely from the home countries.

years. Deep-cut ravines divert progress and afford unlimited opportunity for enfilading fire. \* \* The enemy had taken full advantage of his ground. He was strongly entrenched in three successive lines, with communication trenches deeply cut into the rock and roomy, well-timbered dugouts, with concrete machine-gun emplacements, and, on the crest between "P" Ridge and Grand Couronne, with concrete gun-pits. It was the key position of the Vardar-Doiran defenses and he held it with his best troops."

The British were worn with three years' watching and malaria but they

held up the advance by strong rear-guard actions. But there was only one good line of retreat open to the enemy, the Kosturino Pass on the Strumnitza road, and it was blocked by masses of men and transport moving northward. The pilots of the Royal Air Force, flying low, took full advantage of this opportunity. They bombed the Bulgar columns and shot down men and animals causing heavy casualties and a confusion that bordered on panic.

**THE GREEK FIRST CORPS DELIVERS A SUCCESSFUL ATTACK.**

Meanwhile, farther east the 1st Greek Corps was holding down the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Second Bulgarian Army on the Struma mouth; several days before the general offensive the Hellenic troops had received orders to advance their line in the valley and had done so on a front of nearly 20 miles to a depth of  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles, driving back an enemy much superior in numbers and attaining all their objectives. So surprised were the Bulgars by this diversion that the Ger-

**THE BULGARIANS ARE BEATEN ALONG THE WHOLE LINE.**

The situation recalls the autumn of 1915 when the Serbians were defending the Babuna Pass and the Anglo-French force having pushed up the Vardar River held the Kavadar triangle and tried in vain to reach their allies to the west. On September 20 the Serbians held the whole triangle and the follow-



### IN OCCUPIED TERRITORIES

Austrian sentry inspecting a passport in a Serbian town. Under military rule the Serbian peasants were forced to submit to the severest regulations which prohibited their moving from village to village with their farm produce unless they had special permits to do so, and this of course increased the hardships of living. Ruschin

man reinforcements being sent in from Rumania were concentrated here instead of where the principal attack was delivered.

By the 23rd of the month the Serbians were in Gradsko and since the 15th had advanced a distance of 40 miles over mountain peaks and through deep defiles. The enemy's retreat was now becoming a rout; in his flight he burned stores and villages, and the number of prisoners and booty which fell to the victors could not be counted owing to his very rapid advance. The French were moving on Prilep and north and east of Monastir the Italians were pressing into the Tchernia bend.

ing day crossed the Vardar and cut the railway between Uskub and Saloniki. By the time the French Cavalry had entered Prilep, the defile of Demir Kapu had been seized by the Franco-Hellenic detachment which had crossed the Vardar and was pushing on toward Ishtip. Exposed to a converging attack from the British advancing from Doiran and from the Serbs and Jugoslavs across the Vardar the Bulgarian forces lost contact and split into two groups; the so-called Eleventh German Army was driven northwest toward Kalkandelen and the eastern armies retired to the north by way of Strumnitza. By the evening of the 25th the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Serbian, pressing on to prevent a junction of the scattered enemy forces, had the Babuna Pass and the town of Ish-tip, they were close on Veles, and Uskub was almost within their grasp. The fragments of the First, Third and Fourth Bulgarian Armies, although pursued by the Anglo-Hellenic forces who had invaded Bulgarian territory at Kosturino, were able to retreat upon

longer in the war. M. Malinov, the premier, who succeeded the Germanophile M. Radoslavov in the spring of 1918, had evidently made up his mind to gratify the popular demand for peace at the earliest opportunity. Assured of the support of an army that was weary of war and of a people who were restless under German control, he acted promptly before Germany had



**BULGARIAN ARTILLERY IN MACEDONIA**

Bulgarian guns in the market-place of a Macedonian village. Upon the Bulgars fell the brunt of the fighting against the Allied Army of the Orient. The Austrians had as many as forty battalions in line, and the Germans up to twenty-three, but against these figures the Bulgars had two hundred and sixty, although some of their battalions were commanded by German officers.

their own country but it was otherwise with the Eleventh German Army. By the vigor of the Serbs and the ardent pursuit of the French army under General Henrys it was penned up without food in the high wilderness region where the Vardar has its source, and in inhospitable Albania where the Italians held all exits, and where the Austrian flank was in the air.

### **B**ULGARIA IS READY FOR PEACE AT ANY PRICE.

Bulgaria now faced a crisis. Germany and Austria had failed to send adequate reinforcements and it was clear that Bulgaria's heart was no

time to realize her mistake. Anti-German feeling in Sofia had reached a point where a general massacre of all the Germans in the city was to be feared. Ferdinand gave way to the wishes of his cabinet and people, and despite the fact that at Nauheim only a month before he had promised his support to the Kaiser, he now gave his consent to unconditional surrender.

On the night of Thursday, September 26, a Bulgarian staff officer appeared at the British headquarters under a flag of truce. He had come from Todorov, the Bulgarian Commander-in-Chief, and he asked for an armistice

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of 48 hours until delegates could arrive to arrange preliminaries of peace. General Milne telegraphed the request to Franchet d'Esperey who refused an armistice but expressed his willingness to meet Bulgarian delegates.

### THE HARD TERMS TO WHICH BULGARIA READILY AGREED.

Two days later three men, M. Liaptchev, Finance Minister, General Lukov, Commander of the Second Bulgarian Army, and M. Radev, a former Minister, with their staff, passed through the lines en route for Saloniki. No long deliberations were necessary: the Allied demands were for unconditional surrender and Bulgaria was fully prepared to accede. By September 29 the terms signed by General Franchet d'Esperey and the Commissioners were presented to the Allied Governments, and September 30 at noon the armistice went into effect. Considerations of political and territorial matters were postponed until the signing of the final treaty of peace, and in character the agreement was purely military.

Its terms included immediate evacuation of all occupied territory, no provisions to be carried away; immediate demobilization of the Bulgarian army with the exception of a small force for defense in the East, with surrender of all arms and ammunition; all means of transport to be at the disposal of the Allies; surrender of all strategic points in Bulgaria to an army of occupation; surrender of the Eleventh German Army; Allied prisoners to be released at once but Bulgarian prisoners to be held until final peace.

### KING FERDINAND ABDICATES IN FAVOR OF PRINCE BORIS.

The Allies made no conditions concerning Ferdinand, as they thought this an internal matter to be dealt with among the Bulgarians themselves. On the fourth day after the peace, the king abdicated in favor of his son, Crown Prince Boris, and left Sofia that same night en route for Vienna. He issued a manifesto to his subjects before leaving in which he said:

"Despite the sacred ties which for thirty-two years have bound me so firmly to this country, for whose prosperity

and greatness I have given all my powers, I have decided to renounce the royal Bulgarian crown in favor of my eldest son, His Highness, the Prince Royal Boris of Tirnovo.

"I call upon all faithful subjects and true patriots to unite as one man about the throne of King Boris, to lift the



BORIS OF BULGARIA

Ascended the throne October 5, 1918, upon the abdication of his father, King Ferdinand. Ruschin

country from its difficult position and to elevate new Bulgaria to the height to which it is predestined."

The accession of Prince Boris was received enthusiastically by the Bulgarians, the Cabinet under Premier Malinov continued its functions, and the first decree signed by the new king was one demobilizing the Bulgarian Army.

### THE NEWS OF THE SURRENDER RECEIVED WITH DISMAY IN GERMANY.

News of the Bulgarian surrender shocked the German public, already depressed by their defeat in their Western "elastic defensive" and by Allied victory in Palestine. A panic ensued

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

on the Berlin Stock Exchange. The Foreign Secretary, Admiral von Hintze, at first tried to reassure the Reichstag by saying that M. Malinov had interpreted the military reverses too unfavorably, that his action might not be confirmed by the Bulgarian Parliament, and that in any case Germany and Austria had sent strong forces into Macedonia which "would be absolutely adequate to restore the military situation." But Bulgaria was no

and Austria would be forced to deplete her forces on the Piave and in the Alps to defend these states. Further, the way of the Allies to Constantinople was greatly simplified. The main railway line was captured at Nish, October 13, and there was also a direct railway between Constantinople and Dedeağatch which could be used by Allied troops to gain entrance into the Thracian peninsula a few miles north of the lines at Chatalja.



WHEN THE WAVE OF WAR HAS RECEDED

Serbian peasant women returning from the hills or from alien countries whither they fled for refuge when the Bulgarians and Austrians fell upon them. Because of the ancient feud between the two nations, Bulgaria and Serbia, there were few that stayed to experience the conqueror's will. When they came back in many cases there was hardly any trace left of their houses or farms.

longer influenced by German promises, and political agitation in Germany increased. In truth, the military situation was very grave. A new front — the South Austrian — had to be defended, at a time when not a single man could be spared from the Western Front. Germany's dream of an eastern empire was gone: the scheme of a great trade and military route from the North Sea to India was shattered. No longer was the Lower Danube a safe waterway for the despatch of munitions and stores to Constantinople, and the Black Sea ceased to be a German lake, although the Rumanian and Russian ports were still open. Bosnia and Herzegovina were directly threatened as soon as Serbia should be reoccupied,

### THE AUSTRIANS AND GERMANS DRIVEN OUT OF THE BALKANS.

Meanwhile the tide of conquest had flowed on. The Bulgars began evacuating Serbia, October 1, and the Serbs pressed forward. Fighting during October and November resolved itself into clearing operations in the country south of the Danube. Serbian and French troops took up the pursuit of the retreating Austrians and Germans, advancing rapidly on a wide front in southern Serbia. The Italians at the same time were driving the Austrians out of Albania, and the Greeks re-occupying their territory in Eastern Macedonia where they found terrible traces of Bulgarian savagery in the unhappy region of Drama and Kavalla.



On October 2, Durazzo, the fort which Austria had fortified as her principal base, was bombarded and laid in ruins. Three Italian battleships and three British cruisers, preceded by British and Italian destroyers and American submarine chasers, passed through the Austrian minefields into the harbor. An intense bombardment lasting two hours and aided by airplanes destroyed the naval base on the shore and sank three enemy destroyers and two transports found at anchor. Two enemy submarines which attacked and damaged a British cruiser were sunk by twelve American submarine chasers.

In the interior of Albania, October 7, Italian troops captured Elbasan after stubborn resistance. The newly-constituted monarchy of Bulgaria ordered all Germans, Austro-Hungarians and Turks to leave the country and by October 10 their exodus was greatly accelerated. Officers, soldiers and civilians were arriving in Vienna on freight cars and long convoys of artillery and foodstuffs received the right of way. On the 13th the gallant Serbian Army had the satisfaction of capturing Nish and of thus interrupting the Balkan express through to Constantinople. On the 19th the Allied armies reached the Bulgarian shore of the Danube. The last days of October found the Serbians within 40 miles of Belgrade which they entered on the 9th of November, 45 days after the beginning of their offensive east of Monastir.

### **THE JUSTIFICATION OF THE WHOLE SALONIKI ENTERPRISE.**

The Saloniki enterprise had justified itself; a seemingly divergent operation had directed a blow which had inflicted

mortal injury. Many factors explain the immobility of the Army of the Orient for the greater part of three years. Save for the attempt to reach the Serbians in the Babuna Pass in the autumn of 1915, and the capture of Monastir in 1916, no offensive of any strength had been delivered. One of the chief reasons lies in the nature of the country itself where the divides in the mountain masses are so few that the routes used in the Great War are the routes that have been used in every war — by the legions of Rome as by the poilus of France and where therefore new offensives can only be delivered after the creation of new roads. The Bulgars held interior lines which were relatively well-supplied by railway, and furthermore, they were fighting, if not on their own territory at least upon adjacent ground, where supplies could easily reach them. The climate of Macedonia in itself was a deterrent to all save the native, bitterly cold in winter and hot through the long summer. The fighting strength of the army was sometimes reduced 50 per cent by its attendant evils of malaria and fever.

In addition to physical obstacles the hostility of the Greek government, and the hesitation of the Allied governments adequately to support the undertaking after it had been begun, hindered progress. The units of the Army of the Orient were varied in language and character, and poorly supplied. With the best leadership it would have been difficult to weld them into an efficient force, and the leadership was not, at first, of the best. Nevertheless the world conflagration which first flared up in the Balkans was there first to flicker and die away.





#### WHAT THE ARMISTICE MEANT

German troops, shortly after signing the Armistice, evacuating Huningen, Alsace. The French occupied the town five days later. In the foreground are American Red Cross Workers. On November 17, the day that the French armies started forward into Lorraine, Paris celebrated the occasion of the regaining of her lost provinces.

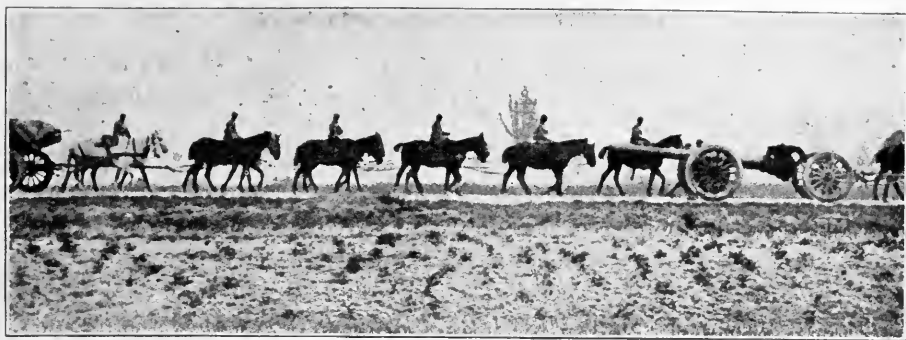
International Film Service



#### POILUS AND GIRLS OF METZ

Marching through the streets rejoicing at the restoration of the city to France. On November 19 Pétain, created Marshal of the Republic by telephone, made his triumphal entry into Metz, the chief city of Lorraine. He was accompanied by General de Castelnau and General Leconte. Two commissioners were appointed to administer temporarily the territory taken from France in 1871.

N. Y. Times



French Artillery Moving Forward

## CHAPTER LXVIII

# The Fighting During the Last Three Months

## THE GERMAN LINE EVERYWHERE BROKEN, FROM LORRAINE TO THE SEA

**F**ORMER chapters have described the first and second phases of the great struggle of 1918. The first phase includes the period of German offensives against the British (March-April) and against the French (May-July). Next came the beginning of Allied counter-offensive in the second Battle of the Marne. In the third phase which opens August 8 the British, aided by the French, in an offensive in the Somme-Oise sector wiped out the salients created in their line by the attacks of March and April and pushed the Germans back behind the Hindenburg line. During this period, also, the Americans drove in the St. Mihiel salient and by their victory completed Foch's series of short sharp blows which aimed at exhausting the enemy's reserves, so as to leave the way open for a decisive thrust. A fuller story of British and American operations is told in separate chapters.

### THE FRENCH SHARE IN THE GREAT AUGUST OFFENSIVE.

The Battle of Amiens launched by Haig on August 8 was directed against the German hold on the Paris-Amiens railway, and the important centre of Chaulnes—nodal point for the enemy communications. The French First Army under Débeney prolonged the battle about four miles to the south of Rawlinson's Fourth Army, playing the

rôle that Dégoutte had had in the Marne fight. Southwards again on the Lassigny plateau, Humbert with the French Third Army strove to regain what had been lost to von Hutier in the battle of June 9, while between Aisne and Oise Mangin was in position to attack as soon as success farther north warranted his so doing.

The surprise was complete and the attack, curtained by fog and launched under cover of rolling barrage and multitudinous tanks, swept forward into the front lines dislocating the enemy's communication service. The French First Army had fewer tanks than the British, and very difficult country to penetrate in the Avre valley so that their progress was for a time slower, but as the troubles of the Germans increased with the strangle-hold upon their communications Débeney pressed forward and came into line with the British centre—within four miles of Chaulnes.

On the afternoon of the 9th Humbert joined the fray on the south flank of the salient between Montdidier and Matz, and with Débeney pushed east of Montdidier cutting communications with Roye so that the garrison had no alternative but to surrender the following day. Through the succeeding days, in spite of fresh divisions flung in by von Hutier, the British and French

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

pushed steadily east with all the Paris-Amiens railway freed for traffic. Humbert was striving to get the whole of the Lassigny *massif* into his hands and by mid-August the Germans between Somme and Oise were back in the positions they had held in the summer of 1916. There their defenses stiffened and the nature of the battle-scarred country forbade rapid advance. Foch, having gained his objectives, called off

when the French general attacked on the morrow on a wider front he was able to press forward and reach the Ailette (August 20), capturing 8,000 prisoners and 200 guns. Thus established on the western end of the Aisne heights Mangin could overlook the enemy's positions to the north and east and constituted a strong flank to whatever advance was made around the St. Gobain *massif*.



AN ANCIENT DEVICE BROUGHT UP TO DATE

Advance post of a unit furnished with apparatus for optical signalling by luminous fire. The flashes, short or long, correspond to the dot and dash of the Morse alphabet and are used in the same manner. This method was particularly valuable at night, or in an area gun-befogged during artillery preparation or barrage.

French Official

the action in that quarter and launched a fresh blow.

Between Oise and Aisne on the morning of Sunday, August 18, General Mangin advanced on a front of ten miles. Von Boehn had temporarily assumed the direction of the armies of the right of the Crown Prince (that the latter might re-organize his front after the second battle of the Marne); he was anxiously watching Sir Douglas Haig believing Mangin's attack to be purely local. Though the Germans retreated into their battle positions, no reserves were sent in. Accordingly

### GERMANS SEEK THE PROTECTION OF THE HINDENBURG LINE A SECOND TIME.

After the initial attack of Haig on the 8th of August, Ludendorff, dismayed at many evidences of breaking morale in his divisions and confronted with the rapid shrinking of German reserves, came to a momentous decision. To the conference summoned to Spa, August 14, he revealed the true gravity of the military situation and advised that not only should the German people be made aware of their peril but that overtures for peace should be begun through neutral

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

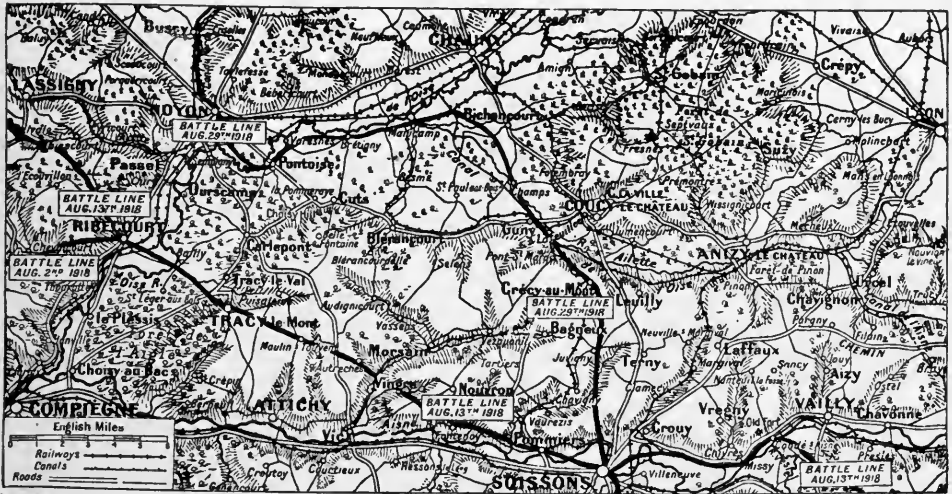
channels. The army's part should be to make ordered retreat into the Hindenburg lines, so as to leave the Allies to winter in the desolate exposed Somme battlefields. Secure behind their own great stronghold German troops might better endure the bad season, or in the event of earlier peace hold greater security for negotiating.

To this plan the Emperor reluctantly agreed, the process of enlightenment was entrusted to the civilian government, and Ludendorff returned to

the northernmost extension of the Hindenburg line, the Drocourt-Quéant switch. The blow threatened the German armies to the south so that retreat before the Third and Fourth British armies was hastened and Ham and Chauny were surrendered to the French who advanced to the Crozat Canal.

### FOCH'S LAST SHARP THRUST: THE AMERICANS AT ST. MIHIEL.

At the end of the first week in September the Germans were for the most



AREA OF SOUTHERN HALF OF ALLIES' AUGUST OFFENSIVE

General Mangin provided the lower claw of the pincers opened by Marshal Foch in the second phase of the August battles. Thrusting towards Laon on August 13, he encircled Noyon on his left and dominated the great hill forest of St. Gobain on his right front.

Army Headquarters to prepare a gradual withdrawal such as that of the winter of 1916-17. On that occasion the Germans had effected their purpose, and the failure of the Allied campaign of 1917 was the direct result. This time Haig divined German purpose and determined to thwart it. The warriors should be hustled into Valhalla! Thus he fought the Battle of Bapaume (August 21-29) when Byng's Third Army succeeded in turning the German line on the Somme and endangered their positions between that river and the Oise. Retreat began and was closely followed up by Débeney, Humbert and Mangin who advanced to the line Roye-Lassigny-Noyon. Then Haig struck again opposite Arras (August 26-September 2) and pierced

part behind the Hindenburg line. While Haig and the French armies to the south had wiped out the effects of the spring drives, Pershing had been collecting his scattered divisions, forming the First American Army, and establishing an American sector. By the end of August this extended around the St. Mihiel salient and northward to a point opposite Verdun. On September 12, Foch, in pursuance of his strategy, delivered another blow at the enemy without allowing him pause for recovery. In a brilliant operation General Pershing captured the St. Mihiel salient, 16,000 prisoners and 443 guns.

### SUCCESS OF FOCH'S PRELIMINARY PUNCHES: ABSORPTION OF ENEMY'S RESERVES

Between July 18 and September 13 the Commander-in-Chief had now de-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

livered an uninterrupted series of sharp attacks against the enemy, with the purpose of absorbing his reserves. In May, the Germans had 207 divisions on the Western Front, of which some 66 were in reserve. After St. Mihiel, Ludendorff had only 185 divisions (19 only in reserve) and none of these was of full strength. He could count at most upon five divisions from Russia as reinforcements. Conversely, with the coming of American and the

material, while those of the Allies had not even reached their maximum output.

There was marked contrast, too, between the spirit which animated the troops of the Fatherland, and that which inspired the armies of France, the United States and Great Britain. Reinforcements from the Eastern Front were of doubtful value, for they were tainted with Bolshevik teachings, and infected whatever area they were in.



FIELD-MARSHAL SIR DOUGLAS HAIG

On his return to London where he received an ovation. In the picture his carriage is seen halting in front of Marlborough House in order that he may receive a boutonnière from Queen Alexandra. Lady Haig (who is the daughter of Lord Vivian), and her daughter are standing on the left.

Times Photo Service

concentration of far-flung British divisions upon the Western Front, the Allied total had increased by 32 divisions as that of the Germans had decreased by 17, without taking into account the greater size of the American divisions. Thus an end of the phase of absorption had come.

Other factors there were which tipped the scale for the Western Powers. Since mid-July the capture of German guns and stores of ammunition had been enormous; and the blockade was at last beginning to tell effectively upon the military situation, for Germany had exhausted the store of brass and copper even in the occupied regions and her factories were starved for necessary

Young recruits, fresh from the depôts of Germany, had not the "will-to-war" of their opponents but reflected the desperate war-weariness of the nation at home.

### LUDENDORFF ON THE DEFENSIVE: THE HINDENBURG LINE.

But though, early in September, Germany no longer hoped to win the war, Ludendorff believed he still had formidable defenses whereby to negotiate a favorable peace—or failing that to engineer a withdrawal by easy stages to the line of the Meuse which would allow of preparation for a grand "stand to" before ever the sacred soil of the Fatherland was invaded. The Hindenburg line—that Valhalla of



GENERAL VON EINEM, COMMANDER OF  
THE II GERMAN ARMY

German heroes, that graveyard of their hopes—still stood intact, stretched like a strong and sinuous serpent between the sea and Switzerland. As a man stands upon an eminence when the tide of battle has surged to the east and views its miles of trenches following the back slopes of hills, its bewildering maze of wire all rusted and torn, its skilfully-engineered lines of water, ravines débris-encumbered, gun-sown forests, ambushed thickets, redoubts fortified for a world of cannon and of *mitrailleuses*—the impotence and impermanence of the strongest things human and material, before the force of the spirit which quickeneth, comes strongly home.

Behind the barrier of the Hindenburg line ran other positions. The battle—if it came—must be against a triple rampart. Would Foch attack, press the battle? Might not the Allied armies exhausted by a gigantic offensive of seven weeks, after a murderous defensive of four months, pause before the Hindenburg line and postpone decision until 1919?

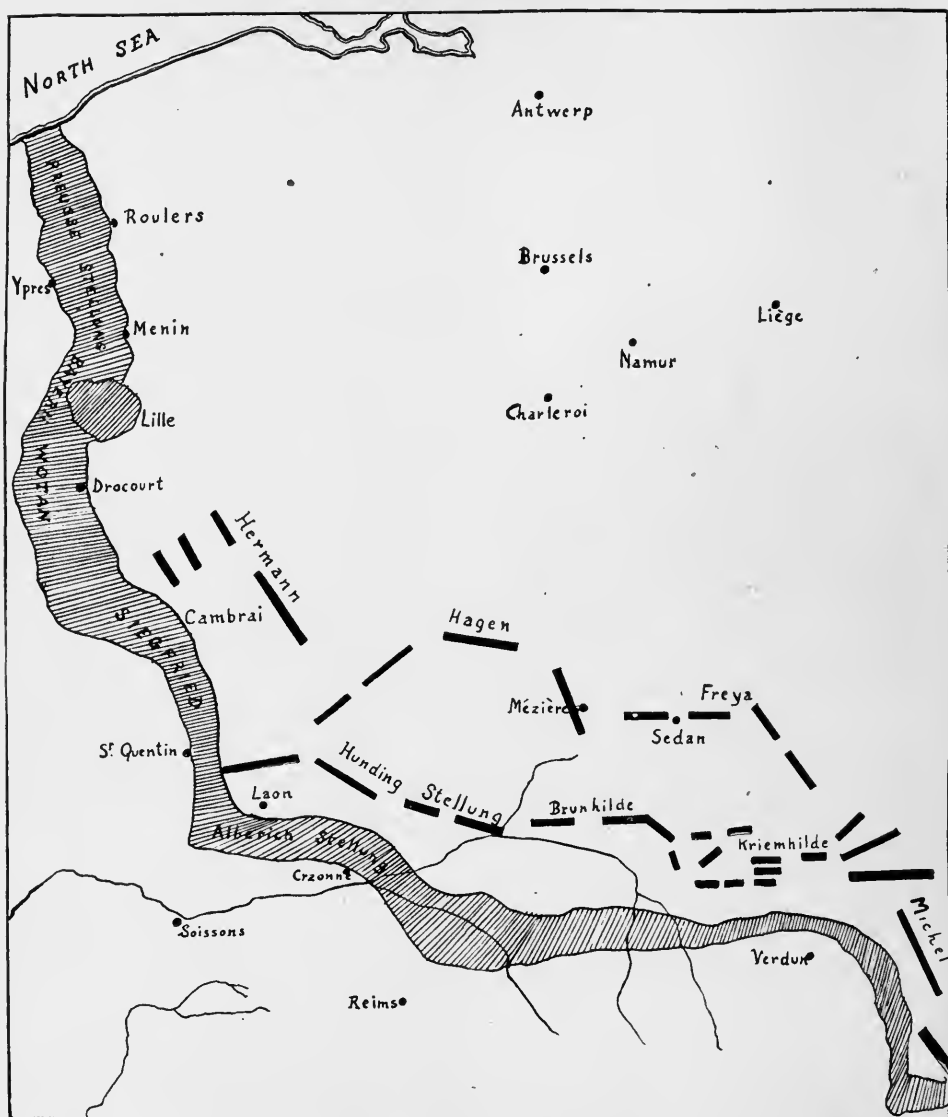
Stretching east of Furnes, Ypres and Armentières, the line encircled Le Catelet, St. Quentin, La Fère, and enveloped Laon where it rested as upon a pivot. After crossing the Aisne at Berry-au-Bac the rampart stretched south-east as far as the latitude of Rheims, then turned eastward to the Meuse north of Verdun, thence southwards to St. Mihiel. At St. Mihiel, as to the north of Soissons, there was a turn from which the line descending into the region of Mulhouse only finished at the Swiss frontier north-west of Basle. Symbolical of the supernatural strength with which German thought invested the line were the names of legendary gods and heroes bestowed upon its different parts. The stretch between the North Sea and Roulers was called the *Preussen Stellung*, that from Menin to south of Lille, the *Bayern Stellung*, Drocourt to Quéant, the *Wotan Stellung*, the *Siegfried* down about to La Fère, and the *Alberich* in the region of the French armies down as far as Rheims. These were the formidable positions which made the sections of the main defense.



ALBRECHT, DUKE OF WÜRTTEMBERG



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



GERMAN DEFENSIVE POSITION, AUGUST, 1918

### OTHER DEFENSIVE POSITIONS PREPARED BY THE GERMANS.

Before the line ran advance positions (such as the Drocourt-Quéant switch which had already fallen into British hands), positions which were to cause hard fighting through the early weeks of September. Such was the chief bulwark of empire. A second line—not everywhere complete and not always continuous though Allied thought

endowed the German infantryman with digging powers little short of fabulous—resting on Lille ran through Douai, Cambrai, Guise, Rethel, Vouziers, Dun-sur-Meuse, and Pagny-sur-Moselle. From Lille as far south as the Aisne the Germans called this position the Hunding line, from Aisne to north of the Argonne the Brunhilde, then the Kriemhilde Stellung, and thence southwards, the Michel Stellung.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Back of these lines ran yet a third—from Douai to Metz, by le Quesnoy, le Cateau, Hirson, Mézières, Sedan and Montmédy—known as the Hermann, the Hagen and the Freya Stellung. Never in the history of war had been such defensive positions. What wonder then if in their fall they brought down a dynasty, a military autocracy, a nation!

must be delivered on each side of the bulge, and Foch's order for the battle, dated September 3 (while even yet the French and British were clearing up outworks of the Hindenburg line) assigned the parts in the forthcoming great battle in this way. The Commander-in-Chief ordered the right wing to deliver an offensive as strong and violent as possible: the American



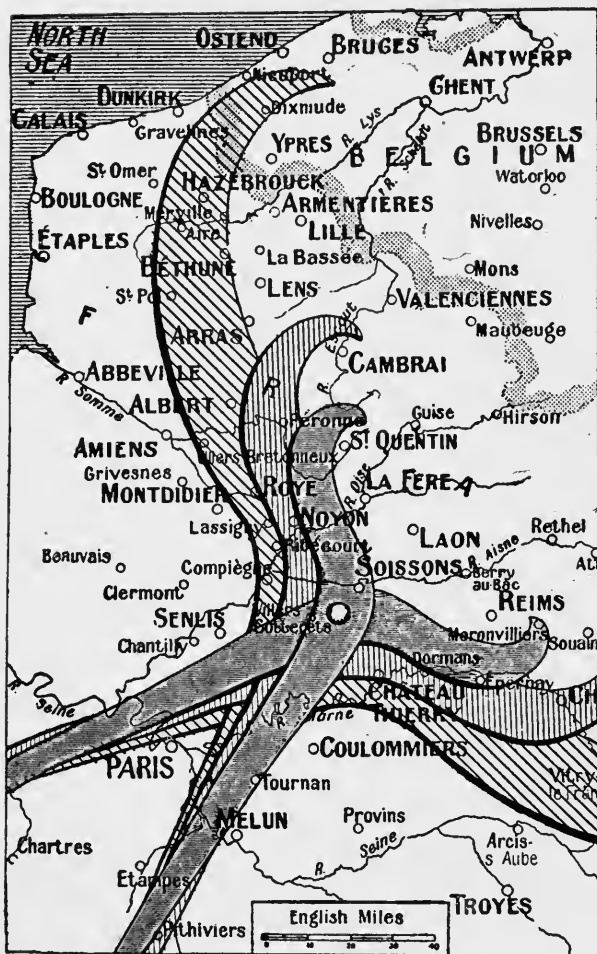
RETURNING AFTER FOUR YEARS OF EXILE

### THE PLAN FOR THE GREAT BLOW IS DEVELOPED.

For the moment Foch was concerned only with the Hindenburg line. What were the strategic possibilities of the enemy's position? First as to communications: Ludendorff's chief means of moving reserves and stores was the main line of railway back of the Hindenburg system connecting Metz, Mézières, Maubeuge, Mons and Brussels, and this line was his last good lateral communication west of the Ardennes. It lay nearest in the south where the Fourth French and First American Armies were in line. It was well defended in the centre (where the Hindenburg line bulged out) by the *massif* of St. Gobain and the Chemin des Dames. In the north where Haig stood before the Wotan and Siegfried lines defense was formidable. Attack

First Army to advance between the Meuse and the Argonne Forest in the direction of Mézières and Gouraud's Fourth Army to drive in between the Meuse and Mézières, so as to threaten the railway. To the north, the First French Army under Débeney and the First, Third and Fourth British Armies were to press an attack against the Hindenburg line between Scarpe and Oise, in the direction of Maubeuge. Such "pincer-like" action, Foch judged, would have its effect upon the enemy's centre, and to the central group of French armies commanded by Humbert and Mangin was assigned the rôle of embarrassing the enemy in his consequent enforced withdrawal beyond Aisne and Ailette. Foch knew that Ludendorff had weakened his army in Flanders in order to protect Cambrai, and he accordingly went north to see

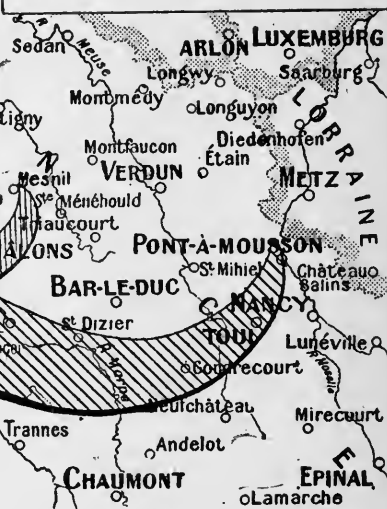
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



St. Mihiel to the Verdun sector, making elaborate precautions to induce the enemy to believe that the attack would be towards Metz, and veiling his khaki-clad troops with a thin line of horizon blue until the very night of September 25-26, so that the enemy was thereby successfully deceived.

### THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON IS LAUNCHED AT LAST.

Upon Sir Douglas Haig and General Pershing devolved the heavy responsi-



### COMPREHENSIVE VIEW OF MARSHAL FOCH'S PINCERS STRATEGY

Diagram to explain Marshal Foch's strategic plans in 1918. The inmost pincers comprise the British attack on St. Quentin and the French upon Rheims; the centre pair include the British operations about Cambrai and the French in Champagne; the outermost, largest, pair embrace the Anglo-Belgian offensive in Flanders and Franco-American assaults upon the Meuse.

King Albert, and agreed with him upon an action destined to conquer the province north of the Lys. General Birdwood with the new British Fifth Army south of the Scheldt was to perform a function similar to Fayolle's group of armies in the centre, and hasten the enemy's retreat.

Before the battle it was necessary to clear up the advance positions three miles to the west of the Hindenburg system, and this was done by Haig (Battle of Epehey) and by Débeney's First French Army between St. Quentin and La Fère. Meanwhile Pershing was secretly transferring troops from

bility of deciding to advance. The former had serious obstacles before his line; the latter, with almost a new army, had to overcome German resistance desperate in proportion to the importance of the locality as a pivot for possible German retreat. Each accepted the responsibility, independently of his government. Upon the 26th of September, on the western end of the line the first rumblings of the great Battle of Armageddon began between Meuse and Rheims, and soon the whole front from Lorraine to the sea roared up in mighty crescendo, the voices of the great guns punctuated by

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the monotonous throbbing of drum fire so heavy as to set the earth rocking 150 miles away. Sir Douglas Haig's battle against Cambrai opened on the 27th, and King Albert attacked north and south of Ypres on the morning of the 28th.

### THE FRANCO-AMERICAN BATTLE IN CHAMPAGNE AND THE ARGONNE.

Upon the French front between Suippe and Meuse, Gouraud had

the morning of the 26th, and according to his plan the French army advancing would approach the American Army with its right. The flow of the Meuse would force the Americans to incline to the left and thus in converging the two forces would find themselves in touch at Grand Pré Pass while pursuing their mutual advance on Mézières and Sedan. Such advance, Foch



### METAL WHICH NEVER REACHED ITS DESTINATION

Collections of bells, candelabra, and crucifixes rifled from churches of France and about to be shipped to Berlin which were found in a German encampment by the advancing French. Numbers of German helmets were also left behind by their owners in their great haste, who acted on the principle of "Safety-First."

International Film Service

known since the 8th that about the 25th of the month he would be expected to execute, in conjunction with the First American Army on the right, an offensive towards Mézières, and for three weeks he prepared. From the 20th the six corps of the Tenth Army (9th, 2nd, 11th, 14th, 38th, 21st) were in line. Behind them the 1st Cavalry Corps waited in readiness to exploit the gains of the infantry. The front of attack ran from Auberive-sur-Suippe on the west to Vienne-le-Château on the east where Gouraud joined up with the Americans. General Pétain gave the order to attack on

calculated, would throw the enemy across the Meuse into the difficult Ardennes country where scarcity of communications would seriously embarrass his retreat. Gouraud had before his front eighteen miles of Champagne heathland, which the attack of July 15 had left shell-cratered and blasted. German defense on this front was very obstinate for Ludendorff recognized it as the pivot of his retreat, in the same sense as it was the pivot of Foch's manoeuvre. To follow the operations better the Commander-in-Chief went to Trois-Fontaines, while Pétain set up headquarters at Nettancourt.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

At 5:25 on the morning of the 26th after violent bombardment the French infantry went forward. The enemy had imitated Gouraud's manoeuvre of July and evacuated the front lines which were manned only by advance posts. But this had been foreseen and the troops did not spend themselves rashly, pushing on valiantly through the terrible waste of "No Man's

could not be used, and artillery work was severely limited. The 28th was an arduous day all along the line: the aerial forces reported dense masses of reserves being thrown in to stiffen the line, nevertheless Gouraud made steady advance, and east of the Argonne Pershing reached the Bois d' Epinonville as far as Nantillois, and took the Wood of Dannevoix.



AMERICANS AND FRENCH CUTTING WIRE AT BADONVILLER

Land." It took three days of desperate fighting to force a passage out of the old battlefields. The enemy offered only the expected resistance, thick nests of machine-guns, vigorous counter-attacks wherever the tide paused, but he held the high ground and was throwing in his reserves.

Meanwhile eastwards the Americans made a fine advance; by the evening of the 26th they had captured the first line defenses on the whole front of attack, and in the centre pressed forward around Montfaucon where the Crown Prince had a palatial dug-out. Their left wing by now was entangled in the terribly difficult country of the Argonne without roads so that tanks

On Gouraud's front the Germans were basing their resistance to the left on the Rheims mountain which the French general did not mean to attack but purposed to turn, and to the right on the Argonne Forest where the Americans now made little advance. To stem French progress in the centre Ludendorff reinforced his positions in the *massif* of Notre Dame-des-Champs whose conquest threatened the turning of the Rheims heights, and for some days successfully halted Gouraud's men, as in the forest he was holding up the Americans.

Meanwhile what was happening in the other phases of the great battle,—so vast that it is easy to be lost in



#### THE BELGIAN ARMY RE-FORMED AND REFITTED

Gradually as the new recruits were trained they rejoined the units stationed in Flanders. In this picture General Ceuninck is seen making a tour of inspection in the army cantonments. The Belgian forces under King Albert played a worthy part in the last offensive of 1918, which they were pleased to call the "Battle of Liberation."



#### 106TH REGIMENT RETURNING FROM HINDENBURG LINE

The 27th Division first entered the line with British units opposite Mt. Kemmel. On August 20 it moved to the Dickebush sector, Belgium, and eleven days later was a front line division in the attack on Vierstandt Ridge. As part of the 2nd Corps (U. S.) 4th British Army, the division was in action near Bony, September 24-October 1. October 12 it again entered the line in the St. Soupiet sector and crossed the Selle River.

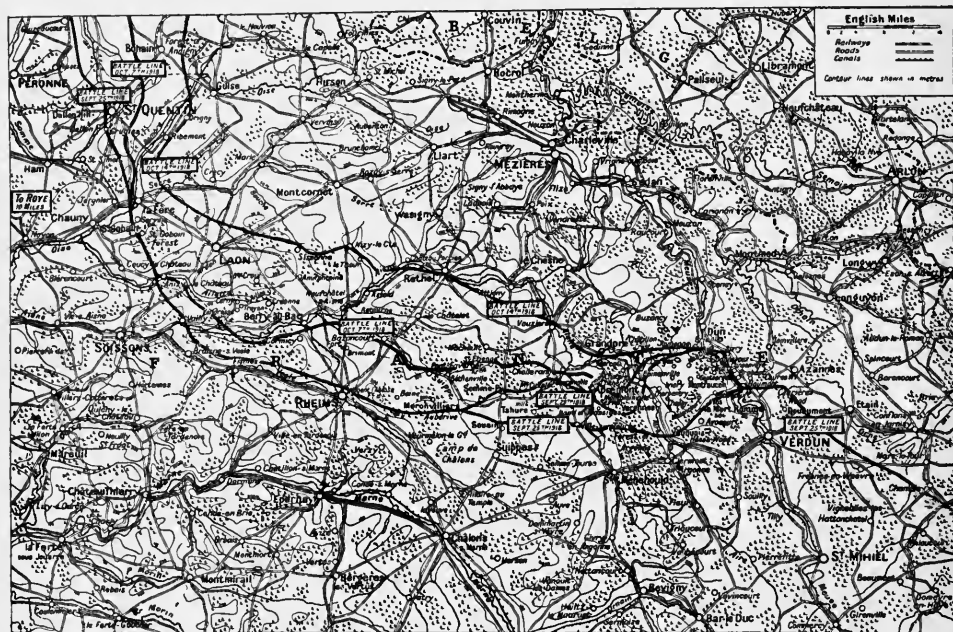
U. S. Official

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the details? "The British, looking at their area, will see it as a contest between St. Quentin and Ypres, designed to break the Hindenburg Line. The Americans will see it as a struggle between the Meuse and the Argonne to reach and cut the all-important Metz-Mauberge railway. The French will see it as a kaleidoscopic contest in which the French soldiers, now beside the British, now with the Belgians,

in which were two American divisions, and Débeney's First had effected a breach in the heart of the Hindenburg position and by October 5 the line was broken. After four years' hammering nothing but a single line now stood between the British Army and Maubeuge.

In Flanders, coincidentally, the Belgian thrust had found its mark. Ludendorff had drawn off troops to strength-



### HASTENING THE RETREAT OF THE ENEMY IN CHAMPAGNE

Important progress was made along the southern part of the battlefield during the first week of October, 1918. At the beginning of that week the German forces still occupied the greater part of the heights of the Argonne and St. Gobain Forest. By the end of that week they had been forced from both strongholds, while Laon had been recaptured by the French and the enemy's railway lines threatened.

and now beside the Americans, do heroic service at crucial moments. Even the Belgians, participating considerably and nobly, will describe it as the Battle of their Liberation."

### THE IMPREGNABLE HINDENBURG LINE FINALLY BREAKS.

Ludendorff's pivot in the south still held: was his rampart in the north yet unbroken? Horne and Byng's attack that had begun in the early morning of the 27th went forward unchecked to Sailly, and threatened Cambrai from the north. September 29 was a day of crisis—fraught with the fate of empire. By evening Rawlinson's Fourth Army,

en his forces before the British and left only five divisions between Voomezeele and Dixmude on a front of 17 miles. Here on the 28th King Albert's attack won through, cleared the Flanders ridges in less than 48 hours, swept forward beyond Passchendaele and by October 1 threatened Roulers.

### THE BATTLE IN THE CENTRE—GERMANS DRIVEN FROM THE VESLE.

As Foch had foreseen, moreover, Gouraud's and Haig's blows around the St. Gobain bulge, and the Belgian thrust to the north of Lille, threatened the enemy in the enclosed areas and he began to withdraw. Then the French





#### GERMAN MARINES AND MACHINE GUNS

Dragging up machine guns amid the heavy sand of the dunes on the Belgian sea-coast. More difficult than mud or snow or woodland trail is the going over such territory and the comparatively light gun required a human team in addition to an engine. The whole coast was heavily fortified both with stationary as well as with mobile artillery.

Henry Ruschin



#### PREPARED TO GIVE THEIR MESSAGE

Battery after battery of French "Heavies" placed in systematic formation under the protection of splendid trees which border a highway in the Oise sector. It was such trees as these—whose slowly attained maturity represented the hopes of many years—that the Germans wantonly felled as they retreated in 1917 and again in 1918.

N. Y. Times



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

armies passed into action in the centre, and Birdwood's on the Scheldt, and the battle raged continuously upon a 250-mile front. In the angle where the Hindenburg line rested upon the St. Gobain *massif*, General Mangin, master of the forest of Coucy, endeavored to push towards Laon in the hope of turning the enemy's flank and forcing him to evacuate the country between Vesle and Aisne. He conquered the plateau to the north of Soissons, and thence advanced against Malmaison—the key to the Chemin des Dames. A Lorraine deserter captured on the 28th informed Mangin that the enemy by a retreat towards the Aisne-Oise Canal was seeking to extricate himself, so Mangin pressed the attack, captured Malmaison and wiped out the enemy rear-guards. At this point Foch perceived an opportunity: if the enemy hesitated to release the right bank of the Vesle he might be taken between two fires, if while Mangin's guns were sweeping the plateau to the north of the Aisne, Berthelot should light up to the south of the Vesle. Upon the 30th the Fifth Army (with the 5th, 20th, and 3rd Corps) accordingly threw itself against the German front between Ghennes and Jonchery. The 5th Corps crossed the Vesle at 6:25 and progressed towards the Wood of Goulot, pushing an unprepared enemy before him. On Berthelot's left, the 20th Corps was held up by the machine guns of Romain and of Grand Haneau, but by noon it had encircled these positions and captured them. The 3rd Corps after fierce fighting progressed towards the west of Revillon and the end of the first week in October saw all the region between Aisne and Vesle swept up.

### EFFECT OF THE BATTLE: REQUEST FOR ARMISTICE.

Though the great battle lasted well into the first week of October, certain unmistakable signs of failing morale, the well-known fact of the exhaustion of reserves and of material caused Hindenburg and Ludendorff upon its third day to come to the momentous decision of advocating peace proposals. After that interview Ludendorff writes: "The

Field-Marshal and I parted with a strong handshake, like men who have buried their dearest hopes and who are resolved to hold together in their hardest trials as they have held together in success." The meeting marks the end of another great phase in the struggle: after the preliminary thrusts the great blow has been delivered, it has gone home and the duellist has fallen to his knees. Followed a special session with the Kaiser and Secretary of Foreign Affairs von Hintze, at Spa Headquarters.

Without consulting the Army the Kaiser, aware of the upswelling tide of revolution within the empire and striving to avert a crisis, issued an order for the introduction of the parliamentary system in Germany. The change in government and inevitable delay fretted the Higher Command as they knew fully the gravity of the military crisis. While Prince Max of Baden was seeking to form a cabinet to replace that of von Hertling, Ludendorff sent Major Baron von dem Busche to Berlin to explain the situation to the Reichstag, and to insist upon a peace offer. On the 4th of the month Prince Max became Imperial Chancellor and the next day request for an armistice was sent to President Wilson.

### LUDENDORFF SEEKS TO GAIN TIME TO RALLY.

The greatest battle had been fought and won, but there still remained bitter fighting to do, for Ludendorff, aware of the increasing difficulties of Allied transport, attempted to rally and in his effort achieved a measure of success. German retreat had left everywhere in its wake battle-torn ground where roads and railways and bridges had been obliterated. Before the Allied armies could move forward some repair of the means of transport was absolutely essential. Thus the Belgians could not enter Roulers until October 14, the British were not clear of Cambrai until October 9, Débeney and the First French Army had advanced only eight miles east of St. Quentin by the 10th, Gouraud had only progressed one and a half miles in ten days and it took until the 10th for the

American Army to win through the Argonne Forest. All this gave Ludendorff time to organize a new line, before being forced to make his great stand-to upon the line of Meuse. His left flank opposite the American front lay nearest to the Meuse: his right flank in Flanders farthest. It was necessary then to hold firm on the Meuse and swing back from Flanders. While achieving this it was equally essential to check the British thrust at Maubeuge, lest the German troops about Ostend be cut off. The report to the Reichstag presented by von dem Busche had ascribed the cause of German failure to two factors, namely to enemy tanks and the consequent wastage of German reserves. Nothing could be done to repair the latter but in his plan for ordered retreat in the northern area where tanks could be used, Ludendorff determined to oppose water-barriers between his troops and those formidable engines of war.

Thus withdrawing his troops from the Belgian coast he planned a stand on a line resting on the Dutch frontier, and running behind the Ghent Canal as far south as Valenciennes. Between Valenciennes and the Oise he hoped to check Haig by his Hermann line—a weak position only half complete. His centre would withdraw into the Hunding line. From Aisne to Meuse he determined to stand firm in the strong Brunhilde and Kriemhilde positions against Gouraud and Pershing so as to keep open the vital neck of his retreat. So much for the plan: what were the necessary conditions of accomplishment?

Writing at this juncture, Réquin says "The German staff proposes to establish itself upon the Antwerp-Scheldt-Maubeuge-Mézières-Metz line, but for the purpose it needs a respite, for a new defensive front can not be occupied under good condition unless it is, first, organized ahead, second, occupied by reserve troops, ready to collect the forces engaged and retreating.

"The situation of the German Army is in fact without an outlet. Their reserves have melted away in the gigantic battle. From 67 divisions back of



**GERMAN LINES—ACTUAL AND PROJECTED**  
the Front, September 26, they have fallen to 46, September 30, to 26 by October 15, of which only nine are considered fresh. The necessary proportion between the fighting and replacement effectives no longer exists."

**GENERAL LUDENDORFF ENGINEERS A NEW STAND-TO.**

A part of Ludendorff's retreat was successfully carried out. Between October 14 and 23 German forces withdrew in fair order from the Belgian coast behind the water line of canal and river. In the centre also from the St. Gobain *massif*, from Laon and from the Chemin des Dames the retreat was orderly though somewhat hastened by the French armies of Berthelot and Mangin. By the 15th the French faced the enemy in his new position behind the Hunding line. Eastwards Gouraud, who had had the 2d and 36th American Divisions in line, attacked in force on the 8th and retirement took place behind the Brunhilde lines. On the American front there was no question of retreat; the front *must* hold and the Americans were fighting hard for every inch of ground. An effort was made to get more room by extending the attacking front to the right banks of the Meuse. On the 16th Pershing handed over command of the First American Army to General Liggett as the continued arrival of fresh troops allowed of a Second American Army which went into line on the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Woëvre front, opposite Metz. By the 14th the last line,—the Kriemhilde Stellung was attained.

Before the British attack, however, things went contrary to Ludendorff's plan. Haig's battle of Le Cateau hustled the enemy back behind the Hermann line with serious losses in men and guns. Still the German Commander was not ill-pleased with the

Grandpré was taken, Gouraud on the left captured the heights above Vouziers and crossed the Aisne. By the 18th German defenses on Meuse—as on the Cambrai-St.-Quentin front—were exhausted.

**G**ERMANY'S SITUATION DESPERATE:  
LAST EFFORTS TO EXTRICATE  
HER ARMIES.

On the 26th Ludendorff resigned:



**RHEIMS IN RUINS RESUMES BUSINESS**

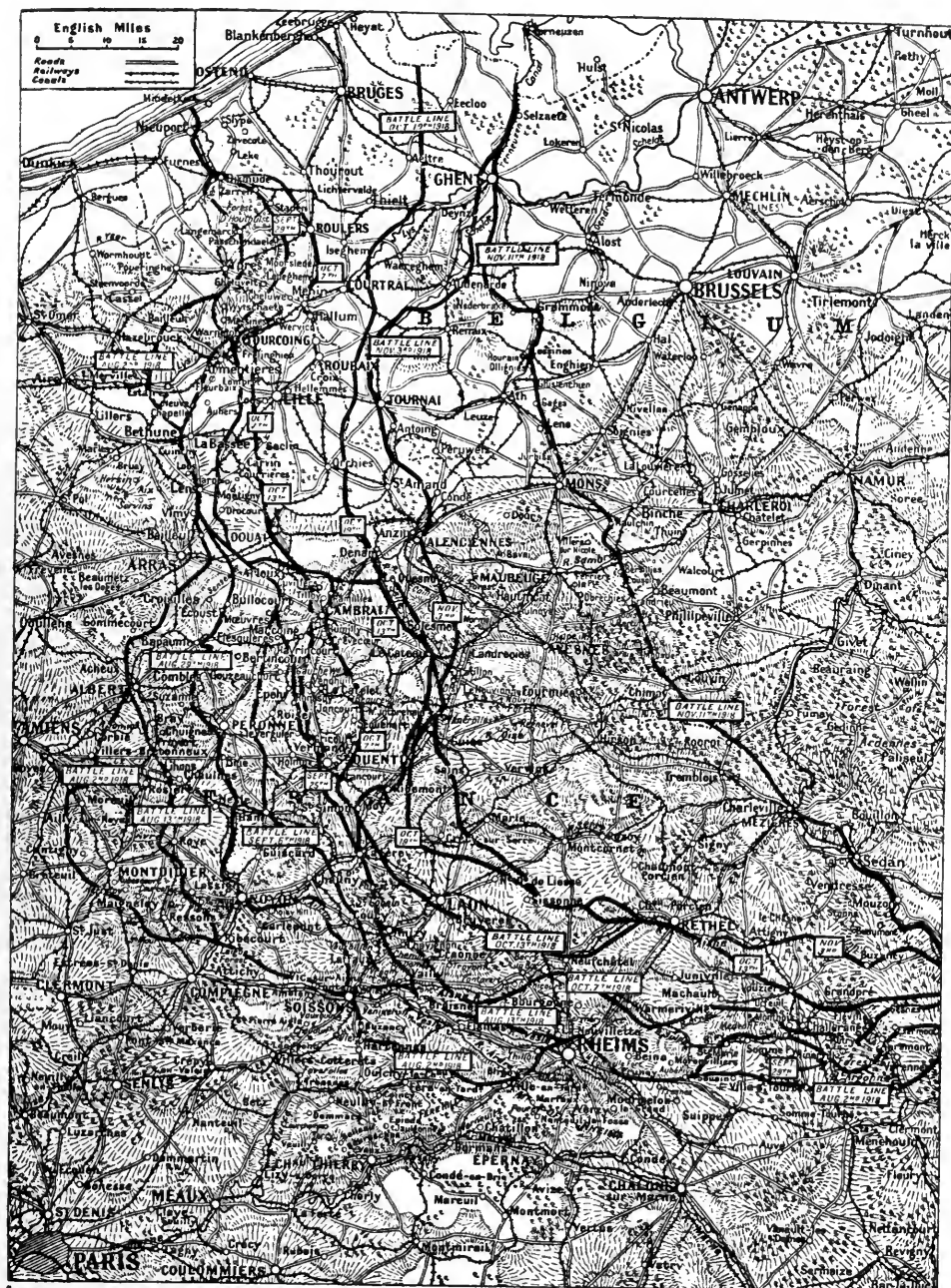
One of the principal streets in Rheims. The inhabitants are rapidly bringing back scenes of life to its devastated but immaculate streets. In the distance appears the tattered and roofless cathedral, which may either be left in lonely splendor as a ruin whose memory will ever be sacred, or in restored beauty may testify to the art of the Twentieth Century.

retreat and he pressed the civil government not to accept terms that would strip Germany of her army and navy.

Even as he spoke new blows fell. Attacking between the bend of the Scheldt below Va'enciennes and the Sambre, British, French, and American corps in the Battle of the Selle (October 17-23) made a breach in Ludendorff's rallying line, some 35 miles wide. In the Franco-American sector, the Americans in touch with the Kriemhilde position since the 14th, after an eight-day battle pierced the line at several points. On the 16th

the following day he left Headquarters. The situation now was almost desperate. The collapse of Turkey and Bulgaria and Austria left Germany stripped of allies. Her armies had been many times decisively defeated, and they had only one line of defense yet remaining. The navy was openly mutinous, the working classes starving. Among her opponents, on the other hand, the United States had only half developed her military power, Allied munition factories were increasing their output every week, their air forces at last were definitely superior, they had arrested, if not defeated, the U-Boat

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



Copyright

### LAST STAGES OF THE ALLIES' ADVANCE TO THE VICTORY LINE ON THE WESTERN FRONT

campaign. Chances of averting a gigantic military disaster were slight. In 1914, between Liège and Metz on a front of 115 miles, Germany had put some 54 divisions into France. She

had to extricate fully three times as many, with their many times multiplied equipment. Behind her centre lay the difficult Ardennes country where hurried retreat over congested

roads would be little short of débâcle. The gap to the north from Liège to Namur was already threatened by the British, who were nearer the crossings of the Meuse than were the German forces on the Scheldt, and the latter faced therefore the possibility of being driven against the Dutch frontier and forced to surrender. The gap to the south between Mézières and Longuyon was menaced by Gouraud and the Americans, and if the German centre did not succeed in making good its escape before the French-Americans captured Mézières and Sedan, it was likely to be cut off.

#### **F**OCH'S LAST BATTLES CUT OFF THE POSSIBILITY OF RETREAT.

So in the last and final effort Foch continued his two main thrusts. The British armies in the north were pointed for Maubeuge and Mons and Namur, to cause the Germans to evacuate hastily their right and centre. Gouraud and the Americans were striking for Mézières and Sedan to block the southern exits. November 1, Haig broke through the defense on the little Rhônelle and began an advance up the Sambre valley. His progress dragged with it the Germans in line north of Cambrai to the sea, and to the south from Oise to Aisne. South of Ghent two French Corps (each of which had an American division with it) on the right of King Albert's Army drove back the Germans along the Scheldt, and the 91st American division captured Oudenarde. Pursuit was not rapid for all roads and railways were

destroyed, yet the enemy was going very slowly, too, clogged by his masses of transport and the airmen swooping low reaped rich harvest. By the 5th the fugitive troops were beyond the Mormal Forest, by the 8th they were flying from the Scheldt; November 9, Maubeuge was occupied and to the south Hirsia by the French. November 11, the Canadians entered Mons.

On the American front Pershing during the last days of October was biting into the last fragments of the Kriemhilde line. To the front of the American left and the French right lay the Forêt de Bourgogne—an extension of the Argonne—and this time the attacking forces lined either edge of the forest and November 2 succeeded in pinching out the Germans, and joined hands. Thus Gouraud had a straight front of 9 miles to the east of Attigny. November 4 he drove the enemy back from the southern position of the Meuse-Aisne Canal from Attigny to Sedan and to avoid being cut off from Mézières his opponents evacuated the line. November 6 the French entered Rethel as the Americans reached the Meuse opposite Sedan, a distance of 25 miles from their starting point on November 1. Gouraud had the longer distance to go, and did not reach Mézières until the evening of the 10th. Meanwhile the Americans had crossed the Meuse and were pressing the enemy east of the river, in the direction of Montmédy, when the news of the Armistice came.



Winter on the Italian Front

## CHAPTER LXIX

# The Army Machine

## THE VAST INTERLOCKING ORGANIZATION NECESSARY TO CREATE A FIGHTING ARMY

BY HERBERT T. WADE

Sometime Captain, Ordnance Department, U. S. A.

**T**WO notable facts were clearly apparent in the World War as exerting a powerful influence on the conduct of military operations. First it was shown that the time required to train and make an efficient soldier out of an ordinary citizen was less than previously had been supposed, and secondly that with the progress of civilization the organization and administration of an army was a matter of considerable and ever increasing complexity, requiring machinery and men apparently unrelated to actual combat, yet upon whose proper action fighting strength and ability were absolutely dependent.

### EFFICIENCY IN ORGANIZATION NECESSARY IN WAR.

The efficiency of a modern industrial enterprise depends largely upon what we are pleased to term its organization, which includes primarily a responsible and intelligent supervision able properly to arrange its various internal and external affairs into what goes by the name of a system, or harmonious whole. To-day in this industrial age, war must be looked upon very much as if it were a vast industrial enterprise, with the fundamental distinction that its object is destruction rather than production, and that broadly speaking,

time and economy of life, effort and treasure are negligible in securing the main end, that is destroying or overcoming the foe.

### INDUSTRY ONCE LEARNED FROM WAR, BUT CONDITIONS NOW REVERSED.

In its early days industrial organization had much to learn from warfare, as that was the oldest and most persistent form of organized effort for self-preservation, or for what might be termed to-day direct action. Latterly and in the recent war especially, the army has gone to industrial organization for many models and lessons.

A nation rising in its might decides that a war must be waged or met, and accordingly entrusts the responsibility for developing and utilizing its fighting forces to one or more men. A powerful blow must be delivered or resisted as promptly and effectively as possible according to the decision of a master mind. Obviously that master mind can function only through a system of organization which involves hundreds, thousands, or even millions of individuals. The general must assume available troops, arms, ammunition, equipment, subsistence, clothing, communication, transport, and a thousand and one other matters for which he is responsible but which others subordinate



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

to him actually must take care of for him. Failure in one minute element, like the horseshoe nail of the nursery rhyme may, and often does, change the destiny of a people.

**ORGANIZATION FOR WAR MUST NECESSARILY GROW MORE COMPLEX.**

But it is not alone in material things. The general must know what his own army and that of his enemy are doing

utilizing to the full whatever means industry, science and invention in their ceaseless progress place at their disposal as of use in war. For example, all the resources of chemical industry were employed to produce toxic gases, involving a special organization and personnel in a service ten years ago undreamt of. Today when a general decides to move his army he requires for its transport, standard gauge railways, narrow gauge temporary lines, motor vehicles in plenty, provided, constructed if necessary, maintained and operated with the highest skill even under the strange and forced conditions of war. Clearly such a result only can be secured by an organization that will function from the actual construction of locomotives and cars in the shop to the delivery of supplies to the rail-head and even up to the front lines in the field.

**THE TASK OF ORGANIZATION CONFIDED TO THE GENERAL STAFF.**

To secure the military organization that will produce the proper co-ordination of effort is a task to which the greatest soldiers in Europe through their general staffs have addressed themselves for generations. It was popularly supposed that the German organization represented the last word to be spoken in this connection, but in practice it developed defects many of which doubtless were those inherent in the national mind and character.

A study of the organization of the American Army will be interesting for several reason. General Pershing did not have a detailed scheme of organization which had been developed under peace conditions at Washington, and, the then existing General Staff in the United States Army was not a general staff in a war sense. Accordingly on landing in France General Pershing realized that his first task was to arrange for the organization and supply of the troops that would be sent over. He was able to formulate a scheme of organization based on the lessons of the war and on the peculiar conditions existing in Europe, and to a less extent in the United States, though of course he followed in many respects practices



GENERAL PEYTON C. MARSH, CHIEF OF STAFF, U. S. A.

and he must transmit to his subordinates such parts of that knowledge as will aid them in their efforts. In other words to a single mind there must be joined many eyes, ears, and mouths, subordinate minds trained to work in harmony with the master mind; in short there must be organization, which as an industrial engineer has defined it, is a machine properly to carry out what should be done.

In any army such an organization must inevitably become more complex with time. No longer do the nations of the world when waging war restrict themselves to bows and arrows, guns, or any other classes of weapons, but exert their fullest possible strength,



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

prevailing in the American Service. The general scheme was therefore a composite, and proved very successful.

**G**ENERAL PERSHING ABLE TO DISCARD ALL PRECEDENTS.

As the American Commander-in-Chief had the entire responsibility of the army he necessarily had from the outset his general staff through which he could arrange for its organization,

tively near the scene of hostilities. In fact under General Pershing so far as administration and records were concerned there was established in France practically a War Department leaving to Washington the domestic side of the War operations involved in raising and training troops and munitions supply.

At the head of the General Staff was a Chief-of-Staff, and later a deputy



**MOVING THROUGH THE RUINS TOWARD THE FRONT**

Here is seen the American 3rd Division passing through the ruins of Esnes, northwest of Verdun, in the Department of Meuse, on September 29, 1918. The business of moving a division with its 28,000 men, its artillery, machine-gun carts, supply wagons, water-wagons, rolling kitchens, ambulances, and other paraphernalia, required no little system and organization. U. S. Official

operation and supply. Being free to do as seemed best to him in its organization, General Pershing adopted the strongest elements of the French General Staff (Grand Quartier) and the British General Headquarters, fitting them to the American Army with special reference to the outstanding fact that it was operating so far from home and from government administration and supply agencies, thus requiring rather more administrative and supply organization than was needed by Great Britain and France, where there were the regular war offices and ministries functioning compara-

Chief-of-Staff along, with a Secretary of the General Staff, while there was also at General Headquarters, though not a part of the Staff, the Adjutant General in charge of the records, the Inspector General, the Judge Advocate General or legal adviser, the Chief of Artillery and the Chief of the Tank Corps. The General Staff was subdivided into five groups each with its chief, who was an assistant chief of staff with the rank of brigadier general, and in his appropriate field spoke for the commanding general and with his authority, carrying out his orders and his plans.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE DIVISIONS OF THE GENERAL STAFF IN A GREAT ARMY.

The Administrative Section, devoted to organization and types of equipment for troops, replacements, tonnage, priority of overseas shipments, the auxiliary welfare associations, and cognate subjects, was in charge of a chief known in Army symbol and records as G-1. Under G-2 was the intelligence section, censorship, enemy intelligence, gathering and disseminating information, preparation of maps and all similar subjects. G-3, Operations, was responsible for all strategic studies and plans, movement and employment of combat troops, and the supervision of combat operations. To G-4, Supply, was given the co-ordination of the supply services including Construction and Transport Departments and the operation of the service of supply, and of the hospitalization and the evacuation of the sick and wounded. The important scheme of education and training with its many schools for the various troops and officers was supervised by G-5, Training, who had general direction and co-ordination of education and training.

Through these various groups, both in the period of organization and training and when engaged in actual hostilities, the American General Headquarters, known as G. H. Q. acted, and headquarters eventually were established at Chaumont from which place as a nerve centre went out the orders and plans governing the American Expeditionary Forces.

### THE DIVISION THE UNIT IN THIS ORGANIZATION.

In the army organization scheme worked out by General Pershing and his staff the tactical and administrative unit was the combat division, which was larger than that of the British or the French or German armies, but more suitable for American conditions of training, operation, supply and maintenance. This already has been discussed by General Wood on page 853. The divisions were grouped into Army Corps, and the Army Corps in turn into Field Armies.

The General Staff was reproduced for the field army and on a somewhat less comprehensive basis for the army corps, and the division, where, as can be seen by reference to the tables of organization on page 856, there were three sections instead of five, with G-1 in charge of administration also responsible for supply, or the work of G-4 of the General Staff, while the responsibility for training was assigned to G-3, the chief for operations.

### BRITISH AND FRENCH ELEMENTS IN THE ORGANIZATION.

With a General Staff at its head and provision for organizing and developing combat and supply services, a military machine was developed. It should be noted however, that while we are nominally discussing here the American military machine and organization, the main facts have more than an American bearing. In the first place the fundamental principles of military administration and the ends sought are the same, so that whatever the name of the service or the title of the officer, in each of the armies there were men and organization to do that special work. While organization in the American army was based on the special conditions of that service, yet there was little if any prejudice against adopting radical innovations, and the Americans had the great advantage of consultation and advice from the best generals and staff officers of Great Britain and France, who unreservedly put at General Pershing's disposal their knowledge and experience. Even more than that, realizing the crisis, they naturally wanted the best possible and the best organized American army. As a result it may be said that the organization of the American army not only was the best for it, but also represented the best of modern European military science whatever its source.

### COMBAT TROOPS DEPENDENT UPON THE SERVICES OF SUPPLY.

This new military organization involved not merely the line troops but the successful organization of the services of supply both with the combat units and behind the lines. The distinction between combat troops and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

those of the services of supply, as they were termed in the late war, is one of function rather than of actual service or usefulness. For a division, or for a corps or an army, there must be certain service of supply troops, and the fighting troops are dependent upon the supply and technical troops. Obviously the first line men could fire ammunition only as it was supplied,

### COMBAT TROOPS NOT THE ONLY SOLDIERS IN DANGER.

It must be emphasized here that when troops are organized primarily for non-combat functions, they must not be considered either in military law or in fact non-combatants but soldiers, and further it does not follow that they are not exposed to the same if not greater dangers than the line troops. In fact



BRITISH OUTPOST READING MESSAGE BROUGHT BY DOG

advance only so far as food could follow, change their position only as transportation was available, and so on.

The division therefore must be organized to take care of itself in the field, securing and distributing its supplies and ammunition, establishing and maintaining its means of communication and observation, providing its own shelter and temporary fortifications, using its own transport, and similar functions. In these duties in a single combat division of over 28,000 men some 6,000 men are engaged, while with the corps and the army there were additional supply and technical troops usually of special branches.

the first United States unit to participate in active fighting was a railway construction regiment, the Eleventh U. S. Engineers, then serving with the British Army, who in the attack on Cambrai forsook their tools for rifles and fought so valiantly as to be mentioned by Marshal Haig in his report.

Signal Corps men often established lines of communication under fire, or crawled out in the enemy territory to intercept his lines or tap them for their own purposes. It is quite unnecessary to refer to the surgeons, hospital and ambulance corps men and nurses working in most advanced zones or to the motor transport and train services

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

bringing up ammunition and supplies to the very front lines mid shell fire and bombs from hostile airplanes.

### THE MANIFOLD DUTIES OF ENGINEERS AND SIGNAL CORPS.

In the division the engineer regiment was organized primarily for the construction of field fortifications. But

communication by every practical means within and between the arms of the fighting forces, using night and day visual signals, wire and radio telegraph and telephone, and any other form of communication, so that every headquarters would be in touch with its own units and with each other.



BRITISH MILITARY POLICE CONTROLLING TRAFFIC

this was only one of their duties, as they must attend to the roads over which the advance proceeds, build bridges, lay out camps and make surveys and maps as required, construct field fortifications, shelters and dug-outs of the type required for the special plan, time, or operation. They erect or remove wire entanglements or other obstacles, place or destroy mines, operate search lights, install water supply and lighting systems, and in short do such field construction work as is required in operations and in camps. The construction equipment for building, bridging, and other work was assembled in an engineer train motor or horse drawn that accompanied the division.

Next with the division were the signal corps troops, designed to supply

### THE VARIOUS TRAINS BELONGING TO A DIVISION.

Each division of course had its various trains for supplies and ammunitions; involving motor trucks or animal transport to bring up supplies and ammunition from the dumps or railhead to the front line for issue through the various supply or ordnance officers. These trains were fully organized with a veterinary detachment to look out for the animals, and motor mechanics for the trucks, and would bring up the material from the points of distribution following the lines of traffic communication set down definitely by the staff officer in charge after a study of maps and the country itself and rigorously enforced by another service of like nature, the military police.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The Military Police of the division not only had to preserve order, look out for spies, and prevent straggling, but as mentioned they had the important task of keeping open the appointed routes of communication, often inadequate in number and in quality for the heavy traffic to which they were subjected. The military police served as guides and regulators

keeping camps and men healthy or in restoring to health and security the wounded and sick was most important from a military standpoint. A casualty from disease reduced fighting strength just as much as a bullet.

Manifestly it is impossible in the present compass to enumerate all the administrative officers and supply services that accompanied an American



A VIEW OF THE HARBOR OF BREST

U. S. Official

of traffic and their intelligent handling of the movement of the vast supply and ammunition convoys had much to do with the success of the operations. Of course in billets or camp the military police were responsible for the maintenance of order.

The sanitary train and the medical and other personnel, provided a field hospital for the prompt reception, treatment, and evacuation of the casualties from the battle front, together with such allied activities as ambulance companies with motor and animal transport, supply service, and temporary infirmary for the sick. In this connection it must be remembered that the sanitary work involved in

division in the field, as for example, the adjutant general and the clerical force, the ordnance detachment to make repairs to guns and equipment, the gas officer and the chemical warfare troops when assigned, and so on.

### GENERAL PERSHING'S SCHEME FOR THE SERVICES OF THE REAR.

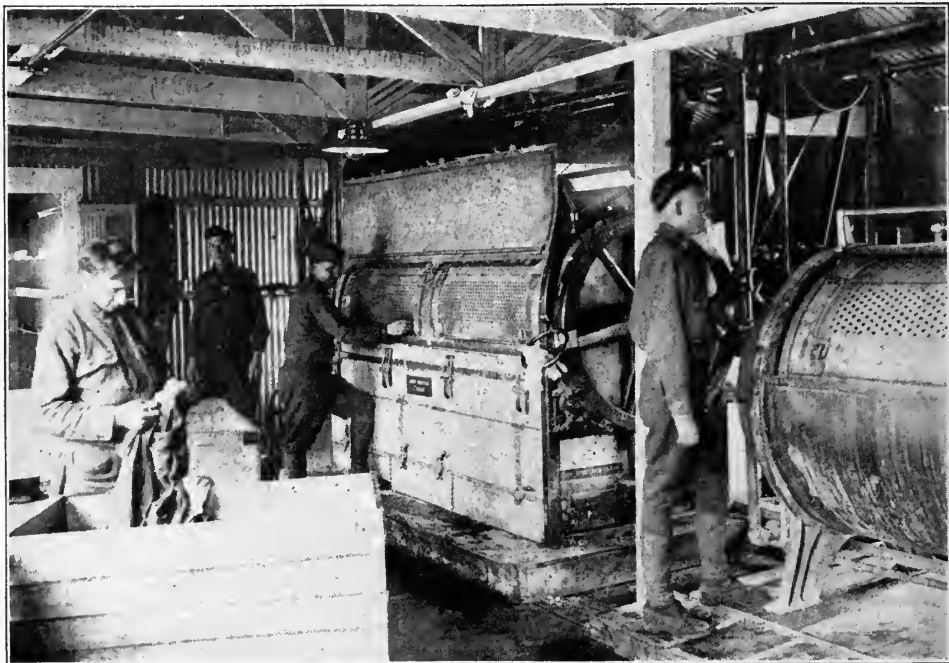
It should be clear however that any body of troops can function only as they are supported from and are in communication with a well provided base being dependent upon external agencies and organizations for regular and special supplies of ammunition, food replacements, and facilities for evacuating and taking care of the casualties.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

This was very early realized by General Pershing, and he developed a scheme of organization for a complete service of the rear, which he cabled to Washington on September 18, 1917, listed item by item the troops considered necessary for the services of supply, including a variety of units, many of which never had existed in the United States Army, but which European ex-

**T**HE SERVICE OF SUPPLY IMPORTANT IN EVERY ARMY.

Therefore an important part of the military machine in all the armies dealt with the essential activities behind the lines, or as its principal functions were the procurement, storage and transportation of supplies it came to be known officially in the American Expeditionary Forces as the



THE CAMP LAUNDRY AT MEHUN

perience had demonstrated necessary or desirable. This arrangement, which was adopted at Washington, clearly recognized that under such conditions as prevailed in Europe, supplies must be brought to the combat troops from bases of comparative safety at a greater or less distance, which could not be supplied by the adjacent territory, but, especially in the case of the British and American armies must be provided from the respective home countries. Consequently there were required for these armies special port facilities, adequate railways to the supply bases, warehouse and storage accommodation, and facilities for the supply of the advanced bases and distribution to the troops in the field.

Services of Supply, usually abbreviated to the initial letters S. O. S. It seemed desirable to General Pershing to relieve his own Headquarters of this concern and accordingly the organization was established officially on February 16th, 1918, as the troops were beginning to come over in quantities, and later in July it was placed under the command of General J. G. Harbord, who had been General Pershing's first Chief-of-Staff and had commanded the Second Division.

This Service of Supply which might be grouped in three main divisions of supplies, munitions, and administration included 11 sections as follows: Quartermaster, Medical Corps, Engineer Department, Ordnance, Signal



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Corps, Air Service, Motor Transport Service, Chemical Warfare, Transportation, Provost Marshal, which was later transferred to General Headquarters, and the General Purchasing Board. Each of these sections was under the command of an officer of the corps or bureau concerned of appropriate rank, usually a major general. The commanding general of

of sick and wounded, etc., between the front and the national bases. But the American Service of Supply was even more, for its activities gradually extended over the whole of France and Great Britain and parts of Italy. In fact a French military critic has compared it to a full ministry such as might have been secured in France by combining the French departments of War, of



AMERICAN FIELD HOSPITAL AT TOURS

Hospitals for American sick or wounded were prepared before any considerable number had been under fire. This is the hospital at Tours and can be recognized by the crosses upon the roofs. U. S. Official

the Services of Supply had a staff corresponding in its three sections to similar sections of the General Staff and was responsible to the Commander-in-chief for the supply of the army. The headquarters of the Service of Supply was located at Tours, a city 145 miles southwest of Paris, on the Loire, and a junction point for several railways from the base ports.

### COMPARISON WITH THE BRITISH AND FRENCH ORGANIZATIONS.

This American Service of Supply corresponded to the Direction Générale de l'Arrière, or rear service of the French Army, which had the supply operations and duties, transportation

Public Works, and Transportation. In Great Britain the War, Munition, and Air ministries possessed wide powers and functions that did not have to be exercised by its army.

In short the Service of Supply was an army in itself and the rank and organization of its officers and men stood for responsibility and discipline no less than in the front line trenches. In many of its offices, shops and stores could be seen the motto, "All the fighting is not done at the front," and if fighting is the overcoming of difficulties this is evidently true. Even in numbers here was an army. On the day of the Armistice there were reported



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

in the Services of Supply of the A. E. F. some 386,000 soldiers, in addition to 31,000 German prisoners and thousands of civilian laborers. But, as has been said, the non-combatant troops went up to the very battle zones. Here there were 160,000, most of whom were engaged in operating the lines of distribution to the troops at the front. The immensity of this entire work can

freight for its supply. Now a portion of this material could be, and some 10,000,000 tons actually was, secured in Europe, but it was early realized that America must provide the bulk of its supply for its armies. Therefore to all practical purposes the base of the United States Army was the American continent. Through the Channel ports and by the railways of Northern France,



### UNLOADING GOODS FOR THE AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES

Sleepy French ports woke to new life during the war. Several which had had little commerce from the beginning of the war until the United States entered became busy places. Labor saving devices were installed to hasten the unloading of supply ships. This shows a portion of the docks at Bassens, near Bordeaux. U. S. Official

be inferred from the fact that the non-combat troops in the American Expeditionary Force never numbered less than 28 per cent, while with the British this ratio was often exceeded. With a maximum strength of the A. E. F. reaching 2,073,877 the actual number of the Services of Supply personnel totaled 668,312 including 23,772 civilian employees on November 11, 1918.

### THE ARMY BASES IN FRANCE AND ELSEWHERE.

The Services of Supply also dealt with vast amounts of material. In round figures an army of 2,000,000 men requires 50,000 tons a day of railway

British supplies were sent forward, while the manufacturing region about Paris was a source of supply for the French, inevitably resulting in an overload of the railway lines from this region to the battle front. The British had magazines or store houses in their home districts with special depots for the army abroad including several home bases and also bases in France. The first of those was at Boulogne and later they were established at Amiens, Havre and St. Nazaire. Consequently the American ports of debarkation and supply bases must be organized so as not to interfere with them.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Port facilities were to be developed requiring the construction of docks, railway roads and buildings. Base sections, nine in number, were established to include territory at and surrounding the principal ports, and from them were transported men, animals, and supplies by sea, rail or inland waterways. These base sections, three of which were outside of France, may be identified both by their numbers and by their headquarters which were

The general plan was to accumulate an allowance of supplies: for 45 days in the base sections, for 30 days in the intermediate, and for 15 days in the advance section, but after the sea had been rendered fairly safe for transports the total time allowance was reduced to 45 days distributed proportionately. From the advance sections supplies were forwarded to the railheads, there to be distributed to the various organizations by motor or animal transport.



CANADIAN AMMUNITION TRAIN GOING TO THE FRONT

located as follows: 1, St. Nazaire, 2, Bordeaux, 3, London, 4, Havre, 5, Brest, 6, Marseille, 7, La Rochelle, 8, Italy, 9, Rotterdam and Antwerp. In these base sections the shipping from America was unloaded and the cargoes stored until required. There was an intermediate storage section nearer the front with headquarters at Nevers, and an advance section extending to the zone of operations. Within this zone many of the earlier divisions were trained and billeted. The headquarters of the advance section was at Neufchâteau, with regulating stations at Is-sur-Tille, Liffolle-Grand, and St. Dizier to maintain a steady flow of supplies.

An American combat division required the equivalent of 25 French railway carloads of supplies daily delivered at a point within reach of motor or horse drawn transportation. In the opposite direction these facilities were employed to remove the wounded from the battle zones and, when conditions permitted, material to be salvaged.

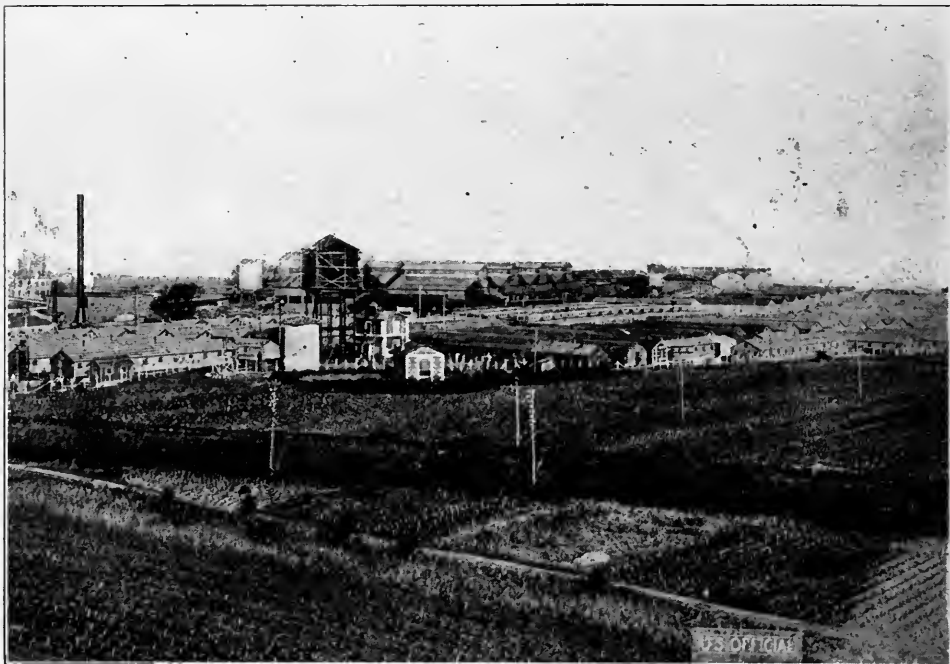
### PREPARATIONS FOR FOUR MILLION MEN IN THE BASE AREAS.

When American troops arrived in Europe the first step was to provide for their debarkation and their movement along with their supplies and extra equipment to training areas. Accordingly port facilities were planned on a scale to provide eventually

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

for an army of 4,000,000 men and included the construction of docks, railroads, warehouses, hospitals, barracks, and stables in base sections where such facilities were either non-existent or inadequate. At the ports themselves some 160 new berths or docking facilities were projected, and about one half of these were completed and in use at the time of the

and its activities. Starting with 2,000,000 square feet of covered storage secured from the French there was actually constructed some 20,000,000 square feet additional of such space. There were hospital buildings and groups, one of which at Mars, with a counterpart at Mesves, a 4000 bed convalescent camp and a base hospital, involved 700 buildings covering a



STATION AT PAULLAC TURNED INTO EMBARKATION CAMP

Armistice. To move troops and materials required new standard gauge railroad track, not so much new lines, for those of the French were available, but for cut-offs and double tracking at congested points of existing systems, and especially adequate switching or storage track and sidings at yards and depots. In this way some 1002 miles of standard gauge track were laid.

Road construction and repair also was undertaken where necessary, as with vast fleets of motor trucks to supplement rail lines, proper highways were a positive necessity for prompt transportation. Building construction undertaken by the engineer troops was as extensive and varied as the army

ground space of 33 acres and provided with the usual utilities of a city such as roads, water, sewerage and lighting.

### SOME UNITS PREVIOUSLY UNKNOWN IN THE AMERICAN ARMY.

For such constructions there were forestry and woodworking regiments, using to a large extent American woodworking machinery, which produced some 200,000,000 feet of lumber, 4,000,000 railroad ties, 300,000 cords of fuel, 35,000 pieces of piling and miscellaneous products. There were quarrying regiments to secure stone for building and use on the roads, while three French cement mills were leased from French owners and operated by American troops. The engineers fur-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

nished the water supply service for the army and also constructed the sewage disposal plants. There was a geological section, a mechanical or power section, and a camouflage section which maintained important shops where the necessary material was turned out mostly by French women, to be installed nearer the front as needed. The engineers also operated search-

### THE DUTIES OF THE DIRECTOR GENERAL OF TRANSPORTATION.

To operate, maintain, and construct all railways and canals under American control together with their necessary appurtenances was the task assigned to the department, and a Director General of Transportation, General W. W. Atterbury, of the Pennsylvania Railroad, was appointed, assisted by



UNITED STATES SOLDIERS PREPARING LUMBER, BORDEAUX

U. S. Official

light service for the front and important advance stations of the S.O.S., in addition to their other duties.

A Transportation Department was organized, as the American army was to operate certain French lines to transport men and supplies to the appointed areas. With the deterioration of the French equipment much repair and replacement were necessary, and the new organization had to operate according to unusual practice and methods. This was a new undertaking as the United States Army never had had a transportation corps as a separate organization and there was no special branch qualified to be expanded for such functions.

a deputy director, engineer of construction, manager of light (narrow gauge or portable) railways, manager of roads, business manager, general manager, and a deputy director with each army commander.

There were construction regiments, operating regiments, and shop regiments, with qualified and trained specialists both among officers and enlisted men, the total transportation personnel at the time of the Armistice amounting to some 2000 officers and 53,000 men. The shop troops assembled for service nearly 1500 standard gauge locomotives and almost 20,000 cars brought over from the United States and repairs were made to 1947 French locomotives

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and 57,385 French cars, thus increasing the available rolling stock of the Allies by these amounts. The operation troops were no less successful under the difficult conditions imposed by foreign methods, but their adaptability was no less conspicuous than their technical skill and resourcefulness. From July 1918 to November 11, of that year, the daily tonnage handled at the port

vice, and railhead supply units, all in charge of specially organized units with qualified officers. Naturally to the Quartermaster's Department came the greatest tonnage (3,606,000 short tons to April 30, 1919,) and the greatest proportion of the supplies shipped from the United States, which were augmented by purchases made in Europe. These supply agencies func-



THE ARTILLERY REPAIR SHOP AT MEHUN

Picture by Greer

terminals increased from 17,000 to 45,000 tons.

### THE ENLARGED FUNCTIONS OF THE QUARTERMASTER'S DEPARTMENT.

Much of the freight requiring transportation was the necessary and routine supplies of the army which was the concern of the Quartermaster corps. In the American Expeditionary Forces its functions were summarized as involved in the payment of personnel and general disbursements, providing fuel, forage, and clothing, maintaining a remount service, laundries and baths, disinfection of clothing, salvage service, quartermaster shops, depots, and storehouses, cold storage and refrigeration, graves registration, garden ser-

tioned so successfully that with the exception of early 1918, when there was some delay in receiving clothing and that furnished was of inferior quality, and for occasional shortages of forage, no army according to General Pershing ever was better provided.

The Chief Quartermaster was at the headquarters of the S. O. S. but with G-4 of each army there was a quartermaster, and likewise with G-1 of each corps and division, and throughout the army and the services in the rear, were supply, labor and other units, such organizations as butchery companies, bakery companies, ice plant and refrigerating companies, fire protection companies, and other special

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

agencies, all of course organized on a military basis and subject to military discipline.

### THE VITAL MILITARY IMPORTANCE OF QUICK COMMUNICATION.

Modern industry deservedly gives high rank to promptness, accuracy, and ease of communication, and its very great importance on the battle front has been mentioned. General

in the zone of advance, besides meteorological, pigeon, and general photographic services. The Signal Corps even maintained a cable across the English Channel and at the close of the War had to its credit 4,000 kilometers (2,485 miles) of telephone and telegraph lines on its own poles and operated a system with 215,500 kilometers (133,657 miles) of line. Many of the best women



LONDON BUS USED AS PIGEON LOFT

The London bus was put to many different uses during the war. Sometimes it transported men, sometimes it was used as sleeping quarters, and here is one transformed into a movable pigeon loft where the winged messengers were housed. Pigeons were of considerable use in spite of the noise and confusion which might well have frightened them.

Headquarters must be in communication not only with the battle front and with the base depots and the training areas, but even with the very seat of Government. In charge of all communications was the Signal Corps whose function it was to supply, install and operate the general telephone and telegraph service throughout the zone of the armies, and thence develop and extend it in connection with new or existing lines to and throughout the rear areas. In addition to the work with the combat units there were radio, press and intercept stations in a complete radio network maintained

operators in the United States were in the telephone service abroad.

Fighting armies do not confine themselves to railway lines but distribute themselves through the country at large. To-day in war as in industry the gasoline driven motor vehicle has an important rôle ranging all the way from the conveying of troops and supplies along roads to the handling of heavy cannon by tractors. It seemed appropriate to make motor transport, a special department of the S. O. S., as indeed it was also of the War Department, back in the United States. In the zone of the S. O. S.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

this service controlled the use of motor vehicles, giving them technical supervision, and training chauffeurs and a skilled personnel including repair mechanics in large numbers.

By arrangement with the French it was possible for the troops to live in the buildings of the districts in which they were training or operating, and accordingly a Renting, Requisition, and Claims service was established to procure billeting areas, supervise the quartering of troops, and to have general charge of the renting, leasing, and requisitioning of land and buildings required by the American Army. Inasmuch as this service was given authority to settle claims at once it facilitated the business operations of the Army and made progress smoother.

### THE IMPORTANT DUTIES ASSIGNED TO ARMY ORDNANCE.

To supply the soldier with munitions, and specially ammunition, is a leading function of the supply service, for the fighting man is a fighting man only so long as his weapons act effectively. An individual or unit can transport but a limited and soon expended amount of ammunition, and rifles, machine guns, and the heavier ordnance are likely to require repairs due to wear and tear and inevitable failures. This was the function of the Army Ordnance, a service more closely confined to material of war than the British Army Ordnance. Supplies were collected and assembled in base depots, intermediate storage depots, and advance depots in accordance with the general supply scheme. In advance of these were army depots and dumps sufficiently near to the battle area to permit of direct delivery to the troops. This arrangement insured adequate supplies of ammunition and it flowed forward almost automatically to the points needed. In the First Army alone some 8,000 soldiers were engaged in ammunition supply.

The great base ordnance shop which the A. E. F. had in operation but not altogether completed at Mehun, was to have a capacity of relining monthly 1245 guns ranging from 75mm. to 155mm calibre, the carriage shop was

to repair approximately 2,000 ordnance gun vehicles, while the small arms shop was to care for 150,000 rifles, 500 pistols and 20,000 machine guns a month. At the advance shops was special equipment for light repair work while the mobile repair shops, which were ingenious combinations of tools mounted on motor trucks and trailers, could handle repair work in the field. One of these latter on the Soissons front was able to put into action against the retreating Germans 28 pieces of their own artillery ranging from 77 to 210 mm in calibre. In another case American guns intentionally put out of service on a withdrawal, were recaptured and made again useful after a few days by one of these outfits. "Fit to fight" applies to a gun as well as to a man, and a repair shop attached to the 35th Division had a record of not having a gun out of action for over five minutes. All kinds of repairs were made by these shops ranging from watches and typewriters to steam rollers and motor vehicles.

### THE AIRCRAFT SERVICE AND THE TANK SERVICE.

In aviation the Service of Supply behind the lines involved the procurement of airplanes and material from the Allies, and the training of aviators, observers, and mechanics, as well as the preparations that were being made to handle material from the United States, including the installation of the armament. Of course the actual combat, bombing, and observation work was done in connection with troops on the firing front, but for administrative purposes the Aircraft Service was attached to the S. O. S. Supply and repair work on a vast scale was established as at the aviation base of Romorantin for assembly and repair, at the acceptance park at Orly, and at various advance points. There were also balloon companies using some 295 balloons.

The organization for supply, maintenance and repair of tanks was not entirely effected nor was the projected equipment secured at the time of the Armistice, but the organization was ready to take over the American built



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

machines as they arrived, which was not until after the Armistice. These complicated machines, even if they did reproduce primitive ideas, required many mechanics and supply and repair agencies.

### **THE DUTIES OF THE CHEMICAL WARFARE SERVICE.**

Comparatively few men might actually release a gas wave from special projectors, or as was later the practice, fire explosive projectiles filled with toxic gases, operate smoke screens, or flame throwers, but to provide such appliances and materials meant a well organized host of specialists. In fact so important was this work, that what was once a branch of the Engineer Corps, the gas service, was made a separate service, and later on March 5, 1918, was organized at Tours as the Chemical Warfare Service, with three main divisions, military, technical, and production and supply, for which shortly before the Armistice an increase up to 1315 Officers and 17,205 enlisted men had been provided though not actually realized. This service had charge of training at the gas school regimental and battalion gas officers selected from line organizations, and also the providing of gas masks and instruction in their use, as well as in the detection of gas.

The supply of filling materials for gas projectiles was of course important, as at the time of the Armistice 20 per cent of all projectiles made in the United States up to 220 mm were filled with gas and this proportion was to be increased to 25 per cent after January 1, 1919. The First Gas Regiment took an important part in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. The Chemical Warfare Service maintained important chemical central depots for gas masks and other supplies at Montoir, St. Sulpice, and Gièvres. There were also laboratories, experimental fields, and a school for the Chemical personnel.

### **THE MEDICAL DEPARTMENT NEVER BEFORE SO IMPORTANT.**

The natural duty and function of the Medical Department to save and preserve human life and health, can be considered in its military and economic

bearing quite as much as from the humanitarian standpoint. The greater the effective strength of the army the more powerful it naturally is, and this can be secured only by a personnel, organization, and equipment that provides the best of care and attention for the individual. In addition to providing personnel and supplies for the combat troops, an important duty of the Medical Department with the S. O. S., there were many and complex problems behind the lines. Hospitalization was a single important item, involving as it did adequate and even excess preparation for possible demands, illustrated perhaps by the statement that on November 12, 1918, the number of patients in hospitals reached a maximum of 193,026, and that there were in all 214,467 men evacuated in the zone of the armies, and of these 11,281 were sent on trains to base ports. The handling of these wounded meant vast numbers of ambulances and hospital trains. In this work of course the Army Nurse Corps participated performing their special duties under war conditions. The Dental corps was also an important agency for health as were various sanitary units.

### **HOW THE MILITARY BOARD OF ALLIED SUPPLY WAS DEVELOPED.**

All of the supply services mentioned naturally were called upon to make extensive purchases in Europe and at an early date General Pershing created a General Purchasing Board to control and co-ordinate purchases and contracts made by the various services and to act in co-operation with all the Allies. This work under a General Purchasing Agent developed, and led to an Inter-Allied Board for Purchasing and later to the Military Board of Allied Supply in the unification of military supplies and utilities for the various armies was secured.

### **THE IMPORTANT DUTIES OF THE INTELLIGENCE DEPARTMENT.**

While not concerned with supplies or material things especially there was another very important element of the Army machine. One section of the General Staff under a Chief, G-2,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

was devoted to intelligence, but G-2 also was a feature of the Army, Corps, and Division Staffs, and every unit from the battalion up had its intelligence detachment varying in its personnel and equipment. The intelligence office utilized all the resources of the technical troops and services.

Observations from aircraft were transmitted to the artillery and assisted

significant information was worked up into summaries for General Headquarters, summaries for each division, summaries of general intelligence, and also such special or other information as should be brought to particular or general attention. Results of investigations by spies, information from the Allies, and other material all had to be considered for advantageous use.



GERMAN TELEPHONE CENTRAL NEAR THE FRONT

A large proportion of all orders given during the contest passed over telephone or telegraph wires. The region near the front was threaded with a network of wires which lay on the ground or under it, a hut camouflaged, a cellar or a cave served as a central office, and often was under fire.

Henry Ruschin

in their ranging. Enemy wireless might be intercepted by Signal Corps men, and even their wire lines were tapped or intercepted, by various ingenious devices. The raid into the enemy's lines of course carried with it excitement and naturally varied in its results as well as in its methods. In the larger organizations all the available means were provided for by appropriate detachments organized for sound and flash ranging, radio interception stations, and other methods by which the enemy positions and the location and nature of his artillery might be placed. From whatever sources obtained all

Not the least important intelligence activity in the American Expeditionary Forces was the preparation and issue of maps, for which facilities existed at the base printing plant and at General Headquarters. Base maps were prepared and mobile printing outfits accompanied corps and army headquarters upon which any special features as revealed by the intelligence service could be printed at short notice. In fact just before and during an action combat maps were provided, so that often each individual officer participating might receive one. During the active operations over 5,000,000

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

maps were printed and issued by the American army.

### CARE TAKEN TO PRESERVE THE RECORD OF THE INDIVIDUAL SOLDIER.

In the general conception of an army as a mass the individual is apt to be overlooked, but that is not the official point of view for each officer and man as well as organization figures in an elaborate series of records. The Adjutant General's Department had its Statistical Division to keep a record of the location, duties, health and status of every individual in the military service, as well as the location and strength of units. At Bourges was located the Central Records Office where reports from the battle front, evacuation and base hospitals, convalescent-leave areas, reclassification camps, and base ports were received and prepared for transmission to Washington. General Pershing tells us that each of 299,599 casualties was considered an individual case, and of the men classified as "missing in action,"—14,000 at signing of the Armistice—there were but 22 on August 31, 1919. The Adjutant General's office not only printed and distributed all orders from General Headquarters, but had charge of the mail, maintaining a motor dispatch service with 20 carrier routes over 2300 miles of road. A Military Postal Express Service was organized to handle all mail and operated 169 fixed and mobile post offices and railway post offices.

To assist the Commander-in-Chief and General Headquarters in ascertaining the general condition and operation of the forces and to furnish an independent agency to investigate and report there was the Inspector General's Department, covering the activities of the entire American Expeditionary Forces.

### MILITARY JUSTICE AND THE PROVOST MARSHAL GENERAL.

The army of 2,000,000 men had its internal and external legal problem requiring the services of lawyers, especially those versed in military law not merely for courts martial and military investigations, but for business matters and points of commercial

intercourse with foreign governments and citizens. This was the field of the Department of Military Justice under the Judge Advocate General.

The maintenance of order within its own organization would seem a very natural function for an army, but it has been found that a special body for this purpose, especially where individuals and units were off duty, was desirable. Accordingly the Provost Marshal General's Department was organized later functioning under the First or Administrative Section of the General Staff. The principal division of this department was the Military Police, which became a very important and useful service and was increased in numbers to one per cent of the strength of the A.E.F. There were provost marshals and military police for armies, corps, and divisions for sections of the S. O. S., in charge of villages occupied by American troops, and cities in which they were either passing or stationed. This department also had prisoner of war escort companies, a criminal investigation department, and the circulation department. The result of these activities was general good order and well regulated traffic.

The various fields of activity of the more important sections of the S. O. S. and General Headquarters going to make up the army machine have been summarized separately but it must not be inferred that these were disconnected and unrelated. All had to be operated together and the most complete harmony was naturally the underlying basis. A single order issued from G. H. Q. might set into motion simultaneously all of the various agencies we have mentioned besides others, and upon their prompt functioning might and did depend the complete success of the contemplated movement. Not only in action but in rest, there was the extraordinary system which alone could co-ordinate, correlate, and make effective such diverse elements. Truly there was the system, but in the system there was the individual, and whether he was on the front line or back in a supply office or storehouse, he was doing his part, necessary and effective. The Army

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

overseas had its organization, but it also had in it the individuals whose efforts were crowned by results.

### THE PART PLAYED BY THE OPERATIONS SECTION OF THE GENERAL STAFF.

The methods of organizing, administering and supplying the army have been explained and there remains to be described the workings of that Section of the General Staff which deployed the

concentration in the desired region and gave to the army headquarters concerned general instructions for the proposed attack. During the battle, G-3 at G. H. Q., relieved the army of exhausted or reduced divisions, sending them to rest areas or into the line on quiet fronts, and turned over to the army fresh or reconstituted divisions to maintain the battle. While every



A CONCERT HALL AT VERDUN USED AS A SALVAGE DEPOT

troops against the enemy. G-3, or the Operations Section at G. H. Q., made the studies and prepared the plans of campaign for the approval of the Commander-in-Chief. With the approved plan or policy as a basis, G-3 controlled all movements of combat troops in France, brought about the necessary

branch or department of the organization of the A. E. F., was essential, all were, in effect, subordinate to the purpose of the Operations Section of the General Staff, which placed the troops on the battle field and directed them against the enemy, the ultimate purpose of an army.



On Italy's Alpine Front

## CHAPTER LXX

# Italy's Hour of Triumph

## ITALY STANDS FIRM AGAINST ATTACK, AND IN TURN DESTROYS THE AUSTRIAN ARMIES

**I**N the twelve-month between November, 1917, when, panting, shaken, half-stunned, Italy gathered together her forces to hold the foe where he stood, and November, 1918, when she lifted her head, weary but victorious, to see the last of the exhausted enemy staggering back across her war-racked borders, the Austro-Italian front was not the most conspicuous sector of the European battle-field; but the significance of what happened there must not be overlooked nor underrated.

### ITALY COMES TO REALIZE THE EXTENT OF ALLIED ENDEAVOR.

However, in that earlier November, clouds of depression hung low. Loss of precious miles and of valuable stores of war material, the reversal of months of indescribable effort, loomed large before the immediate vision. Yet, withal, there came to Italy, in that black hour, a new and sustaining sense of having part in a great united movement. With Sir Douglas Haig engaging German reserves at Cambrai, with British and French troops marching across the plains of Lombardy and Venetia, with two Allied commanders of proven skill and ability, General Plumer and General Fayolle, lending support and advice, with the American Red Cross bringing instant relief for sudden necessities, the army and the civil population began to have some

realization of the actual extent of the Allied organization. And their own spirit, as we have seen, was braced by failure itself and aroused to the utmost endeavor.

### HOW ONE BRIGADE SHOWED ITS DETERMINATION.

As an example of such heroic response to a supreme demand, after exhausting and disheartening labors, take the attitude of the survivors of the Calabria Brigade in the Monte Tomba sector, late in November. An eye-witness gives the picture. They were, he says, "completely worn out, red-eyed, and stumbling as they marched. But they knew what they had done and they were proud of it. Think what they had done. For twelve days, they had marched with all their impedimenta, down from the mountains they had held inviolate. Then they had turned and fought, at once, on a new, unprepared line. They had slept in the open, with only one blanket apiece. The rain had beaten on them and the frosts had chilled them. When they were not fighting they were digging, and hot food reached them once a day at most. But they never flinched. And at the end of a long struggle that had so fearfully thinned their ranks they answered once more the call to attack, and crowned their efforts with victory."

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE ITALIANS STRENGTHEN THEIR POSITION IN THE MOUNTAINS.

Around the gateways of the north, where the armies had fallen back to the last ridges of the plateau, vigilance could never be relaxed; and there, as we have noted in Chapter XLVII, the positions had been strengthened in December and January, to prevent the Austrians from moving down into the plains when snows cut off their communications in the rear. The French by their success on Monte Tomba (in the Monte Grappa section) and by their drive on the Piave, east of the mountain, had forced the enemy back from the salient threatening the region of Montebelluna and Treviso. A second gateway had been made secure when the Italians in the Valstagna section established a firm footing upon Col del Rosso, Col d'Echele, Monte di Val Bella and other heights. Valstagna stands at the junction of the Frenzela Torrent with the Brenta River, the valley leading thence down to Bassano. (Refer to maps on p. 779 and p. 1179).

February and March brought heavy falls of snow, with cloudy skies and much mist. Aside from minor raids and artillery bombardments there was little active performance except by airmen. German bombing squadrons had joined the Austrians; British and some French aviators had come to reinforce the Italians. These Allied fliers devoted their efforts to military raids upon railway junctions, encampments, and aerodromes, while the enemy made attack after attack of wanton destruction upon Padua, Venice and other towns on the Venetian plains. After suffering under more than forty air bombardments, Venice, on the night of February 26, was visited by a raid that lasted for eight hours, the machines (as many as fifty) passing over in waves and dropping, in all, more than three hundred bombs. Inevitably, much damage resulted, and yet "the escapes were extraordinary." The finest treasures remained uninjured. Before summer had set in, the Italians and their allies were dominant in the air.

### ITALIANS ABLE TO ASSIST ON THE WESTERN FRONT.

Interchanges of experience and information were taking place, meanwhile, among the officers of the British, French and Italian forces in their new conjunction. In particular, as Sir Herbert Plumer reported, the British were taking pains "to illustrate the value of counter-battery work" learned in France and the Italians were eagerly receptive. As the strain on the French front increased, various shifts were made. General Plumer returned to Ypres before the middle of March, to be succeeded in Italy by Lord Cavan. "If anyone could have replaced General Plumer, it was Lord Cavan." Three French divisions, two British divisions, and, later, the Italian Second Army Corps were transferred to France. On May 10, the Government published a report that 250,000 Italian troops had been concentrated there.

In Italy itself re-organization and improvements in army conditions were going forward, and, while results were not uniform, real gains had been made. At least parts of the army were better cared for. This was not accomplished without sacrifice on the part of the people of Italy. In spite of cold weather and a disastrous epidemic of influenza, they gave up all they could of food and blankets to share with their brothers on the fighting front. Coal was not to be had for private use, that winter; and the supply for manufacturing purposes was scanty, high-priced and poor in quality. Nevertheless, largely through the energy of the Ansaldo Company, field artillery and other equipment were turned out in surprising quantities. When needed, the supplies were on hand in abundance.

### AGREEMENT IS REACHED WITH THE SLAVS OF AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.

The Congress of the Oppressed Nationalities of Austria-Hungary, held at Rome in April and resulting in the Pact of Rome, emphasized the ideas of "common suffering," "common aims," and a "common enemy," setting aside for future consideration the difficult problems of territorial settle-





#### A HEARTY WELCOME FOR THE BRITISH IN VENICE

The much-fed and much-photographed pigeons of Saint Mark's, during the weeks when Venice lay dark and partly deserted, missed the familiar attentions of tourists, even of the regular inhabitants. There is nothing half-hearted about the greeting they are giving these new-found British friends.



#### A CELLAR REFUGE IN PADUA

The last three nights of December 1917 were marked by air raids upon Padua. The number of killed and injured was astonishingly low, especially during the third raid, which lasted six hours. The damage to buildings was extensive. The picture shows Paduans sheltered in the vaults under the palace, thrown open to the people by the Countess Papafava.

N. Y. Times



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ment. The immediate outcome was a joining of Italian and Jugo-Slav forces in systematic propaganda work, carried out largely through ex-prisoners belonging to the oppressed races, and the appearance of former subjects of the Hapsburgs in Italian uniforms with the Italian fighting force.

By the decree of the Inter-Allied Supreme Council of War at Abbé-

Giuseppe vaguely felt that he was a part of it, while the enemy was fighting against the future. By the time that the Austrians tardily launched their great offensive, the Italian soldiers had an idea that their own morale was at least as good as the enemy's. And in military morale there is nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so."

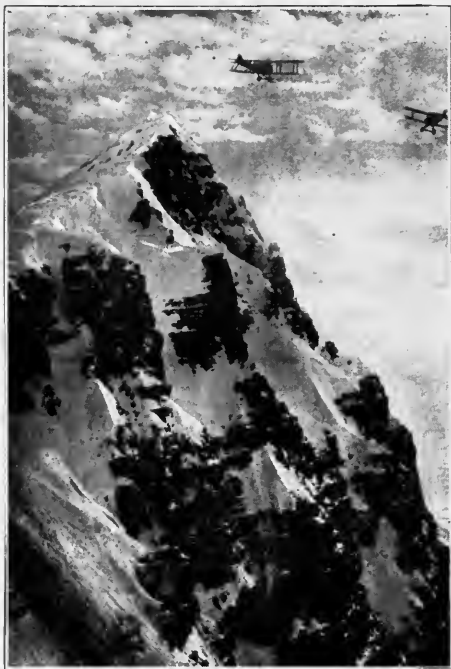
### GENERAL DIAZ WAITS FOR THE PROMISED AUSTRO-GERMAN ASSAULT.

The Italian General Staff, well aware that the enemy were planning to confirm the undermining work begun at Caporetto by some stroke to be dealt after the snows should melt, gave careful attention to indications all along the front. Concentration of new hostile units around Lake Garda seemed to foreshadow a drive from the Trentino, either west of the lake in the direction of Brescia and the metallurgic centre or east across the Astico River and the Sette Comuni (Seven Communes) and so down the Brenta River. Naturally, there was reason for including the Piave front in the speculation, too.

A month before the Austrian offensive started, two more gateways to the plains were effectively blocked. On May 10, Alpine Arditi by "a wonderful feat of military and gymnastic valor" captured Monte Corno, lying between Vallarsa and the great Pasubio massif, and commanding the opening from Rovereto to Vicenza. And on May 15, Monte Asolone, between the Brenta River and Monte Grappa was partly recovered. Both these mountains, or rather plateaux, had been strongly fortified by the enemy. Toward the end of the month two other successful ventures were made at the extreme ends of the front,—one among the glacial snows and jagged rocks of the Adamello sector, the other on the flat, watery plain at Capo Sile.

### COMMANDER RIZZO'S ASTONISHING FEAT IN THE ADRIATIC.

Yet another cheering and almost incredible success, was accomplished, in the Adriatic, on the night of June 8-9, by Commander Rizzo when he and a companion, cruising in motor



PASUBIO, 7000 FEET IN AIR

Pasubio, guarding Vallarsa, "redeemed" and held through the war by Alpini, "saving Italy in May 1916 and November 1917," is here the theatre of an air duel.

ville on May 3, the Italian front was made officially the right wing of the Allied battle line and included under the supreme command of General Foch.

These developments, in the words of Mr. Trevelyan, "went well with the ever-increasing importance of America, in the mind's eye of the Italian soldier. The new National Internationalism of Mr. Wilson and his Fourteen Points vaguely adumbrated a broader outlook and a brighter age ahead, beginning with a better chance of winning the war. There seemed a new tide in the world's affairs, and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

boats, attacked two large Austrian battleships escorted by a group of destroyers. Rizzo's two torpedoes took effect on the ship he attacked, and a depth-charge dropped in the path of a pursuing destroyer sank that as well. The second battleship was damaged but not sunk. The two bold sailors escaped unharmed.

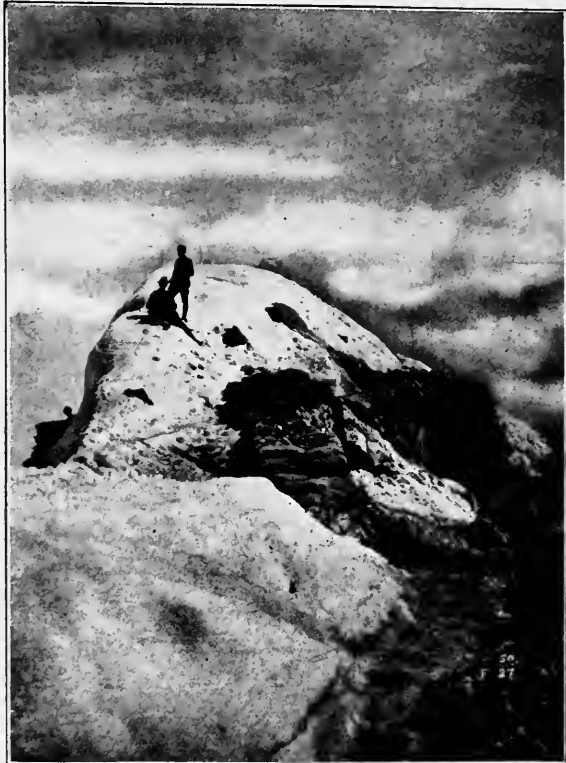
The expected Austrian offensive, which did not begin until the middle of June, had been ordered by the German Command to draw off Italian units and perhaps others from the French front. Moreover, it was calculated to relieve the increasing desperation of the Austro-Hungarian situation, where political dissension, starvation, mutinies and desertions endangered discipline. This was to be a "hunger offensive." The food and plunder of the Lombard plain were set before the soldiers as a reward for victory. Relying upon the "infiltration" tactics that had compassed the fall of Caporetto, and underrating the fighting strength of Italy, the enemy counted upon breaking through at some weak spot in a short time.

### GENERAL DIAZ PROVES HIMSELF AN OFFICER OF ABILITY.

But General Diaz, made wary by experience and instructed by General Foch, was ready for the German plan of attack, his line arranged to receive the blow with as little harm as possible and to deliver immediate counter-attacks. Besides, all officers, now, were alert for signs of panic and were prepared to meet it. One explanation of the operations as they eventually worked out is that General Diaz used his reserves with rare skill, while the Austrians failed in the manipulation of the large supply of reserves at their command. They were letter-perfect, as it were, in the details of the German tactics which had been effective at the Somme, March 21, and which they were to imitate, but they had not grasped

the principle and lacked the spirit and initiative to use their instructions to best advantage.

The disposition of the forces on the Italian front was as follows:—west of the Trentino the Seventh Army under Tassone, with the Sixth Army under Montuori at their right; east of the



### ON THE ADAMELLO HEIGHTS

In April 1916, the Alpini won the glacial heights of Adamello, securing range over Val Giudicaria and the Trentino. Near by the feint attack was made by Austria in June 1918.

Trentino salient, and across the Asiago plateau, the First Army, with Pecori-Giraldo, including the French 12th Corps and the British 14th Corps under Lord Cavan (the latter, transferred from the Montello in March); in the Grappa section, the Fourth Army, whose commander was Giardino, succeeding de Robilant; on the Upper Piave and the Montello, a new Second Army, under Pennella; and along the river to the sea, the Duke of Aosta's Third Army; while the Fifth Army, under the command of Morone, was held in reserve.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE AUSTRIAN PLAN EXPECTED TO YIELD QUICK RETURN.

Of the enemy's armies, those on the Piave line, under the direction of General Boroëvic, included some of the best Hungarian regiments and Slav troops. On the northern line, Conrad von Hötzendorff held general command over troops that were chiefly German-speaking. The plans of the offensive were not unknown to General Diaz, for secrecy was impossible where desertions were so continuous as among the Austro-Hungarian forces. While Verona and Venice were ultimate objectives, Bassano and Treviso were to be reached at one step by means of thrusts driven in upon the Asiago Plateau, the Montello heights, and the Piave front between the Montello and the sea, especially along the line of the railway running from Udine to Vicenza. Indeed, allotments of quarters in the houses of Treviso had already been made; and upon prisoners taken during the battles, postcard maps were found which bore the following timetable marked upon the route prescribed:—"June 15, halt at Treviso. June 16, occupation of Venice."

A preliminary attack, on June 13, around the Tonale Pass may have been intended as a diversion; but the region is so little suited for an offensive of any extent that the blow, although successful at first, caused no real concern and was of practically no consequence.

### THE EXPECTED AUSTRIAN ATTACK IS FINALLY DELIVERED.

At the moment chosen for the opening bombardment, three o'clock on the morning of June 15, the artillery preparation began; but, for almost three hours previous, Italian batteries had already been at work on both sides of the Brenta River. By thus anticipating the attack, they succeeded in interrupting the Austrian formation for the advance in that section. The Austrian guns, however, spoke all the way from Canove (west of Asiago) to the mouth of the Piave, heralding the inception of two separate and simultaneous battles—one in the mountains, one on the river front. It was a serious diffi-

culty of the Austrian position that tactical communication between the two sectors could not readily be compassed. Had the offensive been successfully co-ordinated in this respect, the Italians would have been driven from the hills and their whole eastern line enveloped. As it was, their first positions along the entire front were lost in the early hours of fighting; and the remainder of the battle (or, rather, battles) consisted of individual attacks and counter-attacks in the area between the first and second lines of defense, contesting the possession of that territory.

General von Hötzendorff's attack, which covered a front of somewhat less than twenty miles, from Monte Grappa westward across the Brenta River and the Asiago Plateau, was pushed most heavily on the west side of the river. His gains, however, even there were not extended beyond those of the first day. The lightly-held Italian advance line from Monte di Val Bella to Col del Rosso yielded at first, but counter-attacks began at midday, and by the third day of the conflict almost every point had been re-occupied. On the sentinel heights across the Frenzela valley, meanwhile, the Alpini, in white overalls, amid snow tossed and churned by ceaseless bombardment, held steadfastly. Farther west, near Asiago, sudden pressure imperiled one of the British positions for a time, but a quick transfer of reserves from the Italian and British corps on its flanks, checked the drive in that section. The Austrians then found themselves in an awkward pocket from which they eventually retired in disorder under furious counter-attack by the British.

### THE ATTACK IN THE WEST BREAKS DOWN AFTER THREE DAYS.

While the First Army—Italian, British and French contingents—was thus valiantly pressing back the flood of invasion, the Fourth Army was sturdily meeting it in the Monte Grappa section east of the Brenta. There, too, some immediate gains were made by the enemy, so that he was able to look down into the Brenta Valley; but excellent use of reserves and prompt

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

counter-attacks quickly reversed the situation and pushed back the foe upon his old lines. The Austrian drive in the mountains had proved a failure almost before the end of the first day. After three days it was abandoned. The offensive had been turned back when it had barely broken over the border.

On the Montello and down the Piave where the front extended about twenty-five miles, the struggle was more desperate and lasted longer, although its outcome was no more fortunate for the armies of invasion—in this case, the army of the Archduke Joseph and the old army of the Isonzo with General Wurm, both under the supreme command of Boroevic. Muffling the Italians on the right bank of the river with smoke and gas and tear-shells, the Austro-Hungarian troops crossed in boats and on rafts, drew over pontoons, established bridgeheads and built bridges at various places, before they could be checked. At Nervesa, leading to the Montello; at Fagare where the Treviso-Udine railway crosses; and at San Dona, which stands at the head of the Delta, were the principal crossings. South of San Dona the enemy had held the Delta since November, and now on nearly a nine-mile front they went over the old Piave stream, the Sile, into the lagoon district guarding Venice. At the other end of the line, the Archduke Joseph was well up on the Montello, the first day, June 15. On the seventeenth he extended his foothold. "Infiltration" worked well along the Piave, and Boroevic hoped by pressing upon both flanks of General Diaz's force to turn them.

### THE ITALIAN RESERVES SAVE THE DAY IN THE EAST.

But again the Italian reserves were thrown in speedily and with skill. They

came from the mountains, across the plain, in Fiat lorries and other conveyances. Bersaglieri *ciclisti* hurried here or there to the spots that were most threatened. Italian guns broke down the bridges over which great Austrian guns were to have moved, so



THE DUKE AND DUCHESS OF AOSTA

The Duke of Aosta, cousin of the King, commanded the Third Army, whose successes are a tribute to his leadership. The Duchess won great love and admiration as an organizer and head of war nursing. She, too, proved a born leader, both wise and tireless.

International Film

that the offensive had to go on without the support of heavy artillery. Then came the floods swelling the Piave floating down logs from the upper reaches, breaking bridges from their foundations, and making communication between the shores almost impossible, so that hydroplanes were used

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

for conveying food to the hungry enemy troops on the west bank. The Italian Second and Third Armies, beginning to counter-attack, pressed the Archduke's army to the edge of the Montello and General Wurm's men to the very brink of the stream at Zenson and other points. On the twenty-first, the Austrian left flank was turned. In the Delta the Austrian positions were now submerged, offering new channels for Italian naval floats.

On the night of June 22-23 a definite counter-offensive was launched, and that same night the enemy retreat across the river began. The following day, General Diaz issued a communiqué announcing: "From Montello to the sea the enemy, defeated and pursued by our brave troops, is crossing the Piave in disorder." The withdrawal, however, was more orderly than might have been anticipated, for the flood subsided as suddenly as it had risen and the retreat was skilfully directed. The plight of the troops waiting to cross was harrowing enough, "gathered," as a witness writes, "in dismal groups on the west bank seeking a ferry—like the souls described by Dante on the banks of the Acheron appealing to Charon for passage." There they were harassed by cavalry, by machine-gun fire and by bombardments from the air, where the Allied aviation squadrons included the pioneer American corps.

On July 6, the last of the enemy had left the right bank of the Piave, while in the mountains not only had the forfeited positions been recovered but raids had been made into Austrian territory. The Delta, too, was at last cleared, and Venice had been freed from danger.

### WHAT THE OFFENSIVE HAD COST THE DUAL EMPIRE.

For the Central Powers the offensive had been overwhelmingly costly in men, material and morale. The Austro-Hungarian losses are estimated to have been between 150,000 and 200,000, while the Italians lost about 90,000. More than 20,000 prisoners and many guns had been given up, and the hoped-for food supplies had not been won.

Yet at the outset of the battles, seventy Austro-Hungarian divisions had been available (fifty-nine already at the front and eleven more on the way); and when the attack had broken down, there were still twenty-five divisions in reserve that had not been used. Nor had ample equipment been wanting. In spite of these assets, the offensive power of the Austrian ally had received its final blow. Henceforth, Germany could look for no help from that quarter.

Cool facts upon a printed page may fail to convey their full import. Some pages should glow with letters of flame. Such a page for Italy is that which tells of her brave recovery and her significant triumph. Not to Italy alone, but to the overstrained spirit of the whole Allied world, in the summer of 1918, the news of that victorious defense brought high relief and hope,—voiced in the message sent to Signor Orlando by Mr. Lloyd George for the British War Cabinet. "This great success," he said, "has been a deep source of encouragement to the Allies. Coming as it has at the most fateful hour of the whole war, it is a good augury that the alliance of free nations will ere long free the world once for all from the military domination which has threatened it so long."

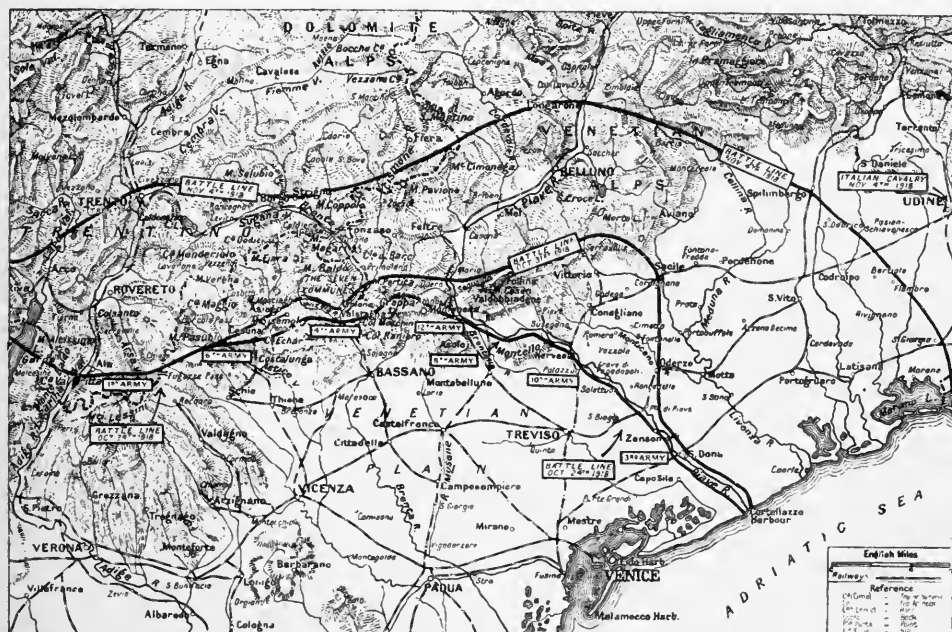
### THE ITALIANS NOW PREPARE TO TAKE THE OFFENSIVE.

The Italian counter-offensive had not been fully effective because it coincided with the enemy's retreat across the Piave. The river, which had been a defense, then became a barrier. Through the remainder of the summer and the early fall, the Austro-Italian front was inactive, waiting for the time to be ripe for a decisive move on this, the right flank of Foch's long line. Only, certain strategic positions, chiefly in the mountains, were added to the gains already secured. When, in October, the call came, General Diaz revealed to the army commanders the plans for the offensive about to begin. The readjustments in army positions, made by way of preparation, are plainly indicated on the accompanying map. It will be noted that Lord Cavan had

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

been asked to command the Tenth Army, which included two British divisions; and that the French general, Graziani, was at the head of the Twelfth Army, in which one French division had its place. In all, the armies of General Diaz numbered fifty-one Italian divisions, three British, two French, and one Czecho-Slovak,

services, and showed a stamina under enormous handicaps at least as great as Germany's own. Marvelous is the power of a military machine and a long tradition of discipline. It was the army which had always been the one true force of unity in the Empire." Again, as in 1848, the fate of that army hung upon the outcome of a battle; for, "in



ARMY POSITIONS AND BATTLE LINES IN THE LAST OFFENSIVE

The 4th Army, under Giardino, opened the attack in the Monte Grappa sector on October 24. The 10th Army, under Lord Cavan, the 12th Army, under Graziani, and the 8th Army, under Cavaglia, advanced across the Piave on October 27. The 3rd Army, under the Duke of Aosta, entered the battle on October 30. In the Trentino was the 6th Army, with the 1st and the 7th (the latter, around the Tonale Pass). By November 4 they were over the watershed as far as Trent, while the eastern battle line pushed beyond the Tagliamento.

with one American regiment added during the battle.

The enemy strength amounted to between sixty and seventy divisions, still well-organized in spite of the depression resulting from the defeat in June and the disintegrating forces under which the Hapsburg empire was crumbling. By October 24, 1918, German Austria, Hungary and the Slav states north and south had recognized that their false bond of government could no longer exist. Only in the army were they represented as a unit. In the words of Mr. John Buchan, "Out of a museum of antagonistic races Austria had created an army which was of first-rate quality in many of its

time of revolution the winning or losing of battles counts not less but more than in times of stable government."

### WHAT THE ITALIAN ATTACK WAS PLANNED TO ACCOMPLISH.

The general plan, briefly stated, was; a strong holding action between the Brenta and the Piave (on the Grappa massif) by the Fourth Army, aided by the Seventh, First and Sixth Armies enveloping the Trentino, and a sudden break through the enemy lines on the middle Piave by the Twelfth, Eighth and Tenth Armies. Upon General Cavaglia, commander of the Eighth Army, rested the responsibility of co-ordinating the movements of the three. This would drive a wedge between the

VI and V Austrian armies, and cut off the communications between their forces in the mountains and those in the plains. Beginning on the anniversary of Caporetto, the offensive was carried through with dash and decision, twelve days sufficing for the complete undoing of the enemy on the Piave and in the Trentino. Although at first storms had threatened to impede the advance, the weather itself turning ally made for smoothness and rapidity of action.

In the Piave some islands were still occupied by Austrian garrisons. At the suggestion of Lieutenant-General Sir J. M. Babington, the largest of these islands, Grave di Papadopoli, was seized by a preliminary attack starting on the night of September 23-24, and completed two nights later. In order not to inform the enemy that the distribution of armies on the front had been changed, the British troops who executed this movement wore Italian uniforms and used no British guns. With the valuable aid of *pontieri* from the Italian *genio*, the men were carried across the channels between the mainland and the islands in flat-bottomed boats.

Upon the Monte Grappa front bombardment, opening October 24, was followed by a forward drive by Italians, British and French, who met stern resistance. The struggle was so furious that some of the heights were taken and retaken eight times, and it was nearly a week before the line was forced to retire to any great extent.

#### THE AUSTRIANS ON THE PIAVE FORCED TO FLEE IN DISORDER.

The main attack on the Piave was launched on the twenty-sixth, after a preparation in which the British guns joined. Lord Cavan's infantry crossing from Grave di Papadopoli suffered some losses from drowning. But bridgeheads were quickly established by his Tenth Army and General Cavaglia's Eighth, while the Twelfth Army moved up the Piave gorge toward Feltre. A gap of several miles between the British and Italian bridgeheads on the east bank was caused by difficulties in bridging along the right

flank of the Eighth Army. Time was saved by transferring one corps of that army to Lord Cavan's command and taking it across the British bridges. When these broke down under the strain before all had crossed, the British used the Italian bridges which had been finished in the meantime. Undaunted by the accident which had held back part of his men, General Basso, whose 18th Corps had been placed under Lord Cavan, swept forward with the British and cleared the right flank of the Italian Eighth Army when their crossing was made at Nervesa. Then his corps was returned to General Cavaglia.

On October 29, the Tenth Army had reached the Monticano River and the Eighth was approaching Vittorio. The enemy had begun to retreat rapidly. The next day, Feltre was under fire by the Twelfth Army, Vittorio had been captured by the Eighth, and the Livenza River had been reached by the Tenth. In the mountain region, that day, the Sixth Army recovered Asiago, and on the lower Piave, the Third Army entered the battle, crossing the river all the way from Lord Cavan's right to the sea. "From this moment the retreat became a rout," announced the British Commander in his despatch. Discipline broke down except among the best German-Austrian units. Czech and Polish battalions were giving themselves up wholesale; and there was a rush for escape over the Tagliamento or through mountain passes.

#### BROKEN AND DISPIRITED THE AUSTRIANS ASK FOR PEACE.

The first days of November were marked by swift progress on every side. The Italian Cavalry were making their way eastward far in advance of the infantry. The Tenth Army, including now the U. S. 332nd Regiment, were across the Tagliamento. The Eighth Army was marching upon Belluno. A British division in the Fourth Army on the Asiago plateau had the satisfaction of feeling that they were the first British troops bivouacking on hostile soil. The Sixth Army had reached the edges of Trent.





### BOYS FROM AMERICA IN THE HOME LAND OF COLUMBUS

Transferred from France, July 1918, the 332nd United States Regiment was met at Genoa by Red Cross workers, whose soup kitchens are here seen. These troops, after brief intensive training, were encamped near Treviso, where they were displayed on daily hikes in varying uniform and equipment before both Italians and Austrians.



### THE 332ND UNITED STATES REGIMENT MARCHING INTO CAMP BEHIND THE LINES

After having served as tonic for the morale of the Italians and accomplished the discouragement of the Austrians, by a continuous masquerade, creating an illusion of great numbers, the regiment was added to Lord Cavan's army on October 29, and fought in the battle at the Tagliamento on November 4, winning the praise of Lord Cavan and General Diaz. When they left Italy in March 1919, a farewell manifesto was circulated in Genoa.

Central News Service

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Before October ended, negotiations had been opened leading toward surrender and the arrangement of an armistice. When, on the night of November 2, this news reached the soldiers at the front, a long trail of sound was flung out upon the air—a sound of singing and cheering. Mr.

sults of enemy occupation and signs of enemy demoralization were everywhere apparent. Hungry remnants of the hostile army gave themselves up, evidently relieved at the prospect of being cared for. Hosts of Italian prisoners, freed by revolution from harsh captivity in the foreign lands



VITTORIO EMANUELE III

Although he reigns in the city of the old Roman emperors, the King is characterized by quiet simplicity of manner, as far as possible removed from spectacular pomp. N. Y. Times

Trevelyan, of the British Red Cross in Italy, in recalling that night, says: "I shall never forget the distant and continuous noise of a whole army scattered over the plain, shouting all night in its joy under the glistening winter stars because their warfare was accomplished." Hostilities actually came to an end on November 4, when the armistice became effective.

### THE JOY OF THE RESIDENTS OF THE OCCUPIED TERRITORY.

As the rivers were crossed in the pursuit of the flying foe, who destroyed bridges wherever it was possible, re-

sults of enemy occupation and signs of enemy demoralization were everywhere apparent. Hungry remnants of the hostile army gave themselves up, evidently relieved at the prospect of being cared for. Hosts of Italian prisoners, freed by revolution from harsh captivity in the foreign lands where one-fifth of their number had fallen prey to disease, abuse or starvation, were painfully working homeward. Sick and wounded of both parties lay in hospitals, untended by any but the compassionate Italian women who discovered their need. Stores of guns and ammunition were left where they had stood before the offensive started. Among the almost starving populace there was lively rejoicing over the flight of the *brutte bestie* who had robbed them of their corn, their cattle and their movable goods and subjected them to ill-treatment. In return for these outrages, some Austrian prisoners suffered insult but were not in any case injured. The surrender left in the hands of the victors more than 300,000 prisoners and over 5,000 guns.

There is not space for more than bare mention of some of the dramatic details of the last days of Italy's warfare—the destruction in Pola harbor of the battleship, *Viribus Unitis*, which had borne the Archduke

Francis Ferdinand to Dalmatia in June, 1914; and the occupation of Trieste by Bersaglieri. From Trent to Trieste the borders had been made safe—the mountain gateways and the northern reaches of the Adriatic. And the empire of the old oppressors had become a memory.

### SOME OF THE THINGS WHICH ITALY ACCOMPLISHED.

A review of Italy's contribution to the war stirs the depths of wonder and admiration. Out of her population, which included fewer than 9,000,000 male adults able-bodied and economi-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

cally productive, 5,500,000 were enrolled in the armies. Fighting on their own long, formidable border and elsewhere, 460,000 lost their lives (a toll as large, in proportion to the population, as that of the British); 947,000 were wounded; and it has been estimated that over a half-million have been totally incapacitated.

On the whole Italy, in her war-

lent a hand to one another; and, when the farmer-soldiers were not absolutely needed at the front, they were allowed "harvest furloughs" and "seeding furloughs."

### WOMEN TAKE THE PLACE OF MEN IN MANY OCCUPATIONS.

The employment of women in mills and factories was contrary to the traditions and feelings of the Italians.



ITALY'S YOUNG CROWN PRINCE

The royal family of Italy, shunning display and pretentious aloofness, have endeared themselves to their people. Queen Elena was a Montenegrin princess. She and the King never fail to hasten with relief to a scene of disaster in their land. There are five royal children—four daughters and one son, Umberto, the Heir Apparent. Here the prince is shown helping to make a collection for the Red Cross. Ruschin

time adjustments, showed a considerable "power of economic resistance." The small force of workers left at home performed miracles of energy in producing food, machinery, and munitions. Of the peasants cultivating the land—the women, the aged and the young—all had to work harder than usual. The separation allowance from the Government at the outset was seventy centesimi (about 14 cents) a day for the wife, seventy for the father and an average of thirty-five for each child. All the wheat and wine that they could raise was bought by the Government. Neighboring families

Heavy work in the fields they were accustomed to, but their segregation for the labor of manufacture was not considered right. Nor was it easy for the Italian public to sanction the employment of their women as drivers or conductors on public vehicles. Yet in the new régime imposed by war, the women of Italy took their places wherever they were needed. Beside them, older men stepped into the places of those who had gone to join their regiments. Training schools were established to give instructions in the use of machinery and mechanical tools. Many who would have counted among

the emigrants of normal years stayed at home to enter the army or help produce munitions. The cost of unskilled labor had very soon doubled at least. The goods produced by the large establishments were supplemented by contributions from individual craftsmen, who put their tools and their skill to work to add their "bit towards helping *la patria* in the hour of its necessity."

Italy, as her allies had done, entered the combat with altogether insufficient equipment of guns and other war supplies. Her position in the Triple Alliance had prevented secure armament in time of peace, and her lack of coal and iron was a serious obstacle in the way of rapid production. Nevertheless, she had a great asset in the Ansaldo works near Genoa—a famous ship-building and armament plant, with extensive steel works and foundries. Their output included all sorts of guns, petrol engines, motors, destroyers, torpedo boats and super-dreadnoughts. In the ten months of Italy's neutrality, the Ansaldo firm had greatly extended their works and had built, without order, 1200 guns, which were ready when the government had need of them. Again, after the Caporetto loss, 2,000 guns were produced unsolicited.

### **SOME OF THE INDUSTRIAL AND FINANCIAL EFFORT EXPENDED.**

We have seen how, in the transport of troops, the railways were supplemented by motor vehicles of all sorts, most of which were built by the Fiat Company of Turin. At the order of the Army Transport Department, this "finest automobile factory in the world" had completed and delivered, within a week, not barely the 545 vehicles asked for, but 546. Through the whole war Fiat cars—lorries, ambulances, vehicles for every use—were busy, carrying back and forth loads of munitions, supplies or human beings. For strength they were unsurpassed, and only the Ford, because of its lighter weight, could go farther over the rough ways on the battle-front. And side by side with the Fiat automobiles we must think of the Caproni aeroplanes that circled over cities and

harbors or soared away across plains and mountains, bearing messages, delivering bombs, making reconnaissances, fixing photographic records, helping incalculably the brains and hands of the men in offices and behind guns.

Financially the country gave to the utmost of her means, each one of the war loans yielding returns beyond what might have been expected. In the last one, after the exhausting experiences of October, 1917, a sum of about \$1,300,000,000 was raised. With sturdy endurance and self-sacrifice the civilian population gave their support.

### **THE WONDERFUL WORK OF THE ITALIAN ENGINEERS.**

Of the navy, its unrelaxing vigilance and bold exploits; of the excellent air-service and its work of protection and enterprise; of the gallant fighting men meeting untold hardship and danger on mountains or arid rocky plains or in flat marshy stretches; of the engineers and their brilliant achievements, piercing shafts and pinnacles of rock high in air to make windows for the guns, rapidly constructing bridges and railroads, building smooth winding roads on impossible slopes, harnessing waterfalls and rushing streams for electric power, laying miles of water-pipe with incredible speed, bridging space with threads of wire that meant life and safety and contact with the world for men in lofty, isolated posts—of these we have spoken at length. But the story grows in splendor while we contemplate it.

Relief work on the fighting lines and at home was carried on with spirit and skill. The Army Medical Service developed excellent base hospitals and pushed field hospitals and dressing-stations far to the front. Although prejudice—even a regulation of the authorities—had to be overcome to accomplish it, Italian women served faithfully as nurses in those hospitals. The Duchess of Aosta, leading, was followed by many other ladies of the nobility—"true exemplars of democracy" in their unflagging efforts. When, with the reverse at Caporetto the country had all at once "to salvage an army, turn back an invasion" and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

rescue a "dislodged population," the emergency was faced with calmness and decision. The Ministry of the Interior, aided by Citizens' Committees (already efficiently functioning to care for the soldiers' families and other poor), by the American Red Cross, and other indefatigable helpers Italian, British and American, transplanted, clothed and fed the hosts of refugees (*profughi*), an enormous undertaking.

Colasenti's trucks would be departing from one side of a town with their precious burdens just as the Austrians were entering from the other side."

The removal of the world's two most famous bronze equestrian statues—that of Gattamelata from Padua and that of Colleoni from Venice—proved the most difficult task. The transfer of the Gattamelata took four and a half days. As for the Colleoni, after



AUSTRIAN SNOW RUNNERS

Equipped with skis, poles and packs, in addition to their guns, the members of this Austrian patrol are protected by their white garments which, against the snowy background, make them invisible from the distance. Down the long slopes they can glide swiftly and smoothly without great danger of being discovered by an enemy.

### HOW THE ART TREASURES WERE RESCUED AND PRESERVED.

To mention Italy is to think of art. It was one of the nation's responsibilities to protect its treasures, loved by all the civilized world, and to this they bent organized efforts. At the time of the invasion, trucks, timber and men were placed at the disposal of Arduino Colasenti who was to spare no pains in keeping the museums, churches and private collections from yielding plunder to the foe. The citizens of the endangered towns were to help by having their treasures wrapped for transportation. "It often happened that

rider and saddle had been lifted from the horse's back, it was discovered that the weight of the bronze was greater than had been estimated. Neither cranes nor scaffolds were strong enough. "Finally after much delay the horse was raised without incident, tied on a movable platform and lowered gradually on an inclined plane, almost to the end of the square, from which point it was raised again, also along an inclined plane, to the deck of a barge. All this was done by hand. For the last effort the number of men engaged was not sufficient. The man in charge of the operation



## ONE OF THE STRANGE SIGHTS RESULTING FROM A STATE OF WAR

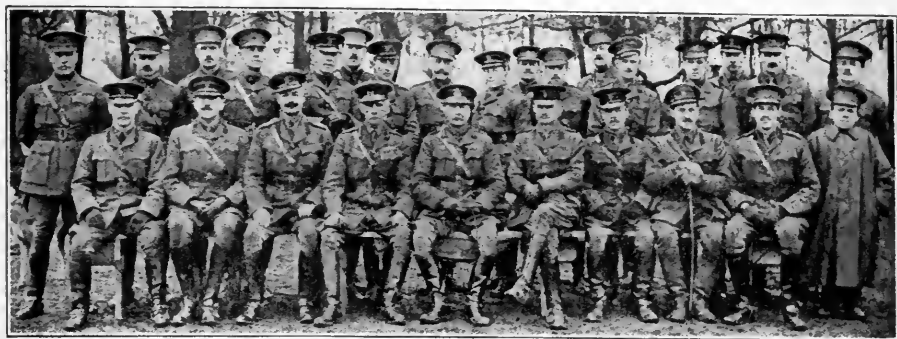
In "the thick cluster of treasures that makes up Venice," one of the foremost gems is this equestrian statue of Bartolommeo Colleoni (a Venetian soldier of fortune of the fifteenth century), the finest achievement of the sculptor Verrochio. Protected, in the first days of danger, by a "titantic armored sentry-box", the statue was later lowered from its pedestal, and rider and horse were conveyed separately to Rome for safe-keeping.

then turned to the crowd which was watching proceedings and shouted: 'All to the ropes.' It was an unforgettable sight. Even the children grabbed the ropes and pulled with all their force." This incident may be regarded as symbolic of Italy's reac-

tion to the shock of invasion. Dropping everything else for the time, the people sprang "to the ropes." Army, navy, marines, medical units, civilians, leaped forward to the rescue at the critical hour, and the crisis was turned.

L. MARION LOCKHART.





Lieut.-General E. A. H. Alderson with Staff

## CHAPTER LXXI

# The Canadian as a Soldier

## AN ESTIMATE OF CANADIAN ACHIEVEMENT ON THE BATTLE FIELD BY THEIR LEADER

BY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR ARTHUR W. CURRIE  
Commanding Canadian Corps

CANADA is not and never has been a warlike nation, yet nearly half a million Canadians volunteered to cross the seas to battle with the power of a military autocracy, perhaps the most formidable and most efficiently organized in the history of the world. In the hour of trial Canadians realized their responsibility as never before.

Into the mighty struggle Canada threw herself heart and soul; her citizen soldiers crossed the ocean to fight the battle on a foreign soil, for it mattered not where the issue was decided when the issue was so clear. Behind that living bulwark the men and women of Canada worked with ceaseless energy and devotion to provide the necessities of war—food-stuffs, munitions, clothing, comforts—and prayed that victory would reward their countrymen's efforts and that loved ones would survive. Thus were the full resources of Canada organized and employed. They played a part not yet fully appreciated or realized by our own people in achieving the final victory. So this young nation demonstrated that the old spirit is still a living principle and that all creeds and parties can still whole-heartedly unite to defend the commonwealth by concentrating on the common task.

### WHO AND WHAT ARE THE CANADIAN PEOPLE?

The ancestry of the Canadian is mixed as regards nationality, although almost entirely English, Scotch, French and Irish, but as regards characteristics the one great race of men, the men who are jealous for their liberties, who seek their own fortunes, who are proud, self dependent and unafraid, yet law-abiding, God-fearing and orderly, are the men who have peopled Canada.

Among the 90,000 souls in Canada when the British colonies to the South declared their independence in 1776 there were Frenchmen, French-Canadians, Englishmen, Scotsmen, Irishmen, Welshmen, Channel Islanders, Acadians, Newfoundlanders and loyal men from the American Colonies, the forerunners of the United Empire Loyalists, who came in such numbers during and after the American Revolution. These are the racial elements from which Canadians spring and then they were first united in the defense of their common country. They again united to assist the British troops in repelling the invasion of 1812; they combined to work out the Confederation of the Dominion of Canada in 1867; and side by side in 1914 again they stood in defense of the Empire.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE CHARACTER OF THE IMMIGRATION DURING THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.

In 1814, Canada's population numbered less than half a million; since then it has been increased twenty fold. Whence have these people come? The natural increase has been large. During the first half of the nineteenth century the settlers most worthy of note in point of numbers and in the share they took in developing the country were the Scottish Highlanders and discharged soldiers from the British regiments, including many who saw service in North America before 1871, when Canada assumed her own protection. Since then the immigration has increased enormously, the greater part furnished directly by the British Isles but with the development of railways and consequent opening up of the Western prairies a great tide of prosperous farmers has flowed in also from the United States, while all countries of Europe have contributed in some degree to what is now the Canadian people.

We see then that the country is unique in having been peopled from good stocks and good representatives of these stocks. In the early days the hardships of pioneer life eliminated the weaklings and in later years strict immigration laws have prevented the dumping of undesirables, while throughout the rigors of our climate have made it imperative for a man either to work, starve or leave the country.

### THE EFFECT OF PIONEER LIFE UPON CANADIAN CHARACTER.

Most Canadians today are themselves pioneers or are the immediate descendants of pioneers. Most of them have gained for themselves, or have inherited those indelible signs with which Nature graces the bodies and souls of those who have pitted their will, their strength and their determination against her elemental forces and have earned for themselves a portion of her riches.

The life of a Canadian pioneer, be he a woodsman, a prospector, a hunter, or a settler upon the land, calls forth and tests brains, mettle and brawn. If the rewards are as a rule generous,

the difficulties to be overcome are many and none but the brave, the patient and the strong can survive them. The severities of the community either correct or reject the lazy. Thus we see in operation through various agencies and in their moral and physical aspects, the laws of selection. The operations of these natural laws have already resulted in the creation, or the segregation of a race of men approximating to a particular type with distinct moral, physical and intellectual characteristics. The virile strength of the typical Canadian is depicted in his erect carriage, his well-knit frame, his strong clean-cut limbs, his keen and steady eyes, while behind the calm gravity of his mien lies a tenacious and indomitable will.

### SOME CHARACTERISTICS OF THE CANADIAN SOLDIER ILLUSTRATED.

In that mental and bodily vigor we find too the secret of the superhuman efforts put forth by the men of the Canadian Corps in the momentous epoch of the last hundred days of the war, when they showed that civilian soldiers when discreetly disciplined, carefully trained, vigorously led and above all when imbued with a resolute and unflinching determination to make their cause triumphant, could compete with and vanquish the product of a military autocracy. Wide awake and full of intelligent initiative, one learned of the Canadian engaging early in daring night patrols, models of hunting craft. To them there was no No-man's Land. What is usually called such was ours and regarded merely as an outpost of our intrenched position. Later they initiated the daring cutting-out raids, which were soon to become a feature of trench warfare. Their thirst for accurate information led to the high development of our intelligence service and their greed for maps, for models, for aeroplane photographs of the front was insatiable and they made good use of all this information. One of our divisions during a three months' tour in a section where the line was stationary, thoroughly exhausted two German Divisions solely by persistent raiding and harassing and so lowered the morale

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

of another that it had to be withdrawn to rest and refit while the Canadians after coming out of the line proceeded to carry out the intensive training in the principles of open warfare for a couple of weeks and then went into the battle of Amiens more efficient than ever.

The moral effect of this policy upon our men was apparent in the feeling of

can be answered disappear again into the darkness."

### RAISING THE FIRST CANADIAN CONTINGENT AN EASY MATTER.

When in the first days of August, 1914, it became evident that Great Britain would have to go to war, Canada offered to raise 20,000 men for service overseas. This offer was at once accepted by the Motherland and



TRAINING BEHIND THE LINES

Soldiers being instructed in "sniping." Although the Great War, for the most part, was a war of machinery and organized mass work, the art of the sharpshooter was highly developed, largely practiced. Through him it was possible to destroy the valuable "knots" and "links" in the machinery—officers, liaison troops, reconnaissance parties, machine-gun nests, field battery crews.

superiority over the enemy that it engendered and not only that but the corresponding loss of morale on the part of the enemy gave very real results when we took the offensive and open warfare was resumed. The captured letter of a German soldier, evidently a man of some experience, to his nephew, who had recently been called to the colors, here gives an interesting sidelight:

"I hope that the Canadians are not in the trenches opposite your front, for they on the darkest night jump suddenly into our trenches, causing great consternation and before cries for help

such was the response to the call that in less than a month there were 40,000 volunteers at the disposal of the Government. Valcartier Camp, some sixteen miles west of Quebec, was completed in a fortnight with railway sidings, rifle ranges, water supply and telephone system and there by the 11th of September 30,000 troops were under canvas and undergoing training for the great adventure.

As had been anticipated, both officers and men had much to learn but the admirable zeal and ambition of all ranks made the most arduous task easy and the atmosphere of the army

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

with its discipline and routine at first so galling and tiresome to most volunteer soldiers was accepted and endured as part of the game. Little was then known of actual fighting conditions in France, which could only be guessed at from short press cables of doubtful accuracy but it was clear that the first requisite for an efficient force was still the man who could shoot straight under any circumstances and that an organization must be built

pital units. The crossing occupied nearly two weeks, but guarded by six British cruisers, the Canadian Armada steamed safe and unmolested into Plymouth Sound.

### THE FIRST DIVISION GOES TO FRANCE FROM SALISBURY PLAIN.

The First Canadian Division trained on Salisbury Plain, and crossed to France in February, 1915, after four dismal months spent in the mud, cold and rain of an English winter. This



A GUARD AT THE ROYAL SALUTE

His Majesty King George V with Lieutenant-General Hon. Sir Julian Byng.

©Canada, 1919

up to train him and to keep him fit and fighting.

Horses, stores, clothing and equipment were collected and distributed in a surprisingly short time, transports were secured and the First Contingent 33,000 strong embarked at Quebec and sailed from Gaspé Bay on October 3, 1914. This was the largest body of soldiers that had ever crossed the Atlantic at one time; it comprised one infantry division of 20,000 men, complete in artillery, infantry, engineers and all services; in addition there was one cavalry brigade, one heavy battery, two independent infantry battalions—(The Newfoundland Regiment and the Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry) and several unattached hos-

experience did much to develop not only the military value of Canadians but also that spirit of endurance, of willingness and of determination to see the matter to a finish which was to carry them gloriously through the days to come.

The Port of St. Nazaire, far removed from the submarine-infested Channel, was the landing place of the First Canadian Division. At that time few facilities existed for the rapid handling of large bodies of troops; the French civilian stevedores on this occasion, not showing sufficient speed and alacrity in the work of unloading, were relieved of their work by the troops, who, with picked men running the winches and manning the ropes, emp-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tied the transports in record time. Then followed an interminable railway journey to near Hazebrouck where the Division was billeted while detachments went forward from all units to train with the British forces who then held the line from Ypres to Bethune.

The Princess Patricia's Canadian

fitted and equipped for service overseas. The reinforcement depots left in England in February, 1914, formed the nucleus of the larger schools and training depots which were later required to train further and equip fully the men who poured across in a steady stream to keep the forces in the field up to



ACTIVITIES IN A CAMP COOK HOUSE

The cook house is one of the most important parts of the soldier's life. The impression of the interior of the house of the 56th Canadian Infantry Battalion at Witley Camp, Surrey, was painted by Anna Airy, R. O. I. In France there was no such luxury as this building offered for the preparation of food. © Canadian War Records.

Light Infantry, a battalion composed almost entirely of ex-soldiers, was the first body of Canadians to fight in France; this unit, as well as one of the Canadian Field Hospitals, had already served with distinction in December, 1914.

### HOW THE LATER DIVISIONS WERE TRAINED AND ORGANIZED.

Soon after the first Contingent had sailed for England other camps were established in Canada where recruits received their preliminary drill and instruction and were as far as possible

fighting strength. The Third Canadian Division was formed in France but the Second and Fourth both trained in camps in England before crossing the Channel, and each in turn sent detachments into the trenches with experienced troops before taking its turn in the line. As time went on, it was found expedient to have reinforcements more readily available to replace casualties and this led to the establishment of the Canadian Corps Reinforcement Depot in France which, in conjunction with the Corps and Divisional Schools,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

furnished men as required and gave them additional training besides holding advanced courses of instructions for those sent back from the line during quiet periods.

It did not take long for the Canadian to adapt himself to military life, as practically all the original officers had served in the militia before the war and had attended the annual training camps, as had many of the men, while a considerable number of these had served either in the British Regular Army or Territorials. Even the city-bred had as a rule some knowledge of the woods and of life out of doors and it was remarkable how one and all patiently endured hardships which could not be avoided but were always intolerant of unnecessary discomfort and indefatigable in devising all sorts of methods to ameliorate conditions. Inquisitiveness was another useful characteristic—wanting to know the reasons why—and the explanation frequently furnished food for thought. Civil experience turned to military uses often resulted in the discovery of a better way; similarly new schemes were evolved and new organizations put into effect to cope with new conditions of warfare as they arose. In this way when it was found that we had not a sufficient number of machine guns the number was increased with a corresponding increase in personnel; when it was found that the infantry could not construct and man trenches simultaneously without impairing their efficiency the strength of the Engineers was increased; when it was found that the signal service was inadequate more men were trained and drafted into that branch and in each case an establishment and system of command was adopted capable of employing the force available to the very best advantage.

### THE ATTITUDE OF THE CANADIAN TOWARD MILITARY DISCIPLINE.

An unknown writer, evidently striving after a catch phrase or caustic epigram, once said that the Canadian troops carried their officers as mascots. This illusion, if it ever really existed to any extent, was soon dispelled by the

fighting record early established by the First Contingent and steadily augmented by all the divisions of the Canadian Corps, for it is very evident that undisciplined troops could not have given such an account of themselves when pitted against the flower of the German army. The casualty lists, too, throw some light on this suggestion: here we find that the proportion of officer casualties in battle was almost twice that suffered in the ranks, a conclusive proof, if such were necessary, that the Canadian troops were well and gallantly led. True, the type of discipline varied from that obtaining in European armies, where all classes were brought up with a respect for rank amounting almost to veneration. This attitude of mind was totally foreign to men used to judging every one according to his merits and unaccustomed to showing respect or deference to anyone who could not stand firmly on his own two feet without the artificial support of wealth or titles.

From the first the Canadians showed that their performance in the field was second to none but for a time they chafed under what seemed to them the attitude of servility implied by the paying of compliments and the punctilious observance of the rules of the service in dealing with those of senior or junior military rank. Gradually, however, the men in the ranks appreciated the fact that these rules and observances had a direct bearing on efficiency and that by adhering closely to them self-respect and soldierly pride were enhanced rather than undermined, while *esprit de corps* grew to an extent hitherto unknown to them. Contact with highly trained British troops had its effect. On one occasion when a Canadian Division was in line next the British Guards Division an arrangement was made whereby Guardsmen were attached to the Canadians to instruct in matters of discipline and correct military bearing, while a picked detachment of Canadians went to demonstrate to the Guards the finer points of scouting and trench raiding. To foster a proper pride in the regiment other British Battalions temporarily ex-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

changed officers and N. C. O.'s with their affiliated Canadian units, and so the traditions and customs of the Old Army were adopted and became an additional source of inspiration to the men of the New.

### THE FIRST EXPERIENCE OF REAL WARFARE AT YPRES.

The First Division went into the line for the first time in March, 1915, and occupied for a month the Fleurbaix sector south of Armentières in the rich alluvial country by the Lys. Here

and choked by the fumes, thought that the devil was at their throats and fell back in disorder. Here, it should be remembered that gas masks, box-respirators and all such anti-gas appliances were quite unknown. The use of gas came as a surprise and as such met with corresponding success at first. Steel helmets, too, were a later innovation and did not make their appearance until early in 1916.

When, in consequence of this attack, the Canadian left flank was ex-



WEARY AND WORN—BUT NOT SAD

Tired but smiling: a view of the Canadian Highlanders returning from the front. This regiment—true to its honorable traditions—had a most distinguished record in the war, and was many times reduced to a "cadre" or frame regiment only, for its casualties were so severe. The Germans learned to go in dread of such troops.

British Official

came our first experience of actual warfare and here to some extent we became familiar with the ways of war. In the last week of March the Division was relieved and marched through Ypres on the 14th of April to relieve the French between St. Julien and Gravenstafel, where the trenches were even more elementary and offered less protection than the flimsy parapets and watery mudholes of the line to the south. The first few days were ominously quiet but on the afternoon of the 22nd of April the Germans, following the first cloud of poison gas ever discharged by a so-called civilized nation, attacked the French positions on our left. There, colored Colonial troops were in the line, and it is little wonder that the Zouaves and Turcos, dazed

posed, it became necessary to act and act quickly, but now the untried amateur soldiers became suddenly transformed into a skilful body of veterans; with grim determination they withstood repeated discharges of gas followed by violent onslaughts in close formation. They launched counterattacks with vigor and dash, as if to the manner born, and as a result of the devotion and self sacrifice of every man the line was re-established. Three days later, April 25th, British reinforcements had come to our assistance and a week later the Division finally marched out again through the shattered town of Ypres, now a deserted ruin, a veritable city of the dead. The Second Battle of Ypres, apart from settling the future standard for Can-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ada's fighting forces, had a remarkable effect on the people at home. It proved a stimulus to recruiting and awakened the country to a full sense of her share in the war.

After refitting and being reinforced, the First Division in the latter part of May was engaged in the Battle of Festubert and fought at Givenchy in June. The object of our attacks in this part of the front was the capture of La Bassée and the Aubers Ridge, whereby Lille would be menaced but chiefly through the lack of ammunition this ambitious purpose was not achieved. The British Army had, however, succeeded in diverting reinforcements from the French front on the right where heavy fighting was in progress.

### A COMPARISON OF THE CANADIAN WITH THE BRITISH SOLDIER.

With the original British Expeditionary Force we had no opportunity of coming in contact, for the first 7 divisions had been practically exterminated in November, 1914. Of the British Territorials and Kitchener's Army we had an intimate knowledge for they frequently were in the line on our flanks and occasionally fought under the Canadian Corps. As compared with the Canadians these troops seemed prone to govern their actions rather by rule than by principle; this gave wonderful results as long as experienced officers were in command, but without these a soldier lacking in initiative, be he ever so ready to conscientiously carry out every order to the letter, is not likely to show presence of mind in untried emergencies and a dogged acceptance of what appears to be inevitable does not compensate for failure to quickly grasp a situation and act with vigor and determination when unforeseen circumstances arise.

As regards larger units and higher formations the Canadians had a distinct advantage, for, while British Divisions were continually being sent from one Army Corps to another, the Canadian Divisions almost invariably fought side by side under the direction of their own Corps Staff and, as officers were being continually changed from

one division to another by promotion, an intimacy and understanding developed between units and staffs which led to that singleness of thought and unity of action through which the Canadian Corps was considered and later proved itself to be the hardest hitting force on any battle front.

### THE CANADIAN SOLDIER COMPARED WITH THE FRENCH.

It is difficult to make a comparison between the Frenchman and the Canadian as a soldier. The French fell under two headings, shock troops and line divisions; the incomparable dash and fervor of the former contrasted strongly with the live and let-live attitude of the latter, but by the skilful employment of each the French Higher Command achieved extraordinary successes of which the defense of Verdun is typical. Their mercurial temperament, however, had its disadvantages. For example—the troops who made brilliant attacks on our flank at Amiens could not endure the inaction of holding the line under heavy fire when the battle again became stationary. We have heard the Frenchman in the depths of despair, when all seemed lost, exclaim: "Pauvre France; Pauvre Paris," and again we have heard the victorious "Vive la France; Vive la Patrie," which roused the patriotism of every man and carried the line forward with irresistible force.

Such extremes of feeling were unknown among the Canadians. The battle of Vimy Ridge showed that they could either hold the line or attack as occasion demanded, for, after spending the winter of 1916-1917 in these abominable ditches, dignified by the name of trenches, sheltering in the funk holes, sharing what dugouts there were with the rats (forced to the front line by the awful desolation of that area), enduring the cold and the wet as well as the continual bombing, gassing and shelling, they attacked with all their wonted vigor on that memorable Easter Monday and broke through the elaborate defenses of the Ridge on which the Germans had lavished so much toil to make impregnable, as if they were pack-thread.





#### A DIVISIONAL SUPPLY COLUMN

A Divisional Supply column sorting out provisions beside the railroad which has just brought them up from the great storehouses at the ports of entry. The organization of the Commissariat department was as essential to the army as that of the ordnance department and its machinery functioned in excellent order shortly after the outbreak of war.



#### OLD INDIAN WAY OF CARRYING HEAVY LOADS

This method—called the tump-line—of carrying a pack on the back by placing a strap across the forehead is familiar to woodsmen in this country who learned it from the Indians. It was used by Canadians on the Western Front and caused considerable interest among the neighboring troops, who were quick to see its practicability in leaving the arms free.

©Canada, 1919

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

In September, 1915, the second Canadian Division arrived in France and the Canadian Army Corps was formed. Then by March, 1916, the Third Canadian Division, organized chiefly from Canadian units already in France, was taking its turn in the line and in the middle of August, 1916, the Fourth Canadian Division had arrived

intensity fell for three hours on the trenches held by the Third Canadian Division and the few survivors checked but could not stop the German advance. For several days the situation was critical but a heroic attack by fresh troops of the 1st Canadian Division on the 13th restored the situation and the routine of trench warfare was



A GAME OF RAT-CATCHING BY WAY OF VARIETY

Few were more ready than the Canadians to turn into sport even grim and exhausting tasks of life on the battle front. Aside from fighting there were many activities that fitted into a day's or a night's work. Killing rats is not a glorious performance, but when rats are rampant some one must do the job.

just in time to take part, as did the rest of the Corps, in the Battle of the Somme.

The late Autumn and Winter of 1915-16 had been uneventful; the Germans had been occupied with their offensives on the Russian and Serbian fronts and were quite satisfied to let the Western Front alone, but in March the Third (British) Division blew the great mines which on explosion resulted in the St. Eloi craters, and there the Second Canadian Division had the difficult task of establishing and maintaining the line. This was their first battle and it cost them over 2000 men. In May the Canadian Corps held the front east and south-east of Ypres; on the 2nd of June the Germans began their third attempt to capture the city. A preliminary bombardment of great

resumed and lasted until we left Belgium in August for the Somme.

### THE IMPRESSION ON THE CANADIAN MADE BY THE BELGIAN.

The Canadians, although they served long in Flanders, saw very little of the Belgian Army. In August and September, 1914, it was practically obliterated in the defense of Liège and the other fortresses which delayed the German advance just enough to disorganize their elaborate scheme for securing control of the Channel, the success of which depended mainly on speed. The remnant of this gallant little army however, re-equipped from British and French stores and inspired by their King, fought bravely for the last few flooded miles that remained to them of their country. For a time one of their field batteries was attached to the



#### HAULING A GUN INTO POSITION ON THE CANADIAN FRONT

Heavy artillery has robbed the trees of their primary function of beautifying, and then utilized their denuded trunks as pulleys for hauling the guns out of mud pits and shell craters. What were formerly front line trenches have now, as the tide of war advanced, become the sites of gun emplacements. British Official



#### WORK ENTAILED BY GERMAN DEMOLITION

A picture of the Canadian Engineers building an extra bridge across the Canal du Nord. The bridge on the right was constructed by them in eight hours under heavy shell fire from the enemy rear-guards seeking to hold up the pursuit. On the left may be seen a temporary pontoon bridge. During the retreat the Germans systematically destroyed 1731 bridges. ©Canada, 1919

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Canadians and their enthusiasm when they felt that their fire was punishing the violators of their homes was noticeable both in their manner of serving the guns and in the tone of the words of command.

In the terrible battle of the Somme, where the shell fire and all-pervading mud and devastation tried the bodies and souls of our soldiers as in a fur-



THE SITE OF THE CHURCH OF  
PASSCHENDAELE

nance, the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Canadian Divisions again demonstrated their excellent fighting qualities. The 4th, which entered the battle some days after, proved beyond all doubt in its first engagement that it was fully worthy to fight by their side. November, 1916, found the Canadian Corps again in the line, this time opposite Lens and confronted by the historic Vimy Ridge. Since the third month of the war, this feature had been the backbone of the German position in Northern France and its natural strength had been steadily increased by the construction of the strongest and most complete defenses the enemy could devise. In January a scheme for

its capture was worked out; on April 9th, the four Canadian divisions, after a heavy artillery bombardment, swept abreast over the Ridge in an irresistible attack and in the succeeding weeks thrust the line far clear of the eastern slopes.

### THE UNSPEAKABLE HORRORS OF THE STRUGGLE FOR PASSCHENDAELE.

After capturing Vimy Ridge the Canadian Corps continued in the line, making further advances through the Vimy-Farbus defenses and taking the villages of Arleux and Fresnoy. In August we side-slipped northwards and capturing the difficult fortifications of Hill 70 pressed closer on to Lens which the enemy still held in spite of the heavy casualties entailed. Then in October, 1917, when, for political reasons, the British Army had undertaken the costly battle of Passchendaele, the Canadian Corps was withdrawn from the Lens front and sent north to wallow in that crater-pitted sea of mud which at that time extended east and north-east of Ypres—that salient of deathless memory. Here conditions were worse than we had yet experienced and but for the excellent morale and health of the troops and the efficiency of our supply and transport services, it would have been impossible to accomplish the seemingly hopeless tasks assigned as we did, in spite of concentration of gas, the terrific arc-shots carried out by the German Artillery and the incessant bombing raids which might well have blocked our communications completely.

Added to this there was no cover in the area excepting water-logged shell holes and ditches, for trees and hedges had long since disappeared, and the height of the water-level precluded the digging of trenches. Our infantry therefore had to advance up the bare ridges and between the swamps straight at the concrete machine gun emplacements to which the enemy had pinned his faith. Our guns required veritable rafts for platforms to keep them from being buried in the mud and only by superhuman efforts and at a cost of nearly 15,000 casualties our goal at last was reached; Passchendaele village



#### SOME OF THE CANADIAN CAPTORS OF LENS

The battle for Lens and the capture of the suburbs of the city constitute an important feat of arms in Canadian annals. In this picture a detachment is preparing to make itself at home in dug-outs which have been captured from the enemy a few moments previously. A casual glance at the group glimpses its air of victory.



#### THE HEROES OF VIMY AND LENS

After capturing Vimy Ridge, where the Canadian contingents covered themselves with glory, groups of machine gunners installed themselves in small pits until the crest literally bristled with the deadly weapons. No places upon the Western Front were more desolate, more war-excoriated than these Flanders ridges upon which bombardment had beaten almost ceaselessly.

British Official



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and the ridge from which the enemy had commanded Ypres these last three years was handed over to the British troops and by the middle of November the Corps was once more back in old familiar haunts holding the line on the Lens-Vimy front. In all these battles our men performed prodigies of valor and endurance, daily adding fresh lustre to the name of Canada.

All that winter and early spring we planned and constructed elaborate

it lay the few remaining collieries of Northern France. When this great blow fell early on Michael's Day, the 21st of March, 1918, the thin line on the St. Quentin front could not hold and by the following day only individual units, more or less disorganized and out of touch with their flanks, fought rear-guard actions from day to day until the advance was stayed. One unit there, however, the First Canadian Motor Machine Gun Bri-



**A BUFFET LUNCHEON IN THE TRENCHES**

This looks like a more or less tidy and quiet spot for an informal luncheon but the chances are that the quiet was not oppressive where these Canadians sat lunching in the trench. Not fifty yards away were the German lines, whose occupants would be all too ready to interrupt such a party. Yet the lads appear as cosy and unconcerned as if their sand-bag shelter were the most secure of picnic retreats.

defensive systems, digging trenches, erecting barbed wire, building gun emplacements and preparing in every possible way for the last and mightiest blow of the German Army. Now that the Russian front had disappeared and with the release of troops consequent on the successful campaigns in Rumania and Italy, it was expected that the enemy would concentrate all his force on the Western Front and put forth every effort to win the war by defeating the Allies before American troops could be trained and transported in sufficient numbers to prove a factor in the scale. Vimy Ridge was the centre of the British front. It covered our lateral communications and behind

gaged, fighting on the Amiens front for nineteen days, although 75 per cent of its strength was lost, never lost its discipline, its cohesion or its willingness to fight.

### **THE GERMAN SOLDIER A MYSTERY TO THE CANADIAN.**

The character of the German soldier was never fully understood by the Canadian; that subject did not appeal to him. Generally speaking the German was regarded as a man with a diseased mind; generals and privates alike had been imbued with the teachings of hatred, and the belief that might is right was evidently bred in the bone. In a word their thoughts were not our thoughts, neither were their ways

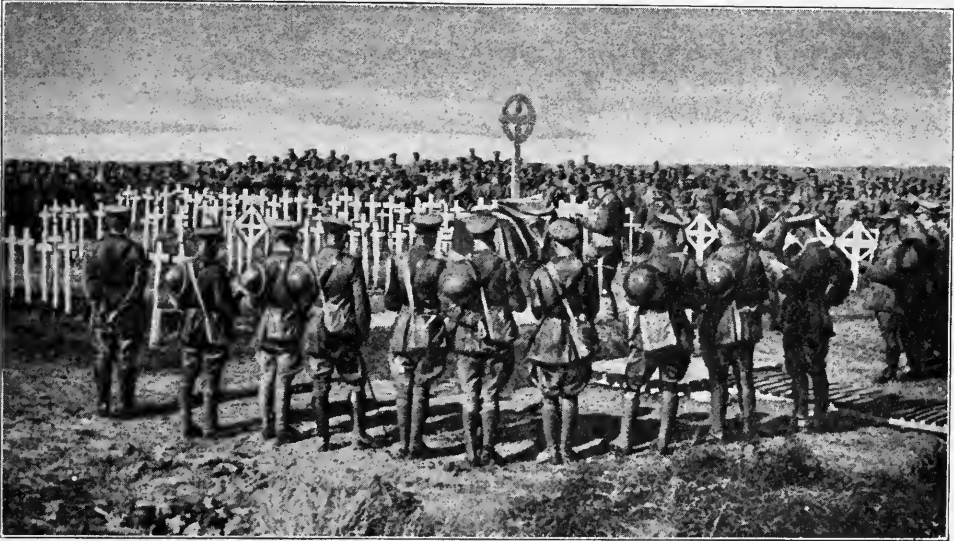
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

our ways. On the other hand the characteristics of the enemy, as disclosed by his methods and conduct of warfare, were observed and most carefully studied. Our scouts could quickly discern the dispositions and demeanor of the enemy by reading the little signs of the front line which revealed to their trained minds his probable course of action. Further back from concealed points of vantage a tireless watch was kept on the enemy's movements while all the information furnished by air

their attacks, though costly, repeatedly gained ground, but as their numbers dwindled and the tide began to turn misgivings arose in the mind of the man in the ranks; he could be driven on to victory but that kind of discipline could not readily endure hardship or defeat.

### HOW UNITS SACRIFICED THEMSELVES FOR THE WHOLE.

Instances of unselfishness on the part of the Canadian soldier might be given of a whole unit, as the con-



IN FLANDERS' FIELDS

A memorial service to men of the Quebec regiment who fell gloriously on Vimy Ridge, which was first captured from the Germans April 9, 1917. The taking of the ridge was an operation which involved practically every Canadian unit. The Germans had transformed the hills into an eight-thousand-yard-long fortress, and they deemed the position impregnable.

and ground observers or gathered from photographs, captured maps, and other sources was collected and collated at headquarters, where maps were compiled showing with incredible accuracy the details of the enemy's defense.

The elaborate system obtaining in the German Army and the slavish adherence to that system were responsible in no small measure for the failure of that great military machine, for in any organization it is the principle that must govern if success is to be attained and the methods of applying that principle must necessarily be capable of quick readjustment to meet changed conditions. At first, with their superior numbers and rigid discipline,

duct of the artillery and the stretcher bearers in the battle of Hill 70 shows. This battle was launched on the morning of August 15, 1917, and as usual we succeeded in reaching our objectives on time. The enemy, as we had supposed, was determined not to leave us in possession of such valuable ground without making a strenuous effort to regain it. In the course of eight days he counter-attacked us no less than thirty-five times. In those counter-attacks, although we were using not more than twenty-eight battalions, we identified sixty-nine German battalions. One night in preparing for a counter attack he heavily gassed our battery positions. The pro-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tection against gas is the gas mask but the use of it makes it more difficult for our gunners to lay their sights and set their fuses correctly. The infantry were putting up the S. O. S. calls and our gunners, rather than let their comrades in the front line down, removed their gas masks and worked throughout

he did. The two guns were overrun but we directed such incessant fire on the area that the enemy was never able to remove them. When the position was recovered a few days later it was found that these guns had been fought to the last, that every round of ammunition had been expended and that the crews had remained at their posts until killed — an example of unflinching heroism not surpassed in the whole of the proud history of the British Army.

**THE CANADIAN CORPS WAS A FLEXIBLE ORGANIZATION.**

Of the half million men who made up the Canadian



**BACK TO THE BASE**

A Canadian Infantryman covered with mud returning from the front line.

the night without them. They paid the inevitable penalty, for over two hundred of our gunners were casualties from gas poisoning that night. The stretcher bearers also, whose duty it was to carry from the battlefield the wounded, displayed similar sterling qualities. It is difficult at any time to carry wounded men from the battlefield, but those difficulties are increased at night. The ground to be traversed is nothing but shell holes with great masses of tangled barbed wire to further hamper progress. Desirous of seeing that the wounded should not suffer unnecessary pain the stretcher bearers also removed their gas masks and worked throughout that night without them. Such was the spirit of the Canadian Corps.

Although the Canadians never permanently lost a gun, it is true that in June, 1918, two guns were temporarily lost. These two guns were in action as emergency guns in Sanctuary Wood, within a few hundred yards of the front line. Their role was to open fire only when the enemy attacked, and attack

Expeditionary Force over 400,000 crossed the Atlantic, and of these all but 62,000 were volunteers, for it was not until the winter of 1917 that it was considered advisable to put the Military Service Act into operation.

The First Contingent, which left our shores in September, 1914, had in two years expanded and developed into a mighty force. Each of the four divisions was complete in itself and had its full complement of infantry, artillery, engineers, machine guns and all services, while the Corps troops, composed chiefly of artillery and numbering as they did some 17,000, brought the total strength of the Canadian Army Corps up to well over 100,000 men. Owing to the fact already mentioned that the Canadian Corps always fought together and got to know one another well, it was possible to make good use of this cohesion and mutual understanding. Sometimes the First Division was called on to do something rather than the Second; sometimes the Second Division would be chosen to fight in a certain position rather than

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the Third or Fourth. Then the Third might be picked for another operation and the Fourth for still another. Sometimes the Engineers were pooled. The Engineers of the Fourth Division were making bridges for the First Division, while the Engineers of the Second were making roads for the Third, and so on. The artillery was also pooled and we fought as one big machine. The British divisions and other troops which were occasionally attached to the Corps, at once saw the advantage of our methods and invariably expressed their regret at leaving, or pleasure on returning to serve with the Canadians.

Another great factor that counted for our success was the fact that we changed our organization to meet altered conditions as they arose. The Engineers and Machine Gun establishments illustrate this. In 1914 our Divisional Engineers numbered some 700, in July 1918 their strength was about 3,000 per division. This reorganization made possible our steady advances of the last hundred days. At the beginning we had some 48 machine guns to a division, at the end we had 96 of the heavier pattern and some 384 of the light pattern, making 480 per division, or ten times the original strength.

**THE CANADIAN CORPS DID NOT INCLUDE ALL CANADIAN SOLDIERS.**

Other fighting land forces not in the Canadian Army Corps were the Canadian Cavalry Brigade which served as part of the British Third Cavalry Division, and then there were various detached units serving in Northern Russia, Mesopotamia and Palestine, while Canadian Hospitals were early sent to Greece and Egypt to care for the sick and wounded from the Dardanelles. Canada sent overseas, fully equipped and staffed, many hospitals; these were complete in every detail and had a total complement of over 23,000 beds.

In the rear areas were the 13 battalions of Canadian Railway Troops, numbering some 15,000. They built over 1,000 miles of broad gauge track in France and 800 miles of narrow

gauge, much of the latter being on the Lens-Vimy front, where we had a system rivaling any modern railroad, and managed by a mining engineer from Northern Ontario. Seventy per cent of all the lumber used on the Allied front in France was supplied by the men of the Canadian Forestry Corps, over 11,000 strong, who felled timber and operated mills in England, Scotland and France. Besides these there were other lines of communication and



**TWO FINE SOLDIERS**

Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig photographed with General Sir Arthur Currie, commanding the Canadian Corps.

base troops, salvage units, butcheries, bakeries, and such diverse organizations as are required by a modern army.

**THE BRITISH ARMY AND THE CANADIAN FORCES.**

Although for military operations the Canadian Forces in the Field were placed under the Commander-in-Chief of the British Armies in France, for matters of organization and administration all Canadian troops overseas whether combatant or non-combatant were controlled by the Government of Canada through the Minister, Overseas Military Forces of Canada, whose office was in London, England.

The work of Canadians in the Imperial Services can only be touched on

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

here. In the British Navy, with commissions in the Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve, were about five hundred, some employed with the fleet, some in the Auxiliary Patrol Service and a few carrying out special research work on appliances for submarine detection. In the Royal Air Force were some eight

most part from among the younger graduates of the Staff College they were expert students of the art of war. When the First Canadian Division went to France the Divisional Commander and most of the senior staff officers, men of the same type, were lent by the British War Office; the Second, Third and Fourth Divisions, too, had a number of British staff officers at first. By midsummer 1917 Canadians had replaced all of these with the exception of the senior staff officers at Corps and Divisional Headquarters; for the last three years of the war out of the 140 officers commanding units in the Corps only two held commissions in the British Army, and by August 1918 only a dozen British officers were still with the Corps.

### THE GREAT RECORD OF THE LAST HUNDRED DAYS.

The most remarkable success achieved by the Corps was the success of the last 100 days fighting which began on August 8th. On the 13th of August, General Ludendorff asked the German Chancellor and the Kaiser to come to Great Headquarters, where he explained to them the full effects, to quote the Germans' own words, of the "inglorious 8th of August."

It may not be generally known that on August 1, 1918, it was the intention of the Supreme



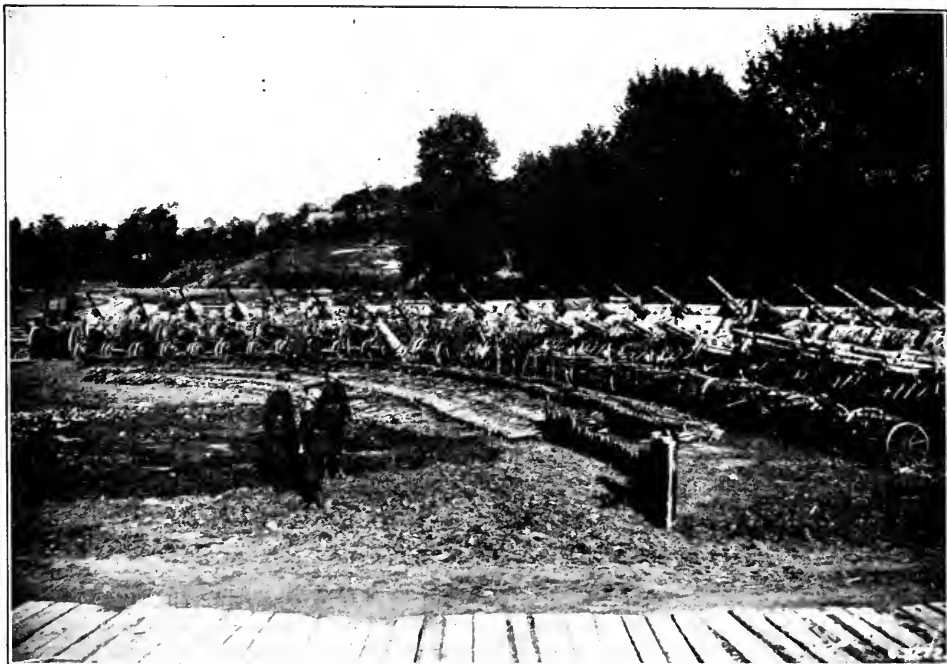
LOADING UP AMMUNITION AT THE FRONT

© Canada, 1919

thousand. That figure itself gives a clear indication of the Canadian temperament; over half of them were enlisted in Canada by the Imperial authorities, the others were transferred or seconded from Canadian units in France and England. In the British Army too, towards the end of the war, were to be found several hundred officers who had served in the Canadian ranks before the winning of their commissions.

Prior to the war the practice had been in vogue of lending officers of the British Army to Canada to assist in training the Militia; picked for the

War Council to fight only one more battle during 1918. That battle was to be the Battle of Amiens. The British, French and Belgian armies were to sit down, hold the enemy, and wait for the development of the big American Army, and the war was to be finished in the spring of 1919. That was the plan agreed upon. The Battle of Amiens was an important battle, because it was designed to free the Paris-Amiens railway, and to remove the danger of a German breakthrough between the French and British. The objective of that battle was what we called the Old Amiens Defense



#### THE SPOILS OF VICTORY

A collection of field guns, machine-guns, trench mortars, etc., captured by the Canadians on the Arras front in September 1918. In all, troops from the Dominion captured 850 artillery guns, and 4,200 machine-guns; they retook 130 towns and villages and liberated 310,000 French and Belgian civilians. Rationing the latter was a heavy strain on the commissariat. ©Canada, 1919



#### ADVANCED DRESSING STATION NEAR INCHEY

By September 4 the British line was established along the west bank of the North Canal, and the last objective in an extraordinary series of grand victories was attained. The Canadians were fighting in Sains, a memorable position on the flank of Sir Julian Byng's early thrust into the Hindenburg system. Then Inchy village was taken and the North Canal crossed. ©Canada, 1919

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Line, some eight miles east of where the line then was.

The Canadian Corps, with the exception of the Motor Machine Gun Brigade, already mentioned, had taken no share in the Spring fighting but it had held thirty-five miles of front (one fifth of the entire British front) and guarded the sole remaining coal fields of Northern France—that portion of France than which there was no bait more tempting to the enemy. So,

the Corps was used as the spear-head, the centre of the attack. All other troops taking part in the battle of August 8th conformed to the movement of the Canadian Corps. We made the plan, we set the time and the pace in that battle. We put in our artillery at night, got in all our shell supplies at night, and camouflaged the guns. Not a single gun was fired until the morning of the battle, and so well did our gunners handle their guns, so well



THE SINEWS OF WAR

General Sir Arthur Currie inspecting an artillery column which is wending its way toward the front. With such tremendous loads continuously upon them it is small wonder that the roads needed constant repair, and the necessary work upon them involved thousands of men. For this purpose were used on parts of the front gangs of Chinese coolies.

although it had not done any fighting during March and April, it played a part commensurate with the strength of the Corps. It was withdrawn from the line because it was Sir Douglas Haig's remaining reserve. It was withdrawn so that wherever the enemy next struck, the Corps could be diverted to the front. Up to that time, May, 1918, the Germans had struck three times, and every time with great success. It was only a question of how many more blows we could stand.

### THE CANADIAN CORPS THE SPEAR-HEAD OF THE ATTACK IN AMIENS.

When it became necessary then to fight the Battle of Amiens, which was to be the last battle fought in 1918,

did they determine the exact location of their positions, and so thorough was their knowledge of exactly where the German lines were, that the guns were able to open fire without previous registration and shoot a perfect barrage.

Our movements were carefully camouflaged, no easy matter when the whole Corps (over 100,000 men) had to be moved over fifty miles in one week and all the preparations for the attack had to be made in three days. We made every effort to make the enemy believe that we were in a different part of the country altogether, or that we were going to a different part of the country, and with such success that on the morning of the battle a German

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

medical officer who was captured, congratulated one of our Senior Medical Officers on the success with which the wounded were being evacuated, and said: "I wish I could congratulate our intelligence service with the same pleasure." On being asked "What do you mean?" he replied: "Well, we thought you were at Mont Kemmel." They had misplaced the Canadian Corps by seventy miles.

up against the old Somme battle field, which, two years earlier, had been the scene of that never-to-be-forgotten struggle, and from which the enemy had voluntarily retired in 1917. His voluntary retirement meant that the wire had not been cut, and the old trenches and the old machine gun emplacements were still there. On August 13-14, he had filled them with all the reserves he had been able to rush to the new battle front.



CANADIAN SOLDIERS NEAR LENS

A picture of the cemetery near Lens as it was when the Canadians drove the Germans back in 1917. The city and surrounding region were almost a continual battlefield throughout the war. When the enemy captured Lens they compelled it to pay a heavy indemnity. In its vicinity are highly productive coal mines. British Official

The battle began on August 8th; as stated above, the objective of that battle was the Old Amiens Line. We got through the first night, making that day a penetration of eight miles—the greatest penetration up to that time made by any troops in any army in any one day's advance. This success had a wonderful effect. It is not overstating the case to say that a great many people despaired of our ability to hold the Germans back. After that success the whole British Army looked again towards the Rhine; within the breast of the whole British nation hope dawned again. A wonderful moral effect that battle had. We were told to go on. Next day we went on three or four miles. On August 13th we had penetrated to a depth of 24,000 yards, captured over 9,000 prisoners and over 200 guns, and then we came

### PREPARATIONS TO SMASH THROUGH THE HINDENBURG LINE

There was no urgent need for proceeding further here at that time, so the battle was broken off. We were not withdrawn from the Amiens front, but after the British Third Army had successfully attacked towards Bapaume we again moved North to Arras on the 22nd of August, and at once prepared to smash the Hindenburg line, which now was the chief obstacle. In it the Germans had placed their trust, they would hold it until the end of the war, and before they would think of defeat that line had first to be broken. If we could break it, victory might yet come in 1918.

The Canadian Corps attacked it at its hinge with the Drocourt-Quéant line, a position that was very strongly fortified but one which, if success



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

attended us, would yield great results. The battle was begun on August 26th, finished on September 2nd, and during those eight days we pierced five complete systems of trenches. The last was the Drocourt-Quéant system, which we broke on September 2nd. It was the first time the Hindenburg line had been definitely pierced, and the troops got through. The result of that success was remarkable. The very next day the troops of the armies to the

capture of Bourlon Wood, and eventually the taking of Cambrai.

### HOW THE CANADIANS TOOK BOURLON WOOD AND CAMBRAI.

No position ever assaulted offered more seemingly insurmountable difficulties than did the Canal du Nord line; we had to cross the Canal on a front of 2,600 yards and then were faced by the strongly entrenched German position on the rising ground between us and Cambrai. On the first



WANTON DESTRUCTION IN CAMBRAI

Canadians entering the great square of Cambrai when they retook that town on October 9, 1918. Three sides of the square were on fire, and as the Allies had refrained from shelling it, all the damage done to Cambrai was done by the Germans, mostly by means of fires started and mines prepared when they found themselves compelled to evacuate it. On the afternoon of the day on which they left it the enemy started shelling the town.

south marched along the roads in fours through territory in which they had been held up.

Then came the end of September, when Marshal Foch planned those four great hammer blows which finally crumpled up the enemy. On September 26th, the French and Americans hit in the Argonne. On September 27th, the Canadians and the left of the Third Army hit in across the Canal du Nord. On September 28th, the Second Army and the Belgians hit in the north. On September 29th, the Fourth Army, which included the Second American Corps, hit in on the front near St. Quentin. Our share was the crossing of the Canal du Nord, the

day we captured Bourlon Wood and all the high ground; although our front was now over 14,000 yards, we beat off every division that tried to drive us back; by October we had outflanked Cambrai on the north, on the 9th the town itself was ours.

By the victory of Cambrai the last organized positions of the enemy on our front were overrun, his fighting from then until the close of the war being largely rear-guard actions. On November 1st, after a short sharp fight, we captured Mont Houy and as a result Valenciennes was in our hands by the following day. Some hours before the armistice we occupied Mons, and when hostilities ceased our line



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

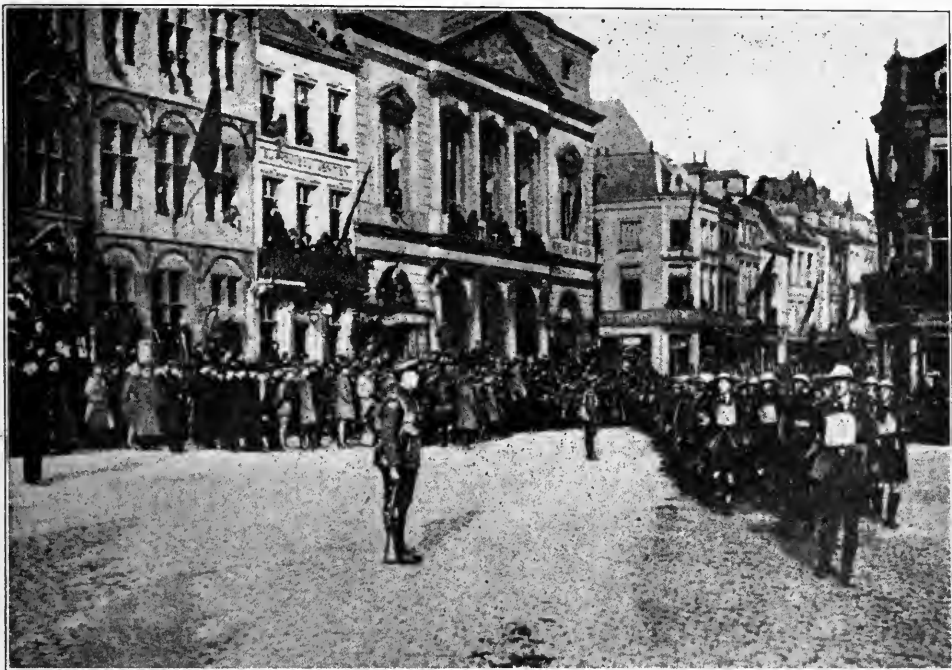
ran well to the east of that historic town where the British troops had first fought the German invader in August, 1914.

During these hundred days the Canadian Corps delivered over five hundred square miles of territory, two hundred and twenty-eight cities, towns and villages were liberated including Cambrai, Denain, Valenciennes and

December, 1919, and contributed two of the four divisions which held the bridge-head in that area.

### THE CANADIANS AND AMERICANS MARCH INTO GERMANY TOGETHER.

No force of equal size ever accomplished so much in a similar space of time during the war, or any other war, and the results achieved stand out a clear testimony of the superior energy,



THE CANADIAN BLACK WATCH ENTERING MONS

A picture of the Canadian Black Watch marching past the saluting base on the entry of General Horne into Mons. By a strange coincidence as the Imperial Black Watch were the last to leave Mons in the immortal retreat of 1914, so their Canadian comrades were the first to enter in 1918.

Mons, over 31,000 prisoners were captured and nearly 590 heavy and field guns, several thousands of machine guns and hundreds of trench mortars.

The Canadian Corps in that short period met and defeated decisively over 50 German divisions, i.e., approximately one-quarter of the total German forces on the Western front. Elements of 17 additional divisions were also encountered and crushed and after having put forth this superhuman effort, the Canadian Corps marched across Belgium in the wake of the retreating German Army, crossed the Rhine at Bonn on the 13th of

powers of endurance, and fine fighting qualities of our men.

It was on the march to the Rhine that we first encountered the troops of the United States. During many of the earlier days of the war we had long and anxiously looked for the arrival of American troops. It was our wish and hope that the men from this side of the Atlantic might fight side by side. That wish was denied us, but the reports which constantly reached us of the gallantry, the intrepid dash and the splendid fighting qualities of the American soldier made our disappointment more keen. However, if our hopes to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

fight side by side were disappointed during the war, we had the privilege of marching side by side through Germany.

The full story of the Canadian soldier in the war has yet to be told, but a few figures will serve to give a general indication of the results achieved. During the war the Canadians captured over 42,000 prisoners, three-

of them. Over 30 of these Victoria Crosses were won in the last 100 days. Of other honors and decorations the records give a full account, and from them might be quoted a wealth of incidents all illustrative of valor and devotion to duty. Suffice it here to say that in addition to many foreign decorations, Canadians received the following awards as well as the sixty-four



THE FUNERAL OF BELL-IRVING

© Canada, 1919.

The funeral of Bell-Irving, a well-known Canadian Scottish officer, near the line.

quarters of them during the last hundred days; they captured nearly 700 guns, some 600 of these after August 8, 1918, with machine guns and trench mortars in proportion. But all this was not done without the loss of a whole army of the best and bravest of Canada's sons; our total battle casualties for the last hundred days were little short of 46,000 and in our four years of service on the Western front we had battle casualties amounting to over 210,000, one quarter of whom had made the supreme sacrifice.

### SOME OF THE HONORS WON BY THE CANADIANS.

During the war 571 Victoria Crosses were won and the Canadians won 64

Victoria Crosses already spoken of.

Distinguished Service Order...	708
Military Cross .....	2,872
Distinguished Conduct Medal.	1,926
Military Medal .....	12,314

### THE IMPRESSION MADE UPON EUROPE BY THE CANADIAN FORCE.

The opinion of the Canadian held by the people of Europe can only be a matter of conjecture. Our first arrival in England came as a complete surprise to the people of the Old Country as a whole, and the enthusiasm of their welcome will not soon be forgotten. It was not an effervescent enthusiasm, for their warm-hearted attitude towards us at all stages of the war, which again found full expression on the Vic-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tory March of the Overseas troops through the capital of the Empire, left no doubts as to their true feelings.

One must visit France to find out what the French thought of us. The shoulder badge of CANADA was a golden key to every French heart. In military circles the Canadian Corps was rated very high, for over 50,000 Frenchmen lay dead on Vimy Ridge

our presence as disturbers of their quiet pastoral life; we were a part of this war, the cause of all their sufferings, and as such were under a cloud. The Belgians we met later, however, after the armistice, the Walloons and the broader-minded inhabitants of the towns and villages where our troops were billeted, had a better grasp of the situation. A large number of them



UNVEILING OF MEMORIAL TO CANADIAN OFFICERS AND MEN

Sir Robert Borden unveiled a memorial to Canadian officers and men who died at the Duchess of Connaught's Red Cross Hospital at Taplow. An old Italian garden in the grounds of "Cliveden," the house of Major Astor, was transformed into a cemetery for Canadians who died in the hospital. © Western Newspaper Union

and we had captured it. Marshal Foch himself in his appreciation of the two outstanding efforts of each of the Allied armies—the French, the Italian, the American, and the British—gave it as his opinion that the two outstanding actions to the credit of the British Army were the stand of the Canadians at the Second Battle of Ypres, and the Battle of Amiens in which the Canadian Corps drove home the main attack and made the deepest penetration.

The Belgians we encountered in Flanders were hardly typical of the Belgian people. They seemed to resent

during the German occupation had learned English so that they could one day talk to their expected deliverers.

### THE EFFECT OF EUROPE UPON THE CANADIAN SOLDIER.

To many Canadians Europe was a revelation. Visiting the homes of their ancestors, meeting their relations and greeted with the warmest friendship on all sides, the Motherland seemed to them a wonderful garden, where the smallness of country contrasted strangely with the largeness of its inhabitants. As in France, every fit man was serving his country; the quiet confidence and long-suffering endurance of the people

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

in spite of all the hardships and dangers of war brought a realization of what the British Empire means and even a casual observer could not fail to see what patriotism can accomplish. The intense love of country and of their homes was even more remarkable in France and Belgium. The sight of women and old men diligently cultivating their fields regardless of the turmoil of war, and

into the background, while the joys of home, the loyal friendships, and other happy memories of pre-war days were thrown into high relief. It was a shock, after spending years with a body of men bound together by the comradeship of tried service and actuated by high ideals, to rediscover the existence of that parasitic element that never fights, but always tries to exploit



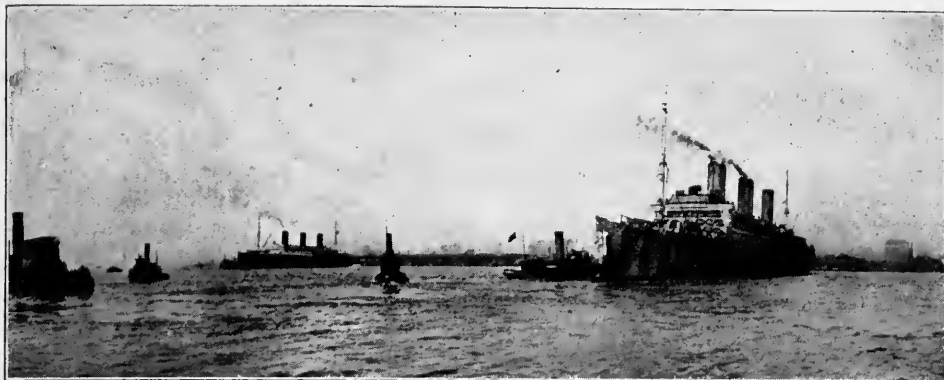
FORWARD TO THE RHINE

Major General Sir H. E. Burstall, commanding the 2nd Canadian Division followed by Brigadier General Panet, R. A., Lieutenant Colonel P. T. Montague, D. S. O., M. C., Lieutenant Colonel R. O. Alexander, D. S. O. and Divisional Headquarters Staff cross the Rhine at Bonn, and are seen passing the Canadian Corps Commander at the saluting base on the bridge. ©Canada, 1919

often under shell fire, left an indelible impression on our minds.

The Canadian soldier like the Canadian nation came out of the war with a fuller and broader vision of the needs of humanity, and with a fund of experience which will go far towards furthering the cause of all mankind. The change from the indescribable sufferings endured by the soldier in the war to the normal conditions of life is so great that the mental readjustment requires a little time. In France Canada was the Land of Promise, the ideal land of our dreams. The trials and difficulties of everyday life had receded

any people in the period of unrest between the close of a great war and the resumption of settled business. But the ideal remains; as in the war success was only won by national discipline, military training, sound organization and sheer hard fighting at the front, so only can success in peace be attained by national discipline, by training every man to be fit and ready to serve his country in time of need, by organizing, conserving and developing our resources, by diligently and consistently working, all for one and one for all. So shall our dreams be realized.



The Leviathan and the Imperator in New York Harbor

## CHAPTER LXXII

# The People of the United States and the War

## THE MANY WAYS IN WHICH THE CIVILIANS STROVE TO HELP WIN THE WAR

"AN incurably civilian people brought face to face with war is always a profoundly appealing and moving spectacle. Sometimes it fills the ardent patriot with misgivings and apprehensions that prove to be groundless." To the civilian masses in the United States, more than a hundred million souls of widely varying traditions, intelligence and economic development, the thought of war was too stupendous to be quickly assimilated. The reactions were of necessity gradual. When France and England were forced into war, the world was instantly changed for their neighbors across the sea as well, but comprehension of that truth came neither instantaneously nor uniformly. A clear and definite understanding of world conditions could not be flashed from shore to shore across the whole land.

### A PART OF THE POPULATION IMMEDIATELY RESPONDED.

Many individuals rebounded quickly from the first daze of awe and incredulity into active, sympathetic participation in the struggle. Money and supplies were soon flowing through the channels made ready by the Red Cross and the Relief Clearing Houses established in Paris and New York. Hospitals were supported and supplied with

workers. American youths eagerly devoted themselves to ambulance service, or joined the ranks of French and British fighters. There was no cry from the smitten lands that did not strike an answering vibration from hearts in the United States. After Belgian Relief and French Relief, Polish, Jewish, Armenian and Syrian Relief funds met a warm response.

### PEOPLE GAVE FREELY FROM THE VERY BEGINNING.

Various were the conditions and the methods of the donors. A quiet, timid little old lady, proffering a gift of flannel night gowns to each of several relief committees, unostentatiously laid down with the garments, in each case, a 1000 dollar bill. Impulsive, kind-hearted Jewish men and women, following the lead of their wealthy financiers who were giving hundreds of thousands of dollars, flooded Carnegie Hall, poured out their jewels, their trinkets and their cash, and then, if need were, trudged miles on foot to their homes at the far side of the city. A world famous musician and his wife spent their strength almost utterly to work for the salvation of their native land. Little children gathered together a few "pennies" by some tiny sale. Society leaders secured thousands of dollars at

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

bazaars and bridge parties. There were right hands that never allowed the left hands to know what they were doing; and there were right hands that carefully waited for an auspicious moment to show what they were doing. Ex-President Taft likened the coming of the war-catastrophe to an electric shock, arousing the American people to generosity. As yet, however, they were but taking the first lessons in extensive giving.

### THE GROWTH OF PUBLIC OPINION FAVORABLE TO THE ALLIES.

Through the months of suspense when pacifism, honest and otherwise, German propaganda and German plotting were abroad in the land, in spite of a carefully-sustained official neutrality, public opinion in the country was swinging ever farther and farther to the side of the Allies and gathering momentum for a blow to smite the perpetrators of disaster. "The vox populi" says someone, "speaks at times in delphic tones and only rarely are its words uncompromisingly explicit." The war crisis offered one of those rare occasions when the tone and meaning were unmistakable. Pacifism of the better sort was indefinitely postponed, as one of its advocates declared for himself. The great mass of the people was pro-Ally.

After the Lusitania horror, neutrality was doomed. "Preparedness" became a watch-word. Yet, there were parts of the country that "needed the dramatic and eventful days at the beginning of February (1917) and the moving events" that followed to bring things home to them and arouse them fully, so foreign to their traditions and their ideals was a desire for war, and so difficult was it for them to comprehend that this was a necessary war, for the protection of those very traditions and ideals. But the hour struck at last. Mass meetings in the great cities and promises of support from every section of the country carried the nation, now eager for action, past the threats of German agents, past the last protests of pacifist propagandists up to the moment of declaration of war on Good Friday, April 6, 1917.

### WHAT HAD BEEN DONE BEFORE THE UNITED STATES ENTERED THE WAR.

When that moment came, certain organizations were already in working order for the new undertakings. The composition of the Council for National Defense, created by act of Congress in the summer of 1916 and ready for active operation after March, 1917, has been described in Chapter XLV. Its work was carried on through a vast system whose great arteries (State Councils) branched out into far-reaching capillaries (the county and community councils). With field agents traveling up and down the land, gathering and scattering information and encouragement, the farthest and smallest groups were brought into touch with the centre.

Two months before the nation entered the war, the National League for Woman's Service had been organized in anticipation of the need of having ready some definite programme for volunteer workers. The aim was to fit each woman into the spot where she could serve best. Within the two months the membership had come to number 50,000. The Red Cross, already actively engaged in its great primary mission, promptly expanded its service and set hosts of willing hands and brains at new tasks in addition to the familiar ones. Knitting, preparing bandages and other surgical supplies, making garments for hospital patients or for destitute refugees,—these occupations were continued, the number of workers and the output of supplies increasing rapidly. First Aid classes in nursing, canteen work, motor corps duties, and the many valuable labors of home service divisions offered opportunities to additional thousands of eager candidates for usefulness.

### THE CAMPAIGNS FOR CONSERVATION AND INCREASED PRODUCTION OF FOOD.

Wherever it could be done, these great general organizing agencies (among which must be included the Women's Committee of the Council for National Defense) made use of existing organizations to save time and to avoid duplication of effort. Much was accomplished by co-ordina-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tion and co-operation of forces. The intelligence and training of those who ardently desired to serve their country and humanity did not always measure up to their willingness; but special training was provided, where possible and necessary, and a strong effort was made to keep the square peg from trying to push into a round hole. The most interesting and stirring aspect of the wide, energetic mobilizing movement was the voluntary nature of the service. Boys and girls, men and women—on the farm and in the city's heart—high and humble—tried to find their jobs and to do them.

Perhaps the campaigns for food conservation and production showed most clearly this universal determination to "carry on." Before the executive had been empowered, in August, 1917, to take over the control of food and fuel, plans had been laid and statements made public. Of the 971,000,000 bushels of bread and fodder grains that the Allies would need for the next year, the United States must furnish a great part. The planting season was past; there was no way of materially swelling the production for that year. The only way to meet the demand was by careful management and strict saving. After warning against the dangers of speculation and profiteering; cutting off, by means of embargo measures, leakage through neutral markets into the enemy's stores; and planning to save some 100,000,000 bushels by the prohibition of distilled liquor manufacture, the government working through its new Food Administration Board took over the entire sugar industry, placing it under a strict licensing system from October 1. Already, a \$50,000,000 United States Grain Corporation had begun operations in the wheat market and established prices there. The farmers were guaranteed a minimum price of \$2.20 a bushel for

wheat, and speculation was forbidden. Beginning November 1, twenty staple foodstuffs were included in the licensing system. On November 12, it was extended to cover every bakery using ten barrels of flour a month or more.

It is probable that there were far more than two million "war gardens"



**"THE GREATEST MOTHER IN THE WORLD"**

The lady from whom Foringer's familiar poster was drawn. The poster was used effectively in the Red Cross campaign.

Photograph by  
G. V. Buck, Washington, D. C.

cultivated, during the summer of 1917, on land that would otherwise have been idle. Vacant lots, back-yards, and spaces usually devoted to decorative plants were turned into vegetable gardens and cared for by amateur farmers. Business men and women, housewives, school boys and girls became members of this impromptu land army, helping to increase the supplies for local consumption. Boys of sufficient years and strength, in many cases, spent the summer or part of it working on farms; and many college girls volunteered to use some of their



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

vacation weeks farming either on the college fields or elsewhere.

### THE MOVEMENT TO SAVE SUGAR FOR SOLDIERS AND CIVILIANS IN EUROPE.

But the husbanding of supplies in the kitchens of the land and voluntary restriction of the fare upon the tables of the land counted most in providing for the lives of precious millions in Europe during the winter 1917-18. In September, the Food Administrator, Herbert C. Hoover, made the following announcement about the sugar situation:—

"Our consumption is at the rate of ninety pounds per person per year—a little under four ounces per day per person. The French people are on a ration of sugar equal to only twenty-one pounds per annum per person—a little more than the weight of a silver dollar each day. The English and Italian rations are also not over one ounce per day.

"The French people will be entirely without sugar for over two months if we refuse to part with enough from our stocks to keep them supplied with even this small allowance, as it is not available from any other quarter.

"Sugar even to a greater amount than the French ration is a human necessity. If our people will reduce by one-third their purchases and consumption of candy and of sugar for other purposes than preserving fruit, which we do not wish to interfere with, we can save the French situation."

When pledge-cards promising support to the Administrator in the matter of food conservation were distributed by the help of Boy Scouts, Girl Scouts, Campfire Girls and others of the service organizations, one family out of every three promptly signed them, as well as ninety per cent of the better class hotels. In addition, after September, meatless Tuesdays and wheatless Wednesdays were generally observed in private homes and public eating-houses.

### THE AMOUNT OF WHEAT AND MEAT SAVED BY REDUCING CONSUMPTION.

Some figures from the statements concerning export of foodstuffs indicate what was accomplished by these

methods. Sir William Goode, of the British Food Ministry, announced that from July, 1917, to April 1, 1918, 80,000,000 bushels of wheat and wheat products had been exported from the United States to the Allies. Since the official estimate had been that owing to crop shortage only 20,000,000 bushels would have been available for export under normal conditions, at least 50,000,000 bushels were calculated to have been furnished through the individual restraint exercised by the people themselves, who either ate less white bread or gave up eating it altogether.

In January, 1918, the Allies made a request for 70,000,000 pounds of frozen beef a month for the three months following. In March, 86,000,000 pounds of beef and beef products were shipped to them, an amount twenty per cent larger than in any previous month for seven years. This increase represented the reduction in domestic consumption of beef. In that same month, March, the export of pork and pork products amounted to 308,000,000 pounds, which was more than six times the normal. The year's saving on sugar by voluntary economizing was estimated to have been about 400,000 tons. It must not be understood that these supplies were gifts. The European nations paid in cash or bonds for the greater part of them, but it was American self-denial which made it possible to send so much.

Other eloquent figures are found in the reports of hotels and restaurants for two months in the autumn of 1917, which showed a saving of 17,700,000 pounds of meat, 8,000,000 pounds of wheat flour, and 2,000,000 pounds of sugar. The reduction of waste was surely indicated, also, in the marked decrease in garbage collected.

### THE SLOGAN, "FOOD WILL WIN THE WAR," ACCEPTED BY THE PEOPLE.

To arouse and sustain interest in the food campaign a variety of devices was employed. Magazines and newspapers gave freely of their space for articles intended to educate or stimulate the public; posters were displayed everywhere; lectures, demonstrations and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

class instruction made for greater intelligence concerning the values, uses and preparation of foods. Colleges and schools introduced courses in these and kindred subjects, to prepare competent workers to serve under the Food Administration or to forward its purpose in other ways. Canning cam-

practical experience and labor of the farmer. The farmer's wife and daughters and young sons took up their end with vigor and enthusiasm. Town and city dwellers kept up with the crescendo movement. The spring and summer of 1918 showed an unprecedented area of planting—about 289,-



STUDENT ARMY TRAINING CORPS, COLLEGE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK

In response to an appeal of the War Department, 350 colleges and universities agreed to pass under Government control, October 1, 1918. Simultaneously, student soldiers in all these institutions took the oath of allegiance to the country's flag. About 150,000 young men, enrolled, were under orders and entitled to soldier's pay. As a military unit they were called the Student Army Training Corps. Each college campus became a military reservation.

paings and competitions resulted in the domestic conservation of great stores of fruits and vegetables, North Carolina leading the country, in 1917, with a record of over 7,000,000 cans. The estimate for the whole country, that year, is something over 500,000,000 quarts stored up for winter use. Even this number shrinks into modest proportions in comparison with the 1918 records of 1,450,000,000 cans.

With the inspiring motto, "Food will win the war," kept in the foreground, the nation spurred up its forces of production, toiling, experimenting, expanding its resources. The scientific expert and the specialist bent their knowledge and skill to join with the

000,000 acres—yielding, in spite of winter cold and summer drouth, a harvest of cereals that outran almost all previous experience. The number of home war gardens for the year was over 5,000,000.

### A SUMMARY OF THE INCREASE IN FOOD EXPORTS.

The following quotation, summarizing the facts, suggests the substantial value of the ploughing, sowing, reaping, herding, packing and planning to the high achievements of the armies over the sea:—

"In the years before the war the United States sent an average of between 5,000,000 and 6,000,000 tons of food to Europe each year. In the crop

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

year of 1918 we doubled that amount, sending 11,820,000 tons, and were prepared in the following year to send between 15,000,000 and 20,000,000 tons. In the midst of these bountiful harvests there were no food cards and the only rationing that was necessary was that prescribed by the individual conscience. . . . Our total contribution in 1918 to the food needs of Europe amounted approximately to a value of \$2,000,000,000."

The province of the Food Administration, then, was vast, requiring an army of workers. Under the wise direction of the able Administrator, state and county administrators, directors and committees co-operated to protect and control foodstuffs of a value reaching about \$300,000,000 a month. As was true in other lines of service, the greater part of this business was carried on by men and women who gave their time and effort freely.

### THE PRODUCTION OF FUEL STIMULATED IN VARIOUS WAYS.

Next to food in importance came fuel. For manufacture, for transportation, for heating, it was needed in greater quantities than ever. To keep the munition plants supplied, the cantonments warmed, and to carry the troops from point to point on their long journeys, new demands were added to normal needs. That the conditions in the industry were unsettled at the beginning of the period, that the working force had been reduced by the absorption into the army and into other war industries of many of its men, that among the forces at work there were seeds of dissension due to the many nationalities represented there, must be kept in mind. To overcome these difficulties, the Fuel Administration, under the direction of Dr. Harry A. Garfield, appointed by the President, started at once on a scheme for improving the spirit at the mines and arousing interest in the work that must be done. Through newspapers in their own languages, through addresses and personal appeals, the men were reached. Their response brought forth a sufficient and steady supply of coal ready for distribution.

The next problem was to keep the fuel moving in the directions where it was most needed. There were moments of tension, but the enormous demands were somehow met. The necessity for strict economy in the use of all sorts of fuel was explained to the public, so that extravagance or waste came to be severely frowned upon. And when, in a crucial hour of emergency, an especial restriction was laid upon the people or some part of them, it was for the most part borne with cheerfulness. "Lightless nights," "heatless Mondays" and "gasless Sundays" were observed when the request was made, although the people could not in every case be informed of the war contingency they were helping to adjust. The "heatless days" were ordered in January, 1918, to give opportunity for bunkering at once two hundred and fifty ships in eastern ports whose cargoes were urgently wanted in France. For five days together and on every Monday after, for several weeks, commerce and industry east of the Mississippi were asked to use as little coal as possible. The ships were supplied and sent on their way.

### THE UNUSUALLY COLD WINTER OF 1917-18 INCREASES DIFFICULTIES.

Through the unusually long winter of extraordinary cold, though ice and storms impeded with formidable obstacles and dangers, the heavy work was unremitting. The crisis was safely passed. Not only coal but oil was produced in increasing quantity. Its production in 1918 had been raised to 344,000,000 barrels, and 13,312,000 barrels of gasoline, in that one year, were sent to Europe. It was during the summer that Marshal Foch's cable message called for uninterrupted continuance of the petroleum supply as an absolute necessity for the success of the Allies. Then the Fuel Administration made its request for an immediate saving of gasoline east of the Mississippi by abolishing temporarily the use of motor vehicles on Sundays except in cases of necessity. Out of the 1,000,000 barrels of gasoline estimated to have been saved in this way, about half were sent to the waiting Allies.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

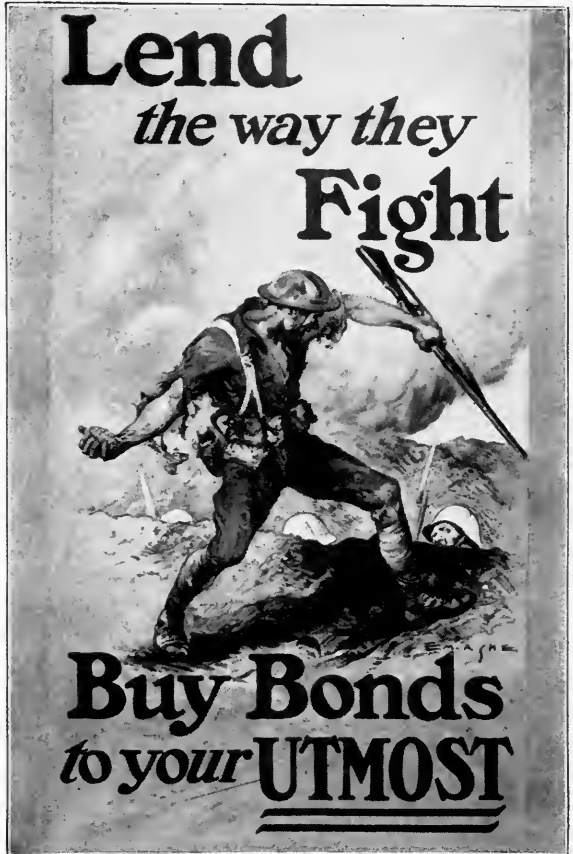
By these regulations and economies, notwithstanding the unprecedented demands, the country was carried through the war period without catastrophe, and at the end was prepared to begin another winter with unusually large stores of coal already at hand.

### THE NATIONAL GOVERNMENT TAKES CONTROL OF THE RAIL- ROADS.

To keep vital freight—food, fuel and munitions—freely in motion, and provide for the transport of troops to and from cantonments, without unduly interrupting regular traffic, it became necessary; in December, 1917, for the Federal Government, as a wartime measure, to assume full control of the railroads and waterways. This removed the competitive features which were unavoidable under the system of separate ownership and which had remained a bar to national war efficiency even though the railroads had been centralized under a War Board and had been aiming at useful co-operation. Consolidation of offices, elimination of unnecessary trains, regulation of freight routes and rapid transport of perishable freight went far toward clearing up congestion and preventing waste and delay.

Wartime expenses, beyond what was raised by taxation, were met by issuing government loans. The method followed was to send out certificates of indebtedness which were apportioned to the twelve Federal Districts and distributed among the banks in those districts. Advances furnished by the banks were repaid from funds obtained by means of the popular loans which followed at the order of the Secretary of the Treasury. In each Federal District the loan campaign for the sale of bonds was managed by experts working through committees in all the communities involved. There were five such issues of bonds, the last (called the Victory Loan) coming in the spring

of 1919 after the Armistice. Bonds were issued in denominations as low as fifty dollars but even smaller investments were made possible by the issue of War Savings Certificates and Thrift Stamps. The former were discount certificates which at the end of five



A LIBERTY LOAN POSTER BY E. M. ASHE

years would bring a return of the amount invested plus about four per cent yearly interest. For the first series the maturity value was five dollars; for the second, five dollars or one hundred dollars. The stamps were redeemable at any Money Order Post Office at maturity, or at any time ten days after a written demand had been presented. The Thrift Stamps had a face value of twenty-five cents, bore no interest and were not redeemable in cash but could be exchanged for War Saving Certificate Stamps. They made an appeal to children in particular.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE SPECTACULAR CAMPAIGNS FOR THE LIBERTY LOANS.

It would hardly be possible to conceive of more arresting or more extensive advertising methods than attended the Liberty Loan drives. In magazines and newspapers prominent pages called attention to the national call. The

and secured subscriptions for millions of dollars. There were processions and mass meetings and personal canvasses. "Four-Minute Men" stood before thousands of audiences every night, in theatre and concert hall and moving-picture house, presenting the facts that would make clear the case; and



MME. GERALDINE FARRAR CAUSES A BLOCK IN TRAFFIC

At this corner, Fifth Avenue and Forty-second Street, New York, where surging thousands daily pass and repass, war interests found a constant centre. The plaza of the Library became a national market-place. For the Third Liberty Loan campaign a miniature "Liberty Theatre" was erected at the top of the steps. There famous singers and eloquent speakers assisted in drawing crowds and selling bonds. Mme. Farrar is here singing "The Star Spangled Banner."

best artists used their best ability to picture in posters the need for rallying to the support of the fighting force. Cartoonists and others drew amusing or appealing sketches before the eyes of possible subscribers. Grand opera singers and prominent members of the dramatic stage gave of their art at meetings and dinners or assemblies in the open streets to attract subscriptions from their hearers. Favorite moving-picture actors and actresses made spectacular demonstrations of various sorts, aeroplane flights, etc.,

films to awaken interest were flashed upon the screen at moving-picture performances.

Especial features marked each individual loan campaign. On the last day of the First Loan, June 15, 1917, the Liberty Bell in Philadelphia was rung for the first time in a half-century and woke an answering echo in other bells all over the land. During the Second Loan drive, the National League for Woman's Service sold bonds from the Liberty Bank, a small structure modeled after the Sub-Treasury

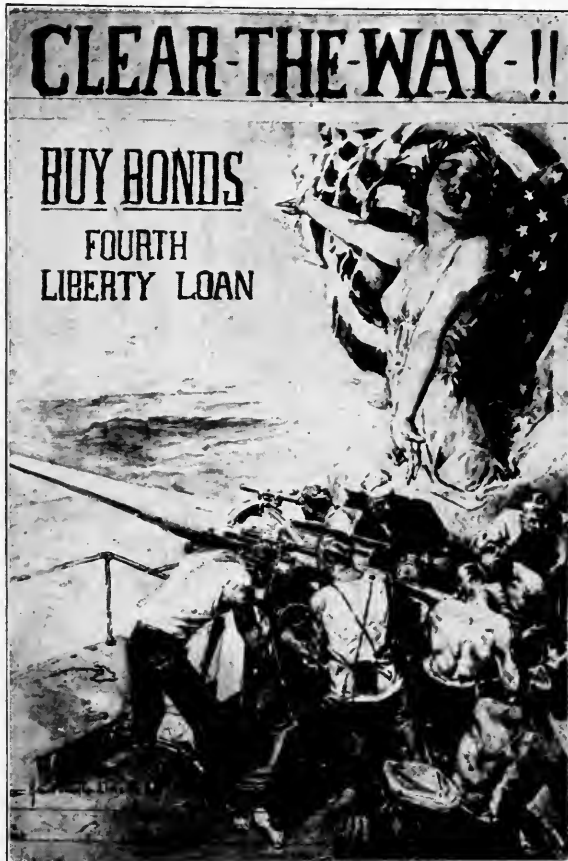
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Building and erected in Madison Square, New York. On April 26, 1918, during the Third Loan, mothers of soldiers walked in parade carrying flags sown with service stars; "Anzacs" and "Blue Devils" traveled from city to city arousing thrills of enthusiasm; a great ball was rolled from Buffalo to New York. For this loan, too, to which one out of every six persons in the United States subscribed, a flag of honor was awarded to each community that exceeded its quota. In more than 32,000 communities flags were hoisted. When the Fourth Loan was being raised in the fall of 1918, October 12 was everywhere observed as Liberty Day. In New York, Fifth Avenue, gleaming with myriad flags and renamed "Avenue of the Allies," witnessed a great procession headed by President Wilson. At a theatre, in the evening, the President autographed every bond that was sold. Many activities of this drive centred about the Altar of Liberty in Madison Square. Every Federal District oversubscribed the loan, Boston leading with an amount 26.44 per cent above its quota. When we consider how few Americans were accustomed to buy bonds, the results are startling. Indeed, a fuller or more enthusiastic response could hardly have been anticipated by the most sanguine.

### MILLIONS OF THE POPULATION INVEST IN LIBERTY BONDS.

The statistics for the five loans are given in the following table:

From War Savings Stamps the returns were about \$879,000,000. If one could visualize the hosts of small givers that contributed quarter-dollars to help fill up this fund, there would be matter enough for smiles and tears in the philosophies and sacrifices that counted large in young lives, east and west, north and south, wherever the call had penetrated. Few there were who had not helped in some way.



ONE OF HOWARD CHANDLER CHRISTY'S POSTERS

	First Loan	Second Loan	Third Loan	Fourth Loan	Fifth Loan (Victory)
	May 15- June 15, 1917	Oct. 1- Oct. 27, 1917	Apr. 6- May 4, 1918	Sept. 28- Oct. 19, 1918	Apr. 21- May 10, 1919
	3½ per cent	4 per cent	4¾ per cent	4¾ per cent	4¾ per cent
Total quotas....	\$2,000,000,000	\$3,000,000,000	\$3,000,000,000	\$6,000,000,000	\$4,500,000,000
Total subscriptions.....	\$3,035,226,850	\$4,617,532,300	\$4,176,516,850	\$6,989,047,000	\$5,249,908,300
Number of subscribers.....	4,500,000	10,020,000	17,000,000	21,000,000	11,803,895
Total allotments.....	\$2,000,000,000	\$3,808,766,150	\$4,176,516,850	\$6,989,047,000	\$5,249,908,300



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE WORK OF THE COMMITTEE ON PUBLIC INFORMATION.

The task of penetrating into every community so as to carry to it information of affairs both national and European involved a huge educative enterprise that was managed by a Committee on Public Information, started under the direction of a civilian chairman and the Secretaries of State, War, and the Navy. Some of the workings of this committee, which expanded

were most active. Besides "Blue Devils" and "Anzacs," a Belgian regiment and a company of America's own boys came from the front—human testaments of activities over-seas. Advertising clubs, publishers, journalists, artists, authors, actors, managers, college professors and business men combined their efforts to foster loyalty and combat insidious enemy propaganda. Even in foreign countries of neutrals and Allies, within the borders of the



"THE AVENUE OF THE ALLIES"

The Fourth Liberty Loan campaign was marked by many interesting features. Fifth Avenue was at that time christened the "Avenue of the Allies," an episode which has been commemorated in verse and painting. On the opening day of the bond sale, September 28, 1918, this parade of the 60th Regiment and the U. S. N. Reserves from Pelham Bay Park Training Station passed down the avenue beneath a colorful array of banners and streamers.

until it embraced thousands upon thousands, we have mentioned in the publicity methods used for the Liberty Loans. The same agencies were employed for War Fund drives, and, regularly, for the general dissemination of facts making for intelligent understanding of the war effort of the nation and of world conditions. Facts, facts, facts were carefully collected; pictured in newspapers; discussed in pamphlets which were widely scattered; shown in moving pictures; forcibly described by speakers on public platforms or, more intimately, among small groups in factories and workrooms. In carrying out this last-mentioned part of the programme, the "Four-Minute Men"

foes themselves, pictures and literature were introduced as extensively as might be to overcome the false impressions planted by German propagandists. The actual results of such labors cannot be calculated; but there is no question that the Committee on Public Information was a mighty moral force working upon the spirits of men.

### RELIEF AND WELFARE ORGANIZATIONS GENEROUSLY SUPPORTED.

We have said earlier that the people of the United States were learning the meaning of bountiful giving. As month after month brought its appeals for funds to support the welfare work abroad and at home, each organization



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

received all that it asked and more. Not to multiply figures, let us take the Red Cross drives as typical. Asking for \$100,000,000 in June, 1917, the association received \$115,000,000. The following May, another request for \$100,000,000, brought a response of \$176,000,000. It is estimated that for the whole period of the United States in the war, the total contribution of the people to the Red Cross was \$325,000,000 in actual money, and manufactured

workers going hither and thither, day and night, in hospitals and offices, on highways and in byways. Friendly hands were ready with food or drink at railway stations or piers when troops were passing. The refreshments and the smiles of the dispensers were tokens of cheer for many a boy. In the camps the Hostess Houses with their lady hostesses, and in the towns the canteens with their friendly attendants formed centres of hospitality and home-



**BATTLE TANKS INVADING FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK**

In the years of war and the months following, the Library's marble lions faced a variety of scenes. Sovereigns, diplomats and commanders passed, amid cheers of acclaim. "Anzacs," "Blue Devils," Belgian soldiers and hosts of American "doughboys" brought to crowds of spectators laughter and tears and deep, deep thoughts. Cannon, soup-kitchens, machine-guns, and—most spectacular of all—the tanks rolled by. Here are two monsters, veterans of battle, followed by French whippets, leading the war pageant of the Victory Liberty Loan in the spring of 1919. This pageant reviewed the war activities of the country.

products whose value was about \$60,000,000. The other welfare agencies, as we have mentioned, conducted separate campaigns from time to time. Finally, for the sake of economy and greater efficiency, it was decided to make one great sweeping associated drive for funds to be divided among the seven principal organizations, with \$170,000,000 as a goal. Beginning on the very day that the Armistice was signed, a week later the subscription had rolled up to \$203,179,000.

So much for what can be computed in definite numbers! For the rest, the story can never be fully told of the tireless energy expended by individual

liness whose influence was invaluable. Everywhere private homes were thrown open for the entertainment of lads from camp or hospital. For these the War Camp Community Service, aided by many volunteers, furnished special care and recreation.

### **THE WAR WORK OF WOMEN IMMENSELY VALUABLE.**

A considerable number of women found expression for their patriotism by entering war manufacturing plants. Some took the places of men in other occupations. Others belonged to the Land Army, living in camps and laboring on farms. Boys and girls, well-organized for usefulness, took a

not-inconsiderable part in collecting funds, gathering up books for the soldiers' and sailors' libraries admirably managed by the American Library Association, and in many other kinds of service. Mothers and fathers, wives, sisters and brothers, having given up their best and dearest, offered their own strength and thought and spirit to build a supporting wall behind the armies of sons, husbands and brothers "over there." Business, motor driving, clerical work, cooking, dish-washing,—whatever the form of the service undertaken for love of country and in the name of humanity, it was part of the one great task. May we not feel that the sweat and the weariness of the laborer in field, kitchen, office or warehouse, like the sweat and exhaustion of the man in the trench (though in a less degree) were symbols of devotion to the one world-embracing cause?

During the earlier days of the nation's war activity, the chief agent of the Council for National Defense reported: "I can testify that the American people are getting hold of essential facts with astonishing rapidity, and that it is like taking a thermometer out of the cellar into the sunlight to travel through the land and observe the rise of our civilian morale." Not only great general movements such as manufacturing, ship-building and agricultural expansion, but the small personal efforts of the poor and humble and remote, as well, came under his eye. None were left out of the composite impression. Children and grandchildren of immigrants vied with those of the oldest American ancestry. Jews and Christians stood side by side. It must be remembered, indeed, that the Jewish population of the country furnished many more than its quota of soldiers for the army and gave lavishly of its means. The emotional nature of

the southern Negro and the stolid, determined mind of the Indian on the plains were stirred, each in its own way, to energetic effort. Both were creditably represented in the Army and both took active part in the work at home. The American Indians, reports show, sent into military service nearly one-fifth of the total number of males of military age,—eighty-five per cent, volunteers. Their record was one of efficiency and extreme earnestness. In addition, the Indians subscribed to the first three Liberty Loans an amount of \$13,000,000, a proportion of between thirty and forty dollars per capita.

## THE TIDE WHICH FLOWED ALONG "THE AVENUE OF THE ALLIES."

Washington has been aptly represented as the heart of the national war organism. There were the vast central executive forces that regulated and supplied all the great systems leading out in every direction to the ends of the land. In the year and a half of accelerated functioning, the population of the hitherto quiet city was increased by about one-third and administrative buildings multiplied as if by magic. If Washington was the heart, New York may be thought of as having been "the very pulse of the machine." Through it the throbbing elements of life passed, caught together in one flood before flowing away into distant reaches to fulfil their ultimate destiny. And, there, Fifth Avenue was the central channel where the pulsing never ceased. In it was reached the high tide of the nation's hopes and efforts. In it were brought together the ends of the earth. May those days be never forgotten,— "Days when, as Avenue of the Allies, This was the street that best served to express  
The country's soul. The magic lingers yet  
Of that vast patriotic enterprise."



A Circulating Library at the Front

## CHAPTER LXXIII

# Relief and Welfare Organizations

## BRIEF MENTION OF THE ORGANIZATIONS WHICH MINISTERED TO THE MORAL, MENTAL AND PHYSICAL WELFARE OF THE SOLDIERS

**T**HOUGH the main energies of the contending nations during the War were devoted to destruction, agencies for the relief of physical suffering, and for the spiritual, moral, social and physical welfare of individuals affected by the war were more numerous and more active than in any previous contest. In addition to the chaplains and the medical and sanitary corps, all of which belonged to the armies themselves, a host of civilians, both men and women, were engaged in relieving suffering, furnishing moral and material aid, and providing amusement and instruction for the soldiers and civilians engaged in war work, or for the relatives of soldiers.

### THE QUESTION OF MORALE RECOGNIZED AS IMPORTANT.

In a war fought not by professional soldiers, but by the manhood of the nations, it may be easily seen that the attitude of the men toward the cause for which they were called upon to fight was all-important. All of the intangible things which constitute what is called morale (though the word should properly be spelled without the final letter) were important, and the military leaders eagerly welcomed all those agencies which could help to maintain the pride, confidence and

cheerfulness of the soldiers under their dangers and hardships.

In the British and American armies the work of the chaplains was considered extremely important, and the number appointed as a part of the establishment was greatly increased. So far as possible the difficulties in their way were removed and Catholic, Protestant and Jewish chaplains were to be found working among the soldiers not only in the camps but in the actual front line trenches. Among the Canadian chaplains also were represented all denominations having considerable strength in the Dominion. The Australians in addition to the above appointed a considerable number of Salvation Army officers as chaplains. The French Army did not provide chaplains but ministers of religion of military age served in the lines with the laity, and there were many hundreds of them.

Many of these chaplains placed themselves in positions of the greatest danger. Some were accustomed to accompany the men whenever an assault was made. They helped to carry the wounded back of the lines, comforted those who needed their ministrations, and buried the dead. While all held regular services when-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ever practicable, perhaps the greater part of their work was done with men individually. They made an unusual record and dozens received decorations from one or another of the governments.

### THE RED CROSS THE MOST IMPORTANT RELIEF ORGANIZATION.

The most important relief organization was the Red Cross which had been at the front and behind the lines

permitted to work in all the belligerent countries. Naturally the work of the American Red Cross was greater than that of any other single country, and it was permitted to continue work in all countries after the United States entered the war.

### THE WORK OF THE AMERICAN RED CROSS.

On May 10, 1917, a War Council of seven members, with Henry P. Davi-



CHAPLAIN ROLLINS, TWENTY-SIXTH DIVISION, CONDUCTING COMMUNION SERVICE

in all wars since its organization. An international organization, its representatives were found in every country. The total work can not be estimated now. Not until histories of what was done in every separate country are written will it be possible to measure definitely the whole accomplishment of the organization in the war. The work of the Red Cross has been mentioned in several other chapters of the work. It is fitting, however, that special mention of the organizations on this side of the Atlantic be given.

As the United States was not at war during the first three years it was

son as Chairman, was appointed by President Wilson in the capacity of President of the Red Cross. From the headquarters at Washington nationwide activities were directed. A pre-war membership of about 500,000 swelled rapidly until, including the Junior organizations, it embraced approximately 31,000,000. Active workers numbered over 8,000,000.

After the collection of the first war fund of something more than \$100,000,000, in June, 1917, commissions were sent out to the European countries involved in the war. Arrangements and appropriations were made for relief work in all of these countries

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

among civilians and prisoners as well as fighting forces. Most important of all was the work in France for which more than nine thousand persons were enrolled. Two departments, one for Military Affairs and one for Civil Affairs, were established. The former, besides sustaining military and convalescent hospitals, dispensaries and diet kitchens, distributing hundreds of

THE AMERICAN RED CROSS WORKED IN  
TWENTY-FIVE COUNTRIES.

In each country the service was adapted to the particular need and the peculiar circumstances. For example, in Italy, even before the permanent commission was installed, a great necessity for help arose when the Austrian invasion of October, 1917, sent hosts of villagers from their homes in hasty,



FATHER KELLY, ONE OF THE CHAPLAINS OF THE TWENTY-SEVENTH DIVISION

U. S. Official

thousands of dressings weekly and providing a supply service for several thousand hospitals, maintained canteens at the front, at railroad junctions and in Paris. Many millions of soldiers were served with refreshments at these centres where the workers were American men and women. The civilian relief department took part in efforts for the care of refugees, reconstruction measures in devastated areas, rescue of populations in time of attack, assistance for the families of French soldiers, especial welfare of children, etc. At the time of frequent air raids, day-and-night service for quick response to alarms was undertaken in several cities.

terrified flight. From France experienced American Red Cross workers rushed to relieve some of the distress in this emergency. Hurrying forward ambulances, soup-kitchens and carloads of supplies, these men and women heartily labored hand in hand with the Italian Government and the native relief organizations to save helpless thousands. Later, American ambulances joined those of the Italian corps and the British Red Cross (which had from the first been doing valiant service there) on the Austro-Italian front.

In Belgium, while attention was given to improving the lot of the Belgian soldiers, the principal effort was directed toward helping to care for the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

feeble and the young and to rescue them from danger. Schools and colonies for children received the largest share. In Russia, in the Balkan countries, in Palestine,—in twenty-five foreign lands, all told—the American Red Cross has done earnest and devoted work for sick and wounded, helpless and famished humanity.

aid where needed, explain to them the best methods of meeting some of their problems, fit into the individual case the individual solution. The Bureau of Information kept open ways of communication between the families at home and the men in camps or on the field. Often much anxiety and suffering were prevented by this means. The



AN IMPROMPTU PARTY

Change and recreation are perhaps more necessary to aviators than to other soldiers in the war because of their essentially nerve-racking work. Here is an impromptu party at a Red Cross rest room. The music was picked up on the spur of the moment and the canteen girls are invited to join. Courtesy of the Red Cross

### BOTH FIELD AND HOME SERVICE DID VALUABLE WORK.

Field Service covered many ministrations to the welfare and comfort of soldiers and sailors. They received not only garments and necessary articles but things providing amusement and entertainment—games, books and magazines, tobacco and musical instruments. The whole, the sick and the convalescent were looked after.

Home Service had too many branches of usefulness to be fully dealt with in such brief space. The Civilian Relief Department sought in every way possible to bring "wise and hopeful service to soldiers' families"—to help them to self-support, give them legal

Canteen Service looked after the comfort of men during their transportation to and from camps. Fifty-five thousand women workers were engaged in feeding and cheering the troops on their journeys. The Motor Service, whose uniformed volunteer drivers gave no less than sixteen hours a week, each, was occupied in carrying men and supplies to and fro, meeting trains, moving wounded, hurrying officers to places of appointment, in fact on countless errands.

### THE GREAT ARMY OF TRAINED RED CROSS NURSES.

The primary and central department, of course, was that of Nursing. With Miss Jane A. Delano as director-





#### RED CROSS WORKERS FROM CHINATOWN

The Red Cross knows no barriers of creed or race, age or sex. In this picture are shown some of the little workers of Chinatown. They knitted sweaters and the more difficult garments, and their work was perhaps the most exquisitely painstaking that the Red Cross received.

Courtesy of Red Cross



#### SAVED FROM THE JUGGERNAUT OF WAR

Refugee children of Nancy who have been transferred across France to Dinard, Brittany, there to be educated under French teachers. The American Red Cross contributed food, clothing and medical care to the little colony. Captain Moore and American Red Cross Nurses are standing in the right foreground. International Film Service



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

general, the Red Cross nurses met their great opportunity for heroic, inestimable service most nobly, wherever they were needed. Nearly 24,000 were enrolled for this work. Besides, there were numbers of supplementary untrained nurses ready to aid. Sanitary improvement, care of public health, instruction and advice in dietetics, training for First Aid—none of these fields was neglected.

and supplies to the American Red Cross more than \$400,000,000. No value can be placed upon the contributions of service which have been given without stint and oftentimes at great sacrifice by millions of our people."

### THE WELFARE ORGANIZATIONS AND THEIR METHODS.

Coming to the organizations with a purpose less purely spiritual than that of the chaplains, and not so distinctly



### WHITE-ROBED MESSENGERS OF MERCY

Of all the memorable pageants that have swept along the metropolitan thoroughfare between sympathetic throngs, none perhaps was ever much more impressive than this of long white lines of Red Cross nurses and workers.

The activities of the Woman's Bureau, preparing, packing and transmitting the supplies, has been mentioned elsewhere. Of the women all over the country President Wilson said they were "busy every night and every day doing the work of the Red Cross, busy with a great eagerness to find out the most serviceable thing to do, busy with a forgetfulness of all the old frivolities of their social relationships, ready to curtail the duties of the household in order that they may contribute to this common work."

In his statement upon retiring from the chairmanship of the War Council, Mr. Davison announced: "During the past nearly twenty-one months the American people have given in cash

designed to relieve suffering as that of the Red Cross, we have a number of so-called welfare organizations. All of these did good work at first in the training camps and later abroad as well. In the United States they were officially recognized and at first functioned through the Commission on Training Camp Activities.

### THE COMMISSION ON TRAINING CAMP ACTIVITIES.

In April, 1917, Secretary Baker appointed a Commission on Training Camp Activities under the chairmanship of Raymond B. Fosdick. Three months' later Secretary Daniels appointed a similar Commission for the Navy under the same chairman. The two-fold task of the Commission was

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

to supply the normal things of life to nearly a million and a half young men in training camps, and to keep the environs of the camps clean and wholesome.

In these two activities the Commission employed to a great extent the machinery of organization and agencies hitherto interested along such lines, and except where necessary did not create new machinery. To the Y. M. C. A., the K. of C., and later the Jewish Welfare Board, the Commission looked to supply a large share of the club life and entertainment. Other agencies recognized were the Y. W. C. A., the American Library Association, the Salvation Army, and the War Camp Community Service. Something will be said of each in turn.

### THEATRICAL AND MUSICAL ENTERTAINMENTS PROVIDED.

In addition the Commission built Liberty Theatres in 34 camps, equipped with all necessary paraphernalia and placed them under the charge of resident managers. A trifling charge was made and many of the foremost actors and actresses of the country volunteered their services. Marc Klaw, of Klaw and Erlanger, acted as chairman of a committee of organization and booking. Besides the regular performances, dramatic directors in every camp encouraged local talent so that the men when they went overseas would be equipped with the means of self-entertainment.

Community-singing was also developed as a definite aid in promoting morale and *esprit de corps*. In every army camp and naval station, the commission placed a song-leader, and wonderful results were obtained. A National Committee on Army and Navy Music was appointed and "Songs of the Soldiers and Sailors" was compiled. The chorus singing was surprisingly good and thrilled all those who heard it at the camps.

### THE WORK OF THE AMERICAN LIBRARY ASSOCIATION.

To the American Library Association the Commission instinctively turned for an adequate supply of books and reading facilities for the troops. Response was prompt and generous. Even before the Government's appeal the Association had already organized in June to provide library buildings in



JAPANESE RED CROSS NURSES IN FRANCE

the chief cantonments. Under Dr. Herbert Putnam, Librarian of Congress, the work was quickly put through. By January, 1918, most of the buildings in the 32 chief cantonments had been erected. They were of wood, about a hundred feet long and forty feet wide, well suited to their purpose, and capable of containing from 15,000 to 30,000 volumes on every sort of subject. In addition to the libraries housed in separate buildings the Association allowed the other organizations to have a branch of the nearest camp library, with anywhere

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

from 500 to 2000 books. Small camps and posts, naval and marine stations and vessels were supplied with libraries, hospitals and Red Cross houses provided with books. Particular attention was given to the hospitals; special librarians were appointed in every camp as well as in base and debarkation hospitals.

Library privileges were absolutely free. Above every case of books was a card:

"These books come to us overseas from home. To read them is a privilege. To restore them promptly unabused is a duty.

(signed) John J. Pershing."

Besides the 50 tons space allowed on



**A SARDINIAN WELCOME FOR THE RED CROSS COMMISSION**

In the town of Santadi, in Sardinia, this picturesque group, composed mostly of mothers, sisters, wives and children of men who were away at the front, gathered to greet the members of the American Red Cross Commission. Courtesy Red Cross Magazine

### THE DISTRIBUTION OF BOOKS TO THE SOLDIERS.

With the sailing of the troops overseas, the work was extended. Dr. M. L. Raney, Librarian of Johns Hopkins University, went over and arranged with Admiral Sims for library service to the navy in its bases, aviation fields, mine-sweeping bases and battleships. Visiting Army Headquarters Dr. Raney then succeeded in obtaining official endorsement of his plan by General Pershing, who allotted 50 ship tons per month free cargo for the books, and added the duty of receiving the books to the work of the Quartermaster Corps of the A. E. F. A warehouse was promptly built at one of the great debarkation ports, and headquarters set up in Paris.

each transport, a collection for the use of the men on the voyage was placed in charge of the Y. M. C. A. Secretaries.

To organize the social and recreational life of the communities adjacent to the training camps the Commission enlisted the services of the Playground and Recreation Association of America. The purpose was to enlist the interest of the communities in the young men in camp, and to co-ordinate the social organizations of the community with the camps.

### ORGANIZED ATHLETICS IN EVERY CAMP ESTABLISHED IMMEDIATELY.

Within the camps the Commission appointed sport-directors and boxing instructors and built up organized athletics so that every man had the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

opportunity of some special kind in his leisure time. Boxing was especially encouraged not only for its excellence as a sport but for its intimate connection with bayonet fighting. Funds for various sporting equipment were eventually partially subscribed by the government and partly by voluntary subscription.

Suppressive work in dealing with vicious conditions was handled by direct representatives of the Commission assisted by such organizations as the Committee of Fourteen of New York, the Watch and Ward Society of New England, the American Social Hygiene Association. The special problem arising from the presence of young girls in the vicinity of the camps was handled by the Y. W. C. A. and a Committee on Protective Work attached to the Commission. Within a short time this work showed remarkable results: a large number of cities abolished their red light districts, and remodeled their laws and administrative machinery for dealing with prostitution and the liquor traffic.

### THE IMPORTANT WORK OF THE Y. W. C. A. AMONG WOMEN.

Much was done to serve the soldiers' families who visited the camps in the establishment of hostess houses by the Y. W. C. A. Provided with attractive sitting and rest-rooms and a cafeteria, they furnished a place where the fighting men might meet their women-folk who visited them in camp.

War conditions entailed abnormal surroundings for women, as for men. In the munition cantonments and factories numbers of them were as completely robbed of their background of social life as were the soldiers in training camps, and for their relief the Y. W. C. A. provided recreation buildings with rest-rooms, gymnasias, cafeterias, etc. In this respect, moreover, the work for colored women was the same as for the white. The Y. W. C. A. was also responsible for the many young women, telephone operators, stenographers and the like, serving with the armies or with other welfare organizations abroad, and for women engaged in French war industries.

### THE SALVATION ARMY THE MOST POPULAR ORGANIZATION.

The military form of its organization was a particular advantage to the Salvation Army in taking up its duties at the front. With a National War Board for direction of its war activities, operating from headquarters in New York and Chicago, it co-operated with all the other agencies for securing the welfare of the forces on sea and on land. Forty-four ambulances were provided and accepted by the Government; and several hundred tons of supplies were shipped to Europe every month. At no time was there a large force of American Salvation Army workers overseas—less than two hundred—but their influence there as well as on this side of the sea was, nevertheless, far-reaching and most cheering. At debarkation points, in camps and hospitals, and under fire at the front, they shared hardship and danger so as to help supply the men with home comforts and attentions. Paper and envelopes, post-cards, chocolate, fruit and other commodities were distributed; money, telegrams and other messages were transmitted to families of soldiers; but, most welcome in some ways, and most distinctive, were the doughnuts and apple-pies cooked under the most unpromising conditions by Salvation Lassies and supplied, fresh and toothsome, to hungry Yankee lads—a homely service that was not forgotten. Sometimes a metal wheelbarrow served as a stove. Sometimes a German field-kitchen was made to do duty for its captors. Always the sight was welcomed with cheers.

The overseas work was under the leadership of Lieut. Col. W. S. Barker. At home, in addition to preparing numbers of garments, comfort kits, etc., to be distributed by the Red Cross or otherwise, the Salvation Army set up huts and hostels where they welcomed and cared for soldiers and sailors en route, furnishing them with club-life and arranging sight-seeing trips, as well as providing them with food and shelter. One particular service was that of supplying civilian clothing to demobilized troops.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### WAR CAMP COMMUNITY SERVICE.

Supplementary to the Training Camp Activities and undertaken at the request of the Commissions, the War Camp Community Service, under the control of the Playground and Recreation Association of America, worked outside the camps for the protection and entertainment of sol-

munities frequented by soldiers from the camps and sailors on shore leave. Later, it was most valuable in helping to relieve the tedium of long convalescence for those in the hospitals while recovering from illness or wounds.

### JEWISH WELFARE BOARD.

For the especial care of men of the Jewish faith the Jewish Welfare Board, of which the late Colonel Harry Cutler was chairman, made ample provision. In the camps fifty buildings offered opportunities for rest, for reading and writing, and for recreation. Auditoriums for lectures, concerts and theatrical performances made for relaxation and refreshment. Classes were organized for the study of various subjects. All the activities in training - station, camp, or cantonment, were under the direction of trained workers. In cities, branch organizations operated community centres, providing comfortable and cheery surroundings for Jewish soldiers and sailors who were sojourning there. In all the Board had about 600 workers in uniform besides many volunteers for the whole or a part of their time, and erected fifty huts in France or in the occupied sections of Germany. The privileges of these were offered to all soldiers regardless of creed, and full advantage was taken of the offer. No organization was more useful and none was better managed.

The most prominent, however, of all the welfare organizations were the Y. M. C. A. and the Knights of Columbus. Their work was so large and embodied so many fields that more extended notice must be given.

The experience of Jewish societies in welfare work among their co-religionists in times of peace made the workers of the Jewish Welfare Board especially efficient in work with the soldiers. Their badge was the Star of David.



SALVATION ARMY GIRLS DISTRIBUTING COFFEE AND DOUGHNUTS

diers and sailors on leave. In a great number of cities, centres of this organization were established where the men might be provided with comfortable sleeping quarters, food at reasonable prices, information bureaus, clubroom advantages and amusements. Sight-seeing tours, visits to ball games, theatre parties, and social entertainment in private homes were arranged to keep them interested and make them feel welcome. The work, which was very largely carried on by volunteers, met hearty co-operation in the com-

# The National Catholic War Council

By MICHAEL WILLIAMS

Editor National Catholic War Council Bulletin

ONLY a brief review of the main features of the patriotic activities and war relief work of the Catholics of the United States is possible within the limits of a single chapter; nevertheless, because of the well organized nature of that work, the whole subject may be covered in a general way without detriment to the proper appreciation of the chief factor of the Catholic war effort, namely, the harmony of that effort with the cause for which the nation fought and which it triumphantly vindicated.

First, however, in order to gain a truthful comprehension of the spirit in which the Catholic Church leaders, their clergy, and the laity accomplished their portion of the war work of the nation, it is essential to grasp the fact that a prompt and determined readiness to face and deal with their duties as citizens in time of war had been inculcated in Catholics with all the authority and by means of all the teaching agencies of the Church ever since the birth of the United States of America as a nation.

## THE ACTION OF THE ARCHBISHOPS TAKEN IN WASHINGTON.

Twelve days after the declaration of war, on April 18, 1917, the Archbishops of the Catholic Church in the United States, assembled for their annual meeting at the Catholic University in Washington, and sent a letter to President Wilson from which the following extracts are taken:

"Standing firmly upon our solid Catholic tradition and history, from the very foundation of this nation, we affirm in this hour of stress and trial our most sacred and sincere loyalty and patriotism toward our country, our government, and our flag.

"Acknowledging gladly the gratitude that we have always felt for the protection of our spiritual liberty and the freedom of our Catholic institutions, under the flag, we pledge our devotion and our strength in the main-

tenance of our country's glorious leadership, in these possessions and principles which have been America's proudest boast.

"Inspired neither by hate nor fear, but by the holy sentiments of truest patriotic fervor and zeal, we stand ready, we and all the flock committed to our keeping, to co-operate in every way possible with our President and our national government, to the end that the great and holy cause of liberty may triumph and that our beloved country may emerge from this hour of test stronger and nobler than ever."

The President in his reply to Cardinal Gibbons said: "The very remarkable resolutions unanimously adopted by the Archbishops of the United States at their annual meeting in the Catholic University on April eighteenth last, a copy of which you were kind enough to send me, warms my heart and makes me very proud indeed that men of such large influence should act in so large a sense of patriotism and so admirable a spirit of devotion to our common country."

## THE PROVED VALUE OF THE PLEDGE OF LOYALTY.

Spontaneously, and as a matter of inevitable action springing from principles out of which no less worthy fruits could issue, one great and powerful part of the population, the seventeen millions of Catholics, were thus committed by their leaders to the cause of their country; the first of the religious bodies of the land to volunteer for service.

A pledge given in all good faith may yet remain unfulfilled, or at least but partly accomplished. What the Catholic pledge actually amounted to was authoritatively stated two years after the Great War had been triumphantly brought to a close when the Archbishops and Bishops, assembled in conference at the Catholic University of America, in Washington, for the first time since the Third Plenary

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Council in 1884, issued a Pastoral Letter to their clergy and faithful people, in which they said:

"The traditional patriotism of our Catholic people has been amply demonstrated in the day of their country's trial and we look with pride upon the record which proves as no mere protes-

stances which war inevitably brings, they acted as priests.

"The account of our men in the service adds a new page to the record of Catholic loyalty. It is what we expected and what they took for granted. But it has a significance that will be fairly appreciated when normal conditions return. To many assertions it answers with one plain fact."

### SOME OF THE DIFFICULTIES WHICH WERE OVERCOME.

The complex and unprecedented problems of war relief and civic co-operation with the government which characterized the Great War, confronted Catholics with difficulties of an especial kind. The doing of their duties as individuals, and as citizens, was not the problem. Although forming only one-fifth part of the population at most (and probably only about one-sixth part), the Catholics contributed about one-quarter of the armed forces of the United States. Over one million Catholics were in the Army and the Navy. But there was lacking a mechanism for their united national co-operation, as Catholics, with the various governmental agencies charged with the conduct of the war, and of war relief.

The Knights of Columbus had laid down lines of national service before the war which provided channels for Catholic activity when the great war came. When the American troops were summoned to the Mexican border, the Knights of Columbus had begun the work of building recreational halls that would serve as well for religious services in the various camps, and it was felt that such a civic co-operation promoted effectively the physical morale and the spiritual welfare of the troops.

### THE KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS THE FIRST RECOGNIZED AGENCY.

With the opening of the world war the National Commission on Training Camp Activities took up on behalf of the National Government the work of providing centres in all camps, both at home and abroad, for the enlisted men. The Knights of Columbus volunteered the services of their Order, and that



ARCHBISHOP PATRICK J. HAYES

Archbishop Hayes of the Diocese of New York was made Chaplain Bishop by the Pope and given jurisdiction over all Catholic Chaplains with the Army of the United States. © C. Smith Gardner

tation could prove the devotion of American Catholics to the cause of American freedom."

Continuing, the Pastoral Letter outlines the means by which the high idealism and spiritual inspiration of the call to the Catholics on the part of their leaders were translated into terms of action.

"To our Chaplains especially we give the credit that is their due for the faithful performance of their obligations. In the midst of danger and difficulty, under the new and trying circum-



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

organization was named as one of the governmental agencies for the work.

In the General Convention of Catholics of the United States—held in Washington, August 12, 1917, for the purpose of considering how organized Catholics might best help the Government win the war—it was unanimously resolved that the Knights of Columbus should be selected as the representative Catholic body to continue the special work they had undertaken. Delegates from most of the dioceses of the United States, from forty National Catholic organizations and representatives of the Catholic Press Association, also expressed unanimously their opinion that the Catholics of the United States should create a national organization to study, co-ordinate, unify, and put in operation all Catholic activities incidental to the war.

The Catholic body in this respect was like the National Government, and like other religious denominations. The Government showed how to answer the problem by creating the National Commission on Training Camp Activities of the Army and Navy. This Commission successfully co-ordinated the heads and representatives of many social and welfare organizations. The Protestant religious bodies followed this example by forming "The War Time Commission of the Federal Council of Churches," in which all the Protestant bodies are included, even the Unitarians and Universalists. The Jewish body solved their problem by establishing the Jewish Welfare Board. The Catholics gave their answer in the

National Catholic War Council. It was through the National Catholic War Council that the proper and authoritative direction of all the multi-form activities of Catholics was accomplished.



TWO PRINCES OF THE CHURCH

Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, Belgium, and Cardinal Gibbons, Archbishop of Baltimore. Cardinal Mercier came to the United States to thank the people in person for the help extended to his country in time of stress. Cardinal Gibbons has long been one of the best-loved citizens of Baltimore.

### THE FUNCTIONS OF THE NATIONAL CATHOLIC WAR COUNCIL.

The National Catholic War Council was intended not to control, but to direct; not to hinder or minimize, but to co-ordinate, to promote, and to inspire; not to rule in a bureaucratic fashion, but to facilitate, to speed up, and to suggest new means of accomplishing Catholic national action as the need for it should arise. Therefore, it had to embrace the entire organization of the Catholic Church.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Hence, the National Catholic War Council was composed first of the fourteen archbishops, or metropolitans, as they are called in the United States. The extent of territory covered by their sees will be evident from the following enumeration: James Cardinal Gibbons, Archbishop of Baltimore; John Cardinal Farley (deceased), Archbishop of New York; William Cardinal O'Connell, Archbishop of Boston; Most Rev. John Ireland (deceased), Archbishop of St. Paul; Most Rev. James J. Keane, Archbishop of Dubuque; Most Rev. Alexander Christie, Archbishop of Portland; Most Rev. John J. Glennon, Archbishop of St. Louis; Most Rev. Sebastian G. Messmer, Archbishop of Milwaukee; Most Rev. Henry Moeller, Archbishop of Cincinnati; Most Rev. John B. Pitaval, Archbishop of Santa Fe; Most Rev. John W. Shaw, Archbishop of New Orleans; Most Rev. Dennis J. Dougherty, Archbishop of Philadelphia; Most Rev. Edward J. Hanna, Archbishop of San Francisco; Most Rev. George W. Mundelein, Archbishop of Chicago. With the direct heavy burdens of their own sees, and the great distances to be covered for a common meeting, it was impossible for this body to direct war work. Consequently they appointed, with power to act, an administrative committee of four bishops: Rt. Rev. Peter J. Muldoon of Rockford, Illinois; Rt. Rev. Joseph Schrembs of Toledo, Ohio; Rt. Rev. Patrick J. Hayes, of New York, and Rt. Rev. William T. Russell of Charleston, South Carolina. It was the office of this body to be a high court of general control and direction. All four of these bishops had also the work of their immediate dioceses to do, and necessarily their supervision of such a labor as national war relief, was of a general character.

The immediate supervision and direction of war relief work, therefore, was left to two sub-committees; the Committee of the Knights of Columbus, which had for its field all activities within the camps, including the direction of camp secretaries, and of overseas work; and the Committee on Spe-

cial War Activities which, to put it briefly and by way of exclusion, had for its field all that is not included in the work of the Knights of Columbus. The funds of the Knights of Columbus, and the expenditure of them, were put under the control of that organization. And the same may be said of those of the Committee on Special War Activities. It will be seen, that both committees were left to do their independent work and carry on their own administration. Both were held responsible by a higher authority, the Administrative Committee, and with this committee both met at intervals for conferences and survey of the entire work through an advisory board, composed of the Administrative Committee, six representatives of the Knights of Columbus, and six of the Committee on Special War Activities.

### THE RELATION OF THE COMMITTEE TO THE GOVERNMENT.

The Committee on Special War Activities was further and necessarily connected with Governmental activities owing to the fact that its Chairman had been appointed as the Catholic representative on the Committee of Six. This Committee was interdenominational and was composed of the following: The Rev. John J. Burke, of the National Catholic War Council, Chairman; Mr. John R. Mott, of the Young Men's Christian Association; Bishop James De Wolf Perry, of the Episcopal War Time Commission; Dr. William Adams Brown, D.D., and Dr. Robert E. Speer, of the Federated Council of Churches; and Colonel Harry Cutler, of the Jewish Welfare Board. This Committee was an advisory committee to the Secretary of War and to the Commission on Training Camp Activities.

In August, 1918, the Commission on Training Camp Activities decided to recognize the National Catholic War Council as an official agent of the Government in war welfare work. This did not mean the withdrawal of the official recognition already extended to the Knights of Columbus nor was it intended as any unfavorable criticism of the work of the latter,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

but the Government decided—in the words of Secretary Baker—“to recognize not only the child, but the parent of the child.”

The National Catholic War Council was at liberty to appoint its agents in war welfare work and this it did—renaming the two agencies that it had employed from the beginning of its existence—the Committee on Knights

### HOW THE ACTIVITY OF LOCAL ORGANIZATIONS WAS CO-ORDINATED.

A Committee on Men's Activities, a sub-committee of the above, was one of the seven principal branches which canalized the executive energy of the main committee. The Committee on Men's Organizations dealt with all Catholic men's organizations, other than the Knights of Columbus, through-



SOLDIERS OUTSIDE A KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS HUT

The Knights of Columbus had many huts in the war zone, where all soldiers were cordially welcomed by the secretaries and other helpers. Thousands of pounds of tobacco, chocolate, candy, and other small luxuries were distributed at these centres. Inside the huts there were fire and light, seats and tables provided with writing materials. Entertainments of various sorts were also given.

of Columbus Activities and the Committee on Special War Activities.

With what thoroughness all fields were covered may be seen from the following survey of the Committee on Special War Activities. The committee was composed of the Rev. John J. Burke, C.S.P., chairman; Rt. Rev. Monsignor H. T. Drumgoole; Rt. Rev. Monsignor M. J. Splaine; Rt. Rev. Monsignor Edward A. Kelly; Rev. William J. Kerby; John G. Agar, and Michael J. Slattery, executive secretary. It goes without saying that every member of the committee was deeply interested.

out the country. How necessary this work of co-ordination was may be seen from the fact that there are nine thousand seven hundred and fourteen Catholic men's associations in the United States. All of them in greater or less degree were employed in war work. The Committee on Men's Activities informed itself as to what each organization was doing; also what it was best fitted to do; and armed with this knowledge it was able to direct each organization as to the most needed work in its own community. In this way the Catholic clubs throughout the country were utilized for the enter-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tainment and repose of the soldiers and sailors, and the members of the various local organizations contributed their personal services.

They were instructed how to co-operate with the local branches of the Fosdick Commission; how to better, when necessary, the moral conditions of the camps in their neighborhood; how to provide entertainment under

Christmas Red Cross Membership Drive received the enthusiastic support of the Catholic Church throughout the country."

**THE ENERGY AND ZEAL OF CATHOLIC WOMEN ALSO ORGANIZED.**

What has been said of the work of the Committee on Men's Organizations applies as well to the work of the Committee on Women's Activities.



IN THE BASILICA AT DOMREMY-LA-PUCELLE

In modern times a basilica has been erected on a hill near Domremy where Joan of Arc is said first to have heard the voices telling her of the strange mission she was to perform. Everything connected with the Maid of Orleans was intensely interesting to the American soldiers who were stationed in that part of Lorraine.

"U. S. Official

Knights of Columbus direction in the camps; how to help the Travelers' Aid; how to recruit secretaries for camp work at home and abroad; and how to co-operate in governmental activities, such as the loan drives, or Red Cross campaigns. The effectiveness of this united, national co-operation of Catholics, guided by the suggestions of the War Council, was shown, among many other utterances, by the Red Cross in its letter of December, 1917, in which it stated that, "The Catholic Church has rendered invaluable service to the American Red Cross," and, in a later letter, "The

More than four thousand women's organizations were registered and the multifarious ways in which Catholic women helped the Government win the war were nationally co-ordinated. It was through this committee that the highly important work of building and maintaining visitors' houses at various camps where they were most needed was carried on, together with the equally urgent task of establishing community houses in various centres where they were most required. In addition there was the preparing, the dispatching, and the supervision of the overseas workers, three units of which

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

were sent to France, Italy, Belgium and Poland. The workers for the visitors' houses, the overseas units and the community houses were trained at the National Catholic Service School at Clifton, Washington.

Through other sub-committees of the central Special Activities Committee the Council contributed materially to the reconstruction activities

from the standpoint of Catholic principles, the pronouncement made by the Four Bishops of the Administrative Committee attracted international attention, and ran through three editions of one hundred thousand copies each.

**THE KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS ALREADY PREPARED TO SERVE.**

When the great war broke out the Knights of Columbus had already re-



**THE LAST TRIBUTE FOR FALLEN COMRADE**

Here Reverend Matthew J. Walsh, Chaplain, U. S. A., is shown conducting the burial services over Edmund Lennon, a K. C. Secretary. Sometimes the attendance at a burial was large; at others only a few could be present. Sometimes the last services were conducted while shells were dropping in the neighborhood. Father Marsh and Monsignor Connelly are on the left and right of the officiating priest. U. S. Official.

of the government; opening and maintaining a country-wide system of employment bureaus and of workingmen's clubs, called "Everyman's Clubs," and a number of vocational training schools at the Catholic University and elsewhere. Many pamphlets on important aspects of social service problems, notably the famous "Reconstruction Programme," were published and distributed widely, in addition to a monthly Bulletin.

The Reconstruction Programme calls for a special word of consideration. Dealing with the whole subject of labor and capital in their social aspects,

ceived their diploma of graduation as qualified agents in war relief work through their service to the men of the Regular Army and National Guard at the Mexican border. Eagerly they welcomed the new opportunity to serve. They had the organization, the machinery, and the will to accomplish great things. The Hierarchy gave them the fullest endorsement, and with that as their good will capital, they subscribed their own initial war fund and commenced their work. Instantly their repute guaranteed them public favor, and when at length they appealed to the general public for funds in individ-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ual state jurisdiction drives, the support they received exceeded their most sanguine hopes. Briefly, instead of obtaining three million dollars as they had at first hoped, the Knights of Columbus independent war drive resulted in over fourteen million dollars.

As rapidly as circumstances permitted, they translated every dollar of this fund into services for the men in the Army and Navy. Buildings in every large camp in this country were quickly erected, equipped and manned, and through every phase of camp life the Knights of Columbus men were known as energetic friends of the soldier, never so much as when the influenza plague swept through the camps and demanded heroic self-sacrifice on the part of all those who would truly earn the title of patriot.

When William J. Mulligan, chairman of the Knights of Columbus Committee on War Activities, went overseas with Rev. P. J. McGivney, supreme chaplain of the organization, the work of the Knights with the American Expeditionary Forces was definitely extended so that it embraced all the leading points of disembarkation and followed the movements of troops through training and rest areas to the very front of battle.

### A SUMMARY OF THE ACTIVITIES OF THE KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS.

In a few months the Knights of Columbus service was known to practically every man of the American Expeditionary Forces. On the signing of the armistice the Knights had approximately eight hundred workers abroad. The Knights were the first American war relief workers to establish themselves in Germany with the American army of occupation. They instituted clubs in Italy, in Great Britain, in Ireland, Belgium, and Holland.

The Knights had two hundred and fifty points of operation overseas. Over one thousand secretaries constituted the personnel of these establishments. At home the Knights had over three hundred and sixty buildings in home camps, manned by seven hundred and fifty secretaries. In all the large cities the Knights maintained

service stations, and this feature of their work was emphasized in large Atlantic seaport cities like New York, Boston and Philadelphia, where all the transports were met.

One of the most important problems of reconstruction work—the re-employment of returning service men—was met by the Knights of Columbus in conjunction with the Committee on Special Activities of the National Catholic War Council. With Peter W. Collins, an expert formerly in the Government's employ, at the head of their Reconstruction and Employment Service, the entire Knights of Columbus organization was developed and systematized so that each Knights of Columbus Council became an employment bureau for returned service men. At the end of the war a nation wide system of free education was launched by the Knights as part of its share of Americanization work.

### THE ORGANIZATION OF THE CORPS OF CHAPLAINS.

The Direction of the Catholic Chaplains in the Army and Navy of the United States was entrusted by the Pope to Right Reverend Patrick J. Hayes, D.D., who was the Auxiliary Bishop of New York at the time of the appointment, and is now the Archbishop of that city. Bishop Hayes was one of the first members of the Administrative Committee of the National Catholic War Council, and continued to serve in that capacity until he became Archbishop, in 1919.

The question of the Catholic chaplain in war time, of course, was the centre of the whole terrible problem of war, so far as Catholics were concerned. Great as was the recognized importance of recreational work in the huge camps that sprang up throughout the land and overseas; unquestionable as was the need for safeguarding the physical health and mental stability of the soldiers and sailors, still more was it essential, much more was it a matter of paramount importance, a pressing duty upon the leaders of the Catholic body, to safeguard the immortal souls of the gallant young men who went forth to give their lives for

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

their country. Catholic Chaplains for the Army and Navy; Catholic Chaplains in sufficient numbers and adequately equipped to carry on their sacred work—this was the crux of the Catholic problem; this work above all other types of work was the first and foremost.

There were only a few chaplains in the American Army at the outbreak of the war, twenty-four in all, of whom

the men in the service, when the size of the regiment was so greatly increased. Through the officers of the National Catholic War Council, co-operating effectively with clergymen of other denominations, the Hierarchy brought the claims of the Catholic men in the service to the friendly attention of the government, and as a result, the Chaplains' Bill was passed by Congress, increasing the number of chaplains to



GETTING IN LINE FOR FOOD

These Belgian children in the town of Staden have forgotten that they are hungry in their curiosity at being photographed. It is difficult to get them to form a proper line or to maintain it when it has been formed.

eight were Catholics; and in the Navy there were only four or five. In the whole of the National Guard organizations of the United States there were only nine Catholic Priests, and these had no official standing. The going of our troops to the Mexican border in 1918 revealed the lamentable shortage of chaplains, and when the United States entered the War the first and foremost of the problems which the Hierarchy had to solve was this.

The army regulations provided for but one chaplain to every regiment—a condition which was conducive to grave neglect of the spiritual needs of

one in every twelve hundred men, a representation which had been the rule under the old organization of the army. The government was so well aware of the importance of the chaplains that they met the fullest wishes of the religious authorities of all denominations in adopting a policy of non-interference under the draft law with students in seminaries, a wise provision which looked to the future and which if the war had been of long continuance would have conduced to maintain a full supply of chaplains.

Men of every creed, especially practical commanding officers in the Army



and Navy, admitted the value, even in a military sense, of the presence of the chaplains with the forces. To have the companionship and inspiration of a clergyman—to whom all his life he had looked for guidance and friendship; to be in constant touch with the Sacraments, the source of inspiration and strength in the paths of duty; to know that if death should come to him he would have near him the help most needed—all this, to the Catholic soldier, made for better morale, and the best army is that in which the morale is highest. And in an army and a navy like those of the United States, where Catholics formed such a notably large proportion, the benefit of strengthening all the elements of morale were obvious. President Wilson, Secretary of War Baker, and Secretary of the Navy Daniels, fully recognized the expediency of increasing the number of chaplains, and of conserving the sources of their supply, and General Pershing embodied in one of his reports an urgent call for more chaplains for his army.

### **BISHOP HAYES APPOINTED CHAPLAIN BISHOP BY THE POPE**

With the vast increase in the number of Catholic chaplains in both branches of the service, chaplains who came from all dioceses of the country, complex problems of ecclesiastical jurisdiction immediately arose, and the only simple and efficient way out of these difficulties was taken in November, 1917, when Bishop Hayes was appointed Chaplain Bishop by the Pope, and placed in supreme spiritual authority over all the Catholic chaplains in the Army and Navy of the United States.

Once the chaplains had been surrendered by their own diocesan authorities they came under the immediate spiritual jurisdiction of the Chaplain Bishop. The Chaplain Bishop was offered military rank by the United States government but declined it, feeling that he could do more good by not sacrificing his own liberty. He assumed active control early in January, 1918, and at once named five Vicar Generals whose work was the same, ecclesiastically, so far as the

chaplains in their districts were concerned, as that of a Bishop in a diocese. Rt. Reverend Monsignor James N. Connolly was named Vicar General in charge of overseas activities; Rt. Reverend Monsignor William M. Foley, Great Lakes Vicariate; Rt. Rev. Monsignor Leslie J. Kavanaugh, Gulf Vicariate; Rt. Rev. Monsignor Joseph M. Gleason, Pacific Vicariate; and Rt. Rev. Monsignor George J. Waring, Atlantic Vicariate; Rev. Joseph P. Dineen, private secretary to the Chaplain Bishop; Rev. Lewis J. O'Hern, C.S.P., executive secretary, stationed in Washington, D. C.

In his circular letter addressed to the Catholic Chaplains of the Army and Navy in April, 1918, Bishop Hayes authoritatively laid down the principles which governed this supreme department of Catholic war activity, and brought out in high relief the spiritual opportunities open to the priests who flocked to the colors under the Sign of the Cross. "In the first place," he wrote, "let me beg of you to bear in mind that both of us, Bishop and Priest, are an integral and necessary part of wartime jurisdiction—it would hardly do to call it a diocese—with the flock ever on the brink of eternity scattered over land and sea, amid the perils of the battle front, perils of the fortified clouds, and perils of the garrisoned deep. Hardly ever before in the history of the Church, have shepherds been called to follow and care for the fold of Christ under more dangerous and heroic circumstances. \* \*

"A war chaplain must be a man of marked spiritual life both for the efficiency of his ministry, and for the safety of his own soul. If the course of modern warfare demands military leaders to be almost supermen from the viewpoint of genius, endurance and courage, surely priests who serve such men as ministers of Christ and guides of souls should be of a very superior type with regard to strength and spirituality of character. The Chaplain Corps should be so impressively and supernaturally clean-cut in its alignment before the public eye that no place be given in its body, for a

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

moment, to a weakling, moral or spiritual."

### THE EXTENT OF THE WORK PERFORMED BY THE CHAPLAINS.

At the time of the Armistice, there were one thousand and twenty-six Chaplains in active service, with four hundred and ninety-nine others whose applications had been officially approved; one thousand five hundred and twenty-five in all. They came from every state in the union; they went wherever the American flag was carried; serving not only the ships that carried men through the submarine-infested waters, and on the firing line in France, but also they were with our men in Alaska, the Philippines, China, the Hawaiian Islands, and Siberia. Of these chaplains, a large number were killed on the battlefield, or died as the result of disease or exposure contracted in the service, or have succumbed since the Armistice as the result of injuries received at the front. The United States government has officially honored many of the chaplains, and the Allied governments have also officially recognized their bravery and their devotion to their sacred duties.

The Chaplain Bishop himself testifies to the satisfying fact that his relations with our government were most cordial, and that the official authori-

ties helped in every way possible to facilitate his work. Especially was this true at the time of the influenza epidemic, when every request made to the authorities concerning the prompt transfer of chaplains from the posts they then occupied to places where they could more actively assist the victims of that terrible scourge was instantly complied with. On the same authority it may be said that the Chaplain Bishop and his chaplains on the whole had very pleasing relations with the non-Catholic chaplains and the authorities of other denominations; indeed, as a rule, the priests in the service have little but words of praise for the co-operation extended them by non-Catholic chaplains.

As to the relation between the men and their chaplain, the thousands of letters received by the Chaplain Bishop from the priests in the service supply the best and most satisfactory evidence. To sum up, it may justly be said that the documentary evidence, and the living voice of the army and navy, concur in supporting this statement, namely, that the greatest personal friend the boys had in the camp was the chaplain, and the appreciation of his service was felt keenly and expressed warmly by non-Catholics as well as by the Catholics.

# War Work of the Y M C A

BY THE SEARCH-LIGHT INFORMATION BUREAU

**T**HE Young Men's Christian Association is a world-wide organization engaged in civil or social welfare service. Its emblem, the Triangle, bears the words BODY, MIND, SPIRIT, and symbolizes its true purpose,—to assist and encourage the young manhood of the world to develop physically, mentally, and spiritually. The Y is the oldest of the social welfare service societies. It originated in London, England, June 6, 1844, when a group of young men employed in a drygoods establishment met to talk over ways and means to improve the spiritual condition of young men engaged in business. This purpose was soon enlarged to include their mental and social needs. Attractive rooms were secured where reading matter was kept on file and popular lectures given. In 1848 a library was opened and a short time afterward educational work was attempted.

## **THE Y ESTABLISHED IN CANADA AND THE UNITED STATES.**

The first Associations in America were organized in 1851 in Montreal and Boston, on the same basis as the British Association. Physical training as an adjunct of Y work was first practiced by the Brooklyn, N. Y., Association in 1855. The spread of Y physical training dates from 1856 when the New York City Association changed the constitution to read, "The object of this Association shall be the improvement of the spiritual, mental, social, and physical condition of young men." An Association building at 23d Street and 4th Avenue, New York City, equipped with gymnasium, bowling alleys and baths, the pioneer of similar Association buildings, was opened in 1869.

## **THE Y'S MILITARY EXPERIENCE IN SEVEN WARS—SEVENTY YEARS.**

The first Y. M. C. A. war work recorded is that of British Y observers at the battle of Solferino in Italy in 1859. The first war work of the

American Y. M. C. A. was in the Civil War (1861-1865) when it called the convention which resulted in the United States Christian Commission. In the Spanish-American War (1898) 528 secretaries served with the American troops in Cuba, Porto Rico and in the Philippines. This resulted in a request from the War and Navy Departments to establish the Y work as a permanent service, and the Y has since been a service organization in the principal posts and ports of the United States and its insular possessions. In the Russo-Japanese War (1903-1904) the value of the welfare work as a factor in maintaining the spirit of the army was recognized by the Japanese Government. In the Boer War (1899-1900) the Canadian Y. inaugurated camp and field welfare service which the British brought to fine achievement during the World War.

## **FIRST CIVIC WELFARE ORGANIZATION IN THE WORLD WAR.**

At the outbreak of the World War the British and Canadian Y. M. C. A. joined the colors. Within two weeks 250 centres were opened in Great Britain. The Canadian contingent took its secretaries to Europe with it. Before America entered the war there were 1500 centres in full swing. It was this experience that established the hut type of service on an extensive scale, with the general features that have proved so valuable under so many varying conditions. This work reaches outside the British Isles, to Canada, Egypt, the Dardanelles, Malta, the Mediterranean ports, India, Mesopotamia, Eastern South Africa, Australia and New Zealand. The India Y. M. C. A. accompanied the troops from India to a dozen fronts on three continents and opened a chain of huts in India itself.

## **American Y. M. C. A. EXTENDS ITS SERVICE TO EUROPE.**

Dr. John R. Mott, in 1914 embarked for war-stricken Europe. The assur-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ances which he gave of American support in both men and money resulted in immediate extension of activities. Work was begun with the French, Russian and Italian soldiers, in the Austrian Army and among the Bulgarians. The American Y supplied men and money for work with the Rumanian Army under patronage of the Queen of Rumania. Dr. Mott's observation in Germany, resulted in the

tents with an extensive traveling equipment. When America entered the World War (April 6, 1917) the American Y. M. C. A. offered its services to the Government of the United States the same day, pledging the loyal co-operation of all Y. M. C. A. agencies.

### SERVING MILLIONS OF AMERICAN SOLDIERS AT HOME.

The local Associations were the foundations of the whole work. Not



### WOMANLY INTEREST IN WELFARE WORK FOR MEN

Queen Mary inspecting one of the Y. M. C. A. huts that bore her name at the base in France. Her Majesty publicly declared her appreciation of the useful work carried on by the association in its many different centres for the benefit of the soldiers and sailors. Canada, Australia and New Zealand all had their own branches working with their own men.

British Official

inauguration of the Prisoners of War Work.

### THE Y ALONG THE MEXICAN BORDER.

The crisis on the Mexican border (1916) caused the American Government to mobilize 150,000 troops along the Rio Grande. This was the largest number of American soldiers on the field under one command in half a century. The American Y entered immediately into this service; during nine months it assigned 374 secretaries to duties in the Army along the border, providing 42 buildings and six big

only did they uphold the National War Work Council, but they rendered untold service largely at their own expense, to soldiers and sailors in their own communities throughout the entire country, thus setting up nearly 2000 centres for action. City Associations threw their doors wide open and expanded their regular facilities on an unparalleled scale.

At the time war was declared, the Association was carrying on its standard programme of activities in the permanent posts of the Regular Army and in the Navy Yards, and this was con-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tinued and expanded as occasion demanded throughout the war, but of course the greater part of its work was done in the training camps and cantonments which were established after the war began. Officers' Training Camps, National Guard Camps, National Army Cantonments, Naval Training Stations, Aviation Camps, units of the Students' Army Training

multiplied, while on 1102 different trans-Atlantic voyages 1512 Y. M. C. A. secretaries served an aggregate of 3,173,200 men with an equipment which cost \$1,057,157.97. The Y was the only welfare organization which assigned secretaries to ocean transports prior to the Armistice. Among the items distributed without charge to the troops on shipboard were 20,-



CANADIAN Y. M. C. A. HUT IN A SHELL HOLE

The Military Branch of the Y. M. C. A. carried on its work with the troops overseas in France and Germany, and in 76 centres in England. This included regular camps and units, base camps, convalescent camps and hospitals. More than \$4,500,000 was contributed for this work, and in Canada alone 100 civilian secretaries were employed by the Association.

© Canada, 1919

Corps in the colleges, and many other centres where smaller bodies of troops were assembled, all received the benefit of the Association's service.

### THE Y. M. C. A. WITH THE GATHERING AND EMBARKING AMERICAN ARMY.

More than 5000 troop trains had Y representatives on board during the critical period of July 1, 1917, to October 30, 1918. Wherever possible there were two or three Y secretaries on each train. Y secretaries also served on 3000 troop trains carrying an average of 500 men each from the training camps to the embarkation camps and ports. Here the service was

085,422 cigarettes, 1,009,097 bars of chocolate and 25,333,880 pieces of stationery.

### THE Y. M. C. A. WITH THE TRANSPORT SERVICE AND THE NAVY.

The crews of transport and supply ships and the men of the Army supply depots were engaged in work of the greatest importance, and the Y sought to help them to realize that labor which seemed to them routine drudgery was essential. Aboard 1090 supply ships, equipment consisting of athletic material, writing material, libraries, motion pictures, and comforts for free distribution, was placed by the Y. On

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

some of these ships the recreational material was provided jointly by the Y. M. C. A. paying 74.9 per cent, the National Catholic War Council 22.4 per cent, and the Jewish Welfare Board 2.7 per cent.

### THE Y. M. C. A. OVERSEAS EUROPEAN NAVY SERVICE.

A combined Y. M. C. A. Army and Navy work was carried on throughout the entire war period for soldiers, sail-

women workers besides the staffs at Central Headquarters in London, Paris, Rome and at the regional and district offices such as Bordeaux and Liverpool. A total of about 2500 local volunteer workers gave their aid.

### THE Y. M. C. A. OVERSEAS AND SUPPLEMENTARY WORK.

The problems which the American Y. M. C. A. faced in Europe were more difficult than those in America.



THE FIFTEEN HUNDREDTH "Y" CENTRE IN FRANCE

ors, and marines at the ports of entry such as Liverpool, Southampton, Bordeaux, St. Nazaire, Brest, Havre and the cities of London and Paris. Also in the mine-laying bases in Scotland, the naval aviation camps on the coasts of Ireland and France, and the bases from Corfu and Gibraltar in the south to Archangel the northernmost European post were centres. During the days of the Armistice new stations were opened at Kirkwall and Spalato. Service was also rendered to sailors of the British Navy. At the signing of the Armistice the Y in the Navy overseas was operating in 78 stations and cities, with 135 different centres. The personnel included 354 secretaries and 107

It was separated from its base by 3000 miles of ocean, while the pressure on available shipping was so great, owing to the ravages of submarines and the transport requirements of the Army itself, that during practically the entire period of military operations the Association secured *less than half of the cargo space* estimated as necessary to keep it adequately provided with material. This deficiency alone made it difficult for the Y. M. C. A. to render that more adequate service which it was prepared to give, and for lack of which it received the usual quota of uninformed, inconsiderate, careless and sometimes ill-natured and malicious criticism.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Of the 2,086,000 American soldiers sent to Europe, over 1,025,000 passed through the British Isles, for the most part transported in British ships. For this emergency an American Y organization was set up in various cities of the British Isles to serve this immense army in transit, in addition to the 50,000 men of the United States Navy stationed in British ports. Clubs, hotels, and recreation huts for officers

pool, Glasgow, Belfast, Dublin, Queens-town, Southampton, Folkestone and other cities.

Over 5000 Y women and men served the Association in the United Kingdom. At the famous Eagle Hut on King's Way, known as "America in London," the volunteer workers alone numbered over 1000 and included members of the Rotary Club, one of the Y's most ardent supporters, and



LIGHTENING THE WAY

English woman serving hot coffee to some of the French reserves sent in to repulse the German attack in Flanders, in April, 1918, which was aimed at Hazebrouck, a vital railroad centre in the north. Such refreshment vans were on the style of the old London coffee stalls and were kept open day and night. N. Y. Times

and enlisted men, were conducted in the large cities of the United Kingdom; sightseeing tours were conducted through the country to all historical points. A staff of 200 served the 78 Aviation Camps where American fliers were in training.

The International Hospitality League in co-operation with the American Y. M. C. A., working in close harmony with the British, Canadian, Australian and New Zealand Associations, rendered a moral work of the utmost importance to the well-being of the American soldiers and sailors thronging the streets of London, Liver-

members of the Green Cross, all recruited from the ranks of women employed during the day. At Washington Inn, St. James' Square, there were 213 volunteer workers; at Officers' Inn, Cavendish Square, 130 volunteer workers; day after day and month after month hundreds of women worked in canteens and at social centres wherever the American Y. M. C. A. established huts.

### THE AMERICAN ARMY AND THE Y IN FRANCE.

In France more than 12,000 American men and women, enlisted under the Red Triangle as a unit of the



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR'

American Army, served the troops. The Y. M. C. A. was the first American welfare organization to start work in France and its service has been estimated by competent authorities, as amounting to more than 90 per cent of all the social welfare work done in France. To perform this work the Y. M. C. A. erected in France 491 wooden huts and 1045 tents, furnished them, and rented others. Thousands of army billets were requisitioned under military authority in the devastated region in France and the occupied section of Germany. In addition to this expense the sum of \$50,000,000 was expended in social welfare alone, in and about these centres.

### THE Y HUT—THE ARMY'S HOME—THE SOLDIER'S CLUB.

In carrying out its welfare programme the aim and apex of the whole Y organization was the "Hut." The "hut" in hundreds of cases was a large, commodious, especially designed wooden building, uniquely fitted to be the centre of the social life of the military community. In the cities of France and England it was often a luxuriously furnished private dwelling, chateau, or hotel. At the front, near the firing line, it was often nothing more than a half demolished building, a barn, cellar, or dug-out, but wherever the Red Triangle was displayed it was still a "hut," the connecting link between the soldiers and their homes.

In all, the Y operated for the American Army at home and abroad over 4000 "huts," "homes" and "clubs," at a cost of over \$20,000,000 for construction and equipment alone. It then expended more than \$73,000,000 on activities and free services in these huts or directly radiating from them. In America 952 wooden buildings were constructed and equipped by the Y at a total cost of \$8,338,317. In the British Isles, 154 huts were operated; of these 47 were permanent Y buildings, 37 constructed huts, 33 rented quarters, and 37 buildings furnished rent free by the British.

In France, owing to the shifting conditions of warfare, several hundred huts were opened, equipped, operated

for periods varying from days to months, and evacuated as the military population moved out. After the Armistice, in February, 1919, 2505 huts were being operated in France and Germany. Of these 431 were specially constructed wooden buildings, 538 rented buildings, 579 Army billets or temporary quarters, and 957 tents. A total of \$11,679,490 was expended in France and Germany on huts alone. Besides, over 100 hotels and cafés were operated in France and Germany for American soldiers, the yearly rental of which was in excess of 3,000,000 francs.

### POST EXCHANGES—THE Y CARRIED THE CANTEN BURDEN.

The Y. M. C. A. in addition to its free service requiring expenditures of \$129,082,900 in the World War, took the burden of the Post Exchanges or Canteens off the shoulders of the Army in France and operated at cost for the soldiers a chain of over 1400 retail stores, the largest chain of retail stores in the world.

Ordinarily this business enterprise is handled by the Army itself, but in order that the large number of soldiers required for the purpose might be released for their primary functions of training and fighting, the Association, at the Army's request—practically an order—took over the "sour lemon of the canteens" as it has been called, and operated them until April 1, 1919, when, after the close of military operations, the Army was again in a position to assign soldiers to the task.

The canteens supplied to the soldiers such articles of common need as cigars, cigarettes, tobacco, matches, chewing gum, biscuits, jam, canned fruits, sardines, chocolate, candy, handkerchiefs, sewing kits, shoe polish, soap, razors, razor blades, shaving sticks, shaving brushes, tooth paste, tooth brushes, candles and many others. The volume of business transacted by the Association in connection with the canteens was in excess of \$50,000,000. Because of the shortage of transportation and consequent impossibility of obtaining adequate supplies from America, the Association was obliged to purchase in

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Europe and even to manufacture some of its canteen supplies. The higher prices which these operations as well as the excessive cost of transportation entailed led to charges of profiteering against the Association, but as a matter of fact canteen prices were fixed on the basis of actual cost of articles sold plus estimated cost of transportation and insurance, *without charge for rent of huts,*

Quartermaster Department. Among both of these supplies were cases of cigarette packages containing gift coupons, which, when sold gave rise to the wide-spread slander that the Y was selling gift goods for profit. As proved by rigid investigation the Y received no more cigarettes and sold no more than were paid for, but it has been difficult to correct this slander.



HOLIDAY AT THE INTERNATIONAL AMERICAN CANTEEN

*salaries and expenses of canteen workers, accountants, or any other overhead expenses.*

### THE STORY OF THE SALE OF GIFT CIGARETTES.

Consignments of gift cigarettes created some complications through their being sent with ordinary consignments bearing no exterior distinguishing marks. Owing to pressure of work in unloading at docks, goods were sorted by commodities instead of by consignments, and Y workers presenting manifests for a number of cases of goods would receive the first cases available, regardless of consignment mark. Unmarked supplies were also furnished the Y. M. C. A. by the

### ACCOMPLISHMENT OF THIS SERVICE TO THE ARMY.

The Canteen Service rendered the A. E. F. can only be summarized here: Canteen or Post Exchange goods were distributed at 1414 points up to January 1, 1919, ranging from large hotels or casinos in leave areas where thousands of men might be served in a day, to rolling kitchens consisting of camion and trailer serving men at the front under fire. At one time or another 159 different articles were sold.

From the outset the Y was faced with a shortage of cargo tonnage exceeding 50 per cent of their estimated requirements while at no time did motor or railroad transport approach

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the needs. Conditions were aggravated by military restrictions, embargoes and delays, but, nevertheless, between June 1, 1918, and March 1, 1919, the Traffic Department handled 9554 cars of material, an average of nearly 1000 cars a month. Forty-seven warehouses were operated in France; 7 base port warehouses, 5 central; 3 forward, and 32 divisional.

The credit balance of about \$500,000 which remained at the end of the entire canteen transaction, and which would probably have been wiped out altogether if all proper charges had been included, was turned over to the American Legion as representing the ex-service men—this in accordance with the practice in the Army of using canteen profits for the benefit of the soldiers. The Y. M. C. A., it must be understood, continued at all times its free distribution of its own goods. Supplies given away in free service in these canteens amounted in value to \$2,664,253.61.

### THE FORTY-FOUR Y FACTORIES OPERATED ABROAD.

The scarcity of ship tonnage, preventing the shipment of sufficient supplies from America and the absolute lack in Europe, forced the Y into an extensive manufacturing programme. The scheme was set on foot early and by April 1, 1918, the Y accumulated enough raw material to begin operating on a large scale. From that date until December 31, 1918, when the Quartermaster Corps of the American Army took over the plants the Association put successively into operation 44 factories. These factories during six months produced chocolate, chocolate cream bars, chocolate nut rolls, caramels, cartons, biscuits and jam.

Stationery was also manufactured. For this purpose wood pulp was purchased and transported to the factory, and lamp black for printing inks, gum arabic for mucilage and talc to surface the paper, were bought in large quantities. A paper factory was secured at Tolosa, Spain, where 100,000,000 sheets of writing paper bearing the Red Triangle were made. This employed practically the whole town, men, women

and children, for a considerable period of time.

### THE SERIOUS PROBLEM OF MOTOR TRANSPORT.

The problem of getting supplies into the warehouses was chiefly one of overcoming railroad conditions. The problem of the distribution of these supplies to the various units was that of motor transport. It is needless to mention the difficulties the Association experienced in getting cars. At no time did it approach the required needs. The total motor equipment purchased was about 2200 vehicles of all descriptions. For the care and maintenance of this equipment the Association operated in France 100 garages. Mobile repair shops were operated in the advance sector. Drivers and mechanics employed aggregated about 600 men at the period of maximum activity.

During offensives, all roads leading to the battle front were jammed with traffic. Great trucks laden with ammunition, food, and men, long lines of horse and motor-drawn cannon, little carts bearing machine guns and ammunition, ambulances, every conceivable form of military transport crowded every possible shell-torn and traffic-worn road. There was no question of making speed any more than on a crowded city street in need of repairs. Strict military regulations ruled the traffic.

In the Argonne, most of the roads were open to traffic one way only. It took sometimes twenty-four hours to make a circuit of fifteen or twenty kilometres. At times, even the Army Quartermaster could not get to the front the necessary subsistence. Much less could the Y with its limited equipment get forward its goods.

### FREE BANKING FOR THE SOLDIERS ESTABLISHED.

The Y. M. C. A. became the banker and depository for the soldiers free of cost and found itself engaged in extensive banking operations as trustees of funds, on behalf of the members of the American Expeditionary Forces. The Y forwarded 351,460 remittances, involving the sum of \$21,558,214.41 to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the relatives of soldiers throughout the world without any charge for handling, and also sent some money by cable. It would have cost the soldiers more than \$112,000 for the actual expense incurred for this service. The French banks refused to cash American checks other than Army pay checks. The duty then devolved on the Y to serve the soldier and assist him in cashing his checks. As a result it made payment on pay checks, personal checks and checks

### LEAVE AREAS—VACATIONS FROM BATTLE-FRONTS, CAMPS AND SHIPS.

One of the most useful services rendered by the Y. M. C. A. was the provision of vacation and recreation centres in Leave Areas for the soldiers and sailors. It was, of course, impossible for American soldiers in Europe to spend their periods of leave at home, as the British and French were able to do. The military authorities turned to the Association for a solution of this



### KEEP THE GLOW IN OLD GLORY

Girl war-worker playing "Keep the Glow in Old Glory" which became very popular in Paris. This scene is taken from the Y. M. C. A. garden party given in the Garden of the Tuileries for the benefit of the Paris poor whose homes were destroyed by the German long-range guns. International Film Service

on American banks in large numbers. This was especially heavy at week-ends and holidays.

The work among Allied Armies and Prisoners of War was financed by the National War Work Council, but administered jointly by the War Work Council and the International Committee in the name of the International Committee. This varied work, involving contact with thirty different nationalities, was administered from New York with special field secretaries in charge of different branches of the work scattered over the world. American secretaries assigned to other Y. M. C. A. movements worked under the general direction of these movements.

big problem, equally as new to the Army as it was to the Y. M. C. A., and developing into one of the most vital confronting the American Expeditionary Forces. This required the Y. M. C. A. to engage in another gigantic enterprise, co-operating with the Army in taking control in dozens of cities; in leasing hotels, restaurants, theatres, casinos, conducting some of the leading resorts and watering places in France—until it found itself the greatest hotel syndicate in the world, with accommodations each day and beds each night for 70,000 soldiers. This cost \$2,799,700, in addition to the cost of entertainment on a tremendous scale.

The Army designated the areas and

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

centres, on the Y. M. C. A.'s suggestions, besides providing transportation, food and lodging for soldiers on leave while on a duty status. The Y furnished all recreation, entertainment and service.

### THE LEAVE AND RECREATION CENTRES ESTABLISHED.

Thirty-three leave centres and six recreation centres were equipped and maintained for American soldiers by Army orders in thirteen leave areas in France, Germany and Monaco, besides two in Italy and one in England. This was accomplished with a Y. M. C. A. personnel of 885 secretaries, 408 men and 477 women trained for leave area work, who entertained over 450,000 soldiers in the French leave areas, 150,000 in the recreation centres, and 510,000 in the Rhine leave areas, not including the soldiers entertained in Paris, England and Italy. Some of the best known holiday resorts in Europe were utilized.

The opening of these leave centres on February 16, 1918, marked the launching of a great enterprise. For example the Grand Cercle at Aix-les-Bains, famous around the world, was converted into a club house for the American doughboy. With theatres running, several movie performances a day in the cinema hall, dancing in the ball-rooms, continual canteen service in several parts of the casino, rough and tumble frolics every night after the show, athletics in the form of baseball, soccer, hikes in the mountains, boat excursions on the lakes, thermal baths, nothing was overlooked for the soldier's comfort.

The first week-end recreation centre opened was in the Hotel de la Plage at Ste. Marguerite for army and naval officers at St. Nazaire. The experiment proved so successful that similar recreation centres were opened at Trez-Hir (Long Beach) near Brest, Nancy, close to the front, and at Valençay near Issoudun. Later Lyons and Paris were added to this list of activities. In January, 1919, the centres of Chambéry and Challes-les-Eaux in the Savoy Area were set aside for negro soldiers on leave.

The Rhine Valley Area was opened after the Armistice, following the advance of the Army of Occupation. Five centres were conducted at Coblenz, Neuwied, Treves, Andernach, and Neuenahr. These were operated under supervision of the Paris Leave Area office until May 7, 1919, when they were turned over to the control of the Third Army Y. M. C. A. at Coblenz, to be merged eventually with the general Y. M. C. A. work within its respective Army divisions in Germany.

### ENTERTAINING THE ARMIES AT HOME AND ABROAD.

The Entertainment Service, carried through for the American Army, at home and overseas, reached immense proportions. In two years the Y. M. C. A. created an organization for entertaining and assisting the Army which ultimately became recognized to be as indispensable to the social welfare of soldiers in modern scientific warfare as were the departments which fed and clothed them to their material welfare.

In the accomplishment of this work the Y organized the biggest theatrical enterprise in the history of amusements. It mobilized a personnel of 1470 entertainers, including some of the best known dramatic and musical artists in the United States. It gave upward of 220,000 separate performances to the soldiers with an approximated attendance overseas of 88,000,000 and more than 48,000,000 at home. It provided overseas alone 23,000 costumes and accessories, 18,000 musical instruments, and 450,000 pieces of sheet music.

It gave overseas 157,000 movie shows aggregating over 8,000,000 feet, or more than 1500 miles of film. The aggregate attendance at these movie shows overseas alone (between April, 1918, and July, 1919) was over 94,000,000 at 5261 different places. It is estimated that in the United States and overseas the gross attendance at motion picture shows reached 210,000,000.

This was all absolutely free of cost to the soldiers. If, as under ordinary conditions, the soldier had paid a

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

minimum admission fee of ten cents it would have cost the soldiers the sum of \$21,000,000 to attend these motion picture shows, and at even the same low admission price for vaudeville and other entertainment in excess of \$13,000,000 more. The net expenditure of the Y. M. C. A. to provide this huge enterprise exceeded \$7,300,000, and this figure was made possible by gratuitous or underpaid services which at usual professional rates would have at least doubled this expenditure.

### ATHLETICS—BUILDING THE PHYSICAL MAN.

Under the orders of General Pershing, and in full co-operation with the Army, the Y organized in the World War a great series of athletic activities of all kinds. In the A. E. F. more than 33,000,000 took part in games under Y supervision, which were attended by 40,000,000 spectators. The Army in France, which averaged during this period 1,200,000, was thus served more than sixty times over.

More than 10,000,000 watched the Army baseball games in America and France, or more than twice as many as the season's attendance at both big leagues. Nearly all took part in informal games in the A. E. F. This included the mass and company games with everybody on one side or the other. More than 1000 Y athletic directors were employed to carry this programme through, including 345 full time directors at the maximum activity in France, and 541 in the home camps in March, 1918.

### THE Y SUGGESTED THE INTER-ALLIED GAMES.

Besides serving the Army during the combat period, the Y proposed to the Army as early as October, 1918, a constructive athletic programme to be put in operation after the Armistice. This programme was adopted by the Army, and carried out with complete military co-operation under leadership of the Y. M. C. A. Athletic Department. It culminated in the A. E. F. Championships in May and June, and in the Inter-Allied Games held in the Pershing Stadium from June 22 to July 6, 1919.

The Pershing Stadium, seating 25,000 persons, was designed and built at the expense of the Y. M. C. A. for material and equipment. The French Government donated the site and the American Army furnished most of the labor. This Stadium was presented to the American Army, and later through General Pershing was offered as a gift to the French Nation and accepted.

### EDUCATION—GIVING THE SOLDIER HIS OPPORTUNITY.

The Y. M. C. A. expended in educational work for American soldiers and sailors, at home and abroad up to October 1, 1919, more than \$6,000,000, of which \$2,509,655 was expended in America. Of this \$1,476,575 was for lectures, library service, instruction and educational literature, \$931,273 for newspapers, magazines and correspondence materials, and \$91,807 for sex hygiene education. The Overseas educational expenditures amounted to \$3,952,073.

The number of books and periodicals distributed free to the American Army abroad up to May 1, 1919, reached the grand total of 60,000,000. The record in France was: books, 5,400,000; periodicals, songbooks, maps, pamphlets, religious literature, 19,670,000; newspapers, 31,400,000.

In the British Isles, 2,700,000 books, magazines and newspapers were distributed. The Library Department in London purchased and dispatched to France more than 5,000,000 items, and 170,000 to Gibraltar, Russia and to war prisoners in Germany and Austria. In addition, in co-operation with and for the American Library Association it forwarded 128,936 books.

Overseas, all educational work prior to the Armistice was restricted by war conditions. The Educational Director, however, reported on October 1, 1918, that at that date 30,000 illiterates and foreign born were being reached by instruction in reading and writing English, and more than 200,000 were being taught French in huts.

### THE Y'S GREATER EDUCATIONAL CONTRIBUTION.

The Y's most important educational contribution, however, was the elabor-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ate system that it planned and developed for the Army from elementary classes in English for illiterates to a completely organized university, which the Army finally took over with the personnel as its Educational Corps for the altered conditions following the Armistice. This work involved a vigorous recruiting campaign for over 450 educators—teachers as well as or-

carried out under the direction of the men who had devised them, and reached impressive proportions.

### RELATIONSHIPS WITH OTHER WELFARE AND RELIEF ORGANIZATIONS.

While the Red Cross provided for relief work, the welfare organizations provided for the amusement and recreation of the troops by means of their programme of social, educational,



AMERICANS ON LEAVE, AIX LES BAINS

International Film Service

ganizers in all educational fields—and the preparation of a list of text and reference books and educational supplies, estimated as sufficient for an army of 2,000,000 men. This list was sent to America, and an aggregate of 1,795,483 books and pamphlets, costing \$1,178,168 was actually delivered and paid for. On April 15, 1919, after several weeks' negotiation the Army took over the educational work at the request of the Y. M. C. A. Army Educational Commission. A previous offer of the Army to reimburse the Y. M. C. A. for textbooks and supplies was accepted, and about \$1,150,000 was paid. The plan and the methods worked out by the Y. M. C. A. were

physical and religious activities. The Young Women's Christian Association and the Jewish Welfare Board carried on their activities partly through the Y. M. C. A., and the Knights of Columbus and the Salvation Army participated with the Y. M. C. A. in certain activities. The American Library Association co-operated with the other organizations to the fullest extent wherever possible, putting its book service at the disposition of the American Expeditionary Forces through the medium of those organizations. In general, there was much cordial co-operation, and, on occasions, in the matter of entertainment, several organizations combined: for instance, the Red Cross



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and the Y. M. C. A. jointly financed the Army show of "Let's Go." During the period before the Armistice the Y provided Knights of Columbus huts with entertainment, as it supplied those of the Red Cross and the Jewish Welfare Board. In the spring of 1919 the Knights brought over entertainers who toured their huts, but the Y supply was still largely called upon. At Antwerp, in the spring of 1919, the Jewish Welfare Board, the Knights of Columbus, and the Y. M. C. A. combined to furnish the entertainment. The circus which toured the A. E. F. in the summer of 1919 was organized and partly equipped by the Y. M. C. A. at Bordeaux, but its later management, booking and financing were taken over by the Knights of Columbus.

The American Y served in the French Army as the *Foyer du Soldat*,—the soldier's fireside or hut. It assisted the British and Canadian Y's with the Chinese Labor Corps in France, with the Belgians, the Portuguese, the Moroccans, the Indians, and the score of races marshaled in the European fighting forces. It served in the Italian Army as the *Casa del Soldato*. It served with the Rumanians, the Czechoslovaks, and in Poland, in the prison camps of Germany, Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria; with the Russians in the Southern and Central Armies, with the Allied forces in North Russia to the frozen front at Archangel and across Siberia to the Pacific Ocean.

Independent of both the Prisoners of War Work, or the enormous work with the American Expeditionary Forces in France, the funds expended by the American Y. M. C. A. in the Armies of the Allies in response to urgent representations from Allied Governments and Commanders approved by General Pershing, reached nearly \$20,000,000.

### THE Y. M. C. A. WITH THE ARMY OF OCCUPATION IN GERMANY.

The Third Army for the occupation of the American sector in Germany consisted of some 300,000 troops, which commenced their march to the Rhine at 5:30 in the morning, November 17, 1918. The vanguard of the Y

forces came into the territory of occupation on December 11, 1918. By April 1, 1919, four months later, the Y had in operation 425 full time centres, while 83 other points were being served at regular intervals by portable motion picture equipment and rolling canteens.

All of the belligerents, except Turkey, opened the prisoners-of-war camps to Y work on a basis of international reciprocity. Permission to maintain activities in Germany was conditioned on the maintenance of a similar work for German prisoners in Allied prison camps. This work did not cease when America left the ranks of the neutrals and joined the forces allied against the Central Powers. The International Y Committee by permission of the German Government, kept its executive responsibilities, continued its support, and retained the majority of its senior secretaries in order to maintain the reciprocal nature of the service.

### DENOMINATIONALISM DISCOURAGED BY THE Y LEADERS.

Denominationalism, as it is popularly known, was discouraged by the Y. At the huts, Protestant, Roman Catholic and Jewish chaplains conducted or assisted in services of an informal character. Saturday evening a Roman Catholic chaplain would use the quarters of a Presbyterian minister as an improvised confessional, and Sunday morning celebrate early Mass in a hut, which later was used for a Protestant service. On the two great Jewish holidays, New Year's Day and the Day of Atonement, when Jewish soldiers were given three days of leave to go to certain designated centres, the Y. M. C. A. huts at these places were placed at the disposal of Jewish rabbis. At the Jewish New Year service in the Y hut at Chaumont, General Headquarters of the A. E. F., a Roman Catholic chaplain, by invitation of the officiating rabbi, made the address, while Protestant ministers in the congregation joined in the services.

Although 1462 clergymen were sent overseas by the Y. M. C. A., only a small portion of these were assigned to definite religious duties, aside from a small group of special speakers sent

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

in 1919. Denominationally the rosters of these were as follows: Baptist, 268; Christian, 100; Congregational, 191; Dutch Reformed, 1; Episcopal, 129; Evangelical, 3; Lutheran, 9; Methodist, 338; Moravian, 1; Presbyterian, 361; Reformed, 14; Swedenborgian, 1; Union, 8; Unitarian, 23; United Brethren, 7; Universalist, 8.

Religious activities comprised: regular religious work furthered by specially designated leaders and chaplains co-

Allies in various war zones throughout the world, among prisoners of war without respect to nationality—would have been impossible but for two factors which contributed largely to its success. The first was the generous financial co-operation of the American people as a whole.

The other factor was the faithful service of a body of devoted Americans, underpaid and overworked, who gave themselves unselfishly to the interests



CAMOUFLAGED CANADIAN Y HUT

These huts were carried up as near to the front lines as possible, and in some cases a notice was put on them announcing that their merchandise was for the wounded—or for walking wounded men only. Here such casualties could get a hot drink to fortify them against the wait for the ambulance or the weary walk back to the base.

N. Y. Times

operating with the Association, and evangelistic addresses by special speakers; Bible study work; distribution and use of religious literature, Bibles and Testaments, Jewish, Catholic and Protestant prayer books, Chaplains' libraries, hymn books and various other kinds of books; recruiting for Christian life vocations. More than 15,000,000 copies of special religious books and pamphlets were printed and distributed by the Y. M. C. A. These had been prepared by church leaders.

### THE SERVICE OF THE Y. M. C. A. AND ITS PERSONNEL.

The vast war work of the Y. M. C. A. which has been here briefly sketched, in America, in the A. E. F., among the

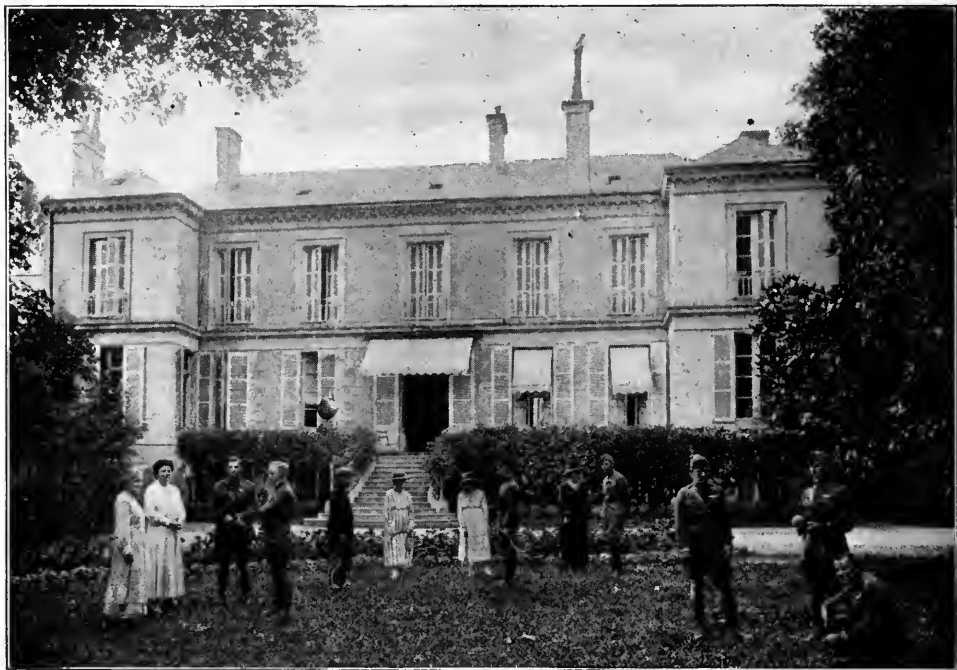
of the country's defenders and who, as in all extensive welfare work, were at all times exposed to the "cynical and careless criticism which so frequently, with righteous indignation, almost curdled the cream of human kindness in the constitutions of the executives." Conditions created by the critical military situation were chiefly responsible for failures in performance on the part of the Y. M. C. A. and other welfare organizations. Uninformed as to these conditions, criticism magnified for ulterior purposes, was frequently traced with amusing disclosures to infantile and negligible sources, but the thousand tongues of wide-spreading rumor could not be silenced.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The sources from which the Association could draw the personnel for its war work were limited by the prior claim of the Selective Service Law upon men of younger ages, by the high standard of physical efficiency demanded for service with troops in the field, and by exacting requirements in respect to loyalty, character and ability. Many of the men best suited for

than one per cent for insubordination and all other infractions of military rules, a remarkable record even in civil life, and especially remarkable under the stress and strain of war. While a few failed to measure up to their responsibilities the overwhelming majority was faithful and efficient.

Particular tribute is due the women workers, who achieved a notable record



THE Y. M. C. A. CLUB FOR AMERICAN OFFICERS AT TOURS

N. Y. Times

this work were in the army, and it would have been impossible to supply from the regular staff of the Association the much larger needs of the war work. Many of the secretaries came from that source and served most acceptably, but the great majority, led by patriotic motives, came from business and the professions. Whether in direct contact with the troops or engaged in the less thrilling but equally arduous duties of office or warehouse, they gave, as a rule, their interest whole-heartedly.

Among the Overseas Red Triangle Army of 12,000 workers it is of value to note that the delinquency in discipline and efficiency, according to disciplinary records, was a fraction of less

of usefulness and of whom as the war went on an increasing number came into the service. Ten Association secretaries, eight men and two women, were killed in action; 143 gave their lives in other ways while in the service; 174 were wounded or injured; five became prisoners of war. Military decorations, citations and commendations of Association workers by the American Army numbered 324, and similar honors from Armies of the Allies were conferred upon 251, of whom 54 received the *Croix de Guerre*.

### RESOURCES—THE GENEROSITY OF THE AMERICAN PUBLIC.

The money necessary to maintain the extensive operations which have

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

been briefly summarized in the preceding pages, was obtained from three campaigns and miscellaneous sources as shown in the following table:

SUMMARY OF RECEIPTS	
(From April 26, 1917, to December 31, 1919)	
First Campaign . . . . .	\$ 5,113,666.98
Second Campaign . . . . .	53,334,546.81
Third Campaign (United War Work)	\$100,759,731.17
Overseas and Miscellaneous . . . . .	551,628.92
Miscellaneous Income	252,940.73
Interest on Bank Balances and Securities . . . . .	1,710,134.81
	\$161,722,649.42

The third campaign was held under the auspices of the United War Work Council which consisted of representatives of seven organizations co-operating jointly for the collection of funds. These seven organizations were: The Young Men's Christian Association, The Young Women's Christian Association, The Knights of Columbus, The Jewish Welfare Board, The War Camp Community Council, The American Library Association and The Salvation Army.

The entire American people responded to this joint appeal with a generosity which was typical of the American spirit. Never in the annals of human history had such a sum been collected for social service work through voluntary contributions. While the amount requested by the seven organizations was \$170,000,000, the total collected was \$203,199,730, nearly 20 per cent

above the quota asked. The largest individual subscription was that of the Rockefellers, father and son, who contributed \$8,000,000.

The amount collected was apportioned pro rata amongst the seven organizations composing the United War Work Council. The Y received as its allotment 58.65 per cent of the amount collected, or \$100,759,731.17. The total amount expended in maintaining the activities of Y. M. C. A. work amounted to the sum of \$129,082,917.43 from April 26, 1917, to December 31, 1919.

The total receipts during the same period as previously stated amounted to \$161,722,649.42 thus leaving a surplus or reserve of \$32,639,731.99. The estimated additional receipts from the United War Work Campaign together with interest accruing for six months in 1920, are estimated at \$5,599,712. Thus the total estimated reserve fund amounts to \$38,239,443.99. From this amount commitments and estimated future expenditures for welfare work amount to \$21,396,500.

This leaves an approximate unappropriated fund of \$17,000,000 *which would have been completely absorbed if the war had continued ten weeks longer*, thus requiring the raising of large funds to continue the service in the armies. In accordance with a resolution of the Executive and Finance Committees held January 20, 1920, it was recommended *that this money be appropriated for the continuance of welfare work in the Army and Navy in the United States and Overseas and that the Educational Programme for ex-service men be given continued support.*



#### VIVE LA FRANCE

As French and Belgian and British soldiers rode through liberated towns they were cheered by the people who had been prisoners of war in their own houses for four dreary years under a hostile rule that was sometimes cruel, and always hard. By the women's faces, by the light in the children's eyes, by the tears of old bearded men, it is clear what they had suffered.



#### BRITISH TROOPS ENTERING LILLE

At Lille as at Roubaix, Turcoing and Bruges everybody spoke a little English even the children, because they had been learning it for four years until the day of deliverance should come. Crowds swayed and surged in streets and squares. The words "English" and "England" were cried by thousands of people. From high windows women and children waved colored handkerchiefs, and in the streets men carried banners and garlands of flowers.

Henry Ruschin



London Scottish Behind Sandbags

## CHAPTER LXXIV

# The Last Offensive on the Northern Front

THE STRONGEST FORTIFICATIONS FALL BEFORE THE IRRESISTIBLE ADVANCE WHICH REACHES MONS

**DURING** the months of May, June, and July, 1918, the northern wing of the battle-line in France was quiescent. The Germans were engrossed in their second drive toward Paris and endeavored, in the north, to do nothing more than conserve their gains; and the British army was glad of a breathing-space in which to replace its losses and reorganize its shattered divisions. On July 4, it is true, the Australians carried out a highly successful local operation in front of Amiens, which resulted in the capture of Hamel, and which, in the admirable co-operation between tanks, artillery, and infantry distinguishing it, was destined to be a model for the operations of the later summer; but the main energies of the British command were devoted to preparing for the auspicious moment when Foch should launch the counter-stroke for which the world had been waiting.

**THE BRITISH ARMY MAKES GOOD ITS LOSSES OF THE SPRING.**

The losses sustained in March and April were made good, in a surprisingly short space of time, by the British ministry of munitions; the ill-fated Fifth Army, now under a new commander, General Birdwood, was reconstituted; and the opportunity was seized to give all ranks a thorough training in open warfare — a training

which went far to explain the unbroken series of crushing defeats which the British army was to inflict on the numerically superior German forces facing them in the latter half of 1918.

**FOCH NOW DEPENDS UPON HAIG FOR THE NEXT MOVE.**

The success of Foch's counter-attack on July 18 against the western face of the Marne salient between Soissons and Château-Thierry was the signal for the British counter-offensive to begin. It was Foch's idea, once the Germans had used up their reserves, to begin a series of blows with definite but limited objectives, in order to regain the initiative and to pave the way for a decisive blow later on. Having smitten the Germans in the Marne salient hip and thigh, he now called on Haig to deliver the next punch; and on August 8 Haig struck, opposite Amiens, with the object of freeing the Paris-Amiens railway and reducing the huge salient which the Germans had created in their March offensive.

**THE BATTLE OF AMIENS IS CAREFULLY PLANNED.**

For the attack the Canadian Corps, which had not been engaged in the battles of the spring, and which Haig had been nursing as a sort of *corps d'élite*, was brought down from Arras, and placed beside the Australian Corps, on the extreme right of the British line.



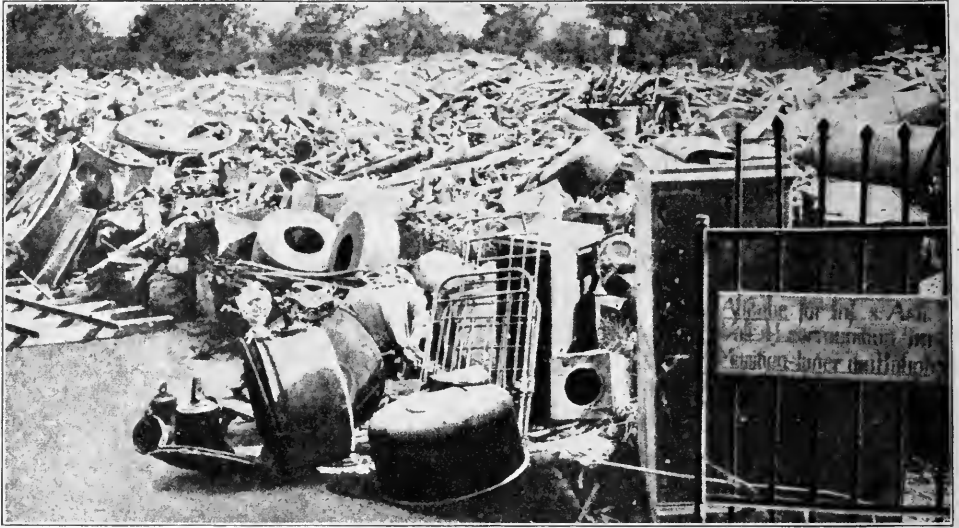
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

These two veteran corps were to constitute the spearhead of the attack. On their right flank they were supported by the French First Army, south of Montdidier, which for the moment was placed under Haig's orders; and on their left flank, north of the Somme, they were supported by the Third British Corps, with which, it is interesting to note, was a regiment of the 33rd American Division. A fleet of four hundred tanks was brought together for the occasion; and the whole of the British Cavalry Corps was

no idea whither they were bound; and up to the last minute the whole operation was veiled in the greatest secrecy. All troop concentrations took place either by night or under cover of woods; and as the tanks moved forward to their assembly positions, care was taken to drown the noise of their engines with the loud drone of heavy aeroplanes.

**THE ATTACK, WHEN DELIVERED, A COMPLETE SURPRISE.**

By good luck, moreover, the morning of August 8 dawned heavy with



**METAL LOOTED BY GERMANS IN AN OCCUPIED DISTRICT**

Great dump of metal objects collected from French villages by the Germans for removal to their munition factories. It was not, however, so removed, for the Canadians, advancing in the summer of 1918, saved the miscellaneous accumulation from the predatory enemy. Bells and bedsteads, pipes and cisterns, stoves, tea-urns and boilers, all manner of metal articles, had been removed by the Germans from homes within their reach.

concentrated behind Amiens, ready to exploit any success. The frontage of the attack, extending from south of Montdidier to north of the Somme, was to cover about fifteen miles.

In order to obtain the effect of a surprise, the greatest care was taken by the British to mask their preparations. Two Canadian battalions were actually dispatched to the Flanders front, where facilities were afforded to the Germans for identifying them; and every effort was made to create the illusion that a great British attack was about to be launched in this sector. The Canadians themselves, on their way from Arras to Amiens, had

ground mist, which reproduced the conditions amid which the Germans had attacked the British before St. Quentin on March 21. The result was that the British attack was a surprise more complete than any perhaps which had yet been obtained on the Western front. The advance of the British infantry and tanks, which began simultaneously with the opening up of an intense rolling barrage from the massed British guns, found the Germans wholly unprepared for an attack. Their first line was overrun almost before they were aware that a battle was in progress. The tanks, careering ahead of the infantry, not only broke



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

up the impromptu German defense, but disorganized the German telegraph and telephone communications. For a time chaos reigned behind the German front. The Canadians and the Australians, suffering very slight casualties, broke through to a depth of seven miles or more; and the French

but by August 12 the Germans were nearly everywhere back to the old line of the Somme defenses which they had occupied in 1916. Not only had the threat to Amiens been removed, and the Paris-Amiens railway freed from the fire of the German guns, but the Germans had been forced to effect a



"THE PARTHENON OF GOTHIC ARCHITECTURE"

Chancel of Notre Dame Cathedral, Amiens, August 15, 1918, showing the high altar arranged for the Thanksgiving Service, and the walls of sandbags that had been raised over the beautiful choir stalls to protect them from bombardment by the infuriated and defeated Germans. The service was attended by a large number of soldiers.

and the British on their flanks advanced in touch with them.

On August 9 the attack was renewed, and again met with notable success. By August 10 the Canadians and the Australians, with the help of the British cavalry, had advanced to a depth of over twelve miles; and this advance had compelled the Germans to withdraw before the French as far south as the Lassigny plateau. North of the Somme, difficulties of the terrain prevented the British Third Corps from obtaining a complete success;

wide withdrawal and their most important lateral line of communications, the Chaulnes railway, had been brought under the fire of the British guns.

Under the old Somme defenses, however, where the labyrinth of trenches and the wild vegetation of the past two years afforded opportunities for a stubborn and dangerous machine-gun defense, the Germans, now reinforced by reserves from other parts of the line, showed themselves determined to make a stand. Sir Douglas Haig, since he had gained his objectives, and since



AN ENGINE OF VICTORY IN 1918

One of the British light tanks of 1918 with turret action and high speed first used successfully by the Australians in July, known as the "whippet."

it was no part of his policy to engage in a slugging-match, therefore broke off the battle at this point, and prepared to strike again farther north, where the enemy did not appear to be expecting an attack.

## LUDENDORFF, STUNNED BY BRITISH SUCCESS, LOSES HEART.

The effect of the battle of Amiens on the German High Command was profound. Thirteen British infantry divisions and three British cavalry divisions, assisted by an American infantry regiment, had inflicted on twenty German divisions a crushing defeat, and had captured—without taking into account the captures made by the French on the right—nearly 22,000 prisoners and over 400 guns. That the British, who had been so severely handled in the spring, should have been able to deliver such an unexpected blow came to Ludendorff as a great shock. His perturbation is fully evidenced in his memoirs, in which he describes August 8 as "the black day in the history of the German army." Hitherto he had believed that victory might yet perch on the German eagles; now he was forced to the conclusion that victory was no longer possible. In his despair, he asked to be allowed to resign, and he advised the German government to open at once peace negotiations through the mediation of a neutral power.

LUDENDORFF IS NOT ALLOWED TO GIVE UP THE COMMAND.

To deceive the German people so suddenly and brutally, however, especially after the promises of victory with which they had so recently been buoyed up, was not deemed feasible by the German poli-

ticians; and Ludendorff was requested to remain in command, while the bitter process of enlightening the German people as to the true situation was begun. From the date of the battle of Amiens, therefore, the policy of the German High Command radically changed. All thought of the *Friedensturm*—the offensive that was to bring peace—was abandoned; and a defensive policy was adopted, in order to enable the German armies to stand fast until the politicians had been able to open the way for peace *pour-parlers*.

The plan which Ludendorff now evolved was to withdraw gradually, as he had done in the spring of 1917, within the protection of the strong defenses of the Hindenburg line, and there to make a stand until the winter rains came to his relief and rendered further active fighting impossible.

## THE BATTLE OF BAPAUME IS SPRUNG UPON THE GERMANS.

This, however, was precisely what Sir Douglas Haig did not intend to allow him to do. In 1917 the German retirement to the Hindenburg line had been largely completed before the British had realized that it was under way; but now Haig was fully alive to the situation, and was determined that Ludendorff should not a second time succeed in retreating "according to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

plan." Hardly had the battle of Amiens died down when he launched, on August 21, an offensive on the front north of the Somme, which had as its objective the capture of Bapaume and the turning of the German line on the Somme south of Péronne.

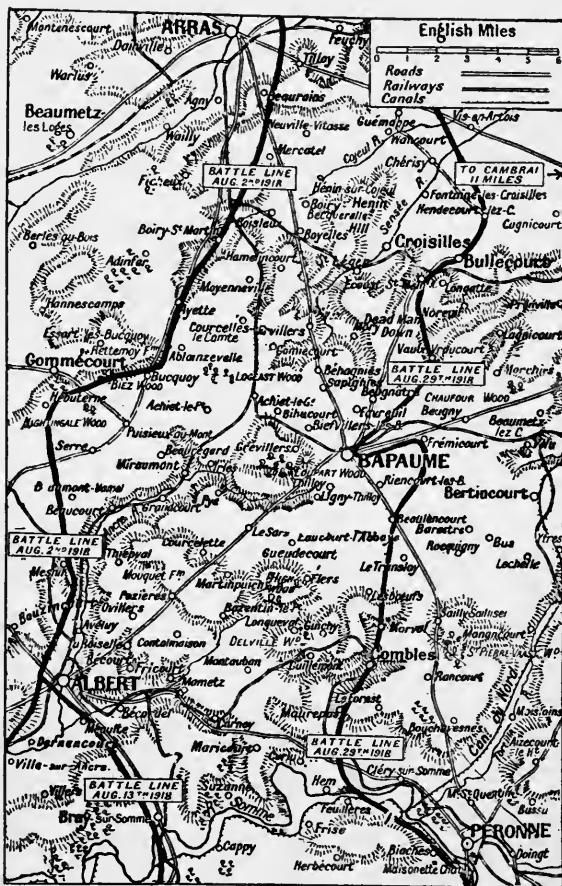
The first phase of the offensive was a preliminary attack, on a front of about nine miles north of the Ancre, in which the Fourth and Sixth Corps of Byng's Third Army recaptured Albert and reached the German main line of resistance along the Albert-Arras railway. Then, on August 23, the whole of the British Third and Fourth Armies attacked on a thirty-three mile front from just south of Arras to south of the Somme. The Fourth Army advanced astride the Somme in the direction of Péronne; while the Third Army, to which the main operation was confided, attacked across the old Somme battle-fields of 1916 in the direction of Bapaume.

### BYNG GAINS MILES IN AN OLD AREA OF BITTER FIGHTING.

The attack won immediate success. The German defense north of the Somme broke down, and Byng's men advanced rapidly over the very ground they had been compelled to yield with such heavy hearts in the spring. In 1916 the British had suffered thousands of casualties in order to progress a few hundred yards, now they measured their advances by miles, instead of yards, at slight cost. The German machine-guns, as usual, put up a stubborn and gallant defense, but they had now met their match in the British tanks; and in rapid succession Thiépval, Pozières, Courcellette, Martinpuich, Miraumont, and many other places, the names of which are indelibly inscribed on the battle-flags of the British army, fell before the British attack. By August 29 the New Zealanders had entered Bapaume itself,

and the Germans had been evicted from the whole of the old battle-fields.

The success of the attacks by the Third Army had an immediate effect elsewhere. In the north, the Germans



Copyright TERRAIN OF THE FIGHTING FOR BAPAUME

Northern half of the area involved in Marshal Foch's second pincer movement, where the British Army under Sir Julian Byng closed in upon Bapaume, while General Mangin, further south, turned Noyon.

began to withdraw from the Lys salient, in order to shorten their line and to obtain reserves to bolster up their southern defense; and in the south, they were compelled to fall back on a wide front. They had to resign to the French their hold of Noyon and Nesle, and they had to withdraw their forces farther north behind the line of the Somme south of Péronne. Finally, on August 30-31, a brilliant exploit by an Australian infantry brigade resulted in the capture of Péronne itself.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

In the battle of Bapaume twenty-three British divisions had, in ten days, driven back no less than thirty-five German divisions, and had taken the remarkable total of over 34,000 prisoners and 270 guns. Such a success, as may be imagined, had an instantaneous effect on the *morale* of the British troops, who had now completely wiped from their minds the depressing events of the spring; and at the same time the battle revealed a progressive

of the Hindenburg line nearest to Haig's front was the northern flank opposite Arras. Before the battle of Bapaume, an attack on the German defenses in that sector would have been fraught with great danger, since the Germans south of Arras would have been on the right flank of the attack; but now that the Germans had been thrust to the east of the Arras-Bapaume road, an attack opposite Arras promised the most important results.



BOHAIN ON THE WESTERN FRONT

A town which fell into British hands during the great advance. Its civilian population of 3,500 long held captive by the enemy was liberated when the town was captured. In the foreground is a huge mine crater in the centre of one of the main streets. This mine was blown up by the retreating Germans. British Official.

deterioration in the *morale* of the Germans. It was now found, for almost the first time, that German rearguards began to surrender on finding themselves isolated.

### CANADIANS LEAD THE WAY IN THE BATTLE OF ARRAS.

The omens seemed favorable, therefore, for the continuance of the British offensive. Now that Ludendorff was well on his way to the Hindenburg line, it became the policy of the British to attempt to forestall him in his occupation of that line. The part

Haig, having foreseen this contingency, and having indeed planned the battle of Bapaume as a preliminary to the battle of Arras, had already begun the transfer of the Canadian Corps from the Amiens to the Arras front; and on August 26 he launched opposite Arras an attack which had as its object the breaching of the Drocourt-Quéant switch-line, which connected the Lens defenses at Drocourt with the Hindenburg line at Quéant, and the capture of which was calculated to turn the defenses of the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Hindenburg line farther south. If the British could get in the rear of these defenses before Ludendorff was able to get his army back to them, it would be difficult for him to make the stand that he contemplated.

**THE DROCOURT-QUÉANT LINE AN IMMENSELY STRONG WORK.**

In the first stage of the attack, the Canadians, supported by a British division on their left, advanced astride

built eighteen months before; and the Germans had spared neither time nor labor to render it impregnable. Some of its underground galleries were comparable only with the London "tubes." It had, however, been designed to withstand especially the artillery bombardments of a previous phase of the war, and was less invulnerable before the tank attacks of the latter half of 1918. The Germans, who were fully



**A SYMBOL OF BETTER DAYS TO COME**

A picture of the first house rebuilt in Lens after the victors had passed through the city in pursuit of the Germans. With the task of rebuilding so many thousands of homes in her devastated regions it is small wonder that French demands for German indemnity should be insistent and unrelenting. © Underwood & Underwood

the Scarpe River on a front of about six miles and stormed the important village and hill of Monchy-le-Preux. This preliminary success opened up the way for a general advance of the First Army in the Arras sector, and in rapid order the whole area between the Scarpe and the Sensée Rivers west of the Trinquis Brook was cleared of the Germans. By the end of August the Germans were everywhere driven back to the Drocourt-Quéant switch-line.

The Drocourt-Quéant line was almost, though not quite, the last word in military engineering. It had been

aware of its strategical importance, had packed it with troops in anticipation of the British attack.

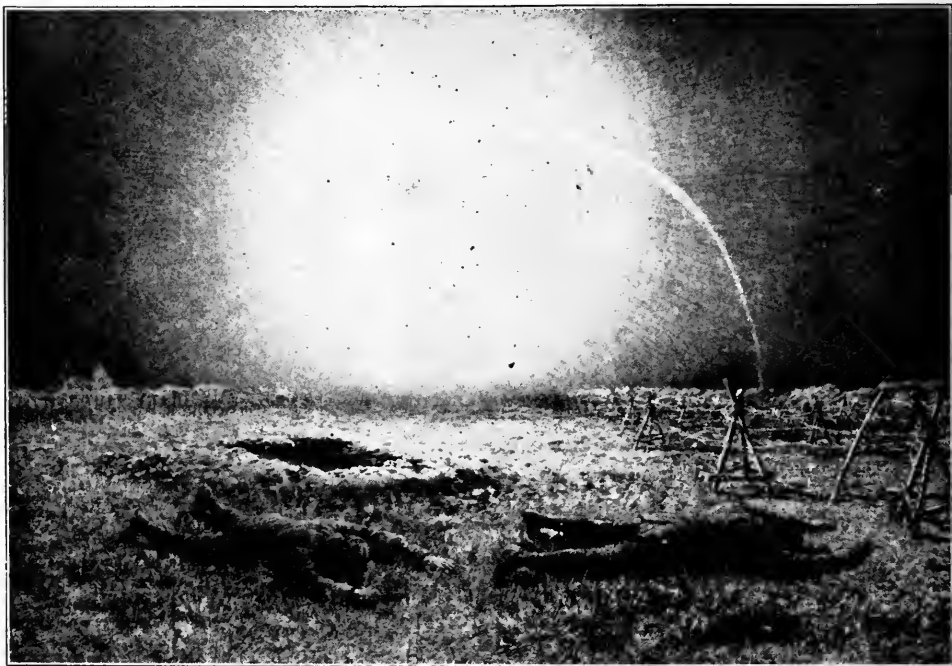
**THE OPERATION EXCELLENTLY PLANNED AND WELL EXECUTED.**

The attack, which was launched on the morning of September 2, resulted in one of the cleanest-cut successes of the whole campaign. The Canadian Corps, attacking in the north with forty tanks, broke through the whole zone of the Drocourt-Quéant defenses on a front of about five miles before noon; and the Seventeenth Corps of the Third Army, to the south, successfully

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

stormed the triangle of fortifications marking the junction of the Drocourt-Quéant line with the Hindenburg line. The Germans, driven back into the open country, fought bitterly with their machine-guns to stay the British advance; but the victorious Canadians and British broke down their resistance, and they did not find shelter until they were behind the line of the Canal du Nord.

retreat. In front of the British Third Army, they withdrew rapidly to the general line of the Canal du Nord; and south of Péronne they relinquished the east bank of the Somme, to which they had been clinging. The effect of the battle was felt even as far south as the French front. On September 6 the Germans surrendered to the French both Ham and Chauny; and by September 8 the French had pushed



**CAUGHT IN THE GLARE OF A GERMAN LIGHT-SHELL ROCKET**

A British night listening-patrol trapped in the glare of a star shell, in danger of being fired at by the enemy. They are lying in No Man's Land with their faces to the ground and revolvers clutched for instant use. Away to the left are visible the British wire entanglements from which the patrol had crept.

Compared with the battles of Amiens and Bapaume, the battle of Arras was a comparatively small-scale engagement. It took place on a very narrow front; only ten British divisions took part in it, as against thirteen German divisions identified; and the total captures by the British amounted to only 16,000 prisoners and 200 guns. But, within its limits, it was a really spectacular success; and it led to the most far-reaching results. Once the Hindenburg line had been turned in the north, the German forces farther south fell back in an almost precipitate

forward as far as the line of the Crozat Canal. In this hasty retreat, which was certainly not conducted according to the schedule that Ludendorff had drawn up for himself, many of the German rearguards were cut off and captured, large quantities of war material were left behind, and great havoc was frequently wrought by the British gunners and airmen among the retreating columns.

### **THE QUESTION OF ATTEMPTING TO STORM THE HINDENBURG LINE.**

By the end of the first week of September, the Germans were almost



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

everywhere back in approximately the positions they had occupied before March 21. They still held the Flanders ridges; and on the front of the British Third Army they still held strong advanced positions well in front of their main line of resistance. But, on the other hand, the British astride the Arras-Cambrai road, were already holding ground where no Allied forces had

system; they constituted nothing less than a deep defensive zone, bristling with field fortifications so skillfully placed as to render attack, even by artillery, extremely difficult. In the north, where the Hindenburg line had been breached, even the Canal du Nord presented a grave obstacle in the way of a further advance without considering the fortifications.



PORTABLE HOUSES, ON THE FRONT, CALLED NISSEN HUTS

These long portable huts,—somewhat similar to large kennels—are Nissen huts, an invention which vastly reduced the hardships of the winter campaigns. They were not in use until the winter of 1916-17, but as this was an exceptionally severe season in Europe they were especially grateful at this time.

stood since 1914. On the whole, it is fair to say that in the brief space of one month the British armies had won back from the Germans all that they had lost in the disastrous battles of March and April. That armies which had passed so recently through such a supreme ordeal should have been able to accomplish this feat against a numerically superior foe, can only be regarded as a signal testimony to their unconquerable spirit.

Now, however, the British found themselves face to face, on virtually the whole of their active front, with the awe-inspiring defenses of the Hindenburg line. These defenses did not consist merely in a continuous trench

### GENERAL HAIG MAKES THE DECISION TO ATTACK IN FORCE.

Had Sir Douglas Haig hesitated before attacking these formidable positions, no one could have blamed him. Though his losses since August 8 had been, in view of the magnitude of the operations undertaken, remarkably small, they were nevertheless considerable in the aggregate, and had made no slight inroads on his available reserves. The Germans facing him were still in great strength, and they were now occupying positions reputed impregnable. The political effects attendant upon an unsuccessful attack on the Hindenburg line would be most serious. The hopes of the Allies would



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

be dashed, and the declining *morale* of the Germans would be revived. The British War Cabinet, in particular, dreaded the casualty lists of another Somme or Passchendaele, and were of opinion that it would be wiser to defer forcing a decision until the spring of 1919, when the American army would be able to take a more effective part in the struggle. Even Foch felt that he

to withdraw to the line of the Meuse, and would, without doubt, find the gravest difficulty in extricating his armies from the clutch of the Allied forces. It was therefore arranged that, while the French and the Americans struck north in the Argonne, Haig's armies, reinforced by some American divisions, were to assault the Hindenburg line in the west. As a subsidiary



BRITISH TANK CREW OUT FOR AIRING

No doubt if the war had lasted longer German ingenuity would have discovered some answer to the tank. At the date of the armistice no adequate counter measures had been found, however, and the Germans were woefully ill-provided with this instrument of war for their factories had little labor and less material for their construction.

Henry Ruschin

could not take the responsibility of ordering the army of another nation to advance against the serried defenses of the Hindenburg system.

It fell therefore to Haig to make the decision alone. With a superb faith in himself and in his men, he decided that the moment was favorable for continuing the offensive: to sit down supinely before the German positions would, he felt, be playing into Ludendorff's hands. If the Allies could, by a pincer-like movement, drive in both re-entrants of the wide salient which the Germans still occupied in northern France, Ludendorff would be compelled

operation, it was also arranged that King Albert's Belgians, in conjunction with the British Second Army, were to attack in Flanders.

### THE CANADIANS AGAIN SHINE IN THE BATTLE OF CAMBRAI.

During the second and third weeks of September, the British had been engaged in driving the Germans out of the advanced positions which they occupied in front of their main zone of resistance. This struggle, which was in itself a battle of no small proportions, and which yielded the British nearly 12,000 prisoners and 100 guns, was completely successful; and by Septem-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

ber 26 the British were ready for the great adventure.

On the night of September 26-27 the British guns opened up a terrific bombardment on the whole front of the British First, Third, and Fourth Armies from the Sensée River to the neighbourhood of St. Quentin. Then, in the half-light of early dawn, the battle was opened by an attack made by the

Farther south, the British, having everywhere forced the passage of the Canal du Nord, pushed on to the very outskirts of Cambrai, and south of Cambrai established themselves on the east bank of the Scheldt Canal, beyond which lay at last the open country. On the whole front the advance reached a depth of five or six miles; and the first day of the battle



AN AREA OF VAIN HOPES AND GRIM DESPAIR

Section of the débris-strewn canal in La Bassée evacuated by the Germans, October 3, 1918. Gallant fighting occurred in the storming of the canals behind which in successive stages the German armies retreated. In some instances the canals were turned, in others assaulting troops swam or waded across and captured the German trenches on the eastern banks.

Fourth, Sixth, Seventeenth, and Canadian Corps on the line of the Canal du Nord in front of Cambrai. This attack, which was intended to serve the double object of still further outflanking the Hindenburg line to the south, and of drawing off the German reserves from that sector, went from the first like clockwork. The Canadians, passing over the canal by means of a narrow "bottle-neck" of only 2,500 yards, spread out fanwise, and broke deeply into the German positions, capturing the ill-omened Bourslon Wood—the scene of bitter struggles in November, 1917—and threatening Cambrai from the north.

alone procured for the British 10,000 prisoners and 200 guns. As usual, the number of German divisions engaged was much larger than the number of British: the four Canadian divisions, for example, encountered and defeated no less than ten German divisions.

### HOW THE HINDENBURG LINE WAS FINALLY BROKEN.

Meanwhile, the artillery of the British Fourth Army, facing the main Hindenburg line, had been continuing the furious bombardment begun on the night of September 26. For two days the avalanche of shells descended on the German positions, driving the garrisons to take refuge in their deep

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tunnels and dugouts, and effectually cutting off their sources of food and ammunition supply. Then, on the morning of September 29, when the success of the attack opposite Cambrai had been assured, the infantry of the Fourth Army advanced on a front of twelve miles, between Holnon and Vendhuille, and supported by a strong force of tanks, manned by both British

battle-line was the result of General Pershing's generous offer to Foch, on the latter's appointment as Generalissimo, of all his available forces, to be used in whatever way Foch saw fit. Already British and American troops had on a number of occasions fought side by side. In November, 1917, American railway engineers—the first American soldiers, it would



PLATOON OF THE 118TH INFANTRY REGIMENT

This regiment belonged to the Thirtieth Division which with the Twenty-Seventh participated in the Battle of the Hindenburg Line and the subsequent attacks of the Second American Corps on the British Front. Of the seventy-eight Medals of Honor awarded in the war twelve were bestowed on members of the Thirtieth Division, six of whom belonged to the 118th Infantry.

U. S. Official

and American troops, assaulted the heart of the Hindenburg system. On the left flank, the attack was protected by the British Third Army, which was already in motion; and on the right, the attack was continued by the French First Army in the sector about St. Quentin.

The assault of the British Fourth Army, which was in truth the culminating feature of the British campaign up to this point, was carried out by the British Third and Ninth Corps and the American Second Corps, with the Australian Corps in support. The presence of American troops in the

seem, to take part in battle on the Western Front—had volunteered to help repel the German counter-attack at Cambrai; and in March, 1918, other American railway troops had formed part of the miscellaneous force with which General Carey had stopped the road to Amiens. Several companies of American infantry, attached for instruction to the Australians, had gone over the top in the battle of Hamel on July 4 (against orders, but much had to be forgiven them on such a day), and they had won the somewhat critical approval of the Australians, who are reported to have de-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

scribed them as good lads, but a bit too rough! In the battle of Amiens, on August 8, the 33rd American Division had distinguished itself in the fighting north of the Somme; and during the German evacuation of the Lys salient in the beginning of September, the 27th American Division had recaptured Kemmel Hill. Now, however, the entire American Second Corps of two

tanks, the Germans had fortified it with especial care, connecting the tunnel by shafts with the trenches above it, and strengthening its defenses by means of every device that the wit of men could devise. Yet, preceded by an intense artillery barrage, and accompanied by a fleet of tanks, the American 30th Division broke right through the deep defensive



ON THE CAMBRAI-ST. QUENTIN FRONT

The Americans shown in this picture are not in regular trenches. That class of warfare was left behind after the battles of August, 1918, but nevertheless in the course of the pursuit machine-gun nests were made and concealed in thickets and forests. Such a post could command a whole slope, a road, an open field.

divisions, the 27th and the 30th, stood in the centre of the British battle-front in the supreme effort of the campaign.

### THE SHARE OF THE AMERICAN CORPS IN THE ATTACK.

The sector assigned to the Americans was that facing the Bellicourt tunnel. This was a tunnel, some 6,000 yards long, through which ran the Scheldt Canal, a wide flooded cutting which constituted on this part of the front the backbone of the Hindenburg defense system. Since the disappearance of the canal underground exposed this sector to an attack by the dreaded

zone constituting the German main line, and after bitter fighting captured the villages of Bellicourt and Nauroy. After the Americans had passed, it is true, the German machine-gunners came up from their subterranean shelters, and opened fire on them from the rear; but the Australians, coming up in support, "mopped up" these pests, and the breach in the Hindenburg line was made secure. On the left, the 27th American Division was less fortunate. A westerly bend in the canal exposed its left flank to the enfilade fire of the German artillery and machine guns on the farther bank,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

and it was subjected to heavy German counter-attacks; but it pushed on and finally captured Bony.

Meanwhile, the British had carried the line of the Scheldt Canal at several points both to the north and to the south. The Third Army had secured



**GERMAN POST IN LA BASSÉE**

The British contingent in the Army of the Belgians on October 2 made an advance astride of La Bassée Canal which threatened Lens from the northwest.

the crossings of the canal south-west of Cambrai; and the British 12th and 18th Divisions succeeded in forcing their way across the canal north of the Bellicourt tunnel, thus relieving the pressure on the American left. To the south of the Bellicourt tunnel, the British 46th Division, equipped with life-belts borrowed from the Channel steamboats, performed a brilliant feat of arms by swimming across the canal, storming the German defenses on the eastern side, outflanking the German positions farther south, and capturing in the first day of their attack no less than 4,000 prisoners and 70 guns.

### THE CAPTURE OF THE HINDENBURG LINE A SUPERLATIVE ACHIEVEMENT.

During the following days these striking successes were followed up on the whole front. On September 30 the 1st British Division, on the extreme right of the British line, crossed the canal north of St. Quentin, and thus facilitated the capture of St. Quentin by the French the following day. The Australians, passing through the Americans, carried the line forward to the hindmost elements of the Hindenburg system. By October 3 the Fourth Army broke clean through into the open country beyond this last line; and by October 5 the whole of the Scheldt Canal, together with the defenses adjacent to it, was in British hands. The impossible had been achieved. The Hindenburg line had fallen; and there remained nothing between the Germans and the Meuse but the natural obstacles of the open countryside and a few sketchy trenches which the Germans, relying on the impregnability of the Hindenburg line, had not bothered to finish.

The very completeness of the British success, in which the three British Armies engaged captured the grand total of 36,500 prisoners and 380 guns, is apt to blind one to the magnitude of their achievement. Yet no words are adequate to do justice to the courage of those who planned the attack, or the gallantry of those who carried it out. Thirty British and two American infantry divisions, with one British cavalry division, had advanced against thirty-nine German divisions entrenched in the strongest field fortifications of which history has any record; and in a few days they had won a full-orbed victory. Their glory can never die.

### THE LAST BATTLE OF YPRES FOUGHT UNDER THE KING OF THE BELGIANS.

Conjointly with the attack on Cambrai and the Hindenburg line, it will be remembered, a subsidiary attack had been planned in Flanders, to be delivered by the Belgian Army and the Second British Army. The primary object of this last battle of Ypres was to regain the Flanders ridges and loosen



THE HÔTEL DE VILLE, ST. QUENTIN

St. Quentin in the centre of the Hindenburg line was occupied on October 1 by the Fourth British Army under Rawlinson and the First French under Déneney. It lost its value for the Germans as a key to the trunk line between France, Belgium and Northern Germany after their retreat to the Hindenburg Line in the spring of 1917, but recovered its importance after their offensive of March, 1918.



GRANDE PLACE, DOUAI

Only the shell of what had been a fair and smiling city remained when the Allies entered Douai in the autumn of 1918. Bombardment by heavy long-distance guns and by long-range bombing aeroplanes with attendant fire and explosions had played freakish tricks, in one place leaving homes intact, and in another nothing but scattered masses of brick.

British Official



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the German hold on the Flanders coast; the ultimate object was to threaten the safety of Ludendorff's line of retreat through Belgium to Germany.

The battle was joined, on a front of about seventeen miles, north and south of Ypres, on the morning of September 28. The Belgians, assisted by some French divisions, attacked north of the

found themselves in a decided numerical superiority; and they were able consequently to sweep all before them. They not only took in their stride the whole of the Flanders ridges, over-running in a few hours the ground which it had taken months to capture in 1917; but the Belgians pushed on through the Houthulst Forest, and by October 1 they were on the outskirts



**LILLE LINEN MILLS DESTROYED BY THE GERMANS**

Destroyed machinery in one of the large linen mills in Lille as it was left by the Germans as part of their deliberate attempt to retard the economic recovery of the city. Lille had been in the hands of the enemy since October 13, 1914, and had suffered many things in her captivity.

Ypres-Zonnebeke road, and the British Second Army, which was placed for the time being under the command of the gallant King of the Belgians, advanced south of the road. The result was an unexpectedly brilliant success. Ludendorff, driven to his wits' end to find troops with which to stem the advance of the British opposite Cambrai, and relying perhaps on the Flanders weather, which had already broken, to render the ground in the Ypres sector a sufficient obstacle to an Allied attack, had stripped his line here of all but five divisions. For the first time in many months the Allies

of Roulers, while the British advanced to within two miles of Menin, recaptured the Messines Ridge, and forced the Germans to evacuate Armentières. The British advance, in fact, brought about a German retirement on the whole front from Armentières to Lens, and menaced, for the first time, the German hold on Lille.

### **THE GERMAN HIGH COMMAND FACES THE INEVITABLE.**

This series of crushing victories won by the British and the Belgians, combined with the Franco-American advance which took place simultaneously in the Argonne, finally broke down the

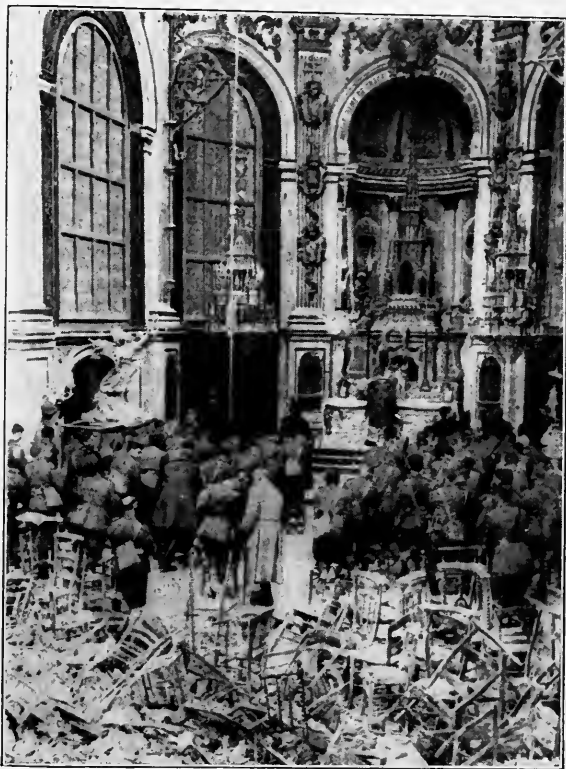


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

nerve of the German High Command. Driven from their last and strongest prepared positions, with units shattered and diminished beyond repair, and with losses in guns and other war material which alone would have sufficed to cripple them, they saw nothing before them but irreparable disaster. Once the Hindenburg line had been carried, Foch began to press forward on the whole front from the North Sea to Verdun; and the problem of withdrawing their beaten and demoralized armies under such conditions filled the German staff with dismay. It would appear that as early as the evening of September 28 Ludendorff decided that he must throw up the sponge. On September 29 Hindenburg and Ludendorff had a conference with the Kaiser and the Foreign Secretary at General Headquarters, and insisted that an immediate request for an armistice should be made. The Kaiser and Hindenburg proceeded immediately to Berlin; and on October 4 Prince Max of Baden succeeded Count Hertling as Imperial Chancellor. The following day Prince Max of Baden dispatched to President Wilson the request for an armistice which Ludendorff demanded.

In order to make assurance double sure, Ludendorff had sent to Berlin with Hindenburg a staff officer to explain to the party leaders of the Reichstag the military situation; and the statement which this officer presented throws a flood of light on the condition of the German army at this juncture. "In spite of using every possible device," he reported, "the strength of our battalions sank from about 800 in April to 540 by the end of September. And these numbers were only secured by the disbanding of 22 infantry divisions. . . . There is no prospect whatever of raising the strength. The current reserves, con-

sisting of men who are convalescent, combed out men, etc., will not even cover the losses of a quiet winter campaign. The inclusion of the 1900 class will only increase the strength of the battalions by 100, and that is the last of our reserves." The losses of officers and non-commissioned officers



TE DEUM AND NON NOBIS

Some of the Canadian troops who took Cambrai offering thanksgiving for peace in the Cathedral which was left almost in ruins by the vanished Germans.

had been exceptionally high. But the most disturbing feature of the situation had been the inability of the Germans to cope with the tanks. "Tanks broke through our foremost lines, making a way for their infantry, reaching our rear, and causing local panics which completely upset our battle control." "Every day the situation may become worse, and give the enemy the opportunity of recognizing our weakness, which might have the most evil consequences for peace prospects as well as for the military situation."

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE CONDITION OF THE COUNTRY SLOWS UP THE ADVANCE.

During the later stages of the battle for the Hindenburg line there were many signs that the German front was collapsing. Though the German machine-guns and artillery were still served with valor and devotion, the German infantry now began to surrender in ever increasing numbers at the slightest provocation, and chaos reigned in the supply and transport services. Fortunately for the Germans, however, it had now become increasingly difficult for the Allies to reap the fruits of victory. On the Flanders front the absence of adequate means of communication in the devastated area of the Ypres salient prevented the Belgians from capturing Roulers until October 14. Cambrai was practically enveloped by September 30; but such was the difficulty the supply services experienced in bridging the battlefield that the town was not occupied until October 9. Farther south, as we have seen, St. Quentin was captured by the French on October 1; but, though the Germans began immediately to withdraw from the St. Gobain salient, they were able to do so gradually, and by October 10 the French were only eight miles beyond St. Quentin.

### LUDENDORFF TRIES TO RALLY WHILE THE DIPLOMATS PARLEY.

The difficulty which the Allies experienced in following up their successes of the end of September roused a spark of hope in Ludendorff's breast. It now became clear that the danger of a collapse of the German armies was not so immediate as he had feared; and he began to think there might still be a good chance of making an effective stand while the German statesmen parleyed with the enemy in the gate. His plan was to withdraw in Flanders to the line of the Scheldt north of Valenciennes, and in France to the partially completed line running north-east of the Hindenburg line from Valenciennes to the Oise in the neighbourhood of Guise. The danger spot in this line—which was known to the Germans as the Hermann position—was the

sector opposite Cambrai, for the British here were already nearer the Meuse at Namur than were the German forces in western Belgium. But the German defenses in this sector, though they consisted in nothing more than a thin belt of wire and a half-dug trench line, lay behind the River Selle; and Ludendorff hoped that, by flooding the Selle, and by massing his available forces at this point, he might still make good his stand.

The plan met with a modicum of success. By the time King Albert's Belgians were able to resume their advance beyond the wilderness of the Ypres salient, the German arrangements for withdrawal were well advanced; and though the German rear-guards were hard pressed, and much war material fell into the hands of the Allies, the retreat was successfully carried out. On October 17 the Belgians occupied Ostend without fighting; on October 18 the British found Lille empty of the Germans; and by October 22 the Germans had evacuated the whole of the Flanders coast, and had taken up their new positions along the line of the Scheldt between Ghent and Valenciennes. In the south, between St. Quentin and Rheims, the withdrawal from the St. Gobain salient was also fairly well conducted. Only in the Cambrai sector were the Germans unable to retreat according to plan. Here the British, in what is known as the second battle of Le Cateau, unceremoniously hustled the Germans back to the Hermann position, and took from them no less than 12,000 prisoners and 250 guns. Over the very fields where Smith-Dorrien had fought for a chance to escape from the clutches of von Kluck over four years before, the British Fourth Army, with the 2nd American Corps in the centre of its battle-line, now drove the Germans headlong. But behind the Selle River Ludendorff was able to rally his dispirited and disorganized troops, and here also to make good his stand. By the middle of October, therefore, he had everywhere successfully occupied his new positions, and he was able to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

make to the German cabinet a much more sanguine report regarding the outlook than he had been able to make at the beginning of the month.

### LUDENDORFF LOSES THE BATTLE OF THE SELLE.

Foch, however, did not intend to give Ludendorff a chance to stabilize his front. Even while the German commander was endeavoring to per-

south of Le Cateau, in conjunction with the French First Army on the right. The Germans, who had massed all their available forces behind the flooded Selle, in anticipation of just such an attack, fought with a courage born of despair; and the Americans had a particularly bitter task in carrying the embankments and cuttings of the Le Cateau-Solesmes rail-



### OSTEND AFTER RE-OCCUPATION BY THE BELGIANS

On October 16 the great retreat of the Germans from Western Belgium began under the ever-accelerating pressure of the Allies. On the 17th, Ostend and Zeebrugge, submarine bases on the coast whose effectiveness had already been greatly lessened by the British naval raids of April and May, were evacuated.

suade the German statesmen that there was no longer any cause for despair, Foch was once more poising the thunder-bolt in his hand. The Americans and the French were already battling their way forward through the so-called Kriemhilde positions north of the Argonne; and Foch now proposed to repeat the pincer-like movement of his earlier battles by launching a thrust against the Hermann positions along the Selle.

The first attack was delivered in the early hours of October 17 by the 9th, 2nd American, and 13th Corps of the British Fourth Army in the sector

way line, where the German machine-gunners made a stubborn stand. For two days the struggle continued. Then the German resistance gradually broke down; and the battle ended with the Germans thrust back behind the Sambre River and the Oise Canal.

This first phase of the fighting was followed up on the night of October 19-20 by an attack delivered by divisions of the British First and Third Armies on the line of the Selle north-west of Le Cateau. Under cover of the darkness of a misty night, the British bridged the river under the very nose of the foe, and, with the assistance of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

tanks smuggled over the bridges, they carried the German defenses on the further bank, despite a resistance which was once again stubborn and desperate. Then, on October 23, the concluding phase of the struggle began with a general advance of the British Fourth, Third, and First Armies on their whole front from the Sambre to the Scheldt. On the right the Germans

**FILLED WITH DESPAIR LUDENDORFF RESIGNS HIS COMMAND.**

The situation confronting the German army was now most critical. If the Germans were to make a successful and orderly retirement to the line of the Meuse, it was essential that they should hold back the Americans north of the Argonne and the British east of Cambrai, in order that the forces



**GERMAN GUNS CAPTURED IN BRITISH ADVANCE**

A report dated the middle of October 1918 states that in their three months' offensive so far the Allies had captured on the Western Front more than 4,600 pieces, or a third of the German artillery on the Western Front and a quarter of the whole. As the retreat gathered momentum many more guns were, of necessity, abandoned.

British Official

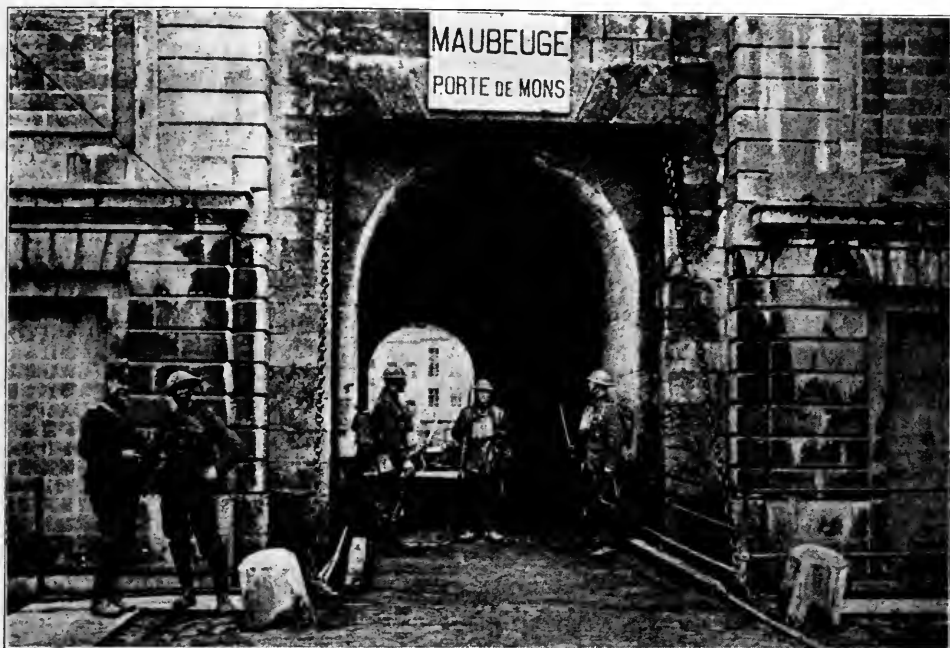
were thrown back into the Mormal Forest; on the left the British reached the outskirts of Valenciennes; and the net result was that a breach was made in the Hermann position some thirty-five miles wide and some six miles deep—a breach that left the German High Command no alternative to a further retirement. In the three phases of the battle the twenty-four British and two American divisions had engaged thirty-one German divisions, and had wrested from them a total of about 20,000 prisoners and 475 guns. Two other American divisions, the 37th and 91st were with the French in Belgium.

retiring from the St. Gobain salient and the forces along the Scheldt might be able to get clear; but this was exactly what they had failed to do. The problem of withdrawing the far-flung battle-line of the German armies in Flanders and Northern France through the bottle-neck of eastern Belgium would have been difficult in any case; but now that the danger spots in the line had caved in, the problem became almost hopeless. By this time, moreover, not only the German people but even the German army had lost confidence in the High Command. Far from fulfilling the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

promises of victory which he had made, Ludendorff now stood convicted of miscalculation in regard to the guarantees he had so recently given as to his ability to hold up the Allied advance. Completely discredited, he tendered his resignation for the second time on October 26; and this time it was accepted. The following day he left General Headquarters, and Hin-

of a drive begun in the grey dawn of November 1 against the German positions in the Valenciennes sector by two British Corps and the Canadian Corps, the latter having been transferred thither from the Cambrai front for the purpose of this operation. The Germans put up a gallant resistance—almost the last really stubborn stand they were to make. But the Canadians



THE RETURN OF THE TIDE AFTER MANY DAYS

Irish Guards on duty at the Mons Gate of the city of Maubeuge, which had been held by the Germans for fifty months ever since the opening days of war. It was one of the ironies that war was full of that so many units who had retreated in 1914 now found themselves over the same ground with their faces set the other way.

denburg remained to cope with the situation alone, though von Groener nominally succeeded Ludendorff.

### THE BATTLE OF THE SAMBRE PREPARES THE WAY FOR THE FINAL BLOW.

In order to complete the discomfiture of the German armies, all that now remained for the Allies to do was to keep up their pressure, and especially to keep it up at the crucial points where they had already driven in the German line. Accordingly, on November 1, while the Americans north of the Argonne made another push in the direction of Sedan, the British struck again towards Maubeuge and Namur. The first stage of the attack consisted

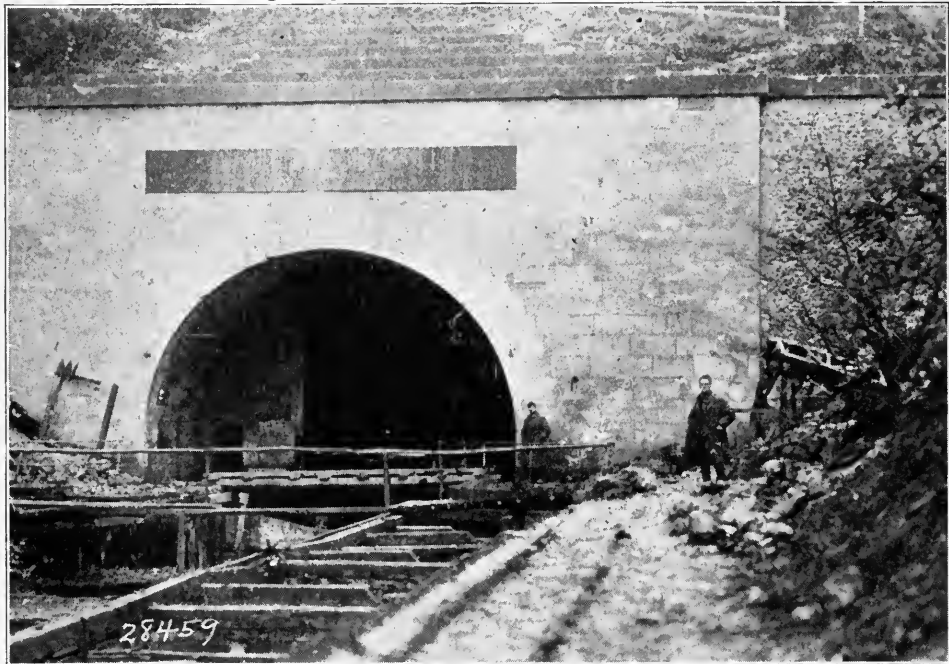
succeeded in capturing Valenciennes; and the loss of this pivot of the German line forced the Germans to make a further retirement—a retirement which gave Sir Douglas Haig elbow-room for his final and knock-out blow.

This blow was delivered by the British Fourth, Third, and First Armies on the whole front of thirty miles from the Sambre to Valenciennes on the morning of November 4. The result of the blow was decisive. The Fourth Army, which was now fighting on the very ground over which Haig's First Corps had passed in the retreat from Mons, stormed the line of the Sambre, and captured Valenciennes. The Third

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Army, in the centre, swept through the Mormal Forest, and the New Zealand Division captured the old fortified town of Le Quesnoy, with its entire garrison. The First Army, on the left, followed up its victory at Valenciennes by a pursuit of the retiring Germans, and crossed the River Aunelle. On the whole front the three armies advanced to an average depth of five

advantage of the targets afforded their bombs and machine-guns. On November 8 the Germans along the Scheldt gave way before the mere threat of an Allied attack; and the British Fifth and Second Armies, with French and American divisions on their left, moved forward in full pursuit. On November 9 the British Guards Division entered the great fortress of Maubeuge; and in



THE SOUTH PORTAL OF THE ST. QUENTIN CANAL

Between Bellicourt and Vendhuile the St. Quentin (or Scheldt) Canal passes through a tunnel six kilometres (about three and three-quarter miles) long. The Hindenburg line lay along the canal, and shafts were sunk connecting the tunnel with the trenches above. The front held by the Twenty-seventh and Thirtieth Divisions included this tunnel. After the Americans had forced their way across the canal Germans came up behind them from their shelter in the tunnel.

Pictures, U. S. Official

miles, capturing 19,000 prisoners and more than 450 guns.

**THE CANADIANS TAKE MONS, LOST FOUR YEARS BEFORE, ON ARMISTICE DAY.**

This crowning victory definitely broke down the German resistance. The retreat of the German armies now became a *sauve qui peut*, and they were never again able to rally. The German lines of communication fell into a confusion thrice confounded. Roads, railways, and canals all became hopelessly congested with the converging streams of traffic; and the Allied airmen, swarming overhead in pursuit, intensified the chaos by taking full

the early morning of November 11, only a few hours before the armistice which the German government had at last negotiated came into effect, the Canadians, by a final dramatic stroke of fortune, captured the never-to-be-forgotten town of Mons, where the British army had first joined battle with the Germans nearly four and a half years before.

**THE BRITISH ARMY AND THE END OF THE STRUGGLE.**

With the cessation of hostilities at 11 A. M. on November 11, the "Battle of France" was over. The once proud German armies had been defeated



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

beyond hope or power of recovery; and the strategic plans of Foch and Haig had been realized with a completeness rarely seen in warfare. As for the part which the British armies had played in achieving this remarkable result, no testimony could be more eloquent than the bare recital of the statistics of the struggle. In the course of three short months, the 59 fighting divisions of the British army alone had engaged and defeated no less than 99 separate German divisions, for the most part entrenched in the strongest battle positions; they had driven them back from before Arras and Amiens to a line well beyond the northern border of France; and they had taken 187,000 prisoners and 2,850 guns—totals beside which the captures of the Germans in their March offensive pale into insignificance.

### **THE ARMISTICE IN REALITY A COMPLETE SURRENDER.**

Nothing probably saved the Germans, during the concluding days of the struggle, from suffering a new and greater Sedan but the difficulties experienced by the Allies, and especially by the British, in getting forward. By the beginning of November the British troops were already very far in advance of their railheads; the

weather had broken; and the Germans found time to give full play to their old-time thoroughness and ingenuity in making demolitions. As they retreated, moreover, they liberated hundreds of thousands of starving civilians, and these unfortunates were thrown on the mercy of the British commissariat. The Canadians alone, in their advance from Valenciennes to Mons, had to take on their ration strength no fewer than 70,000 liberated French and Belgian civilians. All these factors threw an unprecedented strain on the British supply services, and in some cases prevented the British from even keeping in touch with the fleeing foe.

But though the end of the struggle might have been more spectacular, it could not have been more decisive. Had hostilities continued after November 11, the transport and supply difficulties on the British front, combined with the British weakness in cavalry, might have postponed for some time the capture or dissolution of the German armies; but the struggle, no matter how long it was protracted, could have ended in only way—in the annihilation of the German resistance and in the armed invasion of Germany.

W. S. WALLACE.





#### AN ACTUAL CHARGE IN THE FIELD

The photographer seldom was able to get a good picture of a charge, and this is a veritable treasure. Two companies of the 326th Infantry, Eighty-second Division are shown advancing at the double while the 307th Engineers ahead are blowing up the wire entanglements. The men belong to companies M and K. U. S. Official



#### AN AIRPLANE VIEW OF EPINONVILLE

The Ninety-first Division made an unexpected amount of ground in its drive forward in the Meuse-Argonne on September 26, and advanced patrols reached the village of Epinonville. The strength of the German trenches is indicated very clearly in the picture. The division had never been under fire before when it was placed in line for the Meuse-Argonne offensive. It was made up of men from the far West. U. S. Official



Leviathan in the North River

## CHAPTER LXXV

# St. Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne

## TWO MAJOR OPERATIONS UNDERTAKEN WITHIN TWO WEEKS BY A NEW ARMY

EDITED BY MAJOR GEORGE C. MARSHALL, JR.

General Staff, U. S. A.

**I**N the early days of September, 1918, General Pershing commanded about a million and a half men in France, of whom nearly one million were combatant troops in various stages of readiness for active service. As already mentioned, the First American Army had been formed, and it had been agreed that its first operation would be the reduction of the St. Mihiel salient. This project had been discussed for more than a year and now was to provide the American Army with an opportunity to show its quality as an independent force.

### THE SUGGESTION THAT THE AMERICAN FORCES CONTINUE TO ASSIST THE FRENCH.

The moment which General Pershing had so long eagerly awaited seemed at hand. If successful at St. Mihiel, the American army was to co-operate with the Allies in a larger operation, which would prepare the way for final success in 1919. At the end of July no military leader had hopes of concluding the war in 1918. The British and the French, however, met with unlooked-for success between Amiens and Montdidier on August 9, and while not expecting to drive the German armies entirely out of France in 1918, Marshal Foch now hoped to greatly improve the

situation of the Allies before winter. Therefore, on August 30 he proposed to General Pershing that the new American First Army be broken up after the St. Mihiel operation, one portion to assist the Second French Army between the Meuse and the Argonne Forest, while another should fight on both sides of the Aisne on the right of the Fourth French Army.

### GENERAL PERSHING REFUSES TO BREAK UP HIS ARMY.

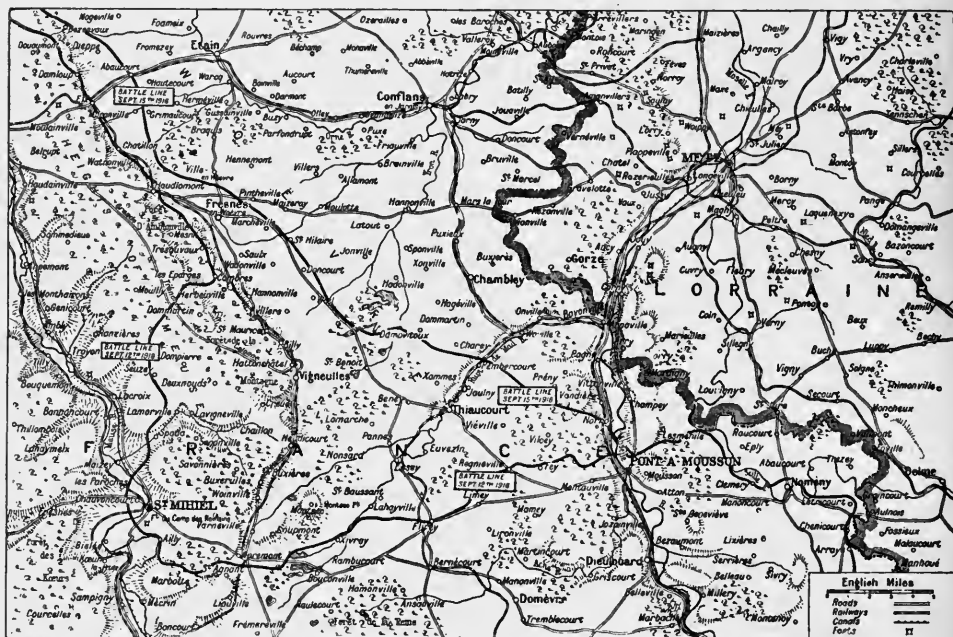
To this proposition General Pershing was unwilling to consent. His position is thus stated in his own words: "The plan suggested for the American participation in these operations was not acceptable to me because it would require the immediate separation of the recently formed First American Army into several groups, mainly to assist French armies. This was directly contrary to the principle of forming a distinct American Army, for which my contention had been insistent. \* \* \* The inherent disinclination of our troops to serve under allied commanders would have grown and American morale would have suffered. My position was stated quite clearly that the strategical employment of the First Army as a unit would be undertaken where desired, but its disruption to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

carry out these proposals would not be entertained."

At a second meeting on September 2nd, at which General Pétain was present, General Pershing's demand was conceded, and he then expressed a preference for the difficult Meuse-Argonne front for the American Army, as he felt the aggressive enthusiasm of the American soldier best fitted him

the Meuse south of Verdun, and had captured Fort Camp des Romains at St. Mihiel, the only one of the French line of barrier forts which they were able to hold. This pocket driven into France was a standing threat to Verdun, and cut the Paris-Nancy and the Commercy-Verdun railways. During the winter of 1914-1915 and the summer of 1915 the French had made des-



AREA OF FRANCO-AMERICAN OPERATIONS ON THE ST. MIHIEL FRONT

The American Army lay on both flanks of the salient, with French Colonial troops at the point. The latter, however, were not to make an assault. The line of September 15 shows the amount of territory reclaimed for France and also shows the danger to German occupation of Metz.

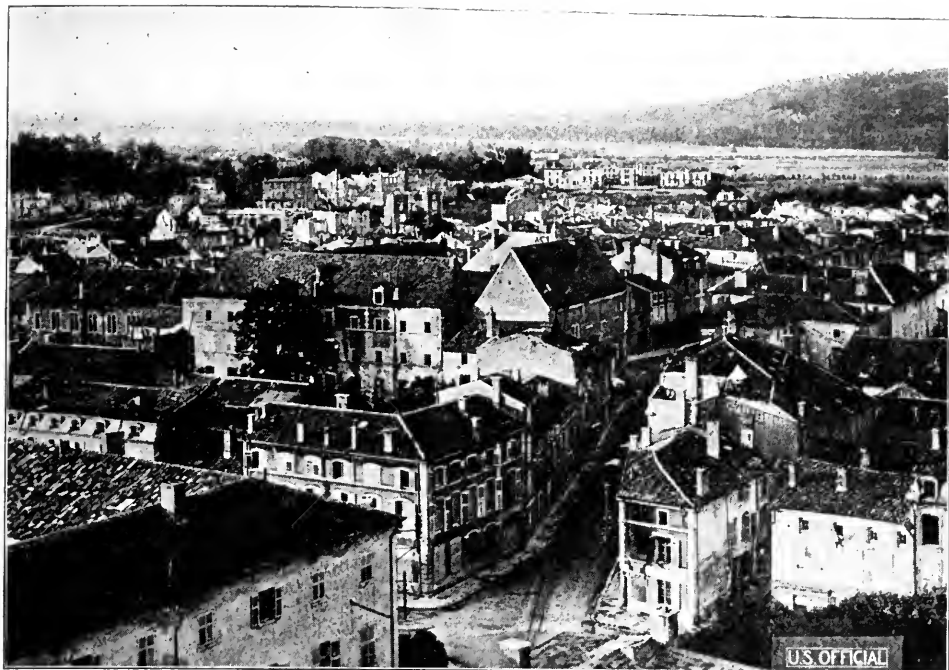
for the task. Accordingly it was agreed that he should first assume command of the St. Mihiel front and later take over the additional front extending westward to include the Argonne, 150 kilometers (93 miles) in all. The French divisions located in this zone were to pass under his command. The St. Mihiel operation was first to be completed, after which he was to attack between the Meuse and the western edge of the Argonne Forest not later than September 26.

### THE ST. MIHIEL SALIENT HAD ENDURED FOUR YEARS.

The St. Mihiel salient was a survival of the first weeks of the war. German forces in September, 1914, had reached

perate but fruitless attempts to reduce the salient. Strong by nature, it had been reinforced by every possible means. With the construction of a new railway line into Verdun its importance had slightly decreased and the front here had been quiet for three years.

Preparations for the American attack were made as secretly as possible, but the Germans heard rumors of the impending assault and this perhaps hastened their determination to withdraw, not so much because of fear, as in order to shorten their line in view of the British attacks further north. Arrangements for evacuation were being made while the American forces were assembling, but apparently the



A VIEW OF THE TOWN OF ST. MIHIEL

St. Mihiel had been under German sway since the first weeks of the war. The French in their attacks during 1914 and 1915 attempted to spare the town as much as possible, and this portion shows comparatively little damage. The town is situated on the Meuse and was an attractive French provincial town, of considerable wealth.



VIEW OF ANOTHER PORTION OF ST. MIHIEL

Down nearer to the Meuse the town had suffered more, and here only the bare walls with their gaping windows like sightless eyes are left. When the German forces were obliged to evacuate the salient in September, 1918, the inhabitants could hardly contain themselves. Flags which had been hidden during the whole four years with infinite care and much danger, made their appearance immediately to welcome the troops.

U. S. Official

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

German commanders did not dream that the attack was imminent or would be of such magnitude.

### THE ARRANGEMENT OF THE FORCE FOR THE OFFENSIVE.

From Les Eparges around the nose of the salient to the Moselle River was about 40 miles. The main attack was directed against the southern face of the salient, the First Corps under

the secondary attack. In reserve were the Seventy-eighth, Third, Thirty-fifth and Ninety-first Divisions and the Eightieth and Thirty-third were within reach if needed. Including reserves, about 500,000 men, of whom 70,000 were French, could be used in the operation. This was the largest American Army which had ever engaged in a single operation.



FRENCH AND AMERICAN TANKS AT ST. MIHIEL

Major General Hunter Liggett (Eighty-second, Ninetieth, Fifth and Second Divisions) on the right, with the Fourth Corps under Major General J. T. Dickman (Eighty-ninth, Forty-second and First Divisions) on its left. Extending around the tip of the salient lay the Second French Colonial Corps with three small French divisions which were to follow up the retreat of the enemy when his flanks were penetrated by the American troops. This French Corps was not called on to carry out an assault. Facing the western flank of the salient was the Fifth Corps, under Major General George B. Cameron (Twenty-sixth, Fifteenth French, and Fourth Divisions) which was to make

Plans were carefully made, so carefully that General Pétain to whom they were submitted for criticism did not suggest a single change. The salient was to be pinched off at the base by attacks against the flanks. The main attack from the south was to pivot on the centre division of the First Corps. The Eighty-second astride the Moselle just north of Pont-à-Mousson on the extreme right of the army, was not to advance except as necessary to cover the flank of the division (Ninetieth) on its left. The same applied to the Fourth Division on the opposite flank of the army. On the left of the Third Corps the First Division, advancing from the south, was to make contact

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

with the Twenty-sixth, advancing from the west, near the village of Vigneulles in the heart of the salient, thus catching in a trap, the Germans remaining in the point of the salient. The new line would then be swung from Pont-à-Mousson to Fresnes-en-Woevre.

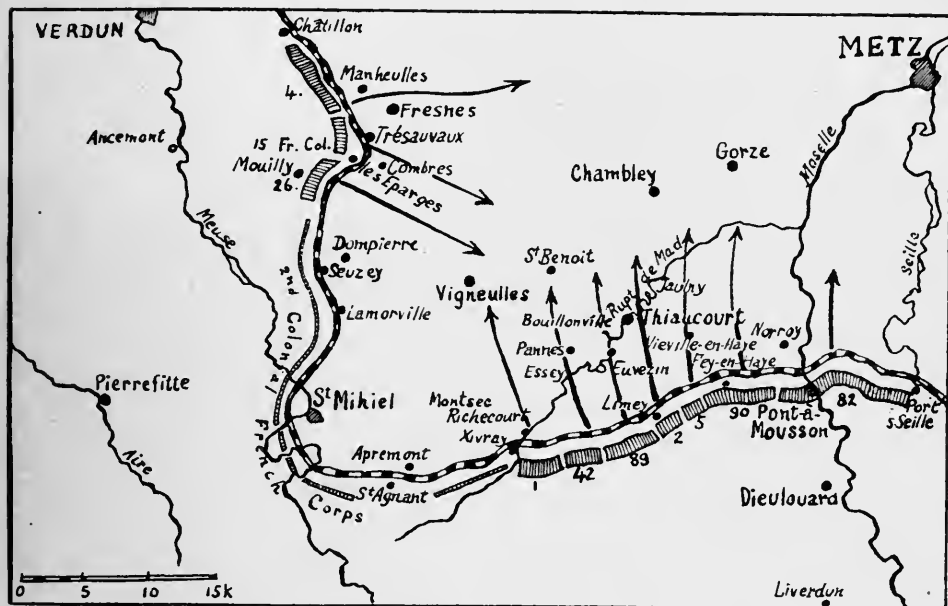
### BRITISH AND FRENCH CO-OPERATION IN THE ATTACK.

The French authorities co-operated in every way. As already mentioned, four small French divisions were in line.

German headquarters reported. In fact the heavy guns reached the railway station at Metz, hindering the sending of reinforcements, and the lighter guns sought out trench and dug-out, pill box and gun emplacement.

### THE ATTACK BEGUN WITH A RUSH ON THE SOUTH.

Accompanied by tanks the infantry of the First and Fourth Corps advanced with a rush at daylight. The Twenty-sixth on the western face of the salient



PLAN OF THE ST. MIHIEL OPERATIONS, SEPT. 12, 13, 1918

General Pétain also furnished tanks, and the crews for nearly half of them, cannon both light and heavy, trench mortars, and airplanes. In addition the French Independent Air Force was placed at General Pershing's disposal and the British Bombing Squadron in eastern France was to lend assistance.

If the German command had hoped to evacuate the salient before the American attack it was doomed to disappointment. About one o'clock on the morning of September 12th, in the midst of a heavy rain storm, a furious bombardment began all along the front of the First and Fourth Corps. "The batteries fired with great precision, not only on our first lines but also on our rear communications," the

did not move until eight o'clock in order to give the artillery a longer period of preparatory fire. The barrage was excellent and the troops cut or walked over the first wire. Few Germans were found in the first line trenches, but in the second and third resistance was a little stiffer. Airplanes flying low over the roads and trenches threw the German troops into confusion. In many cases squads or even platoons surrendered without resistance.

Every division had its objective, and a glance at the map above will make clear the course of the operation. The Ninetieth on the extreme right had only a limited advance to make but it included the Norroy quarries



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

reputed impregnable. The objective was reached about four o'clock in the afternoon. The Fifth reached its appointed goal with little loss. Almost at a bound the Second not only seized Thiaucourt but occupied the hills beyond and took 3000 prisoners. The Eighty-ninth took its two villages and the Forty-second took four, all defended with more or less zeal.

### THE PROGRESS OF THE ATTACK AGAINST THE WESTERN FACE.

Meanwhile the Twenty-sixth had been advancing from the west, and in the early morning of September 13th, its leading patrols entered the village of Vigneulles and gained contact with the First which had advanced fourteen kilometers from the south with the precision of clock-work making "a model of a well-conducted attack," including the passage of four kilometers of dense forest during the night. All objectives were reached during the afternoon of September 13th, thirty hours after the advance began. The American Army had joined forces across the base of the salient, but did not yet know all that was cut off behind it. Gloomy Mont Sec had not yet surrendered and there was an extensive wooded area north of St. Mihiel to be explored. In it were parts of a German and an Austrian division, who were glad to surrender with many guns. The American Army had taken sixteen thousand prisoners, 443 guns and vast stores of war material which the Germans had not had time to destroy.

During this time the French had not been idle. The Fifteenth French Colonial Division pounded away at Les Eparges and Combres, protecting the flank of the Twenty-sixth while the Second French Colonial Corps which was to follow up the retirement of the enemy from the tip of the salient pressed forward entering St. Mihiel itself during the night. One division, the Second Dismounted Cavalry, picked up 2500 prisoners with a loss of only 130 men.

On the morning of September 13, General Pershing and General Pétain, and Secretary of War Baker, entered

St. Mihiel, already gay with flags, hidden during the four dreary years preceding. Thither too soon came Premier Clemenceau and President Poincaré, the latter a native of the region, to congratulate the people upon their liberation. The principal street of the little town now bears the name Rue du General Pershing.

### THE EFFECTS OF THE OPERATION ON THE WAR.

The American army suffered only 7000 casualties during the advance, most of them slight. Success had come easily. The Germans had been greatly outnumbered and the rapidity of the American advance had quickly overwhelmed resistance without suffering a check. The battle was a great victory; one hundred and fifty square miles of French territory had been redeemed, 16,000 prisoners and much material of war had been taken, and Metz and the Briey iron basin were now in danger. More important than these the American command had planned and executed with complete success, what might have been a difficult operation. The staff of the army, the corps and the divisions had gained invaluable experience which was to serve them well later on, and the French and British had conclusive proof of the arrival of a powerful ally in the battle.

In the ranks of the enemy, despite the efforts of German Headquarters to belittle the American achievement, the news of what had happened spread with depressing effect. The soldiers knew the quality of their British and French opponents. They had been told that German submarines would prevent the Americans from crossing the Atlantic, yet here they were on the battle line—hundreds of thousands of them—and strange stories were told of their prowess. After St. Mihiel German confidence and morale declined with surprising rapidity.

### METZ MIGHT EASILY HAVE BEEN TAKEN AT THIS TIME.

The American divisions were eager to go on, to take Metz (which could easily have been pounded into rubbish by the artillery) and to march into Germany. Marshal Foch however,

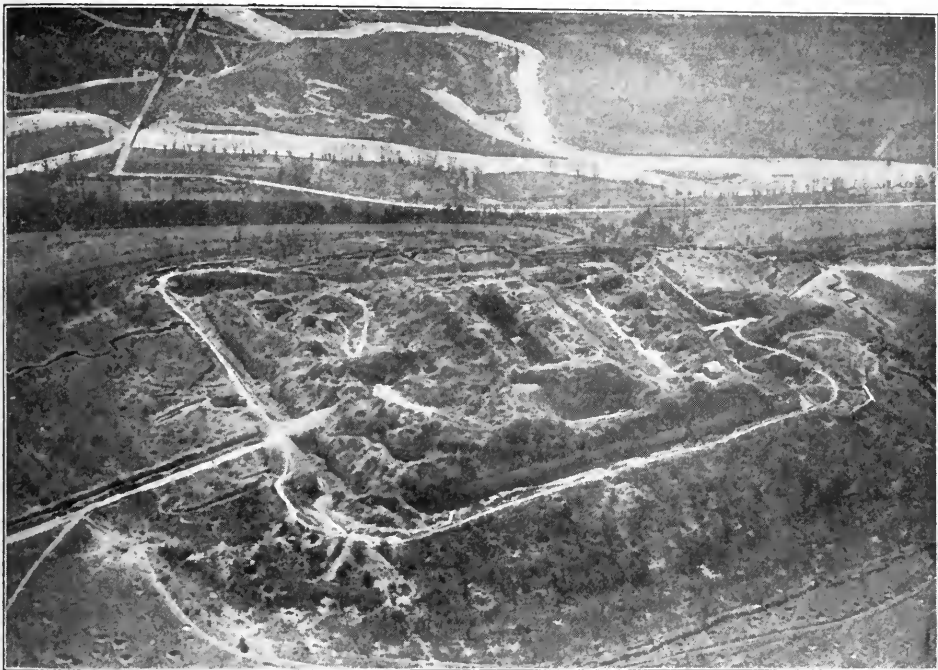


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

had rigidly limited the advance, and the men were forced to content themselves with establishing contact with the strongly fortified Hindenburg Line which the enemy had drawn in 1917 across the base of the salient.

The German High Command, however, expected and feared that the victorious American Army would imme-

still awaiting the attack on Metz, these troops took position between the Meuse and the Argonne Forest. A thin line of French, however, held the front line, serving as a screen for the American concentration until the hour of attack, when they withdrew as the Americans passed through them into the German lines.



CAMP DES ROMAINES IN THE ST. MIHIEL SALIENT

This French fort was made over into a very strong position by the Germans, but it could not withstand the terrific bombardment poured upon it during the American attack. It is shown here after the evacuation. It was the only one of the French barrier forts held for any considerable time by the Germans. N. Y. Times

diately advance upon Metz, and made preparations for a desperate defense of this key to Lorraine. In reality, on September 13, when it had been seen that the attack on St. Mihiel was successful, the reserve divisions and the army artillery were already on their way to a new field, the Meuse-Argonne front, where other divisions were also concentrating. Orders had been issued on September 10, two days before the assault, for the relief of the First and Fifth Corps and three of the divisions in the first line of the attack by the fourth day of the battle—all to be moved to the scene of the next operation. While the German command was

### THE EXTENT OF THE SECTOR UNDER GENERAL PERSHING.

As America's portion of the great Allied convergent offensive of September 26th, the most extensive battle in history and the final battle of the World War, the Meuse-Argonne front was accepted by General Pershing, and on September 22 the American line under his command stretched from Port-sur-Seille east of the Moselle, around Verdun and across the Meuse to the western edge of the Argonne. The newly stabilized St. Mihiel front was held by the Fourth Corps and the Second French Colonial Corps. Next came the Seventeenth French Corps

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

guarding the Verdun salient. The American troops for the new operation were disposed from the Meuse westward 23 miles to La Harazée in the Argonne. The line from the Meuse to Avocourt had been included in the battles around Verdun, but from Avocourt to the western limit there had been little change since 1914, though hard fighting had occurred both in the Argonne and around Vauquois.



AMERICAN PLANE OVER GERMAN LINES

The defenses natural and artificial might well have daunted any veteran army. Every device that German ingenuity could suggest had been applied to make the positions impregnable. From the heights east of the Meuse oblique artillery fire could be delivered; Forges Brook with marshy bottom and steep sides was the next obstacle; the heights of Montfaucon gave not only perfect observation but afforded a strong position. Vauquois was one of the strongholds of the German line. The valley of the Aire to the east of the Forest, was exposed throughout its length to crossfire from the bordering bluffs, while the wooded heights

of the Argonne were a network of wire and had been elaborately fortified. Wooded ridges running east and west afforded perfect positions for machine guns and field artillery. In fact this front was fortified to a depth of eighteen or twenty miles, where "the attack must fight blindly; the defense could fight with eyes open."

### THE REASONS FOR THE LAVISH SYSTEM OF FORTIFICATIONS.

The reason for this lavish system of fortifications was two-fold. The great railway line from Metz to Lille with from two to four tracks, enabled the German High Command to shift troops rapidly to any portion of the front. The section of this artery between Carignan and Sedan, which paralleled the Meuse-Argonne front, was vital to the supply of the German armies from Cambrai to Verdun. If it were cut the result would be disastrous for the greater part of the enemy's troops would be cut off from retreat and supply and Northern France and Belgium must be evacuated. The second reason lay in the importance of this front as a protection to the Briey Iron Basin from which most of the German iron and steel was obtained. Its loss would terminate Germany's hopes.

U. S. Official

For a newly organized army to initiate two major operations within fourteen days seemed impossible, and in this case the divisions designated to open the attack were selected from necessity rather than from choice. Of the nine divisions only three had seen hard fighting. Four had been in quiet sectors from ten days to two months and the other two never had been under fire at all. General Pershing was confident, however, and disposed them from the Meuse to the Argonne in the following order from right to left.

### THE DIVISIONS TAKING PART IN THE BATTLE.

The Third Corps under General Robert L. Bullard, extended from the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

east bank of the Meuse to Malancourt with the Thirty-third, Eightieth, and Fourth Divisions in line, and the Third in reserve. The Fifth Corps, under General George B. Cameron, extended from Malancourt to Vauquois, with the Seventy-ninth, Thirty-seventh and Ninety-first Divisions in line, and the Thirty-second in reserve. The First Corps, under General Hunter Liggett, held the remainder of the line, with the Thirty-fifth, Twenty-eighth, and Seventy-seventh Divisions in line, and the Ninety-second in reserve. The army reserve was composed of the First and Eighty-second (both withdrawn from the St. Mihiel front) and the Twenty-ninth Divisions.

Later the remaining six divisions which had taken part in the St. Mihiel offensive, were transferred and the Sixth and Seventy-eighth also took part in the battle. As the Ninety-second was soon transferred to the Moselle region without taking a serious part in the engagement, it will be seen that twenty-two divisions participated in the battle,—if an operation lasting forty-seven days can be so called.

For convenience, the battle has been divided into three phases, the first lasting from September 26th to October 3rd, a period of heavy assaults; the second, from October 4th to 31st, a period of perpetual combat during which ground was gained foot by foot; and the third, from November 1st to 11th, a period of deep and rapid advances against a foe becoming demoralized, but still fighting desperately at some points.

**H**OW "THE SUCCESS OF LATE SEPTEMBER" WAS GAINED.

General Pershing had for his attack about 2700 guns, 189 small tanks (142 manned by Americans) and 821 airplanes (604 manned by Americans). He lacked horses for artillery and supply trains and had less than half the proper allowance of motor trucks. The French were unable to supply all the horses they had promised, but they furnished almost half the trucks we used. The enemy had no tanks and fewer guns and planes. His artillery, however, was advantageously located,

commanding every road and all ground favorable for the attacker.

On the morning of September 26, the expected attack was launched after a furious bombardment of more than three hours. Following a dense rolling barrage the infantry advanced across "No Man's Land" and quickly overran the enemy's first position. The tanks followed the infan-



ON THE VARNES ROAD

U. S. Official

try and passed through them as more open country was reached. By nightfall the German second position had been penetrated, except in the centre of the line at Montfaucon. On the extreme left the Seventy-seventh Division made good progress through the thickets of the Argonne. The Twenty-eighth between the Aire and the eastern bluffs of the Argonne reached Montblainville, while the Thirty-fifth on its right carried the formidable heights of Vauquois and the hills beyond Very. The Ninety-first, never before under fire, made a splendid advance through Cheppy Wood and some units reached Epinonville, 9 kilometers from the jump-off, but retired towards Very as

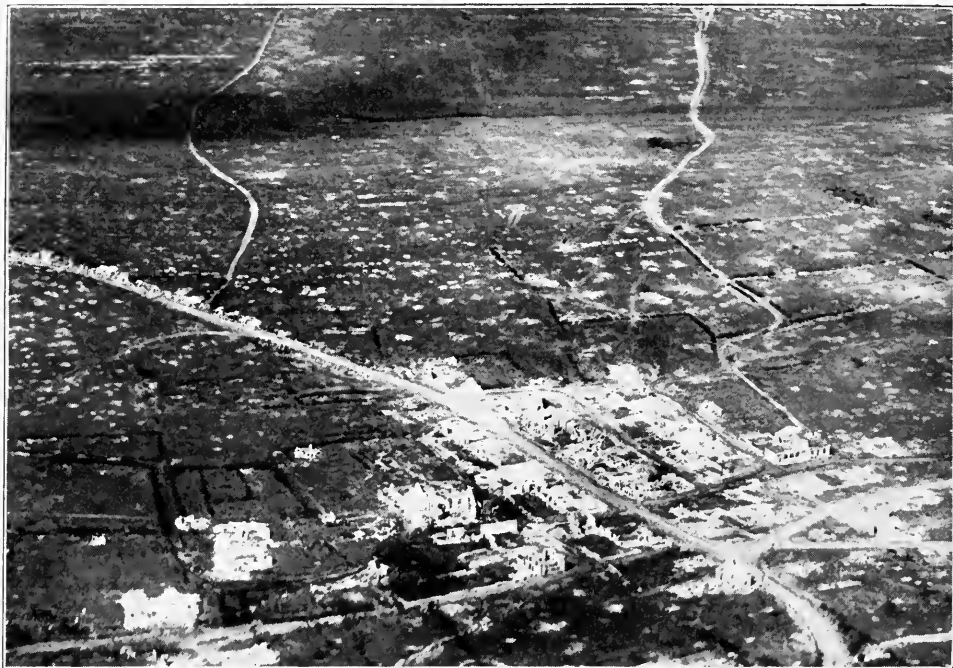
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

they had lost connection with the adjacent divisions. Further to the right, the Thirty-seventh made its way through a dense tangle of forests, wire and trenches, emerging somewhat disorganized and unable that evening to carry the Montfaucon ridge in its front. The Seventy-ninth, which had never before been under fire, found

flank of the army, if the Germans should attempt to cross the river here, incidentally taking 1450 prisoners, 29 guns, trench mortars, 59 machine guns, and one engineer depot.

### THE OPERATIONS ON THE SECOND AND THIRD DAYS.

Fighting continued without interruption through September 27 and 28,



NANTILLOIS, TAKEN BY THE SEVENTY-NINTH DIVISION

hard work and was checked before Montfaucon until noon of the 27th.

### THE ADVANCE OF THE THIRD CORPS ON THE RIGHT.

The advance of the Third Corps was altogether satisfactory. The Fourth carrying duckboards, crossed Forges Brook, and in a brilliant advance swept on beyond Septsarges and through Septsarges Wood though its left flank was entirely in the air, being nearly five kilometers beyond the nearest, friendly troops. The Eightieth making its first attack, established its line north of Dannevoux though shelled cruelly from Hill 378 across the river. The Thirty-third, also attacking for the first time, swung around its left to connect with the Eightieth and took position along the Meuse to defend the

and six new German divisions were thrown into battle. Resistance stiffened and much difficulty was experienced in getting up the artillery and supplies. There were but the traces of three roads leading in the direction of the advance—the Fourth Division had no road at all—and transport over the rough or else marshy ground, sloughed by artillery fire was rendered more difficult by constant rains. Just when the infantry needed the support of artillery most the natural difficulties of the terrain slowed up its advance, though all the light guns were across “No Man’s Land” by the afternoon of the 27th.

By the end of the fourth day 9000 prisoners and 100 guns had been captured and a maximum advance of 12

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

kilometers had been realized. It was evident however, that hopes of a complete break-through must be abandoned. It had been thought possible that the simultaneous advance of the Fourth French Army west of the Argonne Forest and of the American Army to the east would cause its immediate evacuation without direct attack. The former army had made less progress

### "THE INCESSANT FIGHTING OF OCTOBER" —THE SECOND PHASE.

At some points a penetration of seven miles had been achieved, but the line was everywhere opposed by a heavily reinforced enemy in strong positions. Now began, on October 4, four weeks of the most desperate fighting, during which ground was gained foot by foot, with numerous



AMERICAN SOLDIERS COLLECTING GERMAN PRISONERS, ARGONNE

than the Americans and it was now clear that the enemy, already heavily reinforced, must be slowly pushed back in the centre of the line until elbow room could be obtained for launching a flank attack against the Argonne, where the thick underbrush effectually concealed the machine gun nests, making direct assault impossible. The divisions in the centre had suffered severely and, during the night of September 29th, the Thirty-seventh and the Seventy-ninth were relieved by the Thirty-second and Third respectively, and the next night the First relieved the Thirty-fifth. All three of the divisions relieved had met difficult obstacles.

hand to hand engagements. On the first day of the renewed general attack, the Third and Fifth Corps were unable to advance any considerable distance, but the First Division on the right of the First Corps made a deep penetration at the point needed for launching a manoeuvre to outflank the Argonne.

The Seventy-seventh in the Forest had been making slow but steady progress, and incidentally furnished one of the most dramatic incidents of the war. A regiment of the Ninety-second Division had been ordered to go forward between the Fourth French Army and the Forest to maintain connection between the two armies and to

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

protect the flanks of both. On October 2, the First Battalion of the 308th Regiment with some elements of the 307th, and of the 306th Machine Gun Company were cut off from the remainder of the division in the heart of the Forest. The Ninety-second had not advanced sufficiently far and the enemy had filtered in behind the units, which were surrounded on all sides.

To give the daily position of each division through the twenty-eight days included in the second phase is manifestly impossible, and only the main points can be touched on. All along the line the Americans pushed forward meeting with stubborn, even desperate resistance, some divisions making considerable gains, others making gains only to lose them by counter-attack.



A CAPTURED GERMAN GUN IN THE WOODS

Summoned to surrender, the commander, Major Charles S. Whittlesey, refused emphatically.

### THE ROMANTIC STORY OF THE "LOST BATTALION."

For five days these men, almost without food or water, under fire at all times from a concealed enemy who surrounded them entirely, held out. Airplanes succeeded in dropping some bread, little of which fell near them. Finally on October 7, the 307th Regiment succeeded in relieving this so-called "Lost Battalion." As a matter of fact the battalion knew where it was and the division commander knew its position perfectly well, but was unable to relieve it sooner.

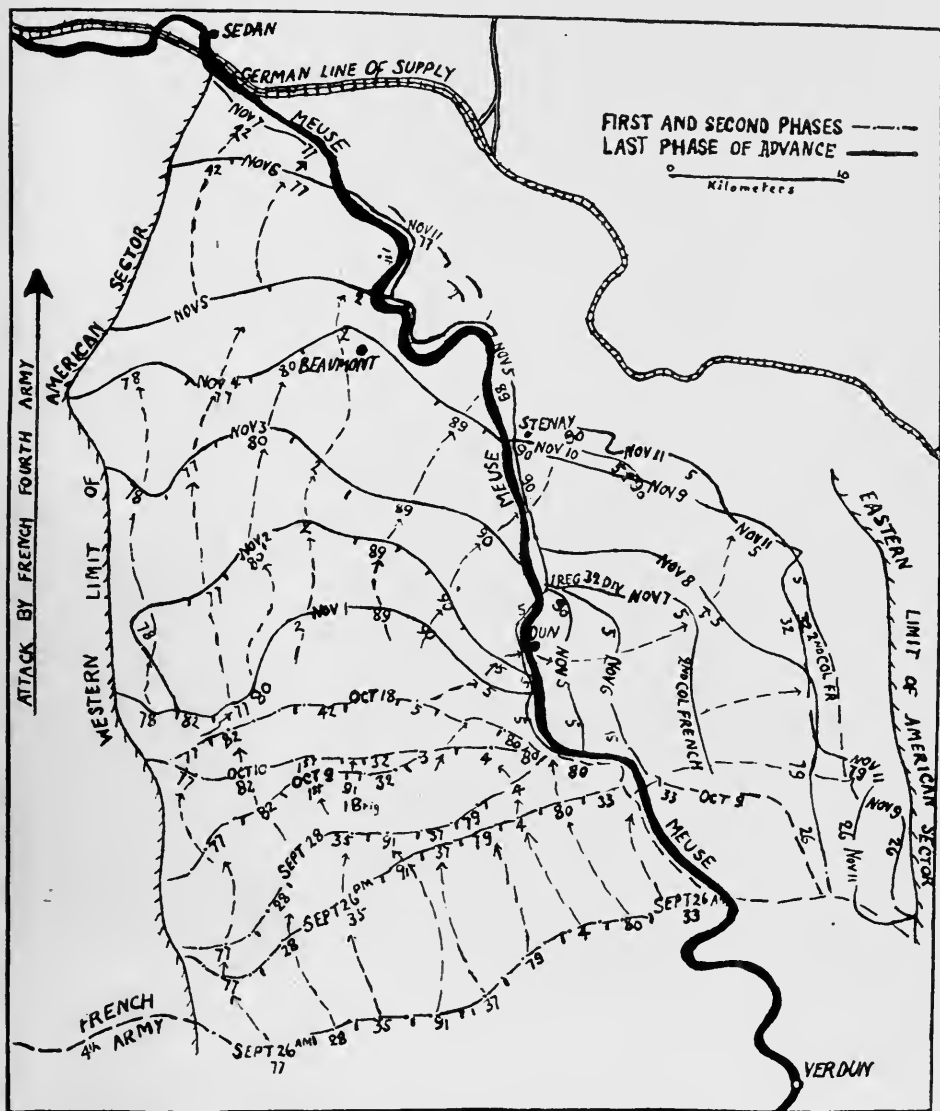
The map giving the daily position of each division shows not an orderly progression but a jumble of lines difficult to disentangle. Divisions fronted in every direction except towards the rear.

### SOME OF THE SPECIAL DIFFICULTIES MET AND CONQUERED.

The valley of the Aire made difficult going. From the front and from both flanks came converging fire, on ground so marshy that the artillery found difficulty in advancing. The First which had relieved the battered Thirty-fifth, with the Thirty-second which had taken over the line of the Thirty-seventh, advanced together up the right bank of the Aire October 4-



# HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



MAP SHOWING THE ADVANCE IN THE MEUSE-ARGONNE

From Ayres, The War With Germany

8, suffering many casualties but securing Fleville, Exermont and Gesnes, assisted by a brigade of the Ninety-first, and continued to advance until the First after losing nearly half its strength was relieved by the Forty-second, eager to show that it was quite as good as the First. Meanwhile the Fourth and the Eightieth (which had relieved the Fifth) made some progress to the right of Romagne.

The German artillery on the east side of the Meuse was proving troublesome, and General Pershing ordered General Claudel, commanding the Seventeenth French Corps, to which was added the Twenty-ninth American Division, and a part of the Thirty-third, to attack on a narrow front, while the Thirty-third French Corps took over a part of the line previously held by the Seventeenth Corps. The



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

attack on October 8th, gained something like six kilometers, and 3000 prisoners were captured, but resistance quickly stiffened, as the German High Command was determined to hold the eastern heights of the Meuse at all costs since here was the actual pivot of all the German defensive positions on the Western Front.

**THE SECOND AMERICAN ARMY IS NOW ORGANIZED.**

General Pershing now had under his command seven Army Corps, totalling about a million men, too many for a single staff and a single commander. He therefore constituted the Second Army (October 12) to take over that part of the line southeast of Fresnes-



THE ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY-FIFTH INFANTRY SETTING UP MACHINE GUNS

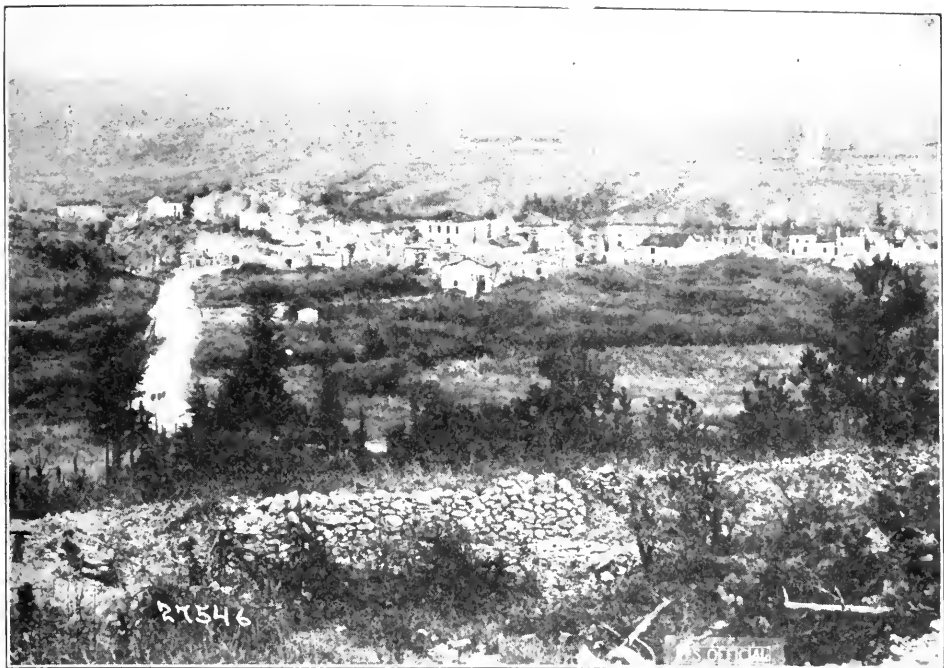
**THE GERMANS FORCED TO EVACUATE THE ARGONNE FOREST.**

Though the Seventy-seventh had been advancing in the Argonne the centre of the line had gone faster. To silence the guns on the flank, parts of the Twenty-eighth now wearing the title of the "Iron Division," and the Eighty-second (which had been added to the First Corps) on October 8th, swung to the left, crossed the Aire valley, climbed the hills, took Chatel-Chéhery and Cornay and drove the Germans from the edge of the Forest. Thus threatened on their flank and under constant pressure from the Seventy-seventh, the Forest was evacuated on October 10. This flank movement was both difficult and expensive.

1300

en-Woevre, the newly stabilized St. Mihiel front. Lieutenant General Robert L. Bullard was sent to command this army, control of the Third Corps passing to Major General John L. Hines, who had commanded the Fourth Division. At the same time Lieutenant General Hunter Liggett was promoted to command of the First Army, and Major General J. T. Dickman was transferred from the Fourth to the First Corps, and Major General C. P. Summerall left the First Division to command the Fifth Corps. General Pershing, of course, retained general control of the Army Group.

The question of replacements was now becoming serious. If the attack was to be pressed, more men must be



VIEW OF VAUX LES PALAMEIX FROM THE HILLSIDE

The tiny hamlet of Vaux les Palameix was almost destroyed by the bombardment and by German airplanes. The Seventy-ninth Division was here, October 17, 1918, in the second phase of the Meuse-Argonne battle. The houses in the picture are empty shells, most of them without roofs as the inhabitants have fled for safety.



ON GUARD IN THE VALLEY OF THE MEUSE

The Thirty-third Division fought on both sides of the Meuse during the Meuse-Argonne offensive, as well as furnishing some assistance to the Fourth Division. It was composed of National Guard units from Illinois. This picture shows a part of the 132d Regiment, 66th Brigade in front line trenches overlooking the valley of the Meuse.

U. S. Official

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

had. The two divisions loaned to the Fourth French Army, the Second and Thirty-sixth, were recalled after a brilliant attack against the key to the German front in Champagne. However, some new divisions had to be broken up for replacements and on Marshal Foch's urgent request, the Thirty-seventh and Ninety-first were

were broken, there were no prepared German positions in rear to obstruct the march on the railroad. The enemy had mapped the ground thoroughly and the range of every position was known. His artillery was served by light railways which brought up ammunition in quantity as needed, while the American artillery must be sup-



ROMAGNE, ONE OF THE STRONG POINTS

This village with its hills and encircling trenches was one of the most strongly held places in the German line, and held up the American advance for several days. It is now one of the four American cemeteries in France. To it men buried all over the battlefield have been transferred, making it a holy place. U. S. Official

relieved from the First Army and sent to assist in the attack in Belgium.

### THE ARMY NOW BEFORE THE KRIEMHILDE STELLUNG.

The First American and the Fourth French Armies were now confronting the last strong German line of defense, the Kriemhilde Stellung (called Brunhilde in front of the French). This was not so much a line of trenches, as a connected series of small forts of concrete protected by barbed wire, with machine guns everywhere. Its depth averaged about two and a half miles, and it occupied the attention of the American forces for nearly three weeks. Resistance was desperate, for if it

plied through a rough, broken country with few roads. The French were in more open country but had the disadvantage of advancing over the ground which had been torn up by artillery fire.

### FIGHTING DURING THE LAST TWO WEEKS OF OCTOBER.

On October 14, a general attack was launched. Grandpré, where the Germans fired down from the windows of the houses on the men of the Seventy-eighth, was captured, but frequent counter attacks made its retention difficult. This division had not been expected to gain much ground, but to divert troops from the centre where the main attack was being launched.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The Forty-second took the formidable Chatillon Ridge. The Coté de Dame Marie, Romagne and Pultiere Wood were taken by the Thirty-second and Fifth, and the latter with the assistance of the artillery of the Third, took Rappes Wood, on October 21, before it was relieved by the Ninetieth. The Third fought its way forward until relieved by the Fifth, now to go into the line again. East of the Meuse the fighting was also bitter. Here the Thirty-third, the Twenty-ninth, and the Twenty-sixth, on the site of the old Verdun attack bore themselves as well as their comrades across the river, and with the Seventeenth French Corps also broke into the Kriemhilde Stellung. Finally during the last days of October the German line was penetrated in several places, and the Germans withdrew from the few positions they had been able to hold. When Romagne, Bantheville and Landres-St. George were taken the backbone of the German resistance was broken.

At the end of October all organized German positions had been taken, the Argonne Forest was in American hands, an advance of 21 kilometers (13 miles) had been made, and 18,600 prisoners, 370 cannon, 1000 machine guns and much material had fallen into American hands. More than all, though some of the divisions had suffered heavily, the morale of the army was high. The soldiers knew that they were winning and the end of the war was in sight.

### THE THIRD PHASE—THE PURSUIT OF A RETREATING FOE.

On November 1, all was in readiness for the decisive attack towards Sedan, which should cut the enemy's vital line of communications and drive the Germans across the Meuse along the entire Army front. By strenuous effort the artillery had been brought up and was now on the heights previously occupied by the enemy. The French artillery, aviation and technical services had been largely transferred to their own front, being replaced by American units which had just arrived in France. The American staffs had profited by their battle experience and

carefully prepared orders had been issued to the Corps commanders.

Again counting from right to left, the Third Corps had the Fifth and Ninetieth Divisions in line; the Fifth Corps had the Eighty-ninth and Second (lately arrived from the French front); and on the First Corps front were the Eightieth, Seventy-seventh, and Seventy-eighth. News had come



GERMAN OBSERVATION POST NEAR GRANDPRÉ

of the liberation of the Belgian coast, of the breaking of the Hindenburg Line by the British, (already passed by the Americans) and of the French occupation of Laon. All were eager to have a part in the final operation.

### THE MEUSE IS REACHED AND CROSSED.

After two hours of terrific bombardment the line went forward, preceded by a barrage of maximum density. The Third Corps took all its objectives and the Fifth Corps in the center swept by Landres-St. Georges, Bayonville, and over the heights of Barri-court, almost nine kilometers in all. The First Corps met stronger resistance, but the advance of the Fifth

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

made a general German retirement necessary and on the second day the First pressed hard in pursuit, many units of the Seventy-seventh in motor trucks, while the Fifth and Third Corps were forcing their way rapidly northward. The objective of the Third Corps lay east of the Meuse, that of the Fifth Corps, Beaumont, while the First was directed on Sedan. Mean-

been pressing the enemy on the east bank of the river further south. The combined attack drove the enemy clear of the heights of the Meuse.

### THE ENTIRE GERMAN ARMY IS FORCED ACROSS THE MEUSE

To the north the German rear-guards resisted desperately in order to enable the fleeing army to cross the Meuse. On the night of November



ENTRANCE TO DEATH VALLEY, MEUSE-ARGONNE

The soldiers gave the name Death Valley to this desolate region near Samogneux. The picture was made October 27, 1918, and shows how the forest had been pounded by the shells of the contending guns, while machine guns commanded every point of vantage. The road was cut by wheels and torn by shells. One wonders how it was possible to make headway through the Meuse region where every advantage was with the defense.

U. S. Official

while the long range guns found the railway at Montmédy, Longuyon and Conflans. The Third Corps swung to the right, the Fifth Division attempting to cross the Meuse the night of November 3rd-4th, and some units succeeding, against heavy resistance on November 4th. The entire Division quickly followed in a brilliant advance to the edge of the bluffs and on through the forest of Spincourt. Soon it linked up with General Claudel commanding the Seventeenth French Corps, with the Seventy-ninth, Twenty-sixth and Eighty-first American Divisions and two French divisions, who had

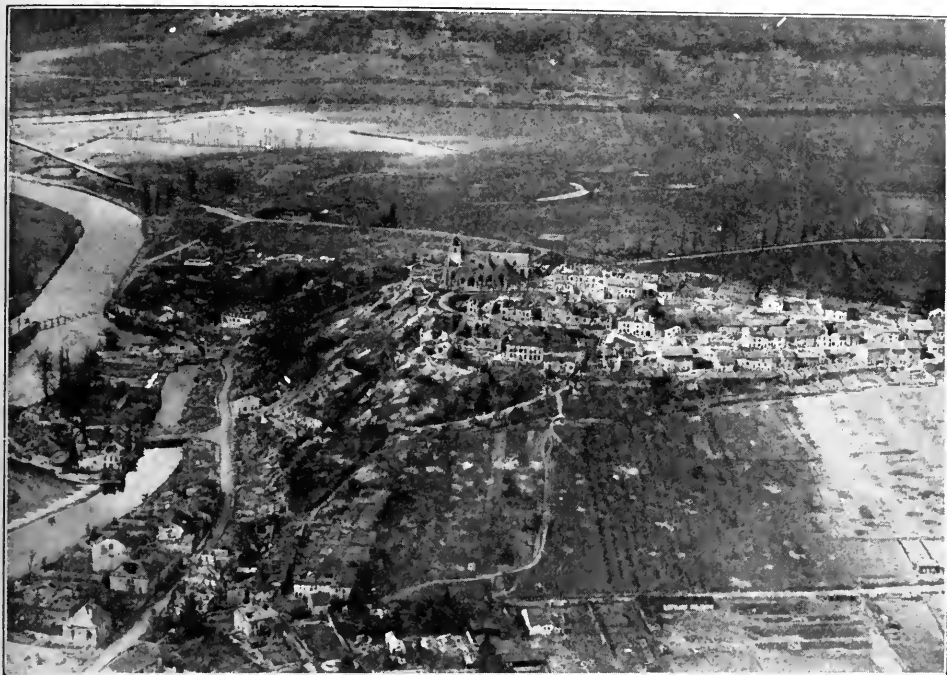
3rd an astonishing incident occurred on the front of the Second Division. The Marine Brigade had broken through near Belval, whereupon the 9th and 23rd Infantry Regiments marched all night through the forest of Dieulet as far as La Tuilerie Farm, where a number of German officers were captured in billets. They had penetrated deep into the enemy lines, but so great was the confusion and demoralization of the retreating Germans and so unexpected this attempt that they were not cut off or attacked in force, though the advance was confined to a single road.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The momentum gained on the first day of this final attack increased daily and the final rush towards Sedan was an overwhelming avalanche. Most of the German units succeeded in fleeing across the Meuse, but many units were cut off and completely destroyed. 250 cannon and 2000 machine guns were abandoned. On the night of November 6-7 the Forty-second

addition to his devoted Belgians, was clearing his country. The French had been advancing in the centre of the long line and now the American army had cut one of the two main lines of supply, and also of retreat.

General Pershing was not content with the possession of this portion of the Meuse. On November 5 an attack by the First Army was ordered



DUN-SUR-MEUSE ON THE EAST BANK, TAKEN BY THE FIFTH

Division and portions of the First Division reached the heights of the Meuse overlooking Sedan and the city lay at their mercy. For reasons of sentiment, however, the French were allowed the honor of entering Sedan which had been the scene of their humiliation nearly fifty years before.

### THE POSITION OF THE AMERICAN ARMIES AT THE ARMISTICE.

Meanwhile things had been going badly for the Germans in the north. Haig's hammer blows had broken the Hindenburg Line and were driving the Germans before them. King Albert, with whom were French and British troops besides two American Divisions, the Thirty-seventh and Ninety-first, in

toward Longwy, while the Second Army was to press toward the Briey Iron Basin completing the destruction of German hopes in the South. Active preparations were on foot when the news of the signing of the Armistice came. The movements of the Fifth Corps were so rapid however, that there was some desultory fighting after 11 A.M. The Second Army, (Fourth and Sixth Corps) below St. Mihiel made a considerable advance during the last days of fighting. At the request of Marshal Foch, General Bullard with six divisions was ready to join General Mangin with twenty French divisions in an attack toward the Sarre Basin on November 14.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE GENERAL RESULTS OF THE MEUSE-ARGONNE BATTLE.

The great battle of the Meuse-Argonne was over. Between September 26 and November 11, forty-seven days, twenty-two American and six French divisions on the front from Verdun to the western edge of the Argonne had engaged and beaten forty-seven German divisions, about one-fourth of the total number of their divisions on the Western Front. The attack had drawn twenty divisions from the French Front, one from the British and two from the Eastern.

Something more than 630,000 Americans had been engaged in the whole operation and about 140,000 French, though less actively. This is by far the largest army ever engaged in a single battle under an American general. St. Mihiel, important as it was, seems small in comparison. The losses in killed, wounded and missing were 117,000 Americans and about 7000 French, not an excessive number considering the numbers engaged, the length of the engagement and the character of the country. The First Army had taken 26,000 prisoners, 847 cannon, 3000 machine guns and large quantities of war material, and had driven the German armies across the Meuse.

### IMPOSSIBLE TO SINGLE OUT THE BEST DIVISION.

No man at this time can fairly apporportion praise among the divisions and the commanders, here or at St. Mihiel, in the Marne salient or on the British Front. The regular divisions were expected to do well, for the Regular Army has always done well. Some of the Guard Divisions had been well-trained in times of peace and much was expected from them. They responded, but the Guard Divisions, less well trained and with a large proportion of selected men also did well. The Twenty-eighth had a larger casualty list than any other Guard Division with the Forty-second and Twenty-sixth not far behind. The Thirty-second which served with two French armies, as well as in the Meuse-Argonne, the Thirty-third which first showed its quality

on the British Front, the Thirty-fifth which attacked Vauquois with almost no battle experience, and the Twenty-ninth which fought east of the Meuse, all did their tasks in a workmanlike fashion. The Thirty-seventh fought at Avocourt without ever having been in an active sector, and then was transferred to Belgium.

The National Army divisions did not get into the line as early as the Guard and Regular divisions, but their record was brilliant. More has been written, perhaps, of the Seventy-seventh, because of its metropolitan origin, New York City, but it was by no means the only good division of drafted men. Partisans of the Eighty-ninth, Eighty-second, Seventy-eighth, Ninetieth, Seventy-ninth, Eightieth, and Ninety-first, (which spent the last days of the war in Belgium), to take them in order of their casualties, tell us that each was really the best division in France.

### THE UNITED STATES HAS CAUSE FOR PRIDE IN THE RECORD.

The operation of the Meuse-Argonne was entered upon, from necessity, without proper preparation and with many deficiencies in equipment, but its success completely justified the haste. Only a few divisions had received the training supposedly necessary to prepare them to attack a position of such strength, but the green divisions beside them behaved like veterans, and together they broke through the strongest German defenses. The success of the operation was largely responsible for bringing the war to an end in 1918. Suddenly conceived, hurriedly prepared during the course of another great battle, preceded by one of the most, if not the most difficult concentration movements in the history of warfare, it was driven to a successful and victorious conclusion through the longest period of continuous battle during the war. The Staff, though new to its work, rose to the emergency and quickly became a splendid team.

The battle in every phase, conception, preparation, and execution, was typical of the genius of the American people, therefore little understood and much discussed by foreign critics.



# AMERICAN ARMY AND NAVY DECORATIONS



DISTINGUISHED SERVICE  
MEDAL OF THE ARMY



MEDAL OF HONOR, ARMY



DISTINGUISHED SERVICE  
CROSS OF THE ARMY



VICTORY MEDAL



VICTORY BUTTON, SILVER



VICTORY BUTTON, BRONZE



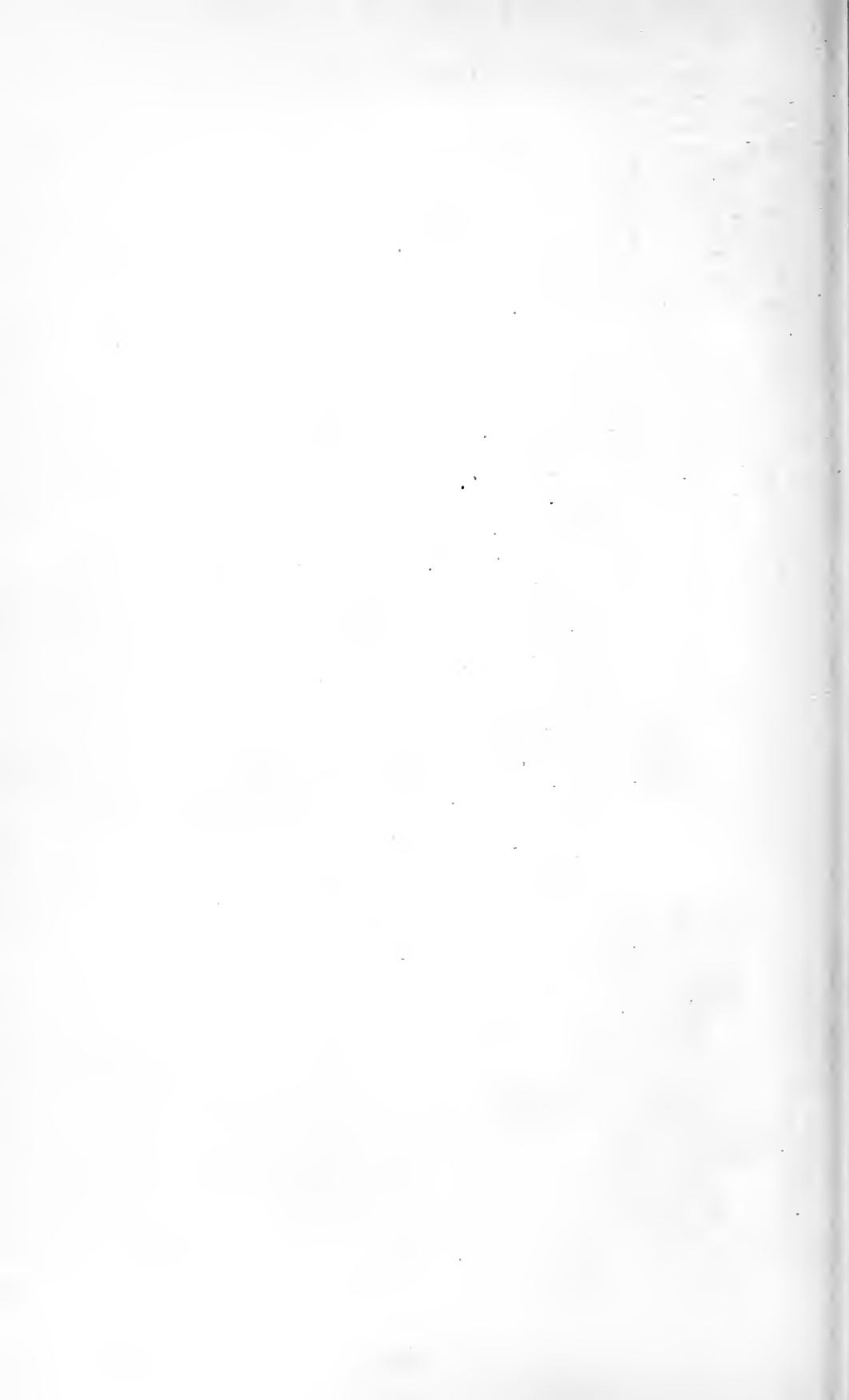
DISTINGUISHED SERVICE  
MEDAL OF THE NAVY



MEDAL OF HONOR, NAVY



NAVY CROSS





British Military Police in Cologne

## CHAPTER LXXVI

# The Armistice Is Signed

DEFEATED ON THE FIELD AND DESPONDENT AT HOME,  
THE GERMAN GOVERNMENT ASKS FOR PEACE

**T**HREE springs came to Europe bringing hopes of peace: four winters saw their blasting. Yet with the eternal cycle of nature the hope thrust up its head anew early in 1918. Allied Commanders facing conditions shook their heads—not until next year could decision come for them. If they waited till next year German victory would never come at all, reasoned the German High Command, for the Americans were coming in spite of the submarines. Tentative effort, baited propaganda, defeatist wile, all had failed in 1917. Germany could make the Allies inclined to peace only by fighting.

### **T**HE GERMAN OFFENSIVE OF 1918 A BID FOR PEACE.

It was first of all necessary, remarks Ludendorff, "to shake the position of Lloyd George and Clemenceau by a military victory." Accordingly the great German offensive of the year was put forward as a final argument for peace. Yet in June, even when the Allies had been defeated in Picardy and Flanders and on the Chemin des Dames, Clemenceau spoke the words, "We shall achieve victory if the public authorities are equal to their task." And Ludendorff, with the pulse of the German will-to-war beginning to beat irregularly beneath his touch, remarks, "In France they were equal to it, but

how was it with us?.....It was certainly discouraging that our two great attacks had not forced a decision .....Disillusionment had come—a decided deterioration in the army's morale.....the homeland itself was completely under the influence of hostile propaganda and of speeches made by enemy statesmen.....there was ever-increasing evidence of the creeping growth of Bolshevism."

### **L**UDENDORFF BEGINS TO DESPAIR OF MILITARY SUCCESS.

Then Foch's hammer blows began: at the Marne where Ludendorff speaks longingly of the "desire for rest" if the enemy would let them have it; in the north where Haig attacks and forces Ludendorff to the admission, "Our war machine was no longer efficient. I had no hope of finding a strategic expedient whereby to turn the situation to our advantage ..... The war must be ended."

So August 13-14 a conference was called at Spa. To Chancellor von Hertling and Secretary of State von Hintze, to the Kaiser himself the following day (and thence indirectly to the Emperor Charles and General von Arz), Hindenburg and Ludendorff give their ultimatum. No longer by an offensive was it possible to make the enemy sue for peace. Defense alone could hardly achieve this object, and so

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

the termination of the war would have to be brought about by diplomacy. Then the generals, leaving to the government the duties of opening the eyes of the nation to the gravity of the situation, and of making peace by diplomacy, return to their own task of opposing a stable front to Foch's attacks.

the two agreed to bend their powers upon a peace campaign and parted "with a strong handshake like men who have buried their dearest hopes and who are resolved to hold together in their hardest trials as they have held together in success."

In this crisis the chancellor was dismissed and a new government was



REFUGEES FREED BY BRITISH DURING THEIR ADVANCE

**L**UDENDORFF AND VON HINDENBURG  
RESOLVE TO FORCE PEACE.

Ludendorff had advocated peace negotiations while the German army still possessed the Hindenburg line intact as a basis for bartering, but the civil government delayed and procrastinated and a month later (September 8-9) nothing had been done, although the Austrian-Hungarian Army had signified it could only hold out until the winter. September 27 after the beginning of the great battle of Armageddon, Ludendorff forced himself to take action. "The enemy had to be asked for peace and armistice. . . . The enemy would have to speak. Would he talk of conciliation or of violence?" So he sought out von Hindenburg and

formed, which it was hoped would be acceptable to the Allies. Von Hertling was succeeded by Prince Max of Baden as Imperial Chancellor. Meanwhile Ludendorff with the Kaiser's consent sent an officer, Major von dem Busche, to the *Reichstag* to explain the gravity of the military situation. The latter presented the startling truth, "We cannot win the war. Realizing this fact and in view of the course of events in general, the Field Marshal and General Ludendorff have resolved to propose to His Majesty to bring the fighting to a close. . . . We must accordingly lose no time. Every twenty-four hours that pass may make our positions worse and give the enemy a clearer view of our present weakness."



#### THE RETURN OF THE SOLDIER KING AND HIS BELOVED QUEEN TO BRUGES

On October 25, 1918, with the dignified simplicity that has endeared them to other peoples beside their own, Albert and Elizabeth, King and Queen of the Belgians, with their son, Prince Leopold, made their state entry into Bruges. The Belgian colors floated free. Over the gabled roofs, from ancient belfry and church tower rang peals of welcome and rejoicing. The happy people expressed their joy in cheers and shouts.



#### BERLIN'S GREETING TO THE GERMAN TROOPS UPON THEIR RETURN

Not as the vanquished but as conquerors the German soldiers were received in Berlin. With laudatory speeches, with flowers and flags and garlands of greenery, with cigarettes and cheers, the crowds welcomed them. For a whole afternoon the regiments passed between thronging thousands, while bands played "Deutschland über Alles" and other familiar tunes.

© Underwood and Underwood.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### PRESIDENT WILSON IS APPROACHED WITH A REQUEST FOR PEACE.

The *Reichstag* was greatly shocked—panic-stricken. Apparently conditions on the front had not been understood. To his intense annoyance, Ludendorff's estimate of the situation was published to the world. October 4 the first note to President Wilson was dispatched, and thereafter the days were filled with the exchange of documents between Berlin and Washington, while ever in Flanders in Picardy, in Champagne and in the Argonne, Entente guns push nearer to the Fatherland.

In the first note Prince Max asked President Wilson to take in hand the restoration of peace and invited the Allies to send plenipotentiaries to open negotiations, while at the same time he signified German acceptance of the President's Fourteen Points, as set forth in his message to Congress Jan. 8, and the Five Points of his speech of September 27. He further asked for an armistice.

To this note President Wilson responded October 8, with two questions and a statement. Does the Chancellor mean that the German Government accepts the terms laid down? For whom does the Chancellor speak? The President will not propose cessation of arms while the armies of the Central Powers are upon Allied soil.

### PRINCE MAX HASTENS TO REASSURE THE PRESIDENT.

Prince Max hastened to reply, for in the field matters were growing worse. The answer (October 12) to the first question was in the affirmative, if the Powers associated with the United States also accepted the position of the President. The Government for which the Chancellor spoke had been appointed by agreement with the *Reichstag*, and he spoke for that body and for the German people. The German Government would be pleased to evacuate occupied territory and a mixed commission was suggested to make arrangements.

Some Allied representatives were alarmed. Did these notes mean that the Germans were to be allowed to withdraw unmolested within their borders

where they might or might not continue the war; and criticisms of the negotiations were heard. President Wilson, however, apparently had been accepted as the spokesman for the Entente, and knew precisely what was in the minds of the leaders. Having put the Chancellor on record, on October 18 he spoke bluntly for the United States, and presumably for the Allies. The conditions of an armistice will be left to the judgment of the military leaders. He will recommend no arrangement which does not safeguard the military supremacy of the Allies and the United States. He will consent to no armistice "so long as the armed forces of Germany continue the illegal and inhuman practices which they still persist in." While the German Government is asking for armistice, submarines are sinking passenger ships and the boats in which the passengers and crews are striving to escape, and the retreating German army is looting villages and carrying away their inhabitants. Moreover the President again reminded the German Government that destruction of arbitrary power was one of the conditions of peace.

### THE PRESIDENT'S NOTE PRACTICALLY A DEMAND FOR SURRENDER.

Practical surrender then—not peace by negotiation is meant — this much is clear to the German Command. Hurred council is again summoned, this time in Berlin, of the Government, Kaiser, army chiefs. The military situation is somewhat better at the time: Pershing is being held, will be held for two weeks; in the north, German troops are retreating in good order behind the line of the Scheldt, and pursuit is becoming increasingly difficult. Ludendorff is questioned again with great minuteness. Of victory there is not the slightest chance, but of a break-through: "If you ask me on my conscience, I can only answer that I do not expect it." He retires to Spa again, muttering, "All that was required was to look facts in the face, to cease deceiving themselves and the people and to endow themselves with resolution in action, such as was to be found at General Headquarters."



#### THE FRENCH RETURN IN TRIUMPH TO METZ

On November 19, 1918, with Marshal Pétain at their head, French troops marched victorious into Metz. The streets blossomed with French flags, many made of material from women's garments. Girls appeared in the native costume. A military review was followed by Te Deum and prayer in the Cathedral of St. Stephen.



#### THE FRENCH COLORS DIP TO THE ENTENTE LEADERS

Among the most romantic experiences of the war's end was the return of the French to Alsace and Lorraine. In November, 1918, Paris celebrated at home the restoration of her lost provinces. In December Paris went to them. The picture records a moment in Metz. President Poincaré, Premier Clemenceau, and Marshal Pétain are passing, with Marshal Foch and General Sir Douglas Haig on their right.

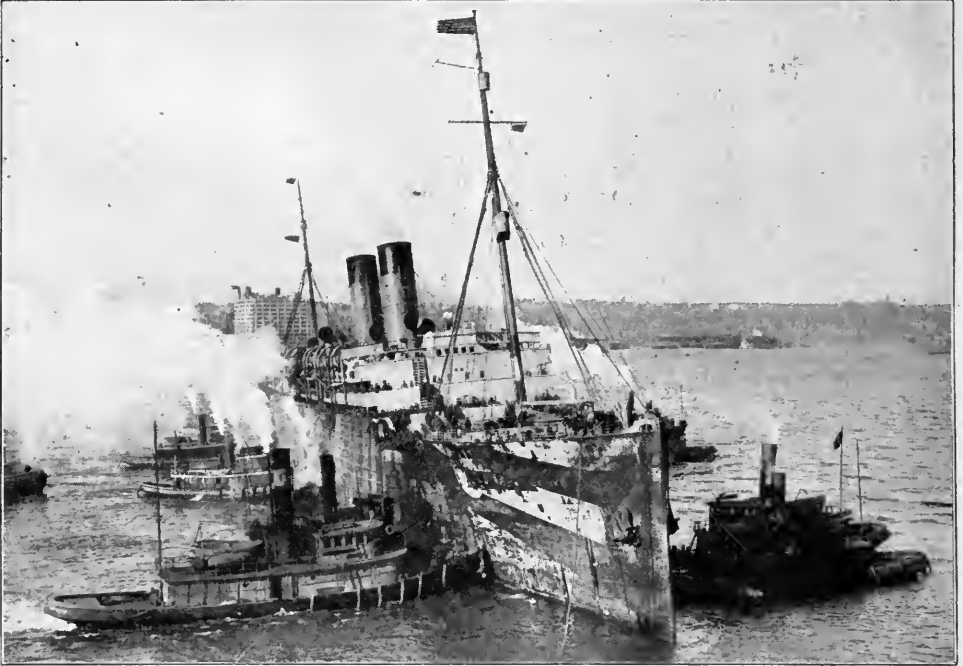
Pictures © Underwood and Underwood



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

On October 20 in a third note — much to the Army Chiefs' disgust — the German Government denies the charges of inhuman practices but agrees to abandon submarine warfare against passenger ships. Again it persists that it represents the German people, and declares that the consent of the *Reichstag* will be necessary for any future war. When the President spoke

this act — contrary to the policy of the Government — which now in the persons of Prince Max and Erzberger, Solf and Scheidemann has superseded the High Command — Ludendorff becomes the scapegoat, and October 26 his resignation was accepted. And so, exit Ludendorff. The Government at Berlin knew that it must have peace. It was not sure of the Army, the Navy



THE FIRST OF THE WOUNDED OF THE 27TH DIVISION

The first of the wounded of the "Empire" Division, New York's Own, as well as some of the wounded of the Thirtieth and Thirty-Seventh Divisions, arriving in New York on the Empress of Britain, which brought home a total of 70 officers and 2,372 men. Times Photo Service

again on the 22nd it is to emphasize the proposal to make Germany incapable of further military effort. He is willing to transmit the correspondence to the Allied governments, but he practically demands the deposition of the Kaiser and the Great General Staff. And with that Ludendorff and Hindenburg go to Berlin to insist that the Government do not surrender but fight on. To strengthen the spirit of the army before they departed they left a telegram "For the information of all troops. Wilson's answer is a demand for unconditional surrender. It is thus unacceptable for us soldiers." For

was reported to be mutinous, and the people would no longer support the war.

### THE FOURTH GERMAN NOTE AGREES TO ALL TERMS.

On the morrow Germany's fourth note asked for Allied proposals for armistice, stated that peace negotiations were now being conducted by a government of the people "in whose hands rests, both actually and constitutionally, the authority to make decisions. The military power are also subject to it." On the 31st Turkey surrendered unconditionally; November 4 Austria, following the defeat of late October,



**WILLIAM HOHENZOLLERN, FORMER CROWN PRINCE**

November 9, the German Emperor signed his abdication at German Grand Headquarters at Spa in the presence of the Crown Prince and Field-Marshal von Hindenburg. The Crown Prince's signature to the document, renouncing his imperial birthright, followed. The Kaiser left for Holland, and the Crown Prince finally reached the Dutch border and was interned at Maastricht. November 21 he left for Mosterland, an isolated fishing hamlet on the little island of Wieringen.

International Film Service



**FREDERICK EBERT PROCLAIMED PRESIDENT OF GERMANY**

Frederick Ebert was elected Provisional State President of Germany on February 11, 1919. In accepting the presidency he declared his purpose to dispense justice without favor or prejudice. He was accorded a great ovation by the packed galleries and by the crowd outside when he left the German National Assembly which sat in the Weimar Court Theatre.

N. Y. Times

followed suit. Diplomatic correspondence was closed November 5, when President Wilson signified the willingness of the Allies to make peace with Germany on the basis of the Fourteen Points, reserving only their own interpretation of the freedom of the seas and reparation for damage wrought in invaded territories, and announced that Marshal Foch was authorized to communicate terms. The next day the German Government sent peace plenipotentiaries to receive the terms of armistice from Marshal Foch.

Leaving Berlin on the 6th the delegates reached Headquarters at Spa. There by wireless they were informed of the route to follow and the point in the French lines where they would be received. It was late the next night before they could make the picket line, for the roads were ploughed up by shell fire. There was delay again, examination of papers, trenches to be filled up, and then the envoys go south through the wilderness of the Hindenburg line. Now and again an escort pointed silently to heaps of ruin, or murmured significantly "*Voilà St. Quentin!*" Ever a deepening sense of the hatred and hostility in which they were held invaded the consciousness of the surprised Teutons and gave warning of what was in store. For the night they were given quarters in the Château of the Marquis de l'Aigle at Francport. Friday morning (November 8) a special train ran them into a siding in the Forêt de Compiègne where near the village of Rethondes, Marshal Foch awaited them in his own car. With him was Sir Rosslyn Wemyss, First Sea Lord of the British Admiralty.

### THE HISTORIC MEETING ON THE TRAIN IN THE FOREST.

After salutation, "*Qu'est-ce que vous désirez, messieurs?*" inquired the Generalissimo, and the German delegation was forced to sue for armistice. In a loud voice Marshal Foch read the Allied terms, stopping at due intervals for translation to be made. This proceeding lasted for nearly two hours; then the French Commander announced that there were to be no negotiations, and the Germans withdrew to con-

sider the dictated conditions. They had seventy-two hours to accept or refuse, and sought permission to communicate with Berlin. A courier bearing the text of the armistice set off for Headquarters at Spa. He succeeded in crossing the French lines but was delayed for hours by German barrage in his own zone. In the meantime in the lonely wood, with its two railway trains, cut off from all intercourse with the outside world, the ambassadors awaited the courier's return. Saturday passed—seemingly interminable. Sunday came and Paris newspapers announced the abdication of the Kaiser, who was soon to take refuge in Holland to escape his former subjects. There was no laughter, no triumph on the faces of the French guards around the little clearing in the autumn woods, but the Germans could read in their hearts that their mills were grinding irresistibly.

Meanwhile in Berlin on receipt of the terms wirelessly from Spa, a conference of the new government was held. Time was slipping fast, debate could not arrest the storm, Foch was adamant, there was no hope. The delegates were instructed by courier to accept, and after a protest submitted to the inevitable.

At five o'clock on the morning of Monday, November 11, the Armistice was signed by the German representatives. Foch telegraphed to all the generals: "Hostilities will cease on the whole front as from 11th November at eleven o'clock. The Allied troops will not until a further order go beyond the line reached on that date and at that hour."

### THE HARSH TERMS OF THE ARMISTICE SUMMARIZED.

It is not possible in this space to give the full text of the Armistice. A summary follows: Renewal of hostilities was made impossible by the immediate evacuation of Belgium, France, Alsace-Lorraine and Luxembourg by November 25; by handing over to Allied occupation the German territory on the left bank of the Rhine together with surrender to Allied control of the crossings of the Rhine at Mayence,

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Coblenz and Cologne, including bridge-heads of 30 kilometres radius. A neutral zone on the west bank of the Rhine running from the frontier of Holland to the Swiss frontier was to be established by December 11. Germany must pay the cost of the Armies of Occupation. Vast quantities of heavy guns and other war material were to be surrendered, including 2000 aeroplanes. Something like one-half of

In the East she agreed to abandon the treaties of Bucharest and of Brest-Litovsk. All German troops in Russia, Rumania or Turkey were to be withdrawn, and the agents of German propaganda in Russia recalled. The Baltic was opened to Allied ships of war; provisions made that through Danzig or up the Vistula supplies could be sent to the starving peoples of Poland and Russia. Black Sea ports



AN HISTORIC SPOT AT RETHONDES

Where the Armistice was signed in the Forêt de Compiègne. At the left can be seen Marshal Foch's train in which the agreement was signed, and in which the Allied Commission lived during negotiations. There were five German delegates; Generals Winterfeldt and von Gündell, Admiral von Salow, Mathias Erzberger and Count von Oberndorff. N. Y. Times

the German Navy including all submarines was to pass at once under the control of the Allies to be disarmed and interned in neutral or Allied ports; all other German warships of every kind were to be completely disarmed, concentrated in German naval bases and held under control of the Allies and the United States. The railways of Belgium, Luxembourg and Alsace-Lorraine were to be given up, and Germany must surrender 5000 locomotives. Thus Germany could fight no more. Great masses of the troops of her enemies would occupy broad belts of her territory, the passage of the Rhine was closed to her, her own forces had to retire to points 20 miles east of the Rhine.

were to be evacuated by Germany, who had to give up the Russian war fleet. While the blockade was to be maintained as regards Germany, all German restrictions upon the trade of neutrals were removed. Germany had to give up all prisoners she had taken, all ships she had seized, but this was not reciprocal. German prisoners and German ships of war were to remain in Allied custody. Though called an Armistice it was really a surrender.

And so peace came to the battle fronts. Till within five minutes of the hour hostilities continued. Dramatically at 11 o'clock came a sharp order "Cease firing." Silence fell—silence that could be heard. Then a curious crackling clamor rose and fell, rose again

and died away; it was the cry of men in a multitude of tongues and dialects, "The war is ended!" That night the gleam of a hundred thousand camp-fires threaded the darkness from the Vosges to the sea, and in place of hideous bombardment "the hum of either army stilly sounds." In a few scattered localities news could not be gotten to the front in time and a few shots were fired after the hour.

## THE TROOP MOVEMENTS OCCURRING UNDER THE ARMISTICE.

When Germany capitulated she had on the Western Front seventeen armies made up of approximately 3,000,000 bayonets. Retreat began at once under von Hindenburg and was conducted by the transportation expert, General Groener, who had succeeded Ludendorff as quartermaster-general. On reaching its several corps headquarters, with very few exceptions the army was demobilized. Neither in France nor in Great Britain was demobilization very quickly got under way, but in many cases indeterminate furloughs were granted to large bodies of men. The United States at once began the work of demobilization in America and prepared to send the troops home from Europe. By the middle of December some 70,000 men had been returned from France, and some 750,000 men in the United States were discharged from the army.

Preceding the general advance of the Allied Armies of Occupation over a front approximating 350 miles begun on November 17, a force of 25,000 German troops at Maeseyck, Belgium, on November 13, desiring to reach Germany via the Dutch province of Limburg, surrendered their arms to the Dutch and proceeded that way without them. Antwerp was occupied on November 15 by the Belgians, under a special arrangement with German Headquarters at Spa.

## THE POSITION OF THE VARIOUS ARMIES ON THE RHINE.

When the general advance was begun on the seventeenth the Belgian Army had on its right two British armies, the Second under General Plumer, and the Fourth under General Rawlinson. On

their right was the French Fourth Army commanded by General Gouraud. These armies were to re-occupy Belgium and reach the Prussian frontier by November 25, whence the Belgian and British armies were to advance upon the Rhine to their allotted places. By December 18 the Belgians had occupied and organized their corner of Rhenish Prussia. They had marched 160 miles, having been obliged to skirt the Limburg province of Holland to the south. Their administrative terrain, excluding the 6.2 miles neutral belt on the eastern bank of the Rhine, amounted to about 700 square miles. The British Armies marched about 150 miles and occupied and administered a terrain of 2,500 square miles.

The Third American Army under Major General Joseph T. Dickman, in large part drawn from the First and Second Armies, began its forward movement from a fifty-mile front extending from Mouzon on the Meuse River, southeast to beyond Fresnes. At Longwy and Briey they had the advantage of the railways leading down the Moselle. By the 23rd they were well through the Grand Duchy of Luxembourg. Late on December 11 the four advance divisions of the American Army of Occupation completed their march to the Rhine. Of these the First, Second and Thirty-second Divisions crossed the river and established the bridgehead on December 13, flanked on the right by three French divisions.

## THE FRENCH ARMIES OCCUPY ALSACE-LORRAINE.

Between the signing of the Armistice on November 11 and November 17 the Tenth French Army under Mangin moved to the Metz front to replace the Second American and French armies, which had been prepared to invade Lorraine when hostilities ceased, while in its turn the Second French Army was moved still further south, taking the place of the First French Army in Alsace.

The Tenth Army, with the American Third on its left, moved northeast across Lorraine and the southern part of the Prussian province, and took



#### UNITED STATES TROOPS ON COBLENZ BRIDGE

The Coblenz bridgehead included an arc of a circle whose radius was some nineteen miles, having as central point the eastern end of the Pfaffendorf bridge. On this advance line the advance posts were established. Army Headquarters were at Coblenz. On December 17 the occupation of enemy territory, as it had been foreseen and laid down by the armistice convention was, in so far as the Americans were concerned, completely terminated.

U. S. Official



#### THE FIRST AMERICAN DIVISION CROSSES THE MOSELLE

The division commenced its march to the Coblenz bridgehead from Abaucourt on November 17, passing through Lorraine and the Grand Duchy of Luxembourg. It crossed the Rhine on December 13, and occupied its area east of the Rhine in the Coblenz Bridgehead, December 14. The division earned 300 Distinguished Service Crosses.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

possession of the bridgehead at Mayence and the left bank of the Rhine as far south as Lauterbourg, where it had the Second French Army on its right, for the latter had proceeded through Alsace to the Rhine, covering the river zone from Lauterbourg to Huningen on the Swiss frontier. On November 23 Strassbourg set its clocks to French time and Marshal Foch made a trium-

and the Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Fleet Sir David Beatty, on board the Queen Elizabeth in the Firth of Forth. Meurer was accompanied by three delegates from the Sailors' and Soldiers' Council, and three from the People's Council.

The surrender of the major portion of the surface fleet took place in the North Sea, fifty miles east of the Firth of



PARIS CELEBRATES VICTORY

phal entry into the city, accompanied by Marshal Pétain and Generals Castelnau and Gouraud. On December 10th the 13th and 43rd Infantry Divisions of General Mangin's Army took possession of Mayence, and in the following week crossed the river and occupied the bridgehead zone.

### THE VESSELS OF THE GERMAN NAVY ARE SURRENDERED.

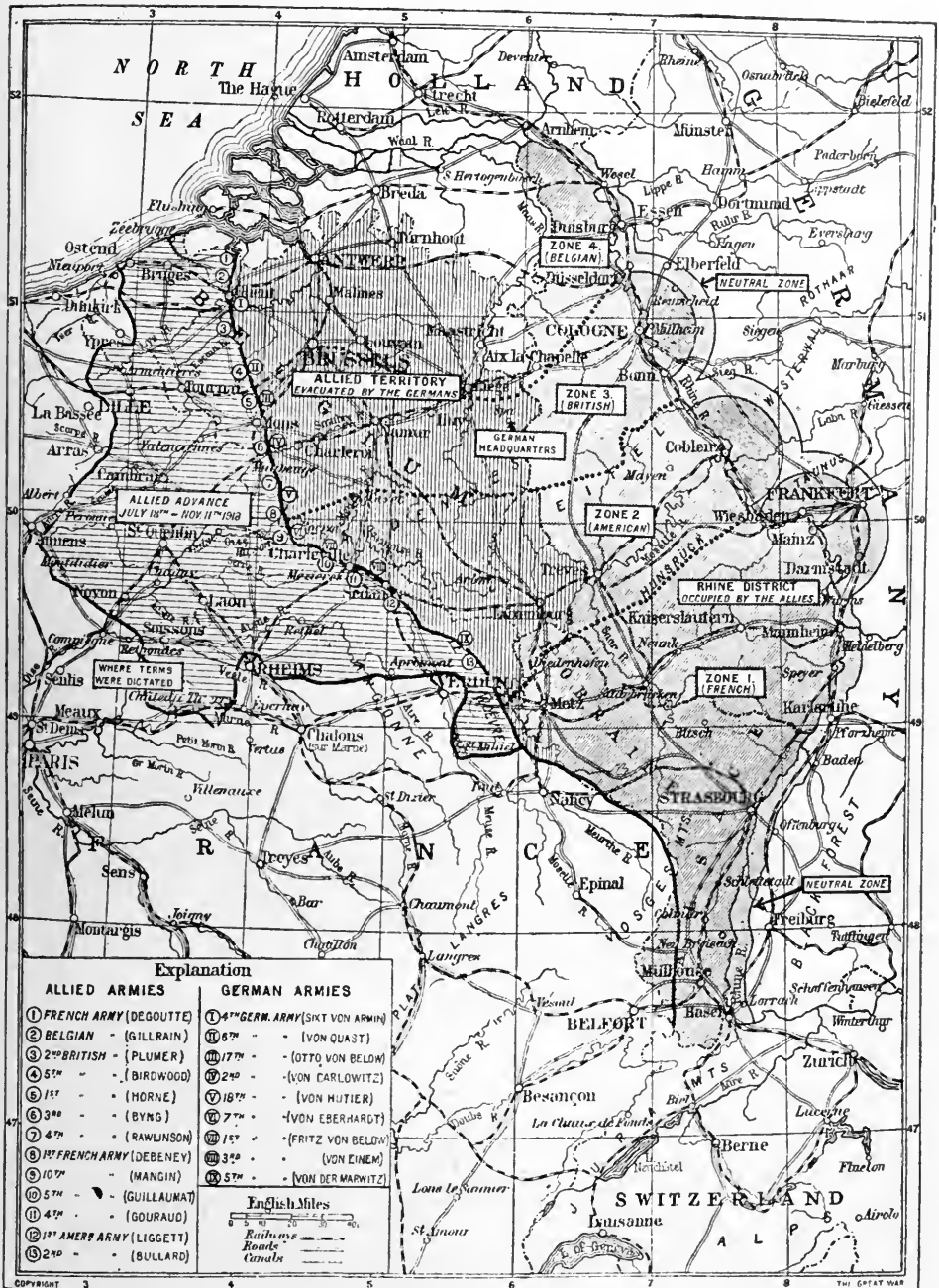
According to the Armistice a decisive percentage of the German High Seas Fleet, including all submarines, was to be handed over to the Allies and the United States. Details of this surrender were arranged, November 15-16, between Rear Admiral Hugo Meurer, who came in the German light cruiser *Königsberg*

Forth, on November 21. With guns turned inward it steamed between lines of Allied and American ships. The surrender of the submarines was made to Rear-Admiral Reginald W. Tyrwhitt at Harwich on the previous day. In all 129 U-boats were given up.

November 10 a British destroyer anchored off Constantinople in the Golden Horn. A French destroyer followed and by December 8 Constantinople was under military occupation. November 26 an Allied naval squadron passed through the Black Sea and took possession of the Russian ships at Sebastopol which had been surrendered to the Germans by the Bolsheviks.



# HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



## BEFORE AND AFTER THE ARMISTICE

**WAS THE ARMISTICE PREMATURE? A QUESTION SOMETIMES ASKED.**

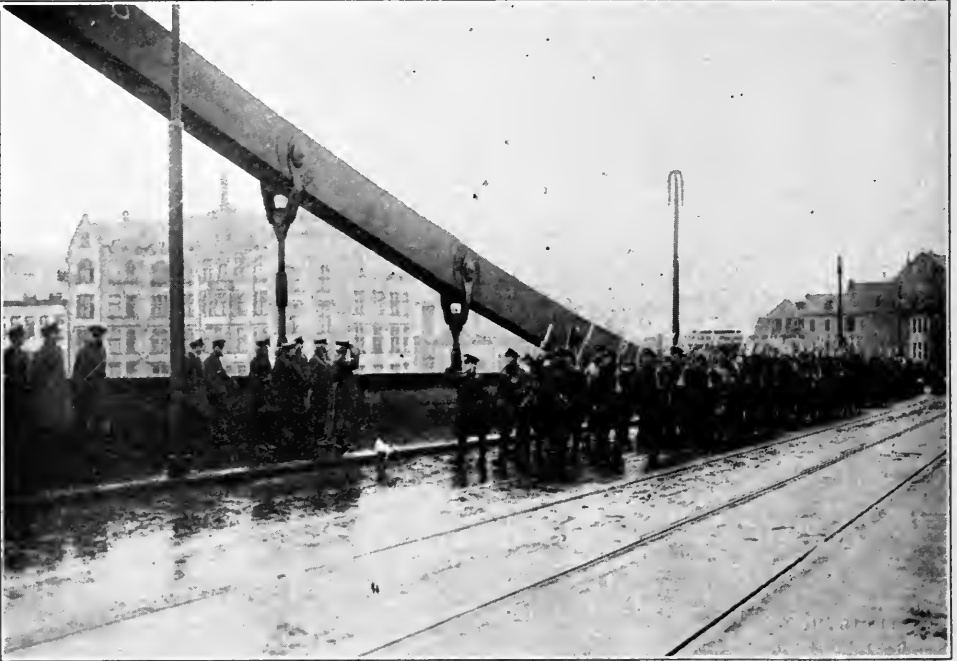
There are those who hold the opinion that the armistice was premature. Yet the German plenipotentiaries admitted

defeat when they sought armistice: Von Brockdorff-Rantzau in the Peace Conference at Versailles said, "We are under no illusions as to the extent of our defeat and the degree of our want of

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

power. . . . We know that the power of the German Army is broken," If further testimony be needed it can be found in the state of the German lines of retreat to the Rhine. The soldiers were disappointed that the enemy was not pursued into Germany, and no doubt the civilian was irritated by reading that the returning German army was hailed as victor in Berlin.

fighting on that line at least one more great battle with the loss of many lives. On only one front — between the Meuse and Verdun — were communications in good order. If advance had been made here the fruitful provinces of Alsace and Lorraine would have been made like unto the Sodom and Gomorrah wastes of the Hindenburg line and parts of Belgium.



CROSSING THE HOHENZOLLERN BRIDGE AT COLOGNE

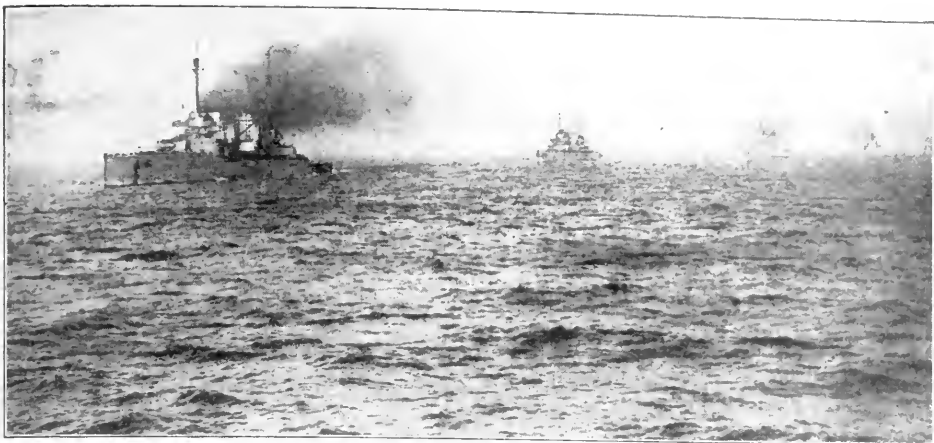
The First Canadian Division crossed the Rhine at Cologne. General Sir Herbert Plumer may be seen taking the salute. Hardly once during two hours did the gallant old general give his arm any rest as he stood there rigid, with his hand to his cap, for he knew the sacrifice of his men through bloody years and saluted each one, colonel or corporal, trooper or horse-gunner, bugler or signaler.

©Canada, 1919

Yet the fact is established that the Allied armies at the beginning of November had nearly reached the farthest limit at which for the time being they could be regularly supplied. Not only did a roadless, railwayless, bridgeless zone lie before their troops, but their commissariat was grievously taxed by the civilian population thrown on their hands as they advanced into liberated regions, or met the hordes of returning prisoners of war. A pause was essential. That pause, if the war had not been ended, would have given the enemy time to make good his retreat to the Meuse, and would have entailed

### THE GERMAN SOLDIERS FIND THEIR COUNTRY MUCH CHANGED.

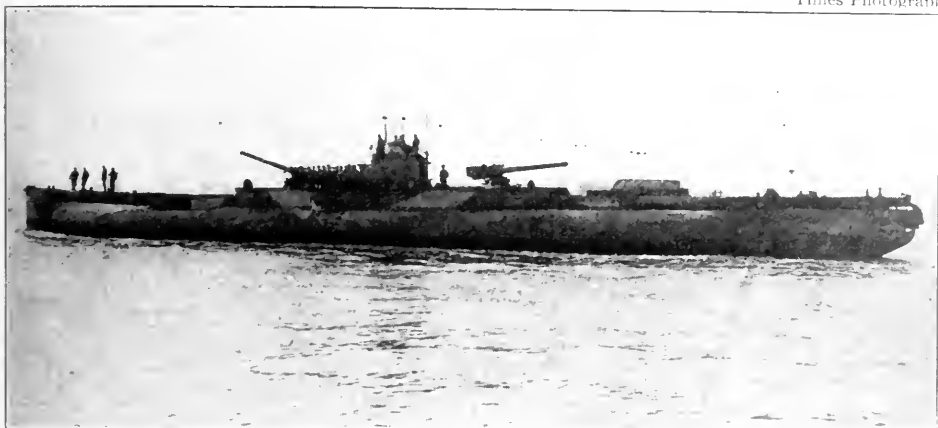
The Germany that the Army found on its return was much changed. In the beginning of November, while the stage was being set for Armistice negotiations, revolution came. Brought about by the Independent Socialists it broke out first in the Navy, at Kiel, Wilhelms-haven, in Heligoland, at Borkum and Cuxhaven. The government was not strong enough to nip it in the bud: soldiers sent to quell the mutiny went over to the mutineers. Demand for peace and popular government rose to open summons to the Kaiser to abdicate.



#### GERMAN HIGH SEAS FLEET PROCEEDING TO THE FIRTH OF FORTH

November 18, the Germans, in accordance with orders from Admiral Beatty, put out to sea with magazines empty, their guns secured amid-ships and only navigating and engineering crews aboard. Early on the morning of 21st they reached the rendezvous, and proceeded to anchor in the Firth, some miles below the Forth Bridge.

Times Photograph



#### LARGE GERMAN U-BOAT OF MERCANTILE CRUISER TYPE INTERNED AT HARWICH

One of the submarines surrendered under the armistice terms and interned at Harwich. Each German submarine commander at the transfer was required to sign a declaration to the effect that his vessel was in running order, that its periscope was intact, that its torpedoes were unloaded

British Official Photograph



#### GERMAN TORPEDO-BOAT DESTROYER CAPSIZING AND DISAPPEARING AT SCAPA FLOW

On Saturday, June 21, just before the German Government decided to sign the treaty unconditionally, the crews of the German naval vessels interned at Scapa Flow sank all the big battleships and battle-cruisers, except the *Baden*, with numerous smaller craft, while others went ashore.

Times Photograph

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

A panic swept over financial centres, causing a widespread hoarding of currency. November 9 Prince Max issued a decree announcing that the Kaiser and Crown Prince had abdicated. General upheaval followed. Like a house of cards the fabric of autocracy went down in Germany. A Socialist republic was proclaimed in Bavaria with Herr Kurt Eisner at its head. One by

to succeed Prince Max as Chancellor. Then a struggle between the Moderate Socialists and Reds, or Spartacides as they called themselves, developed. Fighting broke out in the streets and lasted for two days. The rioting which threatened a triumph for the Reds was quickly dissipated. The party of Dr. Karl Liebknecht was relegated to political obscurity and the Councils of



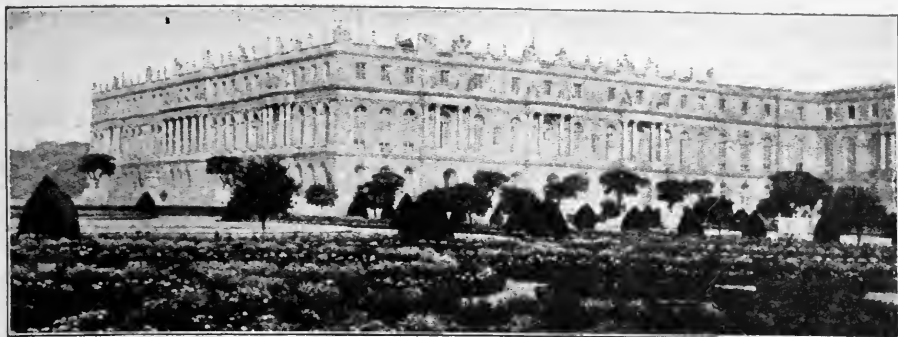
EHRENBREITSTEIN FROM THE AIR

View from the air of the famous fortress of Ehrenbreitstein which overlooks the Rhine at Coblenz. Under the Armistice terms it was occupied by American troops, and the flag can be seen floating from its main flagstaff. The fortress occupies the summit of a precipitous rock 385 feet above the river and has been called the Gibraltar of the Rhine on account of its natural strength and massive fortifications. N. Y. Times

one the smaller states declared themselves republics before the end of November. Throughout the Rhine industrial regions. Soldiers and Sailors' Councils, prepared in long systematic underground work, were established. In Berlin on Sunday, November 10, a few hours sufficed for a complete triumph. A new People's Government was set up, and Friedrich Ebert chosen

Workers and Soldiers' Delegates held well under control.

At Weimar, on February 6, 1919, a National Assembly met, and five days later adopted a republican constitution for the former German Empire. Friedrich Ebert was chosen Provisional State President. Philip Scheidemann became Chancellor with a coalition Cabinet. So ends a chapter.



The Palace of Versailles, from the Gardens

## CHAPTER LXXVII

# Making the Peace Treaties

## REPRESENTATIVES OF THE VICTORIOUS NATIONS MEET TO FORMULATE PEACE TERMS

WITH the close of the war came the tremendous problem of settling the many grave and perplexing questions arising from the contest. No peace conference in the history of the world had been confronted with so many and such difficult questions as those to be solved at Paris. Literally the whole world had been affected, to a greater or less degree, by the great cataclysm. Europe had passed through a political and economic revolution, while Asia, Africa and America had been vitally changed by the momentous events of the past four years.

### THE PEACE CONFERENCE AN UNWIELDY BODY.

To accomplish these purposes the nature of the conference was not well adapted. It represented thirty-two states, whose views as to the character of the settlement were far from being identical. It is true that there was a widespread feeling among the peoples of all countries that the settlement should be based upon broad principles of justice; that the right of peoples to determine their own destiny should be fully respected; and above all that there should be created some means of preventing a recurrence of such a calamity.

When it came to translating these ideals into concrete proposals, difficulties arose. In the first place, with the

close of the war much of the fine idealism which had characterized the peoples of the Allied countries disappeared, and on all sides national jealousies and selfish ambitions reasserted themselves. Moreover, the crimes which Germany had committed and the terrible suffering in the Allied countries engendered a bitter hatred of the Teutons, and a demand for their punishment.

### THE RELATIVE IMPORTANCE OF SOME OF THE QUESTIONS.

In the final settlement the representatives of the various Allied states naturally regarded the relative importance of the problems confronting the Conference differently. To France the vital question was security against German aggression in the future. Twice within the memory of men still living, France had suffered invasion from across the Rhine. It is easy to understand why Frenchmen should have regarded the necessity of providing France with ample guarantees of security as one of the primary functions of the Conference. Italy saw in the Conference an opportunity to realize her hopes of acquiring the Italian-speaking provinces of the former Austro-Hungarian monarchy, and of strengthening her domination of the Adriatic Sea.

Great Britain would welcome the destruction of the German naval

power which had caused not a little uneasiness in the years before the war. The newly created states of central Europe, Poland, Czecho-Slovakia, Jugoslavia, in an excess of national patriotism, pressed upon the Conference their rival territorial claims. Japan viewed the European settle-

of war. It was difficult to reconcile some of the provisions of these treaties with principles of abstract justice or with the conditions laid down in President Wilson's "Fourteen Points."

Confronted by these difficulties, the Peace Conference resolved itself, not into a conference between victors and vanquished, but into a conference among the victors in which the representatives of the Allied states strove to reconcile their clashing interests and rival claims. Only when these differences had been amicably adjusted, were the Germans summoned to the Peace Conference to receive from the Allied representatives the final peace treaty which they were called upon to accept.

## THE FIRST SESSION OF THE CONFERENCE AND ITS NOTABLE FIGURES.

The Peace Conference held its first formal session on January 18, 1919, exactly forty-eight years to the day since the first German Emperor had been proclaimed at Versailles. The meeting was held in the Clock Room of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs at Paris. It was a notable gathering of the leading statesmen and diplomats of the nations which had joined together in the struggle against the Teutonic powers. The outstanding figures at the Conference were Clemenceau, the veteran French statesman

and indomitable leader during the most trying days of the war; President Wilson, whose remarkable addresses during the last two years of the war had won for him a position of unquestioned leadership among liberal-minded men in all countries; and Mr. Lloyd George, the shrewd and able British Premier. Among the less prominent statesmen were, Premier Orlando of Italy, Premier Saionji of Japan, Premier Venizelos of Greece, Premier Borden of Canada, Premier Bratiano of Rumania, Generals Botha and



EXTERIOR OF THE FOREIGN OFFICE, PARIS

Where met together the delegates to the great World Peace Conference. The most powerful of the victorious peoples—The United States, France, Great Britain, and Italy—adjudged the number of seats allotted to each nation.

N. Y. Times

ment with disinterested impartiality, but in the Far East she had very definite interests, especially in regard to China. The United States alone among the Great Powers at Paris, entered the Conference having fore-sworn all territorial acquisitions and economic privileges.

## THE SECRET TREATIES RENDER SETTLEMENT MORE DIFFICULT.

Moreover, the Conference was called upon to liquidate the obligations contained in the "secret treaties" negotiated among the Allies under the stress



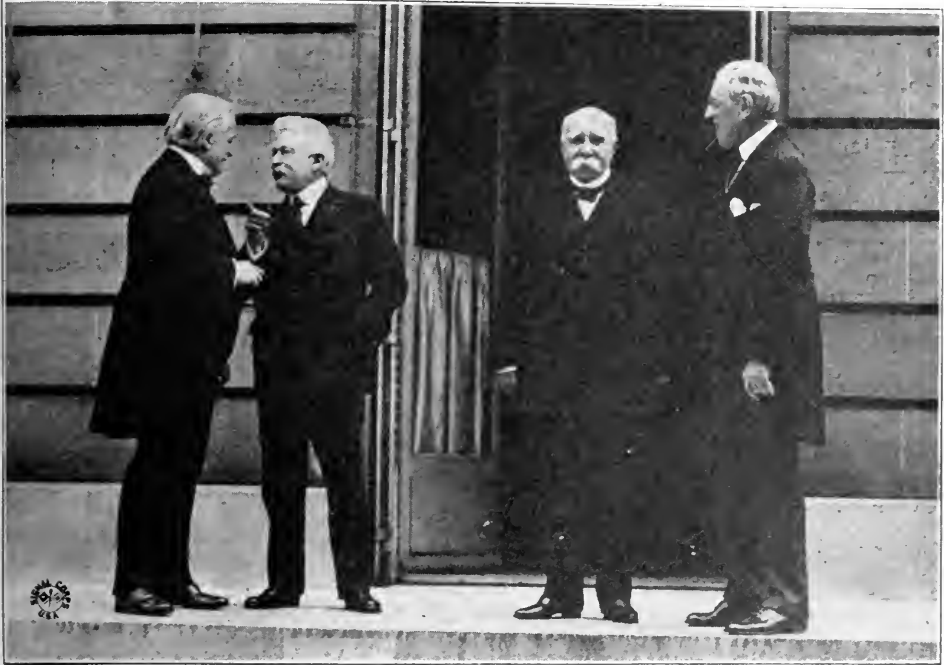
## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Smuts from South Africa. In addition to the delegates there were a large number of secretaries and experts whose duties were to furnish the delegates with the vast amount of detailed information upon the questions to come before the Conference.

The preliminary work of the organization of the Peace Conference had been arranged by conferences of the

Guatemala, Haiti, Honduras, Liberia, Nicaragua, Panama, Peru, and Uruguay, one each.

After a welcoming speech by President Poincaré of France the Conference chose Premier Clemenceau as Chairman. It was provided that the five chief powers should take part in all meetings and be represented on all commissions, while the other powers



THE COUNCIL OF FOUR

The "Big Four" of the Allies' Peace Delegation, Lloyd George of Great Britain, Clemenceau of the French Republic, Premier Orlando of Italy, and President Wilson. Clemenceau was elected to the permanent presidency of the Peace Conference. Orlando succeeded Boselli as Prime Minister in 1917 and gained prestige by the moral courage he showed at the moment of the Caporetto disaster.

Inter-Allied Supreme War Council and by meetings of the representatives of the chief Allied powers.

### A LIST OF THE STATES WHOSE DELEGATES WERE ADMITTED.

As finally organized the Conference consisted of seventy delegates from thirty-two states. The states were represented as follows: France, Great Britain, The United States, Italy and Japan, five each; Brazil, Belgium and Serbia, three each; Canada, Australia, South Africa, India, China, Greece, Hedjaz, Poland, Portugal, Rumania, Siam, and Czecho-Slovakia, two each; New Zealand, Bolivia, Cuba, Ecuador,

should take part only in the sessions at which questions concerning them were discussed. The real work of the Conference was performed by commissions to which were referred the multitude of territorial, economic and financial questions. The recommendations of the various commissions were considered by the Council of Ten, consisting of the two ranking delegates from the five chief powers before they were referred to the plenary sessions of the Conference. Later the Council of Ten was reduced to five and finally to three—Wilson, Lloyd George and Clemenceau.

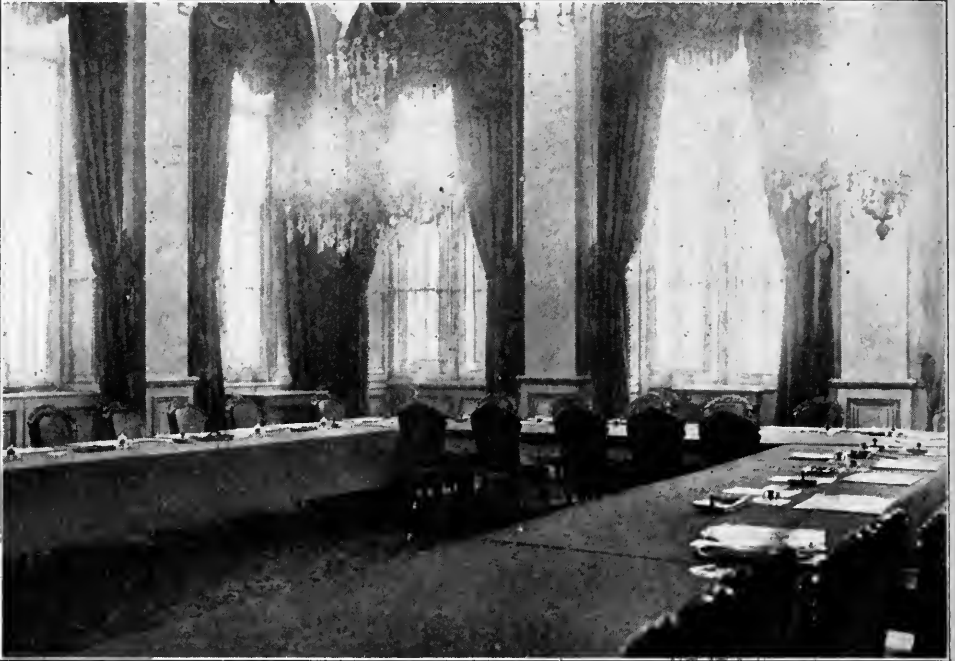


## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### THE PLAN FOR A LEAGUE OF NATIONS IS APPROVED.

The second plenary session of the Conference was held on January 25, 1919, at which the most important action was the adoption of the plan for a League of Nations. President Wilson made the chief address in support of the proposal, and representatives of the other leading powers made hearty

the Monroe Doctrine. Senator Lodge presented a resolution to the Senate signed by thirty-nine Republican Senators protesting against the Covenant as drafted. After a visit to the United States President Wilson proposed a number of important changes in the Covenant to meet some of the objections that had been raised. These changes specifically recognized the



A ROOM IN THE FOREIGN OFFICE, QUAI D'ORSAY

The Peace Conference sat in the Salle de la Paix of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, across the Seine from the Place de la Concorde. The hall was originally known as the Salle d'Horloge and is one of the most splendid reception rooms in Europe. Leading from this room was another large chamber.

International Film Service

speeches of approval. The resolution adopted by the Conference provided that the League of Nations Covenant should be treated as an integral part of the Treaty of Peace. A tentative draft of the League Covenant was presented to the Conference on February 14, 1919, and President Wilson sent a dispatch to the Congressional Committees on Foreign Relations that he proposed to return to Washington to discuss the plan with them. Without awaiting the arrival of the President several Senators delivered speeches in which they vigorously attacked the whole plan of a League of Nations. The chief criticism was that it violated

Monroe Doctrine, removed domestic questions such as immigration from the jurisdiction of the League, allowed nations to withdraw from the League upon two years' notice, and made clear that the rule of unanimity should control the decisions of the League.

### PRESIDENT WILSON IS FORCED TO MAKE COMPROMISES.

Having realized the project which was nearest to his heart, President Wilson found it more difficult to satisfy the different territorial and economic ambitions of the various nations without sacrificing the principles which he had proclaimed. Concessions had to be made in order to preserve a united

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

front among the Allies. In deference to Great Britain the question of "freedom of the seas" was quietly dropped; France was given important economic concessions in the Saar valley; Japan insisted upon the transfer of Germany's rights in Shantung to herself; and Italy was assigned distinctly German territory in the Tyrol. To Italy's more extravagant claims in the Adriatic, the President vigorously objected, and as a protest the Italian representatives temporarily withdrew from the Conference. The question of reparation to be paid by Germany caused serious difficulty. The representatives of the Allied European nations joined in a statement to President Wilson in which they set forth their claims that Germany and her allies should be made to pay the full cost of the war. To this the President objected that the terms of the Armistice made reparation collectible only for actual damage done in violation of the rules of war and of nations. The question was adjusted by referring the matter to an Inter-Allied Reparations Commission which should fix the amount and conditions of payment.

With all of these difficulties confronting the Conference, it is perhaps remarkable, not that mistakes were made, but that any general agreement at all could be reached. Finally, however, after four months of arduous labor the draft of the proposed treaty was completed, and was approved at a plenary session of the Conference on May 6, 1919.

The following is a brief analysis of the lengthy document containing about 80,000 words:

### THE PROVISIONS OF THE COVENANT OF THE LEAGUE OF NATIONS.

Article I of the Peace Treaty comprises the Covenant of the League of Nations. As constituted by the Covenant the original members of the League consist of all of the Allied and Associated powers and such neutral states, named in the annex to the Covenant, which shall accept the Covenant without reservation. The states not named in the annex—in addition to the Teutonic allies—are Russia,

Mexico, and Costa Rica. Provision is made for the future admission of these states and of any other fully self-governing state, dominion or colony by a two-thirds vote of the Assembly of the League. Any member of the League may withdraw from the League upon two years' notice provided all of its obligations under the Covenant and all of its international obligations have been fulfilled. The organs of the League are an Assembly, consisting of from one to three representatives of each of the members of the League (each state having but one vote); a Council composed of one representative each from the United States, the British Empire, France, Italy and Japan, together with four representatives of other members of the League chosen by the Assembly (pending the selection of the four representatives by the Assembly, the Covenant provided that representatives of Belgium, Brazil, Greece and Spain should be members of the Council); a permanent Secretariat with headquarters at the seat of the League at Geneva, Switzerland; a Court of International Justice, plans for which are to be formulated by the Council; and of a number of commissions entrusted with the enforcement of specific parts of the treaty. All decisions of the Council and the Assembly are to be by unanimous vote except where otherwise provided.

### THE METHODS OF PRESERVING PEACE PROVIDED BY THE LEAGUE.

As the main purpose of the League of Nations is the preservation of international peace, the most important articles of the Covenant contain provisions for the prevention and settlement of international disputes. In the first place the members of the League are required "to respect and preserve as against external aggression the territorial integrity and existing political independence of all members of the League." (This is the famous Article X.) Any war or threat of war is declared to be of concern to the whole League and any member of the League has the friendly right to call to the attention of the Council or Assembly any matter "which threatens to dis-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

turb the peace or good understanding between nations." The members of the League bind themselves to submit to arbitration or to inquiry by the Council all disputes which are likely to lead to war. Arbitral awards are to be made by a court agreed upon by the disputants or by the permanent Court of International Justice. Disputes not submitted to arbitration are to be referred either to the Council or to the Assembly. Awards of the Council are to be made by unanimous vote, not including the parties to the dispute, and awards of the Assembly by unanimous vote of the states represented on the Council and a majority of the representatives of the other states, not including the parties to the dispute. Disputants agree not to resort to war until three months after the award of the Assembly or Council or the decision of the arbitral court, and members agree not to go to war with a state which complies with the award.

Differing from former international arbitration agreements the Covenant provides sanctions for giving effect to its decisions. It is provided that in case any member of the League shall resort to war in disregard of the Covenant, it shall be considered as having committed an act of war against all other members of the League, and such members agree to prohibit all financial, commercial and personal intercourse with the Covenant-breaking state. If such economic pressure does not prove effective the Council shall then recommend to the members of the League what common naval and military forces shall be used against the offending state. In case of a dispute between a member of the League and a state not a member of the League, or between two states not members of the League, such latter states are to be requested to accept the obligations of membership for the purposes of the dispute. In case of refusal to do so and resort is made to war against a member of the League by an outside state, then the League will regard such state as having declared war against the League.

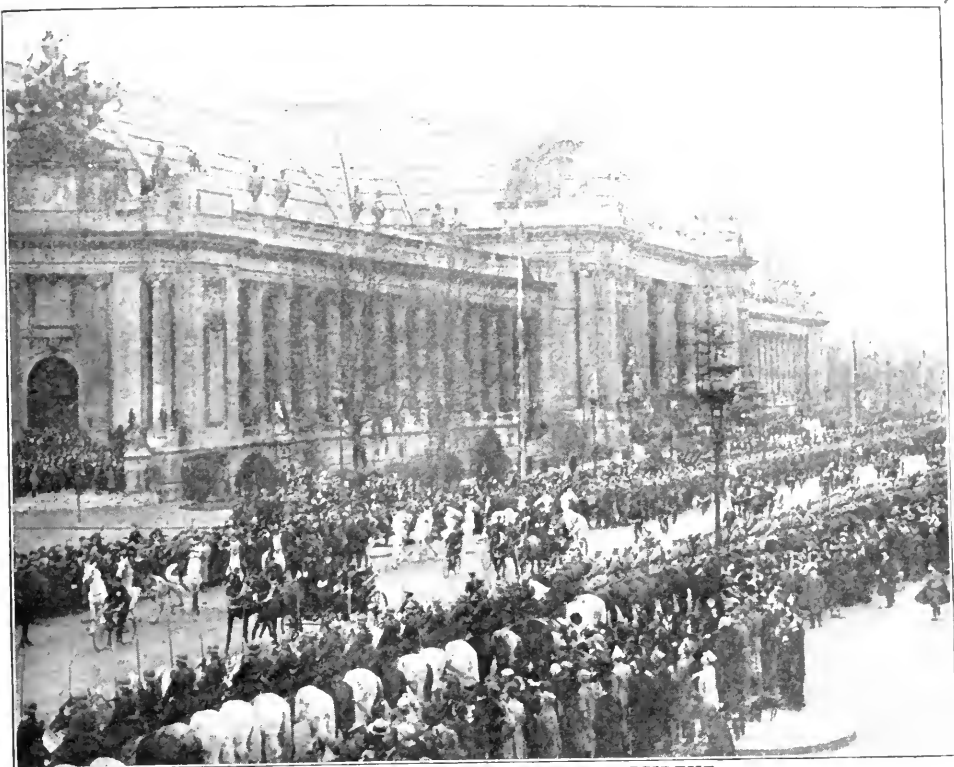
### THE LEAGUE PROVIDES FOR THE PUBLICATION OF ALL TREATIES.

The Covenant also provides for the registration and publication of all international agreements entered into by members of the League, and all existing agreements which are inconsistent with the terms of the Covenant are declared abrogated. It is stated, however, that this does not "affect the validity of international engagements such as treaties of arbitration or regional understandings like the Monroe Doctrine for securing the maintenance of peace."

Recognizing the serious menace to international peace which the competition in national armaments involved, the Covenant provides that the Council shall formulate plans for a reduction in armaments. These plans are to be subject to revision every ten years, and a nation having accepted the plan is prohibited from increasing its armaments without the consent of the Council. All members are to give full information of the extent of their armaments and their military and naval programmes. The manufacture of munitions by private enterprise is to be discouraged. A permanent military commission is to be constituted to advise the Council.

### MANDATES OVER THE TERRITORY OF UNDEVELOPED PEOPLES.

An interesting and novel provision of the Covenant is that dealing with the former German colonies and the Turkish possessions in Asia Minor. These colonies and dominions are to be placed under the control of certain of the advanced nations which are to act as mandatories for the League. The character of the mandate differs according to the stage of development of the people involved. Thus in the former Turkish territories the mandatory power should exercise simply a supervisory power, while in the German colonies in Central Africa the mandatory would assume a greater degree of responsibility in the administration of the territory. In any case the mandatory is required to render an annual report to the Council in regard to the territory committed to its care.



### FRENCH LANCERS SALUTE THE PRESIDENT

President Wilson seated with President Poincaré and followed by Mrs. Wilson and Madame Poincaré are shown passing along the Avenue Alexandre III in front of the Grand Palais des Beaux Arts. On the other side of the street is the Petit Palais des Beaux Arts and in these two buildings the Salons are held. N. Y. Times



### TAKEN AT BUCKINGHAM PALACE

This photograph was taken at Buckingham Palace in December 1918, just before President and Mrs. Wilson left London to return to France. It is the only occasion when a president of the United States and a sovereign of Great Britain were photographed together. Central News Service

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

The Covenant placed the International Labor Office, which is provided by the treaty, under the supervision of the League, and the members of the League are to intrust the League with the execution of agreements with regard to the traffic in women and children, the traffic in opium and other dangerous drugs, and the trade in arms and munitions. The members of the League are to assure equitable treatment for the commerce of all members of the League and are to adopt measures for the international control and prevention of disease. All existing International Bureaus and Commissions are placed under the direction of the League.

Amendments to the Covenant are to take effect when approved by the members of the League with seats in the Council and by a majority of the members represented in the Assembly.

To assure France of protection until such time as the League of Nations should be fully organized, there were drafted special treaties between the United States and France and Great Britain and France, by the terms of which the United States and Great Britain agreed to come to the immediate aid of France in case of an unprovoked attack on the part of Germany. These treaties are to be submitted to the Council of the League which is to determine whether the provisions of the treaties conflict with the obligations of the League Covenant.

### THE TREATY PROPER—GERMAN TERRITORIAL LOSSES.

Turning now to the territorial and economic provisions of the German treaty, Germany was required to cede to France Alsace-Lorraine, about 5,600 square miles of territory; to Belgium, two small districts between Luxembourg and Holland, totaling 282 square miles; to Poland, most of Posen and West Prussia; and, in addition, Upper Silesia and the southern part of East Prussia should determine by plebiscites whether to join Poland or to remain German, in all more than 28,000 square miles; a district of 729 square miles including the city of Danzig is internationalized and placed under the

jurisdiction of the League of Nations, leaving, however, to Poland the control and administration of the Vistula River, the railway system of the city, as well as its postal, telegraph, telephone systems and its foreign relations; a strip of 910 square miles in East Prussia along the Niemen River is awarded to Lithuania; part of Schleswig, totaling 2,787 square miles, was to have its status determined by popular vote of the inhabitants;\* the basin of the Saar, 738 square miles, between the western border of the Rhenish Palatinate and the southeast corner of Luxemburg, is placed under the control of the League of Nations; the coal mines are ceded to France in compensation for the destruction of coal mines in northern France, and at the end of fifteen years a plebiscite is to be taken to determine whether the population desires to remain under the control of the League of Nations, to be incorporated in France or to revert to Germany.

Germany was further deprived of all of her over-seas possessions. The former German colonies have been assigned to various of the Allied Powers in accordance with the mandatory principle provided in the League Covenant.† In addition Germany was forced to renounce all former privileges and concessions in China, Siam, Egypt, Liberia and Morocco. The German concessions in the Shantung peninsula were assigned to Japan. Germany is required to respect the independence of the territories which were part of the former Russian Empire and to agree to the abrogation of the Brest-Litovsk treaty. Moreover Germany bound herself in advance to accept whatever territorial and other arrangements the Allied Powers should make with Russia, Turkey, Austria, Hungary and Bulgaria.

**NOTE**—For the purposes of the plebiscite in Schleswig the district was divided into two zones. In the northern zone a majority voted to join Denmark, while in the southern zone the majority voted to remain with Germany.

**NOTE**—Kamerun and Togoland have been divided between Great Britain and France as mandates; in German East Africa, Great Britain has been designated; for German South-West Africa, the Union of South Africa; the Samoan Islands, New Zealand; the other German islands south of the equator, to Australia; Pleasant Island to the British Empire; the German Pacific Islands north of the equator, to Japan.



#### DANZIG, FORMER CAPITAL OF WEST PRUSSIA

The city is very mediaeval in aspect, successive old styles of its buildings having been well preserved, including in the residences countless gable façades and a peculiar feature known as Beischlage—elevated open-air landings. Many of the streets are narrow and crooked but they abound in fine specimens of antique architecture and have a most picturesque appearance. Before the war vast stores of grain were exported from Danzig.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### ECONOMIC LIMITATIONS IMPOSED UPON THE GERMAN STATE.

Important limitations are placed upon the internal economic organization of Germany. She is required to grant freedom of transit through her territories by rail or water to all of the Allied Powers, to maintain the free zones in German ports which existed before the war, and to grant to Czecho-Slovakia special rights in the ports of Hamburg and Stettin. The chief German rivers, the Elbe, Oder, Rhine, Weser and Moselle are placed under the control of international commissions. The treaty contains detailed provisions to prevent Germany from discriminating against the trade of the Allied countries. The German import tariff shall not exceed that provided in the period immediately before the war, and ships of the Allied Powers are to enjoy for five years the same rights in German ports as German vessels.

Under the head of reparations Germany was required to accept responsibility for herself and her allies for all the loss and damage suffered by the Allied governments and their nationals as a result of the war. In the first place she is required to repay all sums borrowed by Belgium from the Allies since the outbreak of the war. Further she is required to make compensation for all damages to civilians specified under the following heads:

(a) Damages by personal injury to civilians caused by acts of war, directly or indirectly.

(b) Damages caused to civilians, including exposure to the sea, resulting from acts of cruelty ordered by Germany.

(c) Damages caused by maltreatment of prisoners.

(d) Damages to the Allied peoples represented by pensions and separation allowances.

(e) Damages to property except naval and military materials.

(f) Damages to civilians by being forced to labor.

(g) Damages in the form of levies and fines imposed by Germany during the war.

The total amount which Germany is

to be required to pay under the above heads, is to be determined by an inter-Allied Commission not later than May 1, 1921. As an immediate step toward reparation Germany is required to pay five billion dollars in gold, goods or other forms of payment; to issue ten billion dollars in bonds to be delivered to the Allies as security for further payment; and to stipulate to deliver ten billion dollars additional in bonds at such time and under such terms as shall be fixed by the Reparations Commission. In addition to the money payment Germany is obligated to replace, ton for ton, all merchant shipping destroyed during the war. This is to be accomplished by the surrender of all German merchant ships over 1600 tons gross tonnage, and by the building of ships up to 200,000 tons annually for five years. She is further required to devote her economic resources to the restoration of the devastated areas; to return animals, machinery, etc., taken from the Allied countries; to deliver large quantities of coal to France, Belgium and Italy; to hand over manuscripts, books and prints equivalent to those destroyed in the Library of Louvain.

### MILITARY RESTRICTIONS PREVENT THE GROWTH OF A STRONG GERMANY.

The treaty placed severe restraints upon Germany's military power. She has been required to reduce her army to 100,000 men, including 4,000 officers; to abolish the Great General Staff; to close all establishments for the making of war munitions, except those specially named, and to surrender all armament and munitions in excess of a specified amount. Conscription is abolished in Germany and the army is to be recruited by voluntary enlistments for terms of twelve years.\*

In the area 50 kilometers east of the Rhine no armed forces are to be maintained and all fortifications within this area are to be razed. The German navy is limited to six small battleships, six

NOTE—The long term of enlistment was required in order to prevent Germany from adopting the plan used by Prussia during the Napoleonic wars. Napoleon had limited the Prussian army to 40,000 men, and the Prussian leaders adopted the scheme of training 40,000 men for a brief period and placing them in the reserve and training an additional 40,000.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

light cruisers, twelve destroyers, twelve torpedo boats and no submarines, with a personnel not exceeding 15,000 men, including officers. All German war vessels, except those above mentioned, have been turned over to the Allies to be disposed of by them. All military and naval aircraft have likewise been surrendered and Germany is forbidden

As a guarantee for the faithful execution of the treaty, the German territory on the west bank of the Rhine and the bridgeheads on the east bank at Mainz, Coblenz and Cologne are to be occupied by Allied troops for fifteen years. If Germany lives up fully to the conditions of the treaty the bridgehead at Cologne is to be evacuated at



SCENE IN BERLIN BEFORE THE CHANCELLERY

Wilhelmstrasse choked with a vast throng gathered before the Chancellery to denounce the Allied peace terms; the poster to the right reads "To the Devil with this Hellish Peace." When the treaty was handed to the German delegates they were informed that no oral discussion would be allowed and an interchange of notes followed. N. Y. Times

to include any airplanes or dirigibles in her armed forces. The fortifications on the island of Heligoland have been dismantled and the Kiel Canal is to remain free and open to the merchant and war vessels of all nations. Finally, Germany was to agree to the trial of the former German emperor "for a supreme offence against international morality and the sanctity of treaties" before a special tribunal composed of one judge from each of the five great powers, and must also surrender to the Allies such other persons as they may designate, who are accused of having committed acts in violation of the rules of war, to be tried by Allied military tribunals.

the end of five years and that at Coblenz at the end of ten years.

### PROVISIONS OF THE TREATY AFFECTING LABOR IN THE WORLD.

Of the more general provisions of the German treaty one of the most interesting and significant is that which provides for an International Labor Organization. The members of the League of Nations agree to establish a permanent labor organization, to consist of an annual International Labor Conference and an International Labor Office. The Conference shall consist of four representatives from each state, two appointed by the government, and one each representing the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

employers and the workmen, and shall act as a deliberative and legislative body. Its acts are to take the form of recommendations to the law-making bodies of the various states. Each state is left free to enact the recommendations into law; to approve of them in principle; to modify them to suit local needs; to refer them in case of a federal state to the local legislatures for consideration; or to reject them altogether. The International Labor Office is to be located at the seat of the League of Nations, and is to consist of twenty-four members, twelve representing governments, and six representing employers and six employees. This body is to collect and distribute information on labor questions throughout the world; to prepare programmes for the conferences; to publish periodicals in French and English, and possibly other languages; to investigate complaints that a state has not carried out a labor agreement to which it is a party.

The first meeting of the Conference was fixed for October, 1919, at Washington, when the following questions were considered: the eight hour day, or the forty-eight hour week; the prevention of unemployment; the extension and application of the international conventions adopted at Bern in 1906 prohibiting night work for women and the use of white phosphorus in the manufacture of matches; the employment of women and children in unhealthy employments; of children under a minimum age, and of women before and after childbirth.

### SOME OF THE PRINCIPLES REGARDING CONDITIONS OF LABOR.

Upon the complaint of any state that another state has failed to carry out a labor convention, the Labor Office may designate a commission of inquiry to report upon the matter. If this does not lead to a satisfactory settlement, the question may be referred to the permanent Court of International Justice, which may recommend such measures of an economic character as it may deem appropriate to be taken against the defaulting state.

Nine principles of labor conditions

are set forth which the members of the League recognize, on the ground that "the well-being, physical, moral, and intellectual, of industrial wage earners is of supreme international importance." Making allowance for differences of climate, customs and industrial traditions, these principles are as follows: (1) labor should not be regarded merely as an article of commerce or a commodity; (2) the right of association of employers and employees; (3) the payment of wages sufficient to maintain a reasonable standard of life; (4) the adoption of the eight hour day or the forty-eight hour week as a standard to be aimed at; (5) a weekly rest period of twenty-four hours, which should include Sunday wherever possible; (6) the abolition of child labor and provision for the continuation of the mental and physical development of young persons who are employed; (7) equal pay for men and women doing work of equal value; (8) equitable treatment of all workers, including aliens; (9) a system of labor inspection in which women should participate.

### THE GERMANS PROTEST BITTERLY AGAINST THE SEVERITY OF THE TREATY.

Such are the main terms of the treaty which the Allied representatives worked out after four months of arduous labor. Having completed their task the Allies summoned the German delegates to Versailles and handed the treaty to them on May 7, 1919. Reports from Germany indicated that the German delegates were determined to use President Wilson's fourteen principles as a basis for protest against certain parts of the treaty. Demonstrations organized by the National People's Party were held throughout Germany to protest against the signing of the treaty. On May 29 the German delegates submitted a series of counter proposals in which they indicated where they considered that the terms of the proposed treaty violated the Armistice conditions. To these the Allies rejoined with a long and vigorous defense of the treaty in principle but indicated that they had modified its details in accordance with the

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

German suggestions. In conclusion it was stated that unless the German representatives declared their willingness to sign the treaty within five days, the Allies would consider the Armistice terminated and would take such steps as they might deem necessary to enforce their terms. After a futile attempt to have the time limit extended, the German government, at the last moment, indicated its willingness to sign. The final scene in the great world drama was enacted in the historic Hall of Mirrors in the palace at Versailles. In the same room which, forty-nine years before, had witnessed the birth of the German Empire, the two German delegates affixed their signatures to the document which marked the humiliation and doom of that empire. The final ceremony took place at 3 P.M. Saturday, June 28. The German National Assembly ratified the treaty on July 9.

### THE TREATY IS SOON ADOPTED BY A LARGE MAJORITY OF THE NATIONS.

Among the chief Allied powers the treaty was generally approved. It passed the British parliament and received the royal assent on July 31, France ratified on October 13, Italy on October 7, and Japan on October 30. Ratification by three of the chief Allied powers being completed, the Supreme Council was free to fix a date for putting the treaty in force and starting the machinery of the various commissions for which it provides. The Council, however, delayed final action in the hope that the United States Senate would ratify the treaty and the United States would participate in executing its provisions. When the Senate finally adjourned without consenting to the ratification of the treaty, the Supreme Council agreed upon December 1, 1919, as the date for putting the treaty into operation. The final ceremony, however, did not take place until January 10, 1920, when the representatives of the fourteen Allied powers which had ratified the treaty deposited their certificates of ratification at Paris and signed the protocol and procès-verbal which put the treaty into effect.

In the meantime a long and bitter

controversy took place in the United States Senate over the ratification of the treaty. Opposition developed to many of the treaty provisions, notably to the Shantung settlement and the disposition of the former German colonies. The chief attack, however, was centered upon the Covenant of the League of Nations. Many Senators claimed to find in its provisions a departure from the traditional American policy of isolation from European political affairs. As the debate developed it became evident that it would not be possible to obtain the necessary two-thirds vote to ratify the treaty as it stood. Efforts to reach a compromise proved futile. The Senate finally adopted, by a majority vote, a series of fifteen "reservations."

### THE RESERVATIONS ADOPTED BY THE UNITED STATES SENATE.

These reservations, in brief, are as follows: (1) that in case of notice of withdrawal from the League, the United States shall be the sole judge whether its international obligations have been fulfilled; (2) that the United States will assume no obligation to preserve the territorial integrity of any country or to interfere in any controversy, unless by act or joint resolution Congress shall so provide; (3) no mandate shall be accepted by the United States except by action of Congress; (4) that the United States reserves the right to determine what questions are within its domestic jurisdiction, and that such questions shall not be subject to consideration by the League; (5) that the Monroe Doctrine shall be interpreted by the United States alone; (6) that the United States refuses to recognize the cession of Germany's rights in Shantung to Japan; (7) that Congress will provide for the appointment of the representatives of the United States in the League Council and Assembly and define their powers; (8) that the Reparations Commission shall interfere with trade between the United States and Germany only with the approval of Congress; (9) that the United States shall not be obligated to contribute to the expenses of the League, unless Congress shall appro-

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

prorate funds for such expenses; (10) that the United States reserves the right to increase its armament in case of war without the consent of the Council; (11) that the United States reserves

or Council of the League, in which any member of the League and its self-governing colonies or dominions have cast in the aggregate more than one vote, nor to be bound by any decision



THE PROCLAMATION OF PEACE IN LONDON

The Treaty of Peace was signed June 28, 1919, and was officially proclaimed in London on the following Wednesday. The picture shows an officer of the College of Arms reading the proclamation at St. James' Palace. Officers of Arms appear at an early period of the history of armory as the messengers in peace and war of princes and magnates.

Central News Service

the right to permit a covenant-breaking state to continue trade relations with the United States; (12) that nothing in the treaty shall contravene any of the rights of the citizens of the United States; (13) that the United States will participate in the labor organization provided by the treaty only upon act of Congress; (14) that the United States assumes no obligation to be bound by any decision of the Assembly

in a dispute between the United States and any member of the League, in which such member, or its self-governing colonies, have voted. The fifteenth reservation expressed sympathy for the desire of the Irish people to have a government of their own choosing, and that as soon as this is realized, Ireland shall be admitted to the League of Nations. The general effect of the reservations is to weaken the treaty.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

### A TWO-THIRDS MAJORITY CAN NOT BE OBTAINED.

It was not possible to obtain the necessary two-thirds vote to adopt the treaty with these reservations attached. Having failed to ratify the treaty the Republican majority in Congress tried to bring the war officially to an end by means of a joint resolution of the two Houses. Senator Knox drafted a resolution which provided that the joint resolutions of Congress which declared a state of war to exist between the United States and Germany, and the United States and Austria-Hungary, are repealed, and that the state of war is at an end. At the same time all of the rights and privileges of the United States contained in the treaty are to be preserved. This resolution passed both Houses but was vetoed by the President.

This closed the first chapter in the long controversy over the ratification of the treaty by the United States, and further action awaited the results of the Presidential Election of 1920. The question is left over to the new administration in which the Republican Party controls not only the Executive but both Houses of Congress.

Separate treaties were signed with the other Teutonic powers, Austria, Bulgaria, Hungary, and Turkey.

### THE PROVISIONS CONCERNING AUSTRIA-HUNGARY LIKEWISE SEVERE.

By the treaty signed at St. Germain on September 10, 1919, Austria is required to recognize the complete independence of Hungary, Czecho-Slovakia, Poland, and the Serb-Croat-Slovene state. From the former Austro-Hungarian dominions there is ceded to Italy a large part of Tyrol, Trieste, the Istrian peninsula, part of Dalmatia and the islands in the Adriatic Sea; to Czecho-Slovakia, Bohemia, Moravia and Slovakia; to the Serb-Croat-Slovene state, Carniola, Croatia-Slavonia, Bosnia, Herzegovina, and Dalmatia; Galicia to Rumania and Poland; and Transylvania to Rumania. In addition Austria renounces all rights which she had acquired in Morocco, Egypt, Siam and China. In the territories surrendered by Austria the

treaty makes provision for the protection of minorities. In order to prevent the union of Austria with Germany, it is provided that the independence of Austria is inalienable except with the consent of the League of Nations. The Austrian army is reduced to 30,000 men and compulsory military service is abolished, while the Austrian navy is to consist of but three patrol boats on the Danube. All of the existing Austrian warships must be surrendered to the Allies. The amount of reparation which Austria shall pay is left to the Reparations Commission. As a result of this treaty Austria is reduced to a land-locked German state, with an area of five or six thousand square miles, mostly rough, mountainous territory.

The treaty with Bulgaria was signed at Neuilly, near Paris, on November 27, 1919. By its terms Bulgaria is required to surrender the greater part of Macedonia to Serbia; the Dobrudja to Rumania; and Thrace, to the Allies, who later assigned this region to Greece. Bulgaria is forced to pay an indemnity of \$445,000,000, and to reduce her army to 20,000 men.

The negotiation of the Hungarian treaty was delayed as a result of a radical socialist revolution at Budapest. When this régime was finally displaced by a Provisional Government with Admiral Horthy as regent, the treaty negotiations were resumed, and the treaty was finally signed on June 4, 1920. By its terms Hungary is required to recognize the annexation of Transylvania to Rumania; of Slovakia to Czecho-Slovakia; of Croatia to the Serb-Croat-Slovene state; and of the Banat of Temesvar to Rumania and Serbia. The Hungarian army is not to exceed 30,000 men.

### THE TURKISH QUESTION AS TROUBLE-SOME AS IN THE PAST.

The settlement of the Turkish problem proved, as it had so often done before, to be most difficult. All of the old conflicting interests of Great Britain, France, Italy and Greece in the Orient asserted themselves. Of particular difficulty was the question of the disposition of the city of Constantinople. It at first seemed probable that

the city would be internationalized and placed under the control of the League of Nations. The British and French authorities, however, appeared to fear that if the Sultan were driven from his capital, it might have a disturbing effect upon the Moslem subjects of these two powers in India and North Africa. It was finally determined to allow the Sultan to remain in Constantinople, under the supervision of an interallied commission. The Dardanelles and the Bosphorus are to remain open both in time of peace and war to the merchant and war vessels of all nations. All of the fortifications along the straits are to be destroyed. Turkey is allowed to maintain an army, for police purpose only, not to exceed 35,000 men, and the national finances of the country are placed in the hands of an Anglo-French-Italian commission. In Asia Minor Turkey is allowed to retain only the region of Anatolia. The remainder of the Turkish territory is divided as follows: Arabia is made an autonomous state, to be known as the Kingdom of the Hedjaz, under a British mandate; Armenia is to be an independent republic\*; Great Britain is made mandatory for Mesopotamia and Palestine; France for Syria; Italy for Adalia; and Greece for the territory around Smyrna.

#### THE NEW STATES DISSATISFIED WITH THEIR BOUNDARIES.

Such are the territorial rearrangements and economic decisions made by the Allied diplomats at Paris. In giving effect to these many complex decisions serious difficulties presented themselves. Among the newly created states of central Europe there appeared dissatisfaction with the territorial boundaries assigned to them. Poland and Ukraina contested for the control of Eastern Galicia, and the Allies assigned it to Poland under a twenty-five year mandate. Rumania occupied a large part of Hungary, and only withdrew after vigorous demands were made by the representatives of the Allies. Czecho-Slovakia and Poland came to the verge of war over their rival claims to

Teschen, which were adjusted by providing for a plebiscite in the disputed territory. Italy and Greece compromised their differences by the assignment of Southern Albania to Greece and the transfer of the former Turkish islands in the Aegean, which Italy had held since 1911, to Greece, while on the other hand Greece agreed to recognize the Italian protectorate over the greater part of Albania.

The problem which gave the most serious concern to the diplomats at Paris, was the disposition of the former Austrian territory along the Adriatic sea. The difficulty dates back to the secret treaty concluded between the Entente Powers and Italy in 1915. To win Italy to the Entente cause she was assured of the Austrian territory in Tyrol, Trieste, Goritzia, Istria, and part of the Dalmatian coast. The seaport of Fiume was not included, but was to be assigned to Croatia. Upon the conclusion of the war Italian nationalists demanded that the city of Fiume should be given to Italy on the ground that a majority of the inhabitants of the city are Italian and wish to be joined to Italy. The claims of Italy were stubbornly resisted by the new Jugo-Slav state. It was pointed out that while the immediate town of Fiume has an Italian majority, the suburbs are largely Slavic and the hinterland entirely so. Moreover it was stated that Fiume is the only feasible port for the whole of Croatia and the neighboring territory. Matters reached a critical stage when President Wilson in April 1919 announced publicly his opposition to the Italian claims. This led to a withdrawal of the Italian representatives from the Peace Conference and popular demonstrations in Italy against the President. There was some concern that the action of Italy foreshadowed a split among the Allies. The Italians were, however, finally persuaded to return to the Conference, and negotiations looking to a compromise were started. A new complication was added by the action of the Italian poet-adventurer Gabriele d'Annunzio, who forcibly took possession of Fiume,

\* The mandate for Armenia was offered to the United States but Congress refused to accept it.



## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

apparently without the authorization of the Italian government, and declared his intention of holding the city, despite any decision that might be reached at Paris.

In November 1920 the governments of Italy and the new Serbo-Croat-Slovene state, commonly known as Jugo-Slavia, signed a treaty agreeing to a compromise. Fiume is to be

guage and to have such language taught in the schools, wherever they are in considerable numbers; and to enjoy equal civil and political privileges, such as admission to public offices, or the exercise of professions and industries.

Poland signed a minorities' treaty of this kind at the time that the peace was signed with Germany. The repre-



FIUME AND ITS HARBOR

With the American troops in Fiume. This is a view of the city and its harbor as seen from one of the adjacent hills. American troops who fought beside the Italians on the Piave crossed to the opposite shore of the Adriatic Sea to a city which, but a little while previously, had been a base for Boche submarines. Fiume is the second best harbor on the eastern shore of the Adriatic. U. S. Official

independent, but certain other territory is to be assigned to Italy. At once d'Annunzio announced that he would refuse to accept the treaty.

### TREATIES FOR THE PROTECTION OF RACIAL MINORITIES.

In addition to the treaties with the Teutonic powers the Allied representatives drafted treaties which they required the newly created states of central Europe to sign, guaranteeing complete individual freedom, regardless of race, religion, or language, to all minority groups within their dominions. These minorities are to enjoy complete religious liberty; to use their own lan-

guage and to have such language taught in the schools, wherever they are in considerable numbers; and to enjoy equal civil and political privileges. Under pressure, however, both states finally accepted.

Such are the results of the efforts of the statesmen and diplomats at Paris to liquidate the problems of the Great War, and to inaugurate a new world era. There remained a number of problems which the Conference had entirely ignored, or had left unsettled. Several of the "submerged nations," such as Egypt, India, and Ireland, appealed in vain to the Conference to have their claims for independence considered.



**NO SETTLEMENT OF THE RUSSIAN QUESTION REACHED.**

The Peace Conference had badly bungled the Russian problem. Alternately adopting a policy of vigorous opposition to the Bolshevik régime, and a policy of "watchful waiting," they succeeded only in bringing untold suffering upon millions of people in Russia. In January 1919 it was proposed to hold a conference of all of the Russian factions on Prinkipo Island, in the Sea of Marmora, but powerful influences at Paris which were opposed to having any dealings with the Bolshevik authorities, defeated the plan. The Allies then directed their efforts to giving support to the various anti-Bolshevik forces, and maintaining a rigid blockade of Bolshevik Russia. In the end all of these military enterprises failed, and in January 1920 the Allies abandoned the blockade of Russia and took steps to open up trade relations with her. The Allies, however, still declined to give official recognition to the Bolshevik régime.

**SOME OF THE CRITICISMS OF THE TREATY STATED.**

The time has not yet arrived when a final estimate can be made of the work done at Paris. Criticism of the Peace Conference has appeared from all sides. In many influential quarters in the Allied countries, especially in France, it was contended that the Conference had been too tender to Germany. It is the view of these critics that the Conference should have gone much further than it did to make Germany impotent militarily and economically, and in particular that France should have been assured of security by making the Rhine the French frontier.

On the other hand bitter disappointment was expressed in liberal and radical circles that the Conference had failed to carry out the principles laid down by President Wilson and the president was criticised for not standing more firmly for these principles. It was contended that many of the territorial settlements made by the Conference violated the principle of nationality and of self determination; that the financial and economic bur-

dens placed upon the Central Powers made their economic restoration impossible; that the failure to solve the Russian problem prevented the re-establishment of European peace; and, finally, that the proposed League of Nations was not a real world league, but merely a perpetuation of the military alliance among the Great Powers.

Whatever may be the shortcomings of the Treaty of Versailles, there can be little doubt that it foreshadows the beginning of a new era in history of the world. Four years of unprecedented strife and suffering had called into being many new and strange ideas and had swept away many time-honored traditions and institutions. The world of 1919 was no longer the world of 1914.

**THE STARTLING GROWTH OF THE PRINCIPLE OF NATIONALISM.**

What are some of the most striking changes which the war and the peace treaty brought about? In the first place the war witnessed a great victory for the principle of nationalism. Many national groups in Europe who, for a century, had struggled to obtain national rights, now saw their hopes realized. Fortunately the diplomats at Paris did not repeat, except in a few instances, the mistakes of their predecessors at Vienna. The new territorial settlements were based, on the whole, upon a frank recognition of the principle of nationality. Three empires, Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey, whose very existence was a denial of the principle of nationality, were destroyed, and upon their ruins were erected the new national states, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Austria, Poland, Jugo-Slavia, Hedjaz, and Armenia, in addition to the quasi-independent states of Mesopotamia, Syria and Palestine. Territorial additions were made, in accordance with the principle of nationality, to France, Denmark, Italy, Serbia, Rumania and Greece. Moreover it seemed probable that the former Russian Empire would disintegrate into its component national units.

**MONARCHY NOW THE EXCEPTION AND NOT THE RULE.**

A second principle which made noteworthy gains as a result of the war was

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

political democracy. The last great strongholds of autocracy in Europe, Germany, Russia, Austria, and Turkey had been swept away, and in their place had appeared governments based upon the democratic ideal. Moreover in the states which had been democratically organized the desire for a greater

unrestrained individualism. It was argued that if co-operation was essential for the successful prosecution of war it was no less essential for a well organized state of peace. In Russia a thorough-going Marxian communist experiment was undertaken, while in most of the other European states and



BATUM ON THE BLACK SEA

The conditions of the armistice granted to Turkey, October 30, were not observed. When the Russians by order of the Bolshevik Government withdrew from Armenia in the winter of 1917-18 the Turks captured Batum and other cities. With Allied successes in Macedonia and in Palestine the British were back in Baku, November 17, and took over the Batum railway. Henry Ruschin

measure of democracy asserted itself, as is evidenced by the extension of the suffrage franchise to women in Great Britain and the United States.

In social and economic thought and action the war brought some striking changes. Under the stress of war, economic individualism, in large measure, gave way to state control and operation of industry. To an unprecedented extent individuals found themselves restrained in their everyday lives by governmental decrees and regulations. In practically all the belligerent countries means of communication and transportation were taken over by the governments, while the use of essential commodities was strictly regulated. Not unnaturally these war activities of the various governments led many persons to question the economic soundness and social value of the old

in America, proposals of a more or less socialistic character were advocated or actually adopted.

It is difficult to say whether these newer social and economic tendencies will continue with the return of peace, or whether there will be a reaction toward the older individualism, but there is undoubtedly a wide-spread feeling throughout the world that the war marked the end of the unrestrained economic individualism of the last century.

These are some of the changes and tendencies which the great world cataclysm produced and which justify the belief that the peace settlements made at Paris mark the end of an old and the beginning of a new era in the history of mankind.

NELSON P. MEAD.

	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918
<b>WESTERN FRONT</b>	<p>WEST: Belgium overrun. France invaded. Battles of Marne, Aisne, Yser. EAST: Russian invasion of Prussia and Masurian Lakes. German invasion of Poland. Przemysl. German invasion of Poland falls. Serbians repel Austrians. Loss of German Colonies. Turkey joins Central Powers. NAVAL: Battles of Jutland, Dogger Bank, Falkland Islands. Disappearance of German shipping.</p>	<p>WEST: Failure of First Allied Champagne offensive—Battles of Neuve Chapelle, Ypres. Failure of second Allied offensive—Battles of Arras, Somme. Gallipoli expedition. Bulgaria joins Teutons. Serbia crushed. Allies at Saloniki. Italy declares war on Austria. EAST: Russians driven from Poland and Galicia. Food blockade against Russia. Battle of Dogger Bank—Blockade of Great Britain—Lusitania sunk.</p>	<p>WEST: Battles of Verdun and Somme. EAST: Successful Russian offensives in Galicia and Armenia. Surrender of Townskend at Kut-el-Amara. Saurth: Rumania crushed—successful Austrian invasion from Trentino, Italian counter-advance to Isouzo. NAVAL: Battle of Jutland. Increased use of submarines by Germany.</p>	<p>Unrestricted submarine warfare begun by Germany. Evacuation of Spanish Cubans. Panama Canal. Greece, Siam, Liberia, China, Brazil join Allies. WEST: Withdrawal of German forces to Hindenburg line; Battles of Arras, Flanders, Cambrai. German offensive in Flanders. Austrian counter-offensive and Italian disaster. EAST: Russian revolution. Baghdad and Jerusalem captured.</p>	<p>Break up of Russia. Central Powers and Bolshevik Government make peace. Withdrawal of Central Powers. Battles of Second Somme, Third Somme, Arras, Fourth Aisne. EAST: Bulgarian dowfall. Peace, September 30. Allenby's advance, September 27. Turkey surrenders, October 30. Armistice, November 11.</p>
<b>EASTERN</b>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN TURKS RUSSIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN TURKS RUSSIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN TURKS RUSSIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN TURKS RUSSIAN</p>	<p>BOLSHEVIK CZECHO-SLOVAK</p>
<b>BALKANS</b>	<p>AUSTRIAN GERMAN BULGARIAN TURKISH RUSSIAN BRITISH FRENCH MONTENEGRIN SERBIAN</p>	<p>AUSTRIAN GERMAN BULGARIAN TURKISH RUSSIAN BRITISH FRENCH MONTENEGRIN SERBIAN</p>	<p>AUSTRIAN GERMAN BULGARIAN TURKISH RUSSIAN BRITISH FRENCH MONTENEGRIN SERBIAN</p>	<p>AUSTRIAN GERMAN BULGARIAN TURKISH RUSSIAN BRITISH FRENCH MONTENEGRIN SERBIAN</p>	<p>CZECHO-SLOVAK GREEK ITALIAN</p>
<b>ITALIAN</b>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN ITALIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN ITALIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN ITALIAN</p>	<p>GERMAN AUSTRIAN ITALIAN</p>	<p>CZECHO-SLOVAK UNITED STATES FRENCH BRITISH</p>
<b>ASIA</b>	<p>PERSIAN RUSSIAN JAPANESE ARMY OF MESOPOTAMIA</p>	<p>PERSIAN RUSSIAN JAPANESE ARMY OF MESOPOTAMIA</p>	<p>PERSIAN RUSSIAN JAPANESE ARMY OF MESOPOTAMIA</p>	<p>PERSIAN RUSSIAN JAPANESE ARMY OF MESOPOTAMIA</p>	<p>GERMAN BOLSHEVIK MEDJAZ ARABS ARMY OF EGYPT (ALLIED BY) ARMENIAN ALLIED ARMY OF MESOPOTAMIA</p>
<b>AFRICA</b>	<p>GERMAN AND ASKARIAN TURKISH SERISSI BELGIAN ARMY OF EGYPT PORTUGUESE UNION DEFENSE FORCE</p>	<p>GERMAN AND ASKARIAN TURKISH SERISSI BELGIAN ARMY OF EGYPT PORTUGUESE UNION DEFENSE FORCE</p>	<p>GERMAN AND ASKARIAN TURKISH SERISSI BELGIAN ARMY OF EGYPT PORTUGUESE UNION DEFENSE FORCE</p>	<p>GERMAN AND ASKARIAN TURKISH SERISSI BELGIAN ARMY OF EGYPT PORTUGUESE UNION DEFENSE FORCE</p>	
<b>NAVAL</b>	<p>BRITISH, AUSTRALIAN, AND CANADIAN. FRENCH JAPANESE RUSSIAN ITALIAN GERMAN AUSTRIAN GREEK UNITED STATES BRAZILIAN ALLIED</p>	<p>BRITISH, AUSTRALIAN, AND CANADIAN. FRENCH JAPANESE RUSSIAN ITALIAN GERMAN AUSTRIAN GREEK UNITED STATES BRAZILIAN ALLIED</p>	<p>BRITISH, AUSTRALIAN, AND CANADIAN. FRENCH JAPANESE RUSSIAN ITALIAN GERMAN AUSTRIAN GREEK UNITED STATES BRAZILIAN ALLIED</p>	<p>BRITISH, AUSTRALIAN, AND CANADIAN. FRENCH JAPANESE RUSSIAN ITALIAN GERMAN AUSTRIAN GREEK UNITED STATES BRAZILIAN ALLIED</p>	

# APPENDIX A

## CANADIAN CORPS AND DIVISION COMMANDERS

<b>Headquarters Canadian Army Corps.</b>		<i>Appointed</i>	<i>Retired</i>
Lt.-Gen. Sir E. A. H. Alderson, K. C. B.	Sept. 13, 1915		May 28, 1916
" Sir Hon. J. H. G. Byng, K. C. B., K. C.			
M. G., M. V. O.	May 28, 1916		June 8, 1917
" Sir A. W. Currie, G. C. M. G., K. C. B.	June 9, 1917		Demob.
<b>Headquarters 1st Division.</b>			
Lt.-Gen. E. A. H. Alderson, C. B.	Sept. 22, 1914		Sept. 13, 1915
Major-Gen. Sir A. W. Currie, K. C. M. G., C. B.	Sept. 13, 1915		June 9, 1917
" Sir A. C. Macdonell, K. C. B., C. M. G.,			
D. S. O.	June 9, 1917		Demob.
<b>Headquarters 2nd Division.</b>			
Maj.-Gen. Sir S. B. Steele, K. C. M. G., C. B.,			
M. V. O.	May 25, 1915		June 6, 1915
Maj.-Gen. Sir R. E. W. Turner, V. C., K. C. M. G.,			
C. B., D. S. O.	Aug. 17, 1915		Dec. 15, 1916
Maj.-Gen. Sir H. E. Burstall, K. C. B., K. C. M. G.,			
A. D. C.	Dec. 15, 1916		Demob.
<b>Headquarters 3rd Division.</b>			
Maj.-Gen. M. S. Mercer, C. B.	Nov. 20, 1915		June 3, 1916
" L. J. Lipsett, C. B., C. M. G.	June 16, 1916		Sept. 13, 1918
" Sir F. O. W. Loomis, K. C. B., C. M. G.,			
D. S. O.	Sept. 13, 1918		Demob.
<b>Headquarters 4th Division.</b>			
Brig.-Gen. Lord Brooke, C. M. G., M. V. O.	Nov. 19, 1915		May 11, 1916
Maj.-Gen. Sir D. Watson, K. C. B., C. M. G.	April 25, 1916		Demob.
<b>Headquarters 5th Division.</b> (Disbanded in England) Feb. 28, 1918.			
Maj.-Gen. G. B. Hughes, C. B., C. M. G., D. S. O.	Jan. 22, 1917		Feb. 28, 1918

## MOVEMENTS OF CANADIAN CORPS AND DIVISIONS IN FRANCE

### FRANCE, 1st Division

<b>1915</b>	
Feb. 21-28	Attached for training to 4th and 6th Division, 3rd Corps.
March 1	Transferred to 4th Corps, 1st army.
March 9	Separate command under 1st army.
April 12	Came under orders, 5th Corps.
April 23	Came under Alderson's Force.
April 27	Transferred to Plumer's Force.
May 14-15	Came under 1st Army.
May 20th	Came under command of Alderson's Force.
June 28	Came under 3rd Corps.
July 14	Division came under 2nd Corps.
Sept. 13	Canadian Corps organized under 1st Army.
Oct. 29	1st Canadian Heavy Artillery Battery transferred from 1st to 2nd Army.
<b>1916</b>	
Jan. 26	Canadian Cavalry Brigade left Canadian Corps, attached to 1st Indian Cavalry Division, later to 2nd Cavalry Division then to 3rd British Cavalry Division and finally to the 5th Cavalry Division. These transfers took place between February and June, 1916.
	In November, 1917, attached to 3rd British Army, and in March, 1918, transferred to 4th British Army.
Aug. 12	Movement of Canadian Corps commenced to 2nd Army area; completed, 25th.
Aug. 27	Movement commenced to reserve army area.
Oct. 3	Movement of 4th Canadian Division commenced to 4th Army area.
Oct. 10	Movement of Canadian Corps less 4th Division to 1st Army area commenced.
Oct. 17	4th Division came under 2nd Corps.
Nov. 27	4th Canadian Division, 1st, 2nd and 3rd Canadian Divisional Artillery, commenced movement to 1st Army area.
<b>1917</b>	
Oct. 12	Movement to 2nd Army area commenced.
Nov. 13	Transfer to 1st Army area commenced.
<b>1918</b>	
March 23	1st Canadian Motor Machine Gun Brigade sent to 5th Army.
March 23	2nd Canadian Division to general headquarters reserve.
March 27	Canadian corps headquarters and 4th Canadian Division to headquarters reserve.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

March 27	1st and 2nd Canadian Divisions transferred to 3rd Army.
April 8	1st Division transferred to Canadian Corps, 1st Army.
May 7	Canadian Corps less 2nd Division to general headquarters reserve 1st Army area.
June 24	3rd Canadian Division to 3rd Army, 2nd Canadian Division from 3rd Army to general headquarters reserve.
July 10-15	Canadian Corps less 3rd Division to 1st Army.
July 27	3rd Canadian Division to general headquarters reserve.
July 30-Aug. 7	Canadian Corps transferred to 4th Army.
Aug. 19-28	Canadian Corps transferred to 1st Army.
Nov. 15	Canadian Corps transferred to 2nd Army.
Nov. 23	3rd and 4th Canadian Divisions and 8th Army Brigades, C. F. A., transferred to 4th Corps and 4th Army.

## APPENDIX B

### CONDENSED HISTORIES OF THE DIVISIONS OF THE UNITED STATES ARMY

#### REGULAR ARMY DIVISIONS—1 TO 20

**First Division** (first in war experiences), organized June, 1917, from units of the Regular Army; to France, June-July, 1917; infantry trained in Gondrecourt area, artillery in Valdahon; entered line near Nancy, Oct. 21, under French command; trained in quiet Ansaerville sector near Toul, Jan. 19-Apr. 3, 1918; removed through Toul to Picardy; took over Cantigny sector near Montdidier, Apr. 25; carried Cantigny, May 28; relieved, July 7; Soissons operation, July 17; relieved after heavy fighting; entered Saizerais sector, Aug. 7; relieved, Aug. 24; took part in St. Mihiel operation, Sept. 12-13; advanced down Aire Valley, Sept. 30-Oct. 11; rested near Bar-le-Duc; attacked in Mouzon area, Nov. 6; marched on Sedan, Nov. 6-7; stationed at Buzancy when Armistice was signed; assigned to Army of Occupation; established at Coblenz bridgehead, Dec. 13, 1918-Aug. 16, 1919; landed at New York, Sept. 5, 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. William L. Sibert, Oct. 25, 1917; Maj. Gen. Robert L. Bullard, Dec. 13; Brig. Gen. Charles P. Summerall, July 1, 1918; Maj. Gen. Robert L. Bullard, July 7; Maj. Gen. Charles P. Summerall, July 18; Brig. Gen. Frank E. Bamford, Oct. 12; Brig. Gen. Frank Parker, Oct. 24; Maj. Gen. Edward F. McGlachlin, Nov. 22.

*Insignia:* A crimson figure "1" on khaki background.

**Second Division**, organized in France in 1917, from elements of the Regular Army and Marines (units transferred to France, June 1917 to March 1918); infantry trained in department of Haute-Marne; artillery at Valdahon; all completed training near Bourmont; between Verdun and St. Mihiel, with French troops, March 16-May 13, 1918; entered Château-Thierry sector, May 31; advanced in Bois de Belleau, Bois de la Roche, and around Vaux; relieved, July 9; engaged, south of Soissons, in attack on Château-Thierry salient, July 18-19; trained in Marbache sector, north of Toul; in St. Mihiel operations, Sept. 9-16; entered line, near Somme-Py, under French in Champagne attack, Oct. 1; moved east to join American First Army; entered Meuse-Argonne sector, Oct. 30, and advanced until the declaration of Armistice; assigned to Army of Occupation; stationed at

Coblenz bridgehead from Dec. 13 until return to United States, July-August, 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. Charles A. Doyen, Oct. 26, 1917; Maj. Gen. Omar Bundy, Nov. 8; Maj. Gen. James Harbord, July 1, 1918; Maj. Gen. Omar Bundy, July 6; Maj. Gen. James Harbord, July 20; Maj. Gen. John A. Le Jeune (U. S. M. C.), July 28.

*Insignia:* Indian head on star background upon a shield, with colors varying according to the unit.

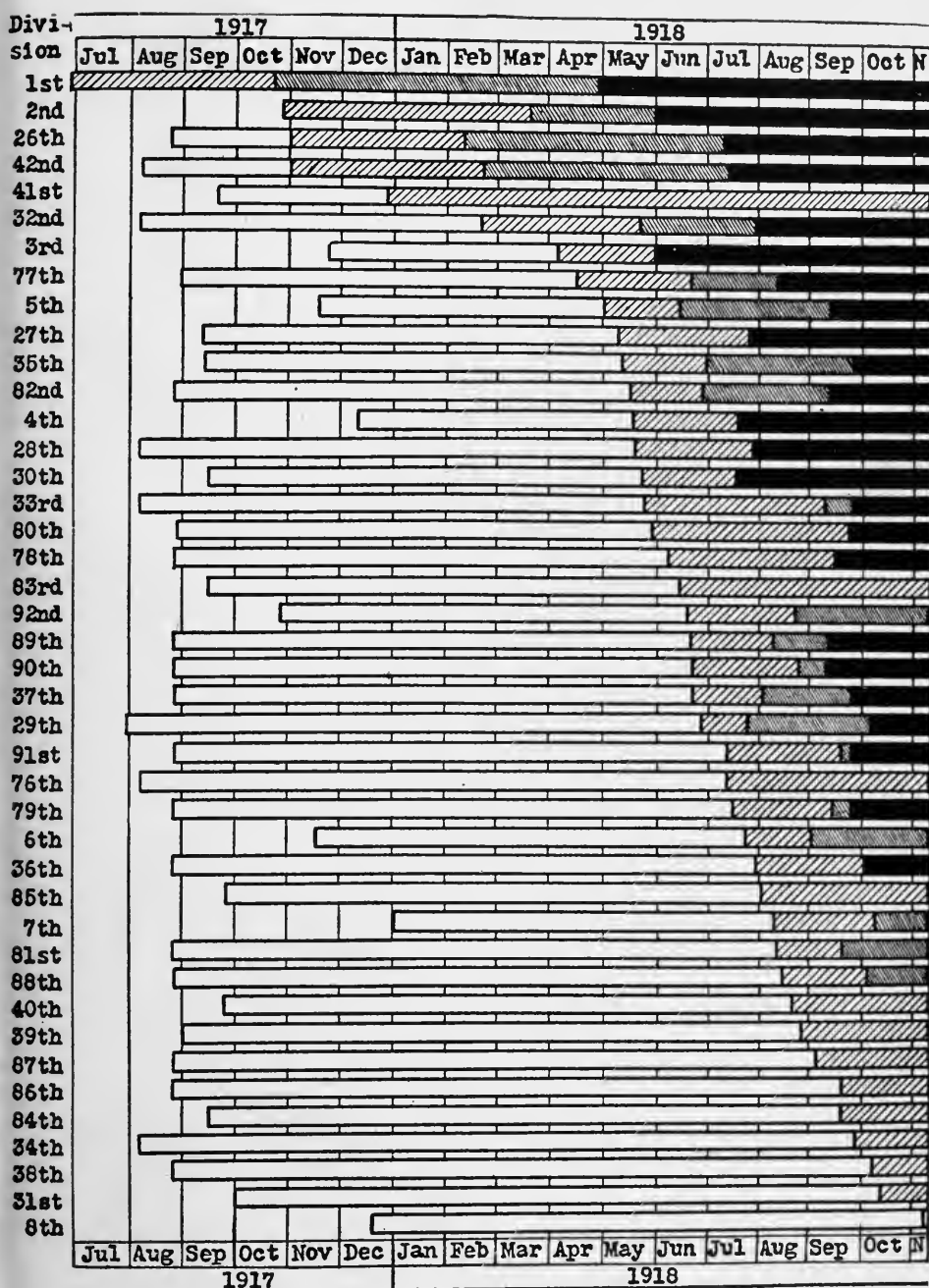
**Third Division** (Marne), organized at Camp Greene, Charlotte, N. C., Nov. 21, 1917; to France, April-May, 1918; in Château Villain Training Area; entered Château-Thierry sector in June; met Germans, July 15; attacked across the Marne, July 21, and advanced to the Ourcq; relieved July 29; St. Mihiel Sector, Sept. 10; relieved, Sept. 14; in the Argonne offensive, Sept. 30-Oct. 27; relieved north of Montfaucon; on right of the Third American Army, Nov. 14; marched to the Rhine; occupied the Kreis of Mayon.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Joseph T. Dickman, Nov. 28, 1917; Brig. Gen. James A. Irons, Feb. 27, 1918; Maj. Gen. Joseph T. Dickman, April 12; Maj. Gen. Beaumont B. Buck, August 31; Brig. Gen. Preston Brown, Oct. 17-Nov. 11.

*Insignia:* Three white stripes (representing the Marne, St. Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne) on a blue ground.

**Fourth Division**, organized from units of the Regular Army at Camp Greene, N. C., Dec. 1917; arrived in France, May-June, 1918 (56 men of Companies A and B lost, when transport Moldavia torpedoed, May 23); infantry trained with the British in Samur area, artillery at Camp de Souge near Bordeaux; at disposal of French at Meaux in June; reserve between Soissons and Château-Thierry in Marne salient in German offensive of July 15; in Aisne-Marne offensive of July 18 and operations following; assigned to First American Corps, July 28; advanced to the Vesle (first operation as a division), August 3; (division not complete until Aug. 4-7); relieved, Aug. 11; removed for rest and training to Reynel, then to Vavincourt; engaged on line southeast of Verdun; relieved,

# HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR



- Organization to arrival in France
- Arrival in France to entering line
- Entering line to active battle service
- Service as active combat division

Diagram showing periods of organization, training and battle service of the Combat divisions of the A. E. F. in France.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Sept. 19-20; moved to Lennes, west of the Meuse, then north; in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, Sept. 26-Oct. 19; relieved (except artillery and ammunition train); in reserve to Second Army, north of Toul, Oct. 20; reassigned to First Army in Meuse-Argonne operation, Nov. 6; recalled to Second Army after starting, Nov. 8; assigned to Army of Occupation; completed occupation of area (Cochem), Dec. 17; began return to the United States, July 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. George H. Cameron, May 25, 1918; Brig. Gen. Benjamin A. Poore, Aug. 24; Maj. Gen. John L. Hines, Aug. 31; Maj. Gen. George H. Cameron, Oct. 12; Brig. Gen. Benjamin A. Poore, Oct. 25; Maj. Gen. Mark L. Hersey, Oct. 31.

*Insignia:* Green four-leaved ivy, about a circle, in cross shape, on a square olive-drab diamond.

**Fifth Division**, organized from units of the Regular Army and assignments from National Army, at Camp Logan, Texas, Dec. 1, 1917; arrived in France, March-June, 1918; infantry trained at Bar-sur-Aube, artillery at Valdahon; with 33rd French Army Corps in the Vosges, June 1; entered the line, June 14; transferred to St. Die sector, July 15; relieved, Aug. 26; transferred to vicinity of Lunéville, Aug. 28; entered line for St. Mihiel operation, Sept. 8; advanced, Sept. 12-17; stationed near Toul for rest and training, Sept. 17; moved to Souilly area, Oct. 3; engaged heavily in Meuse-Argonne offensive, Oct. 12-21; relieved, Oct. 22; re-entered line, southwest of Briulles, Oct. 27; crossed the Meuse, Nov. 2-4, and continued in pursuit of enemy; removed to Longuyon-Longwy area, as part of the Third Army (Army of Occupation), Nov. 22-23; assigned to garrisons in Rhenish Prussia (one regiment) and in southern Luxembourg; return to United States begun July 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. John E. McMahon, April 9, 1918; Maj. Gen. Hauson E. Ely, Oct. 18.

*Insignia:* A red diamond.

**Sixth Division** (Star), organized from units of the Regular Army and assignments from the National Army, at Camp McClellan, Ala., Nov. 1917; to France, May-July, 1918 (some units landed first in England and Scotland); artillery, under aeroplane fire at Le Havre, suffered first casualties; infantry trained near Château Villain, artillery at Valdahon; in the Vosges, under French command, Aug. 27-Oct. 11 (minus artillery), started, Oct. 27, for Meuse-Argonne offensive; in line, Nov. 2; established headquarters at Stonne, Nov. 6; moved to sector northeast of Verdun; relieved, Nov. 21; returned to the United States, June 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. James B. Erwin, Nov. 1, 1917; Maj. Gen. Walter H. Gordon, Aug. 1, 1918.

*Insignia:* Six-pointed red star bearing a blue figure "6."

**Seventh Division**, organized at Chickamauga Park, Ga., Jan. 1, 1918; began training at Camp MacArthur, Waco, Texas, February 5; transferred to France, July-Sept.; trained in the 15th Training Area; moved to Toul Area at Gondreville, Sept. 30; relieved 90th Division, Oct. 10-11, in the Puvencelle sector; defensive

occupation of the sector, Oct. 10-Nov. 9; offensive occupation to Nov. 11; participated in the Second Army offensive; moved headquarters to Saizerais, Jan. 10, 1919. (The 7th Field Artillery Brigade, trained at Camp Meucon, did not join the division until February, 1919.)

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. C. H. Barth, Aug. 10, 1918, and Maj. Gen. Edmund Wittenmeyer, Oct. 24.

*Insignia:* Two triangles, with apexes touching, in black, on red circular base.

**Eighth Division** (Pathfinder), organized at Camp Fremont, Cal., Dec. 17, 1917; about 5000 men and nearly 100 officers transferred to Siberia, with Maj. Gen. William S. Graves, in Aug. 1918; command of the division passed to Maj. Gen. Eli A. Helmick, with recruits added; embarkation from Hoboken started, Oct. 30; some units reached France, but none saw action.

*Insignia:* A black Indian head with an orange circle.

**Ninth Division**, organized at Camp Sheridan, Ala. in July, 1918, with the 45th and 46th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus and selective service men added; the Artillery Brigade organized at Camp McClellan, Ala., Aug. 1; a detachment ready for embarkation when the Armistice was announced; demobilization of temporary officer and National Army personnel from Nov. 1918 to Feb. 15, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Willard A. Holbrook.

**Tenth Division**, organized at Camp Funston, Kan., July-Aug., 1918, advanced school detachment left Camp Funston, Oct. 27, arriving in France just prior to Armistice; the 210th Engineer Regiment and train ready to move overseas on Nov. 11; demobilization of all organizations except those belonging to the Regular Army, took place, Jan. 18-Feb. 18, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Leonard Wood.

*Insignia:* A blue square with a yellow "X" inside a yellow ring.

**Eleventh Division** (Lafayette), organized at Camp Meade, Md., in Aug., 1918, with the 17th and 63rd Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; the 24th Field Artillery, assigned to the division, trained at West Point, Ky.; advanced school detachment reached Liverpool, England, Nov. 8, and whole division was ready for transport overseas by Nov. 11. All organizations not belonging to the Regular Army demobilized, Nov. 29.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Jesse McI. Carter.

*Insignia:* Silhouette bust of Lafayette in blue, on a red disc.

**Twelfth Division** (Plymouth), organized at Camp Devens, Mass., in July, 1918; Artillery Brigade, organized and trained at Camp McClellan, Ala.; signing of the Armistice prevented embarkation; demobilization of the personnel not belonging to the Regular Army took place Jan. 18-31, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Henry P. McCain.

*Insignia:* A blue diamond with a red centre and the numerals "12" in white pierced by a bayonet.



# HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

## STATISTICS OF COMBAT DIVISIONS IN FRANCE

	No. of days in		Advance against enemy in Kilometers	Men captured and percentage of total	Battle deaths	Wounded
	Quiet Sectors	Active Sectors				
1st	127	93	51	6,469 (10.26%)	4,411	17,201
2nd	71	66	60	12,026 (19.07%)	4,478	17,752
3rd	0	86	41	2,240 (3.55%)	3,177	12,940
4th	7	38	24½	2,756 (4.37%)	2,611	9,893
5th	71	32	29	2,356 (3.74%)	1,976	6,864
6th	40	0	0	12 (.02%)	93	453
7th	31	2	1	69 (.11%)	296	1,397
26th	148	45	37	3,148 (4.99%)	2,135	11,325
27th	0	57	11	2,357 (3.74%)	1,785	7,201
28th	31	49	10	921 (1.46%)	2,551	11,429
29th	59	23	7	2,187 (3.47%)	951	4,268
30th	0	56	29½	3,848 (6.10%)	1,629	7,325
32nd	60	35	36	2,153 (3.41%)	2,915	10,477
33rd	32	27	36	3,987 (6.32%)	989	6,266
35th	92	5	12½	781 (1.24%)	1,067	6,216
36th	0	23	21	549 (.87%)	600	1,928
37th	50	11	30	1,495 (2.37%)	977	4,266
42nd	125	39	55	1,317 (2.09%)	2,644	11,275
77th	47	66	71½	750 (1.19%)	1,992	8,505
78th	17	21	21	432 (.68%)	1,384	5,861
79th	28	17	19½	1,077 (1.71%)	1,419	5,331
80th	1	17	38	1,813 (2.87%)	1,132	5,000
81st	31	0	5½	101 (.16%)	251	973
82nd	70	27	17	845 (1.34%)	1,298	6,248
88th	28	0	0	3	29	89
89th	55	28	48	5,061 (8.02%)	1,433	5,858
91st	15	14	34	2,412 (3.82%)	1,414	4,364
92nd	51	2	8	38 (.06%)	176	1,466

In General Pershing's Final Report the deaths in the A. F. F. to Sept. 1, 1919, are accounted for as follows: killed in action, 35,556; died of battle wounds, 15,130; (total battle deaths, 50,686); died of other wounds and injuries, 5,660; died of disease, 24,786; (total deaths, 81,141). A more inclusive report gives the total of deaths in the U. S. Army April 6, 1917 to Sept. 1, 1919, from all causes and in all places, as 116,492. The number of those wounded in action is placed at 205,690.

**Thirteenth Division**, organized at Camp Lewis, American Lake, Wash., after July 10, 1918; the personnel consisted of selective service men with the 1st and 44th Regular Army Infantry Regiments and some non-commissioned officers and enlisted men as a nucleus; ready for overseas service, Nov. 1; demobilization of the personnel not belonging to the regular organization, Jan.-March, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Joseph D. Leitch.

*Insignia:* On a disc of blue a red horseshoe with the opening to the top: in this opening a black cat and underneath the numerals "13."

**Fourteenth Division** (Wolverine), organized at Camp Custer, Mich., July 29, 1918; with the 10th and 40th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; Artillery Brigade organized, Aug. 10; the 214th Field Signal Battalion, organized at Fort Leavenworth, Kans., arrived July 25; the 214th Regiment of Engineers, organized at Camp Forrest, Ga., arrived, Oct. 31; demobilization of all units not belonging to the Regular Army took place, Jan. 27-Feb. 1919.

*Commanders:* Col. Samuel Burkhardt, Jr., July 28, 1918; Brig. Gen. H. L. Laubach, Sept. 5; Maj. Gen. Grote Hutcheson, Nov. 9.

*Insignia:* A yellow disc containing the head of a wolverine in black, on a green shield.

**Fifteenth Division**, organized at Camp Logan, Tex., Aug. 28, 1918, with the 43rd and

57th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; artillery organized at Camp Stanley, Tex., from National Army Cavalry, and the Engineer Regiment and Train, at Camp Humphreys, Va.; demobilization of all units not belonging to the Regular Army took place, Dec., 1918-Feb., 1919.

*Commanders:* Col. D. J. Baker, Aug. 28, 1918; Brig. Gen. Guy V. Henry, Sept. 11.

*Insignia:* A white rattlesnake.

**Sixteenth Division**, organized at Camp Kearney, Cal., Aug. 1918, with the 21st and 32nd Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; Artillery Brigade organized, Sept. 13, 1918, and the Engineer Regiment, on Sept. 28, at Camp Humphreys, Va.; demobilization of all units not in the Regular Army, Feb.-March, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. David C. Shanks.

**Seventeenth Division**, organized at Camp Beauregard, Alexandria, La., Aug., 1918, with the 5th and 29th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; artillery brigade organized at Camp Bowie, Tex., and the engineer regiment, at Camp Humphreys, Va.; demobilization of all organizations not belonging to the Regular Army took place in Jan. 1919.

*Commanders:* Col. H. E. Jackson, Aug. 6, 1918; Col. James A. Irons, Sept. 1; Brig. Gen. Robert W. Mearns, Nov. 1; Maj. Gen. Henry C. Hodges, Jr., Jan. 8, 1919.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

**Eighteenth Division**, organized at Camp Travis, Tex., on Aug. 21, 1918, with the 19th and 35th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; Artillery Brigade organized at Camp Stanley, Tex., and the Engineer Regiment at Camp Humphreys, Va.; demobilization of all organizations except those belonging to the Regular Army, Jan. 17-Feb. 14, 1919.

*Commanding General:* Brig. Gen. G. H. Estes.

*Insignia:* The figure "18" on a green cactus plant, under which is written, *Noli me tangere*.

**Nineteenth Division** (Twilight), organized at Camp Dodge, Iowa, Sept. 1, 1918, with the 2nd and 14th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; Artillery Brigade organized at Camp Bowie, Tex., and later went to Fort Sill, Okla.; the Engineer Regiment organized at Camp Humphreys, Va.

*Commanders:* Col. W. C. Bennett, Sept. 1, 1918; Col. Armand I. Lasseigne, Sept. 26; Brig. Gen. Benjamin T. Simmons, Oct. 25.

*Insignia:* A black triangle with white tips on a red circle on khaki ground.

**Twentieth Division**, organized at Camp Sevier, S. C., Aug. 12, 1918, with the 48th and 50th Regular Army Infantry Regiments as a nucleus; Artillery Brigade organized at Camp Jackson, S. C. Demobilization of all organizations not belonging to the Regular Army, Jan. 17-Feb. 28, 1919.

*Commanders:* Col. Louis J. Van Schaick, Aug. 9, 1918; Col. Lawrence B. Simonds, Aug. 18; Col. William F. Grote, Aug. 27; Brig. Gen. F. Leroy Sweetser, Sept. 30.

### NATIONAL GUARD DIVISIONS— 26 TO 42

**Twenty-sixth Division** (Yankee), organized in Boston, Mass., Aug. 22, 1917, from National Guard of New England, together with National Army troops from Camp Devens; to France (partly through English ports), Sept.-Oct.; established headquarters at Neufchâteau, Oct. 31; into line in Chemin des Dames sector, Feb. 6, 1918; relieved, March 18; entered La Reine, northwest of Toul, March 31; moved to area east of Meaux, June 28; marched to area northwest of Château-Thierry and took over the Pas Fini sector; advanced in Aisne-Marne offensive (2nd Battle of the Marne), June 18-25; marched to vicinity of La Ferté; moved to Châtillon training area, Aug. 1-3; moved *via* Bar-le-Duc area to Troyon sector where it entered line in St. Mihiel salient, Aug. 25-Sept. 12; attacked, Sept. 12; consolidated and occupied Troyon sector, Sept. 13-Oct. 7; moved as Army Reserve to vicinity of Verdun; engaged in operations there, Oct. 18-Nov. 11; proceeded to 8th Training area; established headquarters at Montigny-le-Roi, Nov. 23.

*Commanders:* Brig. Gen. Peter E. Traub, Oct. 31, 1917; Maj. Gen. Clarence R. Edwards, Nov. 11; Brig. Gen. Frank E. Bamford, Oct. 24, 1918.

*Insignia:* A blue monogram "Y D" on a diamond of khaki.

**Twenty-seventh Division**, organized at Camp Wadsworth, S. C., in Sept. 1917, with the New York National Guard as its nucleus; was transported to France via Newport News, Va.,

May-July, 1918; after training, it entered the line with British units opposite Mt. Kemmel; occupied Dickebush sector, Belgium, Aug. 20; part of front line in attack on Vierstaadt Ridge, Aug. 31; in action near Bony, Sept. 24-Oct. 1; entered line in the St. Soupiet sector and crossed Selle River in attack on the Jonc de Mer Ridge.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. John F. O'Ryan.

*Insignia:* A black circle with a red border in which are the letters "N Y D" in monogram, surrounded by the stars of the constellation Orion.

**Twenty-eighth Division** (Keystone), organized at Camp Hancock, Ga., from Pennsylvania National Guard, in August, 1917, and reorganized, Nov. 15; to France, via Camp Upton, April-May, 1918; after training with the British near Nielles les Bléquin and with the French at Gonesse, moved to a sector near the Marne; after some units had seen action at Hill 204 and on the Marne front, the entire division entered a sector on the Ourcq River, July 27; rested near Jaulgonne, July 31-Aug. 6; engaged in line on Vesle River, Aug. 7-Sept. 8; relieved and moved to position south of the Argonne Forest; advanced in the offensive of Sept. 26; relieved, Oct. 9, and moved to area near Commercy; held a sector near Thiaucourt, Oct. 16-Nov. 11.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. C. M. Clement, to Dec. 11, 1917; Maj. Gen. Charles H. Muir, Dec. 15, 1917; Maj. Gen. William H. Hay, Oct. 24, 1918.

*Insignia:* A red keystone.

**Twenty-ninth Division**, (Blue and Gray), organized at Camp McClellan, Ala., July 1917, from National Guard of the District of Columbia, N. J., Del., Md. and Va. (later, Delaware troops were withdrawn and organized into pioneer infantry units); overseas, June-July, 1918; after training, moved to Haute Alsace, where it occupied the centre sector, Aug. 10-Sept. 23; further training near Belfort; assigned to American First Army for Meuse-Argonne; placed in reserve of the 17th French Corps; advanced in the Grand Montagne sector, north of Verdun, Sept. 26-Oct. 30; stationed, after the Armistice, at Bourbonne-les-Bains; returned to the United States, May 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Charles G. Morton.

*Insignia:* A circle bisected by two half circles, reversed and joined (Korean symbol of good luck), one-half of circle blue, other gray.

**Thirtieth Division** (Old Hickory), organized at Camp Sevier, S. C., in Oct., 1917, from old 9th National Guard Division (Tenn. and North and South Carolina), augmented by selective service men from these states and from Ind., Ill., Ia., Minn. and N. D.; transferred overseas, May-June, 1918; in Belgium with the British; took over Canal sector near Ypres, Aug. 17; engaged in battle before Mt. Kemmel, Aug. 31-Sept. 1; in reserve until Sept. 17; entered Beaurevoir sector with British, Sept. 22; participated in battle of Bellicourt, Sept. 29-30; advanced on line near Montbrehain, Oct. 4-8; took part in battle of La Selle River, Oct. 17-20; the Artillery, not present for operations with the Division, was active in the Toul Sector, St. Mihiel offensive, Meuse-Argonne offensive and the Woivre sector.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. John F. Morrison, Oct. 1917; Maj. Gen. C. P. Townsley, Nov. 20-Dec. 17; Maj. Gen. George W. Read, Apr. 27, 1918; Maj. Gen. Edward M. Lewis, Aug. 10.

**Insignia:** On a maroon background a monogram in blue, letters "O" and "H" ("Old Hickory," the nickname of Andrew Jackson), Roman numerals "XXX" on cross bar of the H.

**Thirty-first Division** (Dixie), organized at Camp Wheeler, Ga., Oct. 1, 1917, from National Guard of Ga., Ala. and Fla. augmented by National Army drafts from Ill. and Mich.; transferred to France, Sept.-Nov. 1918; designated as a replacement division; sent to Le Mans area.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. Francis J. Kernan, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. John L. Hayden, Sept. 18; Maj. Gen. Francis H. French, March 15, 1918; Maj. Gen. Le Roy S. Lyon, May 15.

**Insignia:** The letters "DD" back to back, in red on a khaki shield.

**Thirty-second Division**, organized at Camp McArthur, Tex., July-Sept. 1917; National Guard from Mich., and Wis.; to France, Feb.-March, 1918 (15 men lost when the Tuscania carrying the 107th Sanitary Train was torpedoed, Feb. 5); designated as replacement division, with headquarters at Prauthuy, Haute Marne, Feb. 24; changed to a combat unit and moved into a sector in Alsace; on the Ourcq in the Aisne-Marne offensive, July 30; advanced, driving enemy back north of the Vesle; northeast of Soissons, with the French, Aug. 28; helped out-flank Germans on Chemin-des-Dames, capturing strong position on Juvigny plateau; relieved, Sept. 2, and sent to Joinville for rest; to Meuse-Argonne front, Sept. 20; entered front line before the Kriemhilde Stellung near Romagne-sous-Montfaucon, Sept. 30; continued attacking for three weeks; relieved, Oct. 20; entered line at Dun-sur-Meuse bridgehead, Nov. 6; attacked east of the Meuse, Nov. 10; part of Third Army; occupied a sector in the Coblenz bridgehead; returned to the United States, May, 1919.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. James Parker, Aug. 26; Maj. Gen. William G. Haan.

**Insignia:** A flying red arrow with a red cross bar in the middle.

**Thirty-third Division** (Prairie), organized at Camp Logan, Houston, Tex., Aug. 1917, with Ill. National Guard as a nucleus; to France, via Camp Merritt, N. J., May-June, 1918; sent to Huppy area, near Abbéville, then to the entraining area; trained under the British in Amiens sector, participating in small operations; to area of the First American Army, Toul sector, Aug. 23; in region of Tronville-en-Barrois, Aug. 26; sent to Verdun, Sept. 5; relieved the 120th French Division; pivot of the 3rd American Corps in Meuse-Argonne, Sept. 26-Oct. 6; operated with French 17th Army Corps east of the Meuse; relieved and moved to Troyon-sur-Meuse sector on St. Mihiel front; relieved 79th Division, Oct. 23, 24 and 25; engaged in several minor operations; established in Luxembourg, Dec. 1918-Apr. 1919; returned to the United States in May. The Artillery Brigade served other divisions and the 33rd Division was supported by other artillery throughout.

**Commanding General:** Maj. Gen. George Bell, Jr., Aug. 16, 1917.

**Insignia:** A yellow cross on a black circle.

**Thirty-fourth Division** (Sandstorm), organized at Camp Cody, N. M., Oct. 1917; National Guard from Minn., Ia., Neb., North and South Dakota; overseas, Sept.-Oct. 1918; ordered to Le Mans area; was broken up; began return to the United States by individual units in December.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. A. P. Blocksom, Sept. 18, 1917-May 7, 1918; Maj. Gen. William R. Smith, Sept. 28-Oct. 10; Maj. Gen. Beaumont B. Buck, Oct. 17-Nov. 7; Brig. Gen. John A. Johnson, Nov. 7-Nov. 11.

**Insignia:** A black oval encircling a red bovine skull.

**Thirty-fifth Division**, organized at Camp Doniphan, Fort Sill, Okla., Sept. 1917; National Guard of Mo. and Kans.; to France (via England) Apr.-May 1918; trained with the British in the Eu and the Arches areas; into trenches in the Vosges region; moved to St. Mihiel sector and acted as army reserve there; relieved a French division in Grange le Compte sector; took part in Meuse-Argonne offensive (in Vauquois sector), Sept. 26-Oct. 1; took over Sommedieu sector, Oct. 12; to training area near Commercy, Nov. 9.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. W. M. Wright, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. N. F. McClure, June 15, 1918; Maj. Gen. Peter M. Traub.

**Insignia:** The Santa Fe Cross.

**Thirty-sixth Division** (Lone Star or Panther), organized at Camp Bowie, Tex., Aug. 25-Oct. 15, 1917, officers and men largely from Tex. and Okla.; to France via Camp Mills, L. I., and Hoboken, July-Aug. 1918; Champagne area, Sept. 27; in operations of the 4th French Army, advancing to Aisne River, Oct. 6-28; rest area.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. E. St. John Greble, and Maj. Gen. W. R. Smith.

**Insignia:** Light blue Indian arrow head on a round khaki patch with a khaki "T."

**Thirty-seventh Division** (Buckeye), organized at Camp Sheridan, Montgomery, Ala., Aug.-Oct. 1917, with Ohio National Guard as a nucleus; overseas, June-July, 1918; trained in the Bourmont area; in Vosges Mountains, Aug. 4, for training under 6th French Corps; entered the Argonne drive at Avocourt Sept. 20; relieved, after advance to Cierges, Oct. 1; sent to hold portion of line in St. Mihiel sector; moved to Belgium, Oct. 18; attached to French Army, 30th Corps, Oct. 22; relieved, after advance across the Escaut (Scheldt) River, Nov. 4-5; rested at Thielt; re-entered lines along Escaut River (headquarters, Syngem) with 34th French Corps, Nov. 8; forced crossing of the river, Nov. 10-11; advance to Dickele and Hindelgem, morning of Nov. 11. The Artillery never served its own division, but was active with several other units.

**Commanding Generals:** Maj. Gen. Charles G. Treat, to Apr. 24, 1918; Maj. Gen. Charles S. Farnsworth, May 8 until return to the United States.

**Insignia:** A red circle with a white border.

**Thirty-eighth Division** (Cyclone), organized at Camp Shelby, Miss., Aug. 1917; National Guard from Ky., W. Va., and Ind.; arrived in France, Oct. 1918, and ordered to the Le Mans

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

area; broken up, and returned to the United States in December.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. William H. Sage; Brig. Gen. Edward M. Lewis; Brig. Gen. Henry H. Whitney; Brig. Gen. William V. Judson.

*Insignia:* A shield, the right half blue, the left half red, "CY" in monogram, superimposed.

**Thirty-ninth Division**, organized at Camp Beauregard, La., in Sept. 1917; National Guard from La., Miss., and Ark.; overseas, July-Sept. 1918; ordered to the St. Florent area (sur Cher) and designated as the 5th Depot Division; in training for replacement work; the training cadres, transferred to St. Aignan (1st Depot Division) Nov. 1; skeletonized Division returned to United States, Dec. 1918-Jan. 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Henry C. Hodges.

*Insignia:* A bull's eye on a khaki square, the inner circle red; the middle white; the outer one black.

**The Fortieth Division** (Sunshine), organized at Camp Kearney, Cal., Sept. 1917; National Guard from Cal., Nev., Utah, Colo., Ariz. and N. M.; to France, Aug. 1918; ordered to La Guerche (Cher) as a replacement division; became 6th Depot Division; personnel used as replacements for combat divisions.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Frederick S. Strong.

*Insignia:* A golden sun on a blue circle.

**The Forty-first Division** (Sunset), organized at Camp Greene, N. C., Sept. 1917; National Guard of Wash., Ore., Mont., Idaho and Wyo.; to France, Oct.-Dec. 1917; as 1st Depot Division, ordered to St. Aignan training area; broken up into training cadres for replacement work; 66th Artillery Brigade, intact, attached to 1st Corps, July 1, 1918, continued to serve as Corps and Army Artillery, active in Marne-Aisne, St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne offensives.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Hunter Liggett, Aug. 16, 1917; Brig. Gen. Henry Jervey, Sept. 19, 1917; Brig. Gen. George Le R. Irwin, Dec. 6; Brig. Gen. Richard Coulter, Jan. 23; Brig. Gen. Robert Alexander, Feb. 14; Brig. Gen. William S. Scott, Aug. 10; Maj. Gen. John E. McMahon, Oct. 24; Brig. Gen. Eli Cole, Nov. 7.

*Insignia:* Setting sun in gold on red background, over blue stripe.

**Forty-second Division** (Rainbow), organized Aug. 1917, and completely assembled at Camp Mills, Sept. 13; National Guard units from every part of the United States; overseas, Oct.-Dec. 1917; after several transfers, trained near Lunéville, serving in line with French units, beginning Feb. 16, 1918; in Baccarat sector, March 23; relieved, June 21, and moved to Camp de Châlons; thrown into line as reserve in sectors of Souain and Experance; withdrawn, July 18; took over front of 1st U. S. Army Corps near Épiéds, July 25; advanced until relieved, Aug. 3; intensive training in Bourmont area; moved to St. Mihiel salient; attacked from the south; relieved, Oct. 1; moved to Bois de Montfaucon, Oct. 6, as reserve of 5th Army Corps; in the Meuse-Argonne, Oct. 13; relieved, Oct. 31; returned, Nov. 1, and advanced to the Meuse and

heights south of Sedan; part of Army of Occupation (headquarters at Ahrweiler, Germany).

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. William A. Mann, Sept. 1917; Maj. Gen. Charles T. Menoher, Dec. 14; Maj. Gen. Charles D Rhodes, Nov. 7, 1918.

*Insignia:* Rainbow on a field of black.

### NATIONAL ARMY DIVISIONS— 76 TO 100

**Seventy-sixth Division** (Liberty Bell), organized at Camp Devens, Mass., Sept. 1917; men from Maine, N. H., R. I., and Conn.; transferred overseas, July, 1918; sent as a depot division to the St. Aignan area; broken up into training cadres and used for replacements, special units sent forward as corps and army troops.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. H. F. Hodges, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. William Weigel, Nov. 27; Maj. Gen. F. H. Hodges, Feb. 13, 1918.

*Insignia:* A blue liberty bell on a khaki square.

**Seventy-seventh Division** (Metropolitan), organized at Camp Upton, Aug. 30, 1917; officers from New York City and men from New York City and Long Island, N. Y. (to fill vacancies caused by transfers to Camp Greenwood, others came from Camp Devens, Mass., and Northern New York); overseas, after March 28, 1918; trained with British near St. Omer (artillery brigade trained at Souges); moved to Baccarat sector, June 16 (artillery brigade relieved French artillery there, July 12); near Fismes in Vesle sector, Aug. 4; entered line, Aug. 11; attacked north of Vesle River, as part of 6th French Army, Aug. 18; crossed the Vesle, Sept. 5; took place in Argonne trenches, Sept. 21-25; attacked on left of First American Army, Sept. 25, in Argonne Forest; was relieved Oct. 15-16 and concentrated east of Cornay; returned, Oct. 25, and continued attacking until Nov. 11, advancing from St. Juvin to the Meuse.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. J. Franklin Bell, Aug. 18, 1917; Maj. Gen. George B. Duncan, May 18, 1918; Brig. Gen. Evan M. Johnson, Aug. 24; Maj. Gen. Robert Alexander, Aug. 31.

*Insignia:* A gold Statue of Liberty on a truncated triangle of flag blue.

**Seventy-eighth Division** (Lightning), organized Aug. 1917, at Camp Dix, N. J. (majority of the officers from New York State, men from N. Y., N. J. and Del.); overseas, May-June, 1918; infantry trained behind Hazebrouck front in British area, June 17-July 19, then east of St. Pol until Aug. 19; moved to Bourbonne-les-Bains area; moved to St. Mihiel front, Aug. 31-Sept. 10; relieved 2nd and 5th Divisions, Sept. 15-16 (artillery brigade supporting 90th Division); occupied Limey sector until Oct. 4; relieved and rejoined by artillery brigade; moved to Argonne Forest; relieved 77th Division, Oct. 16; in line until Nov. 5; moved back (minus artillery brigade and ammunition train), Nov. 6, to west of Varennes, then to Florent, Les Islettes, and south of St. Meneshould; entrained from Semur Training Area, Nov. 15.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Chase W. Kennedy, Aug. 23, 1917; Maj. Gen. Hugh L.

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

Scott, Dec. 28; Brig. Gen. James T. Dean, March 16, 1918; Maj. Gen. James H. McRae, April 20.

*Insignia:* A red semi-circle with lightning flash in white.

**Seventy-ninth Division** (Liberty), organized Aug. 1917, at Camp Meade, Md. (most of the officers from Penn.; earlier increments of selected men from Penn., Md. and District of Columbia); later increments from N. Y., Ohio, R. I. and W. Va.; transferred overseas, July-Aug., 1918; trained in 12th and 10th Training Areas; moved to Robert-Espagne area; in Montfaucon sector, Sept. 16; first offensive, in Meuse-Argonne drive, advancing until Sept. 30, when relieved; passed to command of 2nd Colonial French Corps; moved to Troyon sector, Oct. 8; relieved, Oct. 26, entered Grand Montagne sector; took part in second phase of Meuse-Argonne offensive, advancing until Nov. 11; remained and took over area from the Meuse to Fresnes-en-Woevre until Nov. 26; moved to Souilly area, south of Verdun, Dec. 27.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Joseph E. Kuhn, Aug. 25, 1917 to Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* A gray Lorraine cross on a blue shield outlined in gray.

**Eightieth Division** (Blue Ridge), organized at Camp Lee, Va., Aug. 27, 1917; officers from N. J., Md. and Va.; men from Western Penn., Va. and W. Va.; overseas, May-June, 1918; moved into Third British Army sector July 5-Aug. 18; after further training moved to Stainville, Sept. 1, and later to Tronville area as reserve during St. Mihiel operation; one infantry regiment and one machine gun battalion served with the French; commencing Sept. 14, moved into the Argonne and, Sept. 26-29, attacked at Bethincourt; Oct. 4-12, advanced near Ouisy; after relief and re-equipment advanced from the line St. Georges-St. Juvin, Nov. 1-6; returned to the United States.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Adelbert Cronkhite.

*Insignia:* A shield outlined in white on a khaki background with three blue mountains superimposed.

**Eighty-first Division** organized at Camp Jackson, S. C., in Sept. 1917, of National Army drafts from N. C., S. C., and Fla.; overseas, July-Aug. 1918; after training moved to Vosges where it held the line (mid-Aug.-Oct. 19) as part of the 33rd French Corps; assigned to the American First Army and attached to the 2nd Colonial Corps (French) as reserve in the Sommedieue sector; relieved the 35th Division, Nov. 6; Nov. 9 attacked German positions in the Woevre plain; after Armistice at Châtillon-sur-Seine; returned to the United States, May 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. Chas. H. Barth, Aug. 25, 1917; Maj. Gen. Chas. J. Bailey, Oct. 8, 1917-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* Silhouette of a wildcat on khaki circle. Color of wildcat varies.

**Eighty-second Division** (All-American), organized at Camp Gordon, Ga., Aug. 25, 1917; majority of officers were from Ga., Ala. and Fla., men from Ga., Ala. and Tenn. Oct. 10, majority of enlisted men transferred to other divisions, and men from every state in the Union sent from Camps Devens, Upton, Dix, Meade and Lee;

overseas, April-May, 1918; after training entered the Toul sector with a French division, June 17-July 18; occupied sector alone, July 18-Aug. 9; took over Marbache sector astride the Moselle, Aug. 19-Sept. 21; transferred to Thiaucourt area, entered Meuse-Argonne offensive north of Varennes, Oct. 6-30; withdrawn into training areas; after Armistice stationed at Prauthoy; returned to the United States, April, 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Eben Swift, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. William P. Burnham, May 1918; Maj. Gen. George B. Duncan, Oct. 10; Maj. Gen. William P. Burnham, Oct. 24; Maj. Gen. George B. Duncan, Nov. 7-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* Letters "AA" in gold on circle of blue, superimposed on red square.

**The Eighty-third Division**, organized at Camp Sherman, Ohio, Sept. 1917; drafted men from Ohio and W. Va.; overseas, June, 1918; in Le Mans area, broken up; artillery brigade and special units sent forward as corps and army troops; others, replacements for combat divisions. Returned to the United States, Jan. 1919.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Edwin F. Glenn.

*Insignia:* A black triangle on which is golden monogram "O. H. I. O."

**Eighty-fourth Division** (Lincoln), organized at Camp Taylor, Ky., Sept. 1917; men from Ind. and Ky.; overseas, Aug. 1918. In the Le Mans area, broken up; cadres formed for training personnel as replacements for combat divisions; returned to United States, Jan. 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. Wilbert E. Wilder, Aug. 25; Maj. Gen. Harry O. Hale, Oct. 6, 1917 to Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* A white disc, surrounded by red circle, on which is "Lincoln 84" in blue and an axe with red head and blue handle.

**Eighty-fifth Division** (Custer), organized at Camp Custer, Mich., in Oct. 1917, men from Mich., and Wis.; overseas, July-Aug. 1918; designated as a Depot Division; ordered to Pouilly; broken up; special units sent forward as corps and army troops, and the infantry used as replacements to the combat divisions.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. J. T. Dickman, Aug. 17, 1917; Brig. Gen. S. W. Miller, Nov. 24; Maj. Gen. James Parker, Dec. 13; Brig. Gen. Benjamin C. Morse, Feb. 21, 1918; Maj. Gen. C. W. Kennedy, Feb. 27-Nov. 11.

*Insignia:* Khaki circle on which are the letters "CD" in red.

**Eighty-sixth Division** (Black Hawk), organized at Camp Grant, Ill., Sept. 1917; men from Ill.; transferred overseas, Sept.-Oct. 1918; in the Le Mans area broken up and cadres formed for training replacements for combat divisions.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Thomas H. Barry, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. L. W. V. Kennon, March 14, 1918; Maj. Gen. Charles H. Martin, April 18-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* A black hawk with monogram "BH" on red shield.

**Eighty-seventh Division** (Acorn), organized at Camp Pike, Ark., Sept. 1917; men from Ark., La., and Miss.; overseas, Aug.-Sept. 1918; turned over to the Service of Supply; ordered to Pons; broken up; units placed on various

## HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

work in intermediate section; cadres of the division returned to the United States, Dec. 1918.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Samuel D. Sturgis, Aug. 26, 1917; Brig. Gen. Robert C. Van Vliet, Nov. 27; Maj. Gen. Samuel D. Sturgis, March 10-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* Brown acorn on green circle.

**Eighty-eighth Division**, organized at Camp Dodge, Ia., Sept. 1917; men from N. D., S. D., Minn., Neb., Ia. and Ill.; overseas, Aug.-Sept. 1918; after training, Sept. 14, placed under 4th French Army; Sept. 23, relieved the 38th French Division in centre sector (Haute Alsace); Nov. 2, placed under 4th American Corps and moved to Lagney area as part of 2nd American Reserve. After Armistice, stationed at Gondrecourt; returned to United States, Jan. 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Edward H. Plummer, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. R. N. Getty, Nov. 26; Maj. Gen. Edward H. Plummer, Feb. 19, 1918; Brig. Gen. R. N. Getty, Mar. 15; Brig. Gen. William D. Beach, May 24; Maj. Gen. William Weigel, Sept. 28; Brig. Gen. William D. Beach, Oct. 24; Maj. Gen. William Weigel, Nov. 7-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* Two figure "8's" crossed at right angles.

**Eighty-ninth Division** (Middle West), organized at Camp Funston, Kan., Sept. 1917; men mainly from Kan., Mo., and Colo.; moved to Camp Mills, L. I., May 1918; to France, June-July, 1918 and after training moved to Toul front, Aug. 5; Sept. 12, participated in St. Mihiel offensive as right division of 4th American Corps, advanced 21 kilometres, capturing Beney, Essey, Bouillonville, Pannes and Xammes; relieved, Oct. 7, sent to Recicourt area as part of 1st Army Reserve; Oct. 12, moved forward in rear of 32nd Division of 5th American Corps in Argonne offensive; Oct. 20 in line along Sommerance-Romagne road; attacked Nov. 1-11; part of Third Army in Germany; consigned area bounded by Kreise of Prum, Bitburg, Trier, and Saarburg, headquarters at Kyllburg; returned to United States, May 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Leonard Wood, Aug. 27, 1917; Brig. Gen. Frank L. Winn, Nov. 26; Maj. Gen. Wood, Apr. 12, 1918; Brig. Gen. Frank L. Winn, May 24; Maj. Gen. William M. Wright, Sept. 14; Maj. Gen. Frank L. Winn, Oct. 24.

*Insignia:* A black "W" in a black circle.

**Ninetieth Division** (Alamo), organized Aug. 25, 1917, at Camp Travis, Tex.; men from Tex. and Okla.; sent away great numbers to fill up Regular and National Guard divisions and to form army corps and S. O. S. troops; filled up with men from other camps; overseas, June, 1918; majority went first to England; after training in France took part in St. Mihiel operation, and in Meuse-Argonne; was under fire from Aug. 20-Nov. 11 with exception of 7 days; was 75 days without relief; after Armistice formed part of Army of Occupation, occupying the Kreise of Daun, Wittlick and Berncastel.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Henry T. Allen.

*Insignia:* Red monogram, letters "T" "O."

**Ninety-first Division** (Wild West), organized at Camp Lewis, Wash., Aug. 25, 1917;

majority of officers from Cal., Wash., and Ore., men from Cal., Ore., Wash., Utah, Idaho, Nev., Mont., and Alaska; overseas, June-July 1918; part of reserves in St. Mihiel offensive; Meuse-Argonne offensive, Sept. 26-Oct. 6, advancing from west of Avocourt to north of Gesnes; Oct. 19 passed to command of the King of Belgium; Oct. 31-Nov. 11 under direction of French Army in Belgium took part in Lys-Scheldt offensive; Nov. 22, detachment participated in ceremony of entrance into City of Brussels of King and Queen of Belgium; after Armistice, in Le Mans area; returned to United States, March-April, 1919.

*Commanding Generals:* Maj. Gen. Harry A. Greene, Aug. 25, 1917; Brig. Gen. James A. Irons, Nov. 24; Brig. Gen. Fred S. Foltz, Dec. 23; Maj. Gen. Harry A. Greene, March 2, 1918; Brig. Gen. Fred S. Foltz, June 19; Maj. Gen. William H. Johnston, Aug. 31-Nov. 11.

*Insignia:* A green fir tree.

**Ninety-second Division** (Buffaloes), organized Oct. 29, at Camps Funston, Grant, Dodge, Upton, Meade and Dix, of officers and men from all parts of the United States; transferred overseas, June 1918; after training, went into line at St. Die in quiet Vosges sector, Aug. 29-Sept. 20; from Sept. 25-30 in reserve of 1st Army Corps in Argonne-Meuse sector; from Sept. 24-30, 368th Infantry brigaded with 11th Cuirassiers under command of 38th Army Corps (French), as liaison detachments between French and Americans. In line, in Marbache sector, Oct. 9-Nov. 15.

*Commanding Generals:* Brig. Gen. Charles C. Ballou, Oct. 30; Brig. Gen. John E. McMahon, Nov. 23; Maj. Gen. Charles C. Ballou, Dec. 3; Brig. Gen. James B. Erwin, Jan. 12, 1918; Maj. Gen. Charles C. Ballou, March 12-Nov. 11, 1918.

*Insignia:* A buffalo in black circle on khaki patch.

**Ninety-third** (colored) **Division**, organized at Camp Stuart, Newport News, Va., in Jan. 1918, but not to full strength, only 185th and 186th Infantry Brigades being formed; transferred overseas, April 1918; broken up and brigaded with French; served in different parts of the line; returned to the United States, Feb. 1919.

*Insignia:* French helmet in blue on a black disc.

**Ninety-fifth Division** organization begun at Camp Sherman, Ohio, Sept. 1918. Artillery brigade and ammunition train to be organized at Camp Taylor, Ky.; demobilized in December.

*Commanding General:* Brig. Gen. M. C. Smith.

**Ninety-sixth Division**, organization begun at Camp Wadsworth, Sept. 1918, not completed; at Armistice, strength, under 3,000 men.

*Commanding General:* Maj. Gen. Guy Carleton.

**Ninety-seventh Division**, organized at Camp Cody, Deming, N. M.; men mainly from Okla. and Minn. At Armistice strength of entire division under 9,000 men.

*Commanding Officers:* Col. C. A. Martin, Sept. 26, 1918; Brig. Gen. James R. Lindsay, Oct. 19, 1918.

**Ninety-eighth and Ninety-ninth Divisions** existed in name only.

**Hundredth Division** was never completely organized.

# INDEX TO HISTORY OF WAR

Where an event, a person or a place is the subject of an illustration, the number of the page is printed in italics.

- A**
- Aa River**, Germans reach, 725  
**Abbas Hilmi**, Khedive of Egypt, 382-83  
**Abbéville**, Inter-Allied Supreme Council of War at, 1174  
**Abdul Hamid**, Sultan of Turkey, 75, 334-35  
**Abdulla Kerim Pasha**, Turkish commander, 632  
**Abercom**, German surrender at, 973  
**Abblain**, fighting in, 308  
**Abblain Cemetery**, fighting for, 307-08  
**Aboukir**, battle-cruiser, 209, 233, 236  
**Abysinia**, as neutral, 5  
**Acadians**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
**Achi Baba**, heights of, 339, 343  
**Adalia**, mandate for, 1338  
**Adallan Coast Region**, promised to Italy, 360  
**Adamello**, on the heights of, 1175  
**Adamello Ridge**, operations on, 588  
**Adamello sector**, successful venture in, 1174  
**Ader**, Clement, and flying machines, 249  
**Adige River**, in the Trentino, 361, 590  
**Adige Valley and River**, during Italian campaigns, 578, 582, 768  
**Adjutant-General's Department**, of A. E. F., 1169  
**Administrative Committee**, of National Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Admiralty**, declares North Sea to be military area, 262  
     in control of movements of shipping, 1081  
**Adrianople**, city and vilayet, 62, 64, 335  
**Adriatic Sea**, cession of islands in, 1337  
     Italian fleet in the, 578, 586  
     Italy's claims to territory on, 1327, 1338  
     question of Slav outlet to, 31  
     submarines in, 239  
**Advance Guard, Forest of**, entered, 132  
**Aegean**, Austrian access to, 31  
     cession of islands in, 1338  
**Aërial**, a house-boat on the Tigris, 626  
**Aërial Combatant Forces**, of German army, 920  
**Aeroplane**, above the stores of Sheikh Saad, 399  
     American over German lines, 1294  
     at Saloniki, 566  
     bombing, 256, 921, 922  
**Aeroplanes**, armament of, 257  
     development of, 241, 248  
     drop leaflets over Vienna, 929  
     estimate of number in war, 935  
     German raids in 1918, 933  
     in African campaign, 968  
     in Italian offensive, 768, 770  
     manufacture of, 925  
     near Verdun, 439  
     one directs British howitzers, 538  
     raids on England, 664  
     returning after the day's work, 257  
     to be surrendered, 1315  
     two types of army planes, 919  
     use of, 209, 253, 282, 419  
     wild-geese formation, 932  
**Aerostation**, meaning of, 241  
**Aerschot**, outrages at, 102  
     troops passed through, 96  
**Afghanistan**, propaganda in, 634  
**Afghans**, Russian propaganda among, 26  
**Africa**, conquest of German, 407  
     European colonies in, 34, 407  
     Italy's colonial expansion in, 355  
     map showing the four areas of Allied and German fighting in Africa, 409  
     warring states of, 5  
**Agadir**, incident of, 38  
**Agagia**, defeat of, 391  
**Aga Khan**, adhered to Great Britain, 204  
**Agar, John G.**, and Special War Activities, 1239  
**Agro**, an aeroplane, 912  
**Agriculture**, establishing soldiers in, 1054  
     in Germany, 32  
**Ahwaz**, engagement at, 396  
**Ailette River**, dominated by Craonne Plateau, 1028  
     during August offensive, 1134, 1139  
     during second battle of the Aisne, 790, 792, 794, 796-97  
     German positions south of, 802, 804  
**Ailly, Wood of**, fighting in, 304  
**Ain Sadr**, Turkish force at, 386  
**Air**, beginning of war in the, 241  
     compressed, in mortar, 16  
     later developments of war in the, 911  
**Aircraft**, during the war, 21  
     later activities of, 911  
     notice identifying German, 256  
     raids in Italy, 1172  
**Aircraft Service**, of A. E. F., 1166  
**Aire River**, valley of the, in the Argonne, 1294-95, 1298, 1300  
**Airplanes**: see Aeroplanes  
**Air-raids**, on England, 662  
**Air-Service**, of Italy, 585  
**Airship**, by day and by night, 240  
**Aisne**, battle of the, 300, 924  
     maps to illustrate second battle of the, 791, 796  
     second battle of the, 790  
**Aisne River**, actions near, 126, 139-41, 796, 802  
     and the 77th U. S. Division, 1118  
     during August offensive, 1146  
     German offensive on the, 1027-28  
     heights of the, 805, 874, 1134, 1137-40  
**Aisne Valley**, on French front, 790  
**Aitken, Major-General A. E.**, in command Indian contingent, 967  
**Akaba**, Arab base, 850  
**Akaba-Suez Route**, or Pilgrim's Road, 384  
**Akkar Kuf Lake**, overflow of, 762  
**Albania**, as an independent state, 357, 712  
     Austrians driven out of, 1130  
     cession of, 1338  
     gone over to Allies, 380  
     Italy's propaganda in, 356  
     ports occupied by Italy, 587  
     refugees passing through, 375  
     revolts in, 335  
**Albanians**, a Balkan people, 64, 77  
**Albatros**, aeroplane, 250, 252, 258, 912, 920, 924  
**Alberich Stellung**, part of Hindenburg Line, 1137  
**Albert, King of the Belgians**, and August offensive, 1140  
     decree on prices for foodstuffs, 878  
     defied Germany, 92  
     in command of British troops, 1278  
     portrait in group, 996  
     state entry into Bruges, 1309  
**Albert, Dr. Heinrich**, loss of documents, 426  
**Albert**, actions at, 123, 292  
     captured and re-captured, 1015, 1267  
     during Somme battle, 518, 520  
**Albert-Arras Railway**, German resistance along, 1267  
**Albert-Bapaume Road**, and Somme battle, 517, 522, 529, 542, 547-48  
**Albert Plateau**, held by French, 142  
**Albrecht**, Duke of Wurtemberg, German commander, 109, 116, 142  
     portrait, 1137  
**Alcantara**, ship, 475  
**Alcedo**, converted yacht, 1070  
**Alderson, Lieutenant-General E. A. H.**, commander Canadian forces, 195  
     with staff, portrait, 1187  
**Aleppo**, German divisions at, 766  
     Turkish headquarters, 841, 852  
**Alexander the Great**, armies of, 2  
     territory of, 60  
**Alexander II**, Tsar of Russia, 352, 354  
**Alexander, Prince**, addressing officers of the army, 175



- Alexander, Crown Prince**, takes command, 572  
nominated as king, 713
- Alexander**, king of Greece, portrait in group, 709
- Alexander of Battenberg, Prince**, as ruler of Bulgaria, 68-70
- Alexander Park**, in Sofia, 71
- Alexief, General**, chief of the Russian General Staff, 330, 642
- and Russian Revolution, 690, 692, 717
- Alfier**, Italian minister of war, 777-78
- Alfonso**, king of Spain, and Austria-Hungary's peace hopes, 867
- Algéciras**, Conference at, 36, 356
- Algerians**, in 2nd battle of Ypres, 285
- Algiers**, Colonial troops from, 131
- Algonquins**, Indians with Expeditionary Forces, 205
- Ali Dinar**, a sultan of Darfur, 830
- Ali El Gherbi**, cavalry at, 404
- Ali Fuad Pasha**, deported Zionists, 841
- Allard-Méneus, Jean**, death of, 507
- Allemand**, carried, 802
- Allenby, General Sir Edmund H. H.**, cavalry division of, 121, 149  
entering Jerusalem by Jaffa Gate, 844  
full extent of conquests, map, 851  
goes to the East and Palestine, 824, 828, 833  
in France, 514, 808  
portrait, 850
- Allenstein**, action at, 158, 160
- Allied Armies of Occupation**, advance of, 1316
- Allied Bazaar of New York**, for Belgian relief, 889
- Allied Board of Strategy**, formation of, 500
- Allied Maritime Transport Council**, function of, 1084
- Allies**, forces of, 5
- Allies' August Offensive**, area of southern half of, map, 1135
- All-Russian Union of Municipalities**, for war-work, 685
- Alpenkorps**, Bavarian, on Italian front, 774
- Alpini**, Italian mounted troops, 363, 364, 578, 580-84, 588, 592, 767, 782, 1175-76
- Alps**, warfare in the, 363
- Alsace**, campaigns in, 112, 228, 300, 306, 418  
see also Alsace-Lorraine
- Alsace-Lorraine**, ceded to France, 1330  
crownland of, 24, 28, 44  
occupied by French, 1316  
rival territorial claims in, 868  
to be evacuated, and railways abandoned, 1314-15
- Altar of Liberty**, war-loan activities about, 1221
- Altkirch**, capture of, 114
- Altwater, Admiral**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982
- Amade, General d'**, in command French Corps, 341
- Amajlia**, bridge at, 174
- Amance, Plateau d'**, Germans get foothold on, 132
- Amara**, British objective, 396-97
- Ambulance-convoy**, Cossack, 331
- America**, increasing importance, in Italy, 1174
- America**, ship, 1077
- American Daughters of the Revolution**, relief fund, 889
- American Expeditionary Force**, in France, 1101  
started, 750  
Y. M. C. A. with, 1249  
see also Americans, First American Army, United States, U. S. Army, U. S. Army Divisions, etc.
- American Independence Union**, organization of, 425
- American Library Association**, and Y. M. C. A., 1257, 1261
- war-libraries of, 1224, 1231
- American Mine-force**, in the North Sea, 1086
- American Peaceful Embargo Society**, the organization of, 277, 425
- American Relief Committee**, work of, 880
- American Social Hygiene Association**, war-work of, 1233
- American Truth Society**, an organization, 277, 425
- Americans**, and the C. R. B., 877, 894, 895, 901  
at Château-Thierry, 1039, 1114  
cleaning up French village, 1103  
during August offensive, 1135, 1139  
during last northern offensive, 1264
- Americans**, fight with British and Australians, 1274  
graves of the first Americans killed in France, 749  
in Belgium, 879  
in Belleau Wood, 1032, 1112  
in France, 1101, 1151  
in St. Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne, 1287  
naval forces in European waters, 1067  
on leave, Aix les Bains, 1257  
organization of infantry combat division, 853  
regiment in last Italian offensive, 1179-81, 1187  
soldiers preparing lumber, Bordeaux, 1163  
troops and mascot in Lorraine, 1108  
under Carey in last German offensive, 1016, 1274  
see also First American Army, United States, United States Army, United States Army Divisions, Young Men's Christian Association, etc.
- Amiens**, airplanes in, 916  
battle of, 1133, 1204, 1263  
British base at, 1160  
German objective, 123, 125, 1016, 1022
- Amiens-Cambrai Road**, and Cambrai battle, 823
- Amiens Cathedral**, chancel, 1265
- Amman**, raided, and captured, 850-51
- Ammunition**, expenditure of, 10  
loading up at the front, 1204
- Ammunition-train**, Canadian, going to the front, 1161  
organization of, 860
- Amsterdam**, royal palace in, 261  
view in, 261
- Anafarta Heights**, British objective, 348-49
- Anatolia**, remains to Turkey, 1338
- Ancona**, raided, 586
- Ancona**, steamship, 239, 418
- Ancre**, advance near, map, 809  
attacks near, 805  
during last offensive, 1267  
during Somme battle, 511, 517, 520, 529, 551-53  
Germans stopped at, 1015
- Andennes**, massacre of, 100
- Andernach**, recreation centre at, 1255
- Andes**, armed merchantman, 475
- Andrassy, Count**, Austrian Prime-Minister, 354
- Angell, Norman**, influence of, 646
- Angerapp River**, German position at, 320
- Angers**, school for A. E. F. at, 1106
- Anglo-Persian Oil Company**, guard sent to protect pipe-line, 396
- Angola**, Portuguese colony, 414
- Annonay**, experiment of, 242
- Annunzio, Gabriele d'**, adventure at Fiume, 1338  
aviator, 929  
influence of, 360
- Ansaldo Works**, for artillery, 589, 1172
- Anselme, General d'**, on Balkan front, 1125
- Anthoine, General**, French commander, 794, 796, 818-19
- Anti-submarine craft**, use of, 1075-78
- Antwerp**, A. E. F. base at, 1161  
Belgian captives taken in, 103  
clearing harbor of, 1001  
fall of, 143  
fortress of, 91, 95-97  
refugees' discarded possessions, 103  
refugees from, 993  
re-occupied by Belgians, 1316  
ruins in, 993
- Anzac**, on guard, a silhouette, 1010
- Anzac Cove**, final view from H. M. S. Cornwallis, 349  
movements at, 339, 348
- Anzac Mounted Division**, in Desert Corps, 833
- Anzacs**, Australian and New Zealand Army Corps, 186, 197, 344, 384, 419  
at Messines, 816  
engagements in France, 514, 529  
in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
in Somme battle, 529  
work for war loans, 1221
- Aosta, Duchess of**, in Italian Red Cross, 1184  
portrait, 1177
- Aosta, Duke of**, Italian commander, 592, 594, 770-72, 1175  
portrait, 1177
- Apia**, occupied, 198, 223
- Appam**, ship, 475

- Appomattox**, troops surrendered at, 4  
**Apremont**, French objective, 304  
**Arabia**, an autonomous state, 1338  
   Holy Places preserved, 204  
**Arabic**, steamship, 275, 418  
**Arabs**, Beni Taruf, 396  
   in African campaign, 964, 966  
   in Mesopotamia and Palestine, 396, 762, 846  
   rebelled against Italy, 391  
**Arcachon**, naval aviation base at, 1090  
**Archangel**, Mount, Bulgarians entrenched on, 562  
**Archbishops**, of the Catholic Church, on the war, 1235  
   who served in National War Council, 1238  
**Archibald, James J. F.**, arrest of, 426  
**"Archies,"** exploding around aeroplanes, 928  
**Archipelago Division**, formation of, 572  
**Archytas**, flying dove of, 242  
**Archanan**, Turks at, 395  
**Ardennes Region**, Allied attack on, 1027  
**Ardtiti**, and Italy's stand, 782, 1174  
**Arethusa**, vessel, 220  
**Argentina**, loans of, 262  
   remains neutral, 5, 744  
**Argonne**, and German line of defense, 1138-39, 1142, 1147  
   campaign in the, 300-02  
   Franco-American operations on the Meuse-Argonne front, 1287, 1293  
   map showing the advance in the Meuse-Argonne, 1299  
   map to illustrate 1915 fighting in the, 310  
   position of, 139  
**Argonne Forest**, heavily fortified and wired, 1294, 1297  
   movement of artillery through, 451  
**Argus**, H. M. S. aeroplane-carrier, 1094  
**Ariadne**, cruiser, 906  
**Aries**: see Battering-ram  
**Aritetis**, occupied, 415  
**Arkansas**, battleship, 1088  
**Arlandes, Marquis d'**, ascended in balloon, 242  
**Arleux**, taken by Canadians, 1198  
**Armament-plant**, French, 29  
**Armaments**, League plans for reduction of, 1328  
   limitation of, 733  
   U. S. reservation concerning, 1336  
**Armenia**, new state erected, 1338, 1340  
   Russian campaign in, 631  
**Armenians**, massacred, 405, 419  
   refugees in Palestine, 843  
**Armentières**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
   attack in vicinity of, 1019  
   Germans evacuate, 1278  
   occupied, 149  
   on British front, 819  
**Armeux**, British reach, 824  
**Armies**, of Great War, 5  
**Armies of Occupation**, Germany to pay costs of, 1315  
**Armistices**, before and after, map, 1319  
   requested by Germany, 1146, 1279, 1310  
   signing the, 1314  
**Armor**, for the body: see Body-Armor  
**Armory**, of British Bombing Squadron, 921  
**Army-Machine**, organization of American, 1151  
**Army Medical Service**, in Italy, 1184  
**Army Nurse Corps**, of the A. E. F., 1167  
**Army Ordnance**, service of, 1166  
**Arnim, General Sixt von**, German commander, 814  
**Aroostook**, mine-planter, 1086  
**Aras**, attacks on and near, 874, 1017, 1135  
   battle of, 1268  
   blow near, 1135  
   Canadians at, 1207  
   German objective, 141, 149, 151, 291-92, 300, 308  
   northeast and southeast of, map, 806  
   on British front, 787-88, 790, 794, 797, 805-06, 808, 819  
   Petite Place, before and after bombardment, 127  
   taken over by British, 513, 518  
**Aras-Bapaume Road**, Germans behind, 1268  
**Aras-Cambrai Road**, British astride, 1271  
**Aras Cathedral**, in ruins, 810  
**Aras Offensive**, aircraft in, 922  
**Arziro**, retaken, 591  
**Article X**, the heart of the Covenant, 1327  
**Artillery**, Bulgarian, in Macedonia, 1128  
**Artillery**, camouflaged German, 355  
**Artillery**, in action, painting, 544  
**Canadian column** of, 1206  
   dragged up Serbian mountains, 567  
   French, moving forward, 1133  
   in 1st Division, A. E. F., 1105  
   Italian, on the Austro-Italian front, 577  
   railroad equipment for, 3  
   repair-shop at Mehun, 1164  
   rounds fired by, 10  
   see also Ammunition, Guns, Howitzers, Mortars, Shells, etc.  
**Artillery Camp**, British, in France, 299  
**Artillery Regiment**, German, on the march, 641  
**Artillery Train**, French, 799  
**Artois**, French operations, 1915, near Lens in, map, 307  
**Artois Attack**, British and French gains in, map, 303  
**Art-treasures**, protection of Italian, 1185  
**Arusha**, advance to, 969  
**Arz, General von**, Austrian commander, 1307  
**"Ash-cans,"** see Depth-Charge  
**Asia**, warring states of, 5  
**Asiago**, captured by Italy, 1180  
   retaken, 591, 780  
**Asiago Plateau**, and its defense, 768, 780-81  
   Austrian objective, 1175-76  
**Asia Minor**, disposal of Turkish possessions in, 1338  
**Asquith, Mr.**, British Prime Minister, 646, 648, 651, 658, 744  
   in Joint War Council, 500  
**Asquith Government**, in Great Britain, 290, 650  
**Assembly**, organ of the League, 1327  
**Assevillers**, village in Picardy, 511, 521-22  
**Assistance aux Dépôts d'Éclapés**, etc., French society, 1509  
**Association des Dames Françaises**, Red Cross Society, 508  
**Astra**, type of airship, 247  
**Atakpame**, wireless station at, 407  
**Athens**, and Venizelist Revolution, 707, 710-11  
   as seen from the Acropolis, 65, 705  
**Athletics**, in the army, 1232, 1256  
**Atrebrates**, Gallic tribe, 127  
**Atrocities**, Austrian, 184  
   German, 98, 126  
   Russian, 170  
**Attack**, battle-cruiser, 220  
**Attawinah**, Turkish rear-guard at, 838  
**Atterbury, W. W.**, director of American transportation in France, 1104, 1163  
**Attigny**, Germans driven from, 1150  
**Attila**, Hun leader, 315  
**Auberive**, flanking French attack, 312  
**Auberive-sur-Suippe**, and Gouraud's offensive, 1141  
**Aubers**, capture of, 149  
**Aubers Ridge**, Canadian objective, 1194  
   fighting on, 282, 284  
**Auf Wiedersehen**, German soldier and woman, 938  
**Aufenberg, von**, in command of Austrian army, 164  
**August offensive**, map of the last stages, 1149  
**Augusta**, empress of Germany, portrait, in Jerusalem, 139  
**Augustovo**, battles of, 162, 163  
**Annelle River**, crossed, 1284  
**Aurora**, battle-cruiser, 219, 697  
**Aus**, occupied, 415  
**Australia**, contribution to Belgian relief, 886  
   Labor Party, 197  
   navy, 196  
   participates in war, 185, 196  
   representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
   Y. M. C. A. of, 1246  
**Australia**, battle-cruiser, 196, 223  
**Australian and New Zealand Division**, at Gallipoli, 340, 343-44  
   see also Anzacs  
**Australian Corps**, during last northern offensive, 1263  
   tanks of the, 1035  
**Australian First Division**, in German offensive, 1020  
**Australian Imperial Force**, the 1st, 196  
**Australian Light Horse**, actions of, 832, 836  
   entering Damascus, 848  
**Australian Mounted Division**, in Desert Corps, 833  
**Australians**, at Bullecourt, 812  
   going to the front in motor-lorries, 197

- Australians**, in camp in Egypt, 827  
in Egypt and Palestine, 833, 851  
on the line of fire, 829
- Austria**, new state erected, 1340
- Austria-Hungary**, aircraft of, 248, 252  
and Balkans, 61, 70, 73, 77  
and Belgian neutrality, 24, 89  
and Bosnia and Herzegovina, 76, 79, 356  
and Bulgaria, 352, 704  
and Italy, 352, 354-56, 358, 578  
and Rumania, 365, 613, 617  
and Russia, 155-56, 163, 352  
and the Dual Alliance, 354  
and the League, 352  
army of, after treaty, 1337  
at the close of 1914, 225  
at the close of 1915, 317  
defeated by Germany, 24  
diplomatic relations with U. S. severed, 744  
fails to conquer Serbia, 171  
first attacks on Serbia, 173  
in Seven Years War, 3  
in Triple Alliance, 26  
infantryman climbing with rope, 588  
Landsturm fiddling before firing, 720  
mistreatment of Serbian civilians, 375  
offensive on Italian front, 1175  
races in, 24, 28, 47 (map), 84 (map), 177  
retreat from Piave, 1178  
secret Peace negotiations of, 867  
submarines of, 232  
surrenders, 1314  
terms of treaty with, 1337  
tottering empire of, 45  
troops in the Carpathians, 607  
ultimatum to Serbia, 78-81, 84-85  
Y. M. C. A. and, 1247, 1258
- Austrians**, destroyed by avalanche, 363  
in Galician trenches, 317  
in United States, 235  
prisoners released in Russia, 987
- Austro-Prussian War**, Austria and Germany  
after, 352
- Austro-Swiss Frontier**, guards on, 267
- Autul**, A. E. F. school at, 1106
- Auvergne**, hospitals in, 1103
- Auxiliaries**, work of, 470
- Auxiliary Service Bill**, in Germany, 943
- Auzza**, attacks on, 774
- Avellino Brigade**, losses of, 768
- "Avenue of the Allies"**, Fifth Avenue, New  
York, 1221, 1222
- Averescu**, General, a Rumanian, 573
- Averoff**, cruiser, 710
- Aviation**, meaning of, 241  
see also Aéroplanes, Aircraft
- Aviation Camps**, Y. M. C. A. in, 1250
- Aviation Service**, self-contained units in a  
train, 251
- Avlona**, Italian base, 572
- Avocourt**, and the Argonne, 1294  
near Verdun, 457
- Avocourt Wood**, fighting for, 456, 802
- Avre Valley**, French in, 1133
- Awards**, to Y. M. C. A. workers, 1260  
won by Canadians, 1210
- Ayesha**, schooner, 215
- Aylmer**, V. C., Major-General F. J., and the  
relief of Kut, 404, 624
- Azairbijan Province**, in Persia, 405
- Azak Keul**, on Turkish flank, 632
- Aziziyeh**, on the Tigris, 401-02, 756, 761
- B**
- Babington**, Lieut-General J. M., and Piave  
Islands, 1180
- Babounski**, ex-Comitadjii, 562
- Babuna Pass**, Allied objective, 1122, 1127-28  
fighting for the, 374, 376, 561-62
- Bacon**, Vice-Admiral E. H. S., and Dover  
Patrol, 472  
portrait, 477
- Baden**, Grand-duchess of, portrait in Red Cross  
Group, 943
- Baden**, bombarded, 927
- Baden Regiment**, 17th defeated, 308
- Badoglio**, Major-General, Italian commander,  
592, 767, 769, 778
- Badoglio Road**, building the, 768
- Badonviller**, Chasseurs Alpains at, 298  
company of 42nd U. S. Division attacked near,  
1109  
daylight trench-raid near, 1111
- Bagamoyo**, coast cleared to, 970
- Baganda**, African natives, 967
- Bagatelle**, hunting lodge, 310
- Bagdad**, British objective, 382, 393, 397, 400-01,  
419, 636, 728  
British troops enter, 759  
capture of, 753, 836, 876
- Baggage Column**, in Macedonia, 571
- Bagni**, taken, 768
- Bahriz**, captured, 764
- Balburt**, Turkish retreat upon, 632, 634
- Bailiff Wood**, battling in, 522
- Bailleur**, captured, 1022  
Germans driven from, 149  
on British front, 810
- Baillood**, General, and Saloniki Campaign, 559
- Bainsizza Plateau**, and Italian campaigns,  
579-80, 596, 767, 769
- Baker**, Newton D., appointed Secretary of War,  
429  
in France, 1110, 1292  
portrait, 735
- Baku**, Turkish objective, 405
- Bakuba**, capture of, 764
- Balance of Power**, in Europe, 87
- Balbek**, fell, 852
- Baldwin Locomotive Works**, fire in, 425
- Balfour**, Arthur J., and British Admiralty, 471,  
651, 657  
declaration about Palestine, 845  
in Joint War Council, 500  
visits United States, 744
- Balfourier**, French commander, 447
- Balkan Front**, where the Allied Armies de-  
feated the Central Powers, map, 1124
- Balkan League**, brought about, 702
- Balkan Problem**: see Balkans, the turbulent
- Balkan Wars**, aeroplanes in, 253  
and their effects, 76, 335, 357
- Balkans**, after Russo-Turkish War, 352  
collapse of the Balkan Front, 1119  
diplomacy in the, 693, 704  
maps of the, 62-63, 367  
politics and, 24, 31  
propaganda in the, 356  
support of, sought, 365  
the turbulent, 59
- Ball**, Captain Albert, portrait, 916
- Ballah**, ship near, 386
- Ballantyne**, C. C., in Canadian Cabinet, 1062
- Balloon**, development of, 242  
French captive, 245  
military, 917  
observation, attached to U. S. S. Oklahoma,  
1066  
truck for winding cables of, 245  
use of, 21, 220, 224
- Balloon-apron**, aerial defense, 931
- Baltic**, naval work in the, 224  
submarines in, 238
- Baltimore**, mine-planter, 1086
- Baltimore**, A. E. F. embarkation-port, 1108
- Baluchistan**, propaganda in, 634
- Ban**, or Reserve, of Serbia, 172
- Banat of Temesvar**, cession of, 1337  
negotiations regarding, 616  
Rumanians in, 613
- Band**, British, playing the Russians ashore at  
Saloniki, 564
- Banking-Service**, of the Y. M. C. A., 1253
- Bantheville**, taken, 1303
- Bantry Bay**, naval-aviation base at, 1090
- Banyo**, taken, 410
- Bapaume**, action at, 123, 142  
Allied objective, 516-17, 522, 547-48, 787, 874  
battle of, 1135, 1267  
entered by British, 806, 808  
ruins in, 807  
terrain of the fighting for, map, 1267
- Bapaume-Cambrai Road**, gains north of, 808
- Bapaume Road**, and Cambrai battle, 824
- Baptist Clergymen**, in the Y. M. C. A., 1259
- Baratov**, General, Russian commander, 631, 764
- Barbed-Wire**, construction in Poland, 722  
for detention camps, 726  
German mills for, 497
- Barber**, German, at work, 1032
- Barbutov**, attack at, 721
- Bardo**, Treaty of, effects of, 354
- Baré**, captured, 410
- Barges**, of the C. R. B., 877, 891
- Barham**, battleship, 477, 481, 487
- Barker**, Lieut-Colonel W. S., in charge over-  
seas work, 1233
- Barleux**, French objective, 516, 522, 537, 544

- Barnes, George N.**, of the War Ministry, 658, 666
- Barres**, Nationalist leader, 496, 498
- Barrett, Lieut.-General Sir Arthur**, in command in Mesopotamia, 393
- Barricades**, across a main street, 683
- Barricourt**, taken, 1303
- Baruch, Bernard M.**, in Advisory Commission, 748
- Baruzzi, Aurelio**, first man to enter Gorizia, 597
- Basra**, map of region around, 397
- port of Bagdad, 39, 228, 382, 393, 396-97, 404
- villayet of, 636
- Bassano**, Austrian objective, 1172, 1176
- Bassens**, American port at, 1103, 1160
- Basso, General**, in Italy, 1180
- Bathlemont**, first American soldiers buried at, 749
- Bath-Train**, part of a German, 871
- Batocki, Von**, and Germany's food, 952
- Batov**, on Russian line, 721
- Battalion of Death**, portrait groups of, 689, 693, 698
- Battenberg, Louis, Prince of**, 1st Lord of the Admiralty, 212
- Battering-ram**, in Roman warfare, 18
- Battery C, U. S. 6th Artillery**, fired first shot, 1108
- Battle-line**, July 15, 1918, map, 1115
- Bauer**, offered a submarine, 230
- Bavai**, English at, 120
- Bavaria, Crown Prince of**: see Rupprecht, etc.
- Bavaria, and Prussian food regulations, 955
- Republic proclaimed, 1322
- Bayano**, ship, 238
- Bayard-Clement**, type of dirigible, 247
- Bayern Stellung**, part of Hindenburg Line, 1137
- Bayly, Admiral Sir Lewis**, commands American Naval forces at Queenstown, 1075
- Bayonet**, fixing, 550
- practice, at Camp Wheeler, 857
- use of, 19, 40
- Bayonville**, taken, 1303
- Bazancourt-Challerange-Apremont Railway**, behind German front, 312, 316
- Bazentin-le-Grand**, and Somme battle, 525-27, 534, 557
- Bazentin-le-Petit**, and Somme battle, 525-28, 534, 557
- Beach V**, view from the Collier, River Clyde, 344
- Beacons**, for aircraft, 248
- Bean-field**, at Camp Dix, 861
- Beatty, Vice-Admiral Sir David**, at battle of Jutland, 476
- meets Rear-Admiral Meurer, 1318
- naval commander, 208, 219, 470
- portrait, 1096
- Beaucourt**, and Somme battle, 534, 553-55, 557
- Beaucourt-Beaumont-Hamel Road** fighting along, 554
- Beaumont**, American objective, 1304
- near Verdun, 436, 444, 447-48
- Beaumont Hamel**, mine exploded at, 520, 534
- taking, 553-55, 557
- Beauséjour**, during Champagne attack, 312
- Beaverbrook, Lord**, and British propaganda, 667
- Bechnuanaland**, troops from, 414
- Becquincourt**, and Somme battle, 520-21
- Bedouins**, in the desert, 387
- raids of, 386-87
- Beef**, exports of, 1216
- Beerheba**, British objective, 836, 876
- Beit-Alessa**, line of, 628
- Beit-Hanun**, Turkish rear-guard in, 838
- Beit-Jibrin**, Turkish position at, 840
- Beles Range**, Bulgarian entrenchments on, 1125
- Belfort**, fortress of, 31, 123, 300, 304
- Belgian Congo**, borders on German East Africa, 963
- Belgian Kiddies, Ltd.**, relief organization, 889
- Belgians**, fleeing, 990
- held line of the Yser, 149, 150, 285
- in conquest of German Africa, 408
- in East Africa campaign, 973
- in Flanders attack, 1272
- soldiers in a wrecked village, 903
- Belgium**, aircraft of, 252
- Army of Occupation, 1316
- at the end of 1914, 225
- captives taken in Antwerp, 103
- capture of army, 97
- Belgium, crime against, 91
- defense preparations, 79
- districts ceded to, 1330
- German government of occupation in, 106
- government removes to Le Havre, 879
- inundations of, 151
- K. of C. in, 1242
- native troops in army, 963
- neutrality guaranteed and violated, 24, 89, 91
- panorama of country between Liège and Namur, 94-95
- position of army, map, 150
- Red Cross work in, 1228
- reorganized army, 293, 1143
- representation at Peace Conference, 1825
- restoration required, 867
- shipping of, 470
- sorties of army, 143
- to be evacuated, and railways abandoned, 1314-15
- under the German yoke, 989
- war-food for, 108
- work of C. R. B. in, 877, 894
- Y. M. C. A. assists, 1258
- Belgrade**, capital of Serbia, 172, 181-82
- destruction of royal, 181
- Serbians re-enter, 1131
- shelled and taken, 369-70
- view of, 171
- Belknap, Captain R. R.**, in command mining squadron, 1086
- Bellean Wood**, attack of Americans, 1032, 1112
- Belleville**, fortress of, 461-62
- Belleville-on-the-Meuse**, distant view of, 463
- Bellewaarde Lake**, and gas, 289
- Bellewaarde Ridge**, captured, 820
- Bellicourt Tunnel**, Americans pass, 1275
- Bell-Irving**, funeral of, 1210
- Belloy-en-Santerre**, and Somme battle, 521-22
- Bell-Station**, among Montenegrin Mountains, 179
- "**Bellums**," Mesopotamian boats, 396, 398
- Belluno**, Italian advance on, 1180
- Below, Fritz von**, and Nivelle's attack, 794
- Below, General Otto von**, Teutonic commander, 518, 774, 780, 814
- Belval**, occupied, 1304
- Bench Mark Post**, Turkish objective, 388
- Benedict XV**, Pope, Peace note of, 868
- Benét-Mercié**, a gun, 15
- Bengal**, nationalist movement in, 202
- Bennett, B. B.**, Canadian Conservative, 1059
- Benz**, engine for aeroplanes, 920
- Berdan**, a rifle, 172
- Berea**, a Vlach city, 63
- Berehaven**, naval base, 1080, 1088
- Beresford, Commander J. A.**, on the Pacific, 223
- Beresford, Lord Charles**, warnings of German menace, 646
- Berlin**, conference concerning Belgian relief, 884
- German peace conferences in, 1310, 1314
- greeting to returned German troops, 1309
- palace in, 25, 937
- People's Government in, 1322
- pre-war importance of, 227
- soldiers on guard over stores, 951
- Berlin, Congress of**, effects of, 58, 79, 352, 356
- Berlin, Treaty of**, and Montenegro, 179
- effects of, 68
- Belin to Bagdad Railway**, projected, 38, 85, 334
- Bernafay Wood**, taken, 522
- Bernard, of Saxe-Meiningen, Prince**, at manoeuvres, 41
- Bernstorff, Count von**, and German propaganda, 275, 426-27
- given his passports, 736, 738, 872
- Berrange, Colonel**, South African commander, 414
- Berry-au-Bac**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137
- on French front, 300, 794, 796
- Bersaglieri** (Italian troops), at work, 363, 364, 578, 581, 592, 767, 781, 1182
- Bersan**, taken, 851
- Bersona**, captured, 410
- Berthelot**, French commander, 1035, 1146
- Beseler, von**, in Belgium, 144
- portrait in group, 445
- Bessarabia**, negotiations over, 365, 368, 615
- under Berlin treaty, 68
- Bestick, Lake of**, in Balkans, 568
- Bethany**, occupied, 415
- Béthény**, on French front, 792

- Bethlehem, Republic proclaimed at, 414  
 Bethlehem Steel Co., fire in works of, 425  
 Bethmann-Hollweg, Dr. von, Chancellor of Germany, 868, 962  
     portraits, 88, 445  
 Betunia, opposition at, 842  
 Beve's Brigade, in action, 970  
 Beyers, General C. F., Boer leader, 200, 412-14  
 Bezonsvaux, near Verdun, 444, 446, 448, 466  
 Blaches, French objective, 516, 521, 524  
 Bibenko, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
 Bicycle Corps, British, 567  
 Bieberstein, Baron Marschall von, German ambassador, 335  
 Big Berthas, position of, 1019  
 Bikaner, H. H. the Maharaja of, portrait, 203  
 Bikaners, in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
 Bikanir Camel Corps, patrol of, 386  
 Bila Hora, defeat of, 56  
 Bilhaziosis, a Nile-induced disease, 827  
 Billyard-Leake, Lieutenant, at Zeebrugge, 1099  
 Binche, English at, 117, 120  
 Birch-tree Wood, taken, 522  
 Birdwood, General Sir William R., Anzac commander, 346, 347, 1140, 1263  
 Bireh, British at, 842  
 Bir-el-Abd, air-reconnaissance over, 831  
 Bir-el-Diedar, patrols meet at, 386  
 Bir-el-Mazar, Turks at, 832  
 Bir-el-Nuss, fighting near, 386  
 Bires-Saba, Turks near, 386  
 Bir Mabeulik, Turkish force at, 386  
 Birmingham (H. M. S.), war-vessel, 233  
 Birrell, Augustine, Irish Secretary in Coalition Government, 656-57  
 Bishop, Major William A., British aviator, 922  
     portrait, 927  
 Bishops, Administrative Council of Catholic, 1238  
 Biskupice, Germans at, 326  
 Bismarck, Count, and France, 24, 29  
     and Dual Alliance, 354  
     at the Congress of Berlin, 352  
     policy after Franco-Prussian War, 352  
 Bismarck of the Balkans: see Stambulov  
 Bismarckburg, area cleared, 971  
 Bissing, General von, as Governor-General of Belgium, 106  
     portrait, 105  
 Bistritz, battle line of the, 326  
 Bistritza Trenches, near Monastir, 573, 575  
 Bitlis, Turkish base, 405, 634  
 Bixchoote, French in, 820  
 Black Forest, bombarded, 927  
 Black Hawk, tender, 1086  
 Black Hundreds, of Russia, 600  
 Black Sea Ports, to be evacuated by Germany, 1315  
 Blacksmith, Ruthenian, 725  
 "Black Sunday," cause of, 123  
 Black Watch, the Canadian, entering Mons, 1209  
 Blériot, Louis, aeroplane of, 250, 252  
 Blimps, airships, 248  
 Blockade, and Belgian Relief, 878, 883  
     and Belgium, 1002  
     and neutrals, 260  
     German, of Europe, map, 730  
     of Germany, 471, 642  
     of Greece, 707, 711-14  
 Blockade Ministry, in Great Britain, 651  
 Blois, American use of, 1103  
 Blücher, [Field-Marshal G. L.], army of, 3  
 Blücher, armored cruiser, 219, 221, 419  
 Blue Devils, work for war-loans, 1221  
     see also Chasseurs Alpins  
 Boats, wheeled across desert to Suez Canal, 385  
 Body-armor, use of, 19  
 Boehn, von, German commander, 794, 1134  
 Boelcke, Captain, German ace, 911, 914, 918  
     portrait, 915  
 Boer Volunteers, in African campaign, 966  
 Boer War, Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
 Boers, and the war, 186, 199  
     rebellion of, 412  
     who fought for the Union, 411, 416  
 Boesinghe, on British front, 819  
 Bohain, crater of, 1268  
 Bohemia, cession of, 1337  
     part of Austria-Hungary, 28, 46, 49-50  
 Bohlen und Halbach, Frau von, owner of Krupp works, 961  
 Bois de Biez, fighting in the, 284  
 Bois d'Epionville, Americans take, 1142  
 Bois de l'Enfer, fighting in, 816  
 Bois de Sabot, French in, 314  
 Bois des Bourrus, near Verdun, 457  
 Bois des Corbeaux: see Crow's Wood  
 Bois des Fourreaux: see High Wood  
 Bois Hugo, fighting in, 294  
 Bois-le-Prêtre, contests in, 304  
 Bolivia, representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
     severed diplomatic relations, 6, 744  
 Bolo, Paul (Bolo Fasha), in league with Germany, 500, 502  
 Bolsheviki (or Bolsheviks), and the Allies, 1339  
     governmental policies of the, 975  
     majority wing of Russian socialists, 677, 690-91  
     propaganda succeeds in army, 727  
     rise of the, 694-97, 868, 870  
     spreading their doctrines, 980  
 Bombaras, glorified trench-mortar, 592  
 Bombs, filled with propaganda, 955  
     in a plane, 922  
     in early part of war, 280  
     mechanism of, 256  
     testing for French mortars, 639  
     used on shipping, 417, 425-27  
 Bonar Law, leader Unionist Party, 658-59  
 Bonds, of United States, 1219  
     trade in, 422  
 Bonham Island, wireless captured on, 224  
 Bonham-Carter, Lieutenant, at Zeebrugge, 1099  
 Bonn, Canadian divisional officers crossing bridge at, 1212  
     Canadians hold bridgehead at, 1209  
 Bonnet Rouge, suppressed newspaper, 502  
 Bonus, in Canada, 1055  
 Bony, 27th U. S. Division attack near, 1143  
 Books and Periodicals, distributed by Y. M. C. A., 1256  
 Bopp, Franz, charged with conspiracy, 427  
 Borah, Senator, policies of, 734  
 Bordeaux, American docks at the Port of, 1070  
     French government retires to, 123, 496  
     French harbor, 1073, 1161  
 Borden, Sir Robert, Premier, and the War, 188, 194  
     politics and, 1042, 1046, 1056-65  
     portrait, 1042  
 Borgo, Italian position at, 582, 591  
 Borgo Pass, Russians take, 604-05  
 Boris, Prince, acceded to Bulgarian throne, 71, 1129  
     portrait, 1129  
 Borkum, mutiny in, 1320  
 Borojevic, General, Teutonic commander, 780-82, 1176  
 Boselli, Signor, premier of Italy, 591, 773  
     portrait, 591  
 Bosnia, cession of, 1337  
 Bosnia and Herzegovina, part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 57-58, 65, 68, 75, 78-79, 335, 356  
     peoples of, 31  
     Serbian counter-attack in, 177-78  
 Bosphorus, to be open, 1338  
 Boston, A. E. F. embarkation port, 1108  
     and the war-loan, 1221  
 Botha, General Louis, attended Peace Conference, 1324  
     in command S. African Army, 415-16  
     portrait, 413  
     premier of South Africa, 200, 412-14  
 Bothmer, von, Austrian commander, 330  
 Bouchavignes, and Somme battle, 521, 544  
 Bouleaux Wood, British in, 537, 543  
 Boulogne, seaport, 109, 124, 1160  
 Bourassa, Henri, French Canadian leader, 1056  
 Boursches, 2nd U. S. Division checks enemy near, 1112  
 Bourges, a city, 63-64  
 Bourges, American use of, 1103, 1169  
 Bourlon Wood, British objective, 823-24  
     Canadians capture, 1208, 1273  
 Bourment Zone, U. S. 2nd Division in, 1106  
 Bourne, William, and the submarine, 229  
 Bourrus-Esnes, line of, 459  
 Bouvet, ship, 343  
 Bovent, observation tower at, 550  
 Boxing, in the camps, 1233  
 Boxing-gloves, instructor carrying, 856  
 Boy-Ed, Captain, recalled, 417, 426

**Royle, Colonel Russell**, of the Canadian Scottish, 278  
**Brabant**, near Verdun, 441, 444  
**Brairie l'Alleud**, Germans at, 96  
**Brandenburg Division**, Fifth, in the Somme battle, 528  
**Brandenburgers** (3rd), at Verdun, 447-48, 458  
**Brandenburg Gate**, in Potsdam, 25  
**Branjevo**, bridge at, 174  
**Bratano**, premier of Rumania, 615-16, 1324  
**Bray-Albert Line**, held by Haig, 1017  
**Braye**, fighting near, 300  
**Bray-sur-Somme**, withdrawal at, 1016  
**Brazil**, during Great War, 4, 6, 744  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Bread**, carried by camel-transport, 831  
 tickets for, 950  
**Bread Riots**, in Italy, 774  
**Bread-plates**, use of, 19  
**Bregalnitz**, fighting at, 174  
**Bremen**, port of, 33, 44  
**Bremen**, commercial U-boat, 232  
**Brenner**, historic frontier, 360  
**Brenta River**, and Italian campaigns, 590, 780  
 line of the, 1172, 1174, 1176, 1179-80  
**Brequet**, type of airplane, 250  
**Brescia**, raided, 586  
**Breslau**, Teutonic base, 167  
**Breslau**, battle cruiser, 222, 336, 341, 633  
**Brest**, Americans use port of, 1073, 1075, 1090, 1103, 1161  
 view of, 1157  
**Brest-Litovsk**, German objective, 328, 419  
 Japanese guns at, 328  
 negotiations at, 977, 981  
 where the conference met, 981  
**Brest-Litovsk, Treaty of**, abrogation of, 1315, 1330  
**Brestovica Valley**, Austrians forced across, 770  
**Bretons**, at Verdun, 447-48  
**Brezin**, retirement beyond, 168  
**Briand, Aristide**, premier of France, 376, 499-500  
**Briand Cabinet**, of France, 712  
**Bridge**, attempt to blow up Vanceboro, 425  
**Bridge-building**, by Canadian engineers, 1197  
**Bridge of Boats**, across Tigris at Bagdad, 763  
**Brie**, crossing at, 806  
**Briey Iron Basin**, and last Allied Offensive, 1294, 1305  
**Brilliant**, ship at Ostend, 1100  
**Brimont**, heights of, 792, 794, 796  
**Brindisi**, protection of, 586  
**Bristol**, aeroplane, 258, 920  
**Bristol**, light cruiser, 212  
**British**, crossing ridge between Deli-Abbas and Kifri, 627  
**British Battle-Cruiser Squadron**, in action, 208, 218-19, 476, 479  
**British Battle-fleet**, in action, 478  
**British Bombing Squadron**, at St. Mihiel, 1291  
**British Cavalry Corps**, during last Allied Offensive, 1264  
**British Diplomatic Agents**, controlled Egyptian finances, 382  
**British Expeditionary Force**, in early fighting in France, 112, 117  
**British Grand Fleet**, effectiveness of, 1067  
 work of, 208, 218, 234  
**British Isles**, Y. M. C. A. in, 1250  
**British Lancers**, blown up, 281  
**British Mediterranean Fleet**, actions of, 222  
**British Nigeria**, troops in the Cameroons, 637  
**British Royal Flying Corps**, work of, 920  
**British Saloniki Army**, on Balkan front, 1124  
**Broadside**, of farewell, to Suvia Bay, 348  
**Brockdorf-Bantzau, von**, acknowledged defeat, 1319  
**Brown, Dr. William Adams**, on Committee of Six, 1238  
**Bruges**, entered by the Royal family, 1309  
 view of, 1005  
**Bruges-Zeebrugge Canal**, submarines pass through, 1095  
**Brunhilde Line**, of German defense, 1138, 1147  
**Brusati, General Roberto**, retired, 590  
**Brusilov, General**, and Russian revolutions, 689-90, 717, 724, 875  
 in portrait group, 691  
 Russian commander, 164, 166, 317, 602  
**Brussels**, and German communications, 1139  
 occupation of, 96  
 soup-line in, 885  
 view of Palais de Justice, 997

**Bry**, English at, 120  
**Bryan**, against war, 736  
 resignation as Secretary of State, 274  
**Bryce, Lord**, report of, 98  
**Brzezany**, fighting in the region of, 718-19, 721  
**Bublikov**, Russian deputy, 686, 692  
**Bucharest**, Balkan victors at, 77  
 capital of Rumania, 59  
 fall of, 620  
**Bucharest, Treaty of**, results of, 335, 366, 368, 699, 702  
 to be abandoned, 1315  
**Buda-pest**, capital of Hungary, 48, 53, 1337  
**Bug River**, Russian base on, 164  
**Bug Valley**, flanking Army of Poland, 158  
**Bukoba**, captured, 968  
**Bukovina**, Austrian advance in, 724  
 map to illustrate fighting in, 320  
 offered as reward, 615-16  
 part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 52, 318, 332, 365  
 Rumanians in, 614  
 women of, 55  
**Bulfan, General**, in Palestine, 836  
**Bulgaria**, airplanes in, 916  
 and Balkan Wars, 335, 699, 702  
 and Germany, 366  
 and Greek Garrison, 707  
 and the Dobrudja, 619  
 armistice granted to, 1129  
 at the end of 1914, 225, 228  
 attacks Serbia, 560  
 Balkan State, 31, 62, 64, 65, 68, 74, 77, 352  
 begins Balkan campaign, 559  
 declares war on Rumania, 619  
 enters war, 368-70, 417  
 front broken, 1119  
 invasions of Macedonia, 707-08  
 neutrality of, 365-66  
 no American declaration of war against, 744  
 on the Greco-Bulgarian border, 563  
 terms of treaty with, 1337  
 treaties with Central Powers, 704  
 Y. M. C. A. and, 1258  
**Bulgars**, Slavic race, 57, 60  
**Bullard, General Robert L.**, American Commander in France, 1111, 1294, 1300  
**Bullecourt**, on British front, 812, 824  
**Bullock-Transport**, in Mesopotamia, 623  
**Bulow, General von**, German commander, 97, 109, 117, 118, 141  
 portrait in group, 445  
**Bulow, Prince von**, sent to Italy, 360  
**Bundar Abbas**, police force organized in, 635  
**Bundesrat**, German upper house, 42  
**Bundy, Maj.-General O. L.**, American commander, 1112  
**Buole**, Pass of, struggle in, 590  
**Bureau of Information**, of Red Cross, 1228  
**Burgundy**, troops from, 312  
**Burian, Baron**, for the Austrian government, 360  
**Burke, Rev. John J.**, and war activities, 1238-39  
**Burney, Admiral Sir Cecil**, portrait, 477  
**Burns, John**, resignation of, 647  
**Busche, Major Baron von dem**, sent to Berlin, 1146  
**Bushnell, David**, submersible of, 229  
**Business**, effect of the war upon, 421  
**Russia**: see Basra  
**Russan**, and Somme battle, 520  
**Butte de Tahure**, fighting on, 316  
**Butte du Mesnil**, held up French attack, 313  
**Butte of Warlencourt**, fighting for, 549, 551  
**Byng, Sir Julian**, British commander, 540-41, 542, 819, 824, 1144, 1190  
**Byzantine Empire**, and the Balkans, 60  
**Bzura River**, retreat to, 168

C

**Cadorna, General Luigi**, and Italian Army, 262, 578, 590, 767  
 communiqué of Oct. 28, 778  
 in Supreme War Council, 826  
 portraits, 41, 361  
**Caetani, Don Gelasio**, Italian commander, 588  
**Caillaux, Joseph**, case of, 82, 500, 502  
**Caillotte Wood**, near Verdun, 453, 457, 464  
**Cairo**, base general hospital at, 384  
**Calabria Brigade**, attitude of, 1171  
**Calais**, German objective, 148, 255  
**Calder, J. A.**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062  
**Caldwell, Sir Charles**, comment on Gallipoli, 342



- California**, contribution to Belgian relief, 886, 888
- California Plateau**, captured German position, 797
- Calogeropoulos, Nicholas**, Greek politician, 709
- Cambon, Jules**, in French Cabinet, 500
- Cambrai**, and August offensive, 1138, 1140-41, 1144, 1146, 1150  
and German lines, 512, 805  
battles of, 18, 802, 823, 874, 1273  
Canadians take, 1208, 1280  
English retreat to, 120-21  
wanton destruction in, 1208
- Cambrai Cathedral**, Canadian troops in, 1279
- Camel Corps, Imperial**, in Palestine, 837
- Camels**, 387, 393, 399, 630, 631, 757, 828, 830
- Camera**, stereoscopic, for aeroplanes, 926
- Cameron, Major-General George B.**, in France, 1290, 1295
- Cameron Highlanders**, engagements of, 152, 292
- Cameron, German colony**, 38, 227, 407-09
- Camouflage**, use of, 932
- Camp**, fortified Roman, 8
- Camp de Mailly**, French near, 136
- Camp des Romains**, in St. Mihiel salient, 304
- Camps**, American, 747, 854, 855, 865
- Canada**, 1st Canadian Division, fleet that carried, 191  
lands at St. Nazaire, 204  
battalions, 193, 195  
alien-enemies in, 1064  
Board of Commerce, 1064  
Canadian people and the war, 1041  
Coalition Government, 196, 1062  
composition of the First Contingent, 1190  
Conservative Party, 188, 196, 1042, 1055  
contribution to Belgian relief, Red Cross, etc., 886, 1053  
discussion over war-elections, 1059  
during Great War, 5  
finance in, 1043  
Food Board, 1040, 1049  
Food Controller, 1040  
Imperial Munitions Board, 1046  
Indians with Expeditionary forces, 205  
Liberal Party, 188, 194, 1042, 1056  
Military Service Act, 194  
Motor Patrol, off Dover, 206  
Nationalist Party, 1056  
Over-seas Minister of Militia, 1065, 1203  
participates in the war, 185  
politics in, 1055  
reconstruction in, 1064  
representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
troops of, 187, 192, 195  
Y. M. C. A. in, 1246
- Canadian**, as a soldier, 1187
- Canadian Army Corps**, in last Northern Offensive, 1263  
organization of, 1202
- Canadian Cavalry Brigade**, in British division, 1203
- Canadian Corps Reinforcement Depot**, in France, 1191
- Canadian Dental Corps**, establishment, 1053
- Canadian Divisions**, organization and work of, 1190
- Canadian Forestry Corps**, furnished lumber to Allies, 1203
- Canadian Highlanders**, 48th, at St. Julien, 278  
the return of the, 1193
- Canadian Motor Machine Gun Brigade**, 1st, engagements of, 1200
- Canadian Mounted Rifles**, in action, 514
- Canadian Northern Trans-continental Railway System**, and the war, 1043, 1064
- Canadian Pacific Railway**, war services of, 1048
- Canadian Railway Troops**, work of, 1203
- Canadian Scottish**, in Ypres, 278
- Canadian Trade Commission**, in London, 1064
- Canadians**, 1st Division in second battle of Ypres, 285-86, 418  
2nd Division in Somme battle, 537, 539-42, 546, 1198  
3rd Division at Ypres, 514  
and battle of Amiens, 1204  
and Drocourt-Quéant Line, 1207  
and last 100 days of fighting, 1204  
at Cambrai, 1208, 1280  
at Courcellette, 537, 539-42  
at Hill 70, 821, 1201  
at 2nd battle of Ypres, 1193  
at Vimy Ridge, 809, 1194, 1198  
church parade of regiment, 195
- Canadians, en route** to the training camp, 187  
in Passchendaele, 874  
in 3rd battle of Ypres, 821, 823, 1196  
in training at Witley, 194  
in trenches during Ypres battle, 287  
memorial to officers and men, 1211  
on board a troopship, 193  
on Salisbury Plain, 195  
reviewed by the Duke of Connaught, 296  
wounded soldier, carried by German prisoners, 643  
see also Vimy Ridge, Ypres, etc.
- Canal du Nord**, Canadians cross the, 1208  
during last Allied Offensive, 1270
- Canea**, receives Venizelos, 710
- Cannon**, drilling the bore of, at Creusot Works, 495  
forging, at Bethlehem Steel Works, 732
- Canopus**, battleship, 210, 212
- Canove**, on Italian front, 1176
- Canteen Service**, of Red Cross, 1228
- Canteens**, work of the Y. M. C. A., 1251
- Cantigny**, Americans take, 1030, 1111
- Cap Trafalgar**, German raider, 214
- Capelle, Admiral von**, fall of, 1086, 1092  
testimony of, 486
- Capello, General**, Italian commander, 592, 767, 769, 775, 785
- Capitalism**, abolished, 980
- Capo Silo**, successful venture on plain of, 1174
- Caporetto**, captured, 580-81  
Italian disaster at, 774, 874
- Caproni, Signor**, portrait in group, 934
- Caquot**, a type of balloon, 244
- Carden, Admiral**, and Gallipoli expedition, 340, 341
- Cardinal Gibbons' Fund** for Belgian relief, 889
- Carency**, struggle for, 308
- Carignan-Sedan Railway**, valuable to Germans, 1294
- Carinthia**, province of, 57
- Carnarvon**, armored cruiser, 212
- Carnic Alps**, and the Italian campaigns, 578, 583, 777  
and the Trentino, 361, 364
- Carniola**, cession of, 1337  
part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 57
- Carol, King**, of Rumania, policies of, 614
- Carp**, premier of Rumania, 615-16
- Carpathians**, Austrians and Germans in the, 319, 607  
struggles for passes of, 164-68, 317, 606, 618, 719
- Carpenter, Captain A. F. B.**, of the *Vindictive*, 1097
- Cars**, armored, 11, 975
- Carso Plateau**, fighting for the, 578, 584, 767-68  
legend of, 594  
maps of, 579, 769
- Carson, Sir Edward**, as 1st Lord of the Admiralty, 661, 666  
Irish leader, 84, 654
- Carvell, F. B.**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062
- Casa del Soldato**, the Y. M. C. A., 1258
- Casemates Plateau**, captured German position, 797
- Casement, Sir Roger**, treason of, 656
- Cassin**, destroyer, 1070
- Castagnevizza**: see Kstanjevica
- Castelnau, General de**, enters Strassburg, 1318  
French commander, 112, 114, 141, 306-07, 312, 515  
hurricane fire-tactics of, 442, 446-47  
in command Eastern French forces, 568, 794
- Cat Rock**, struggle for, 178
- Caterpillar-tread**, for tanks, etc., 10, 13, 18
- Catholics**, war-work of, 1235
- Cattaro**, Austrian naval station, 380, 587
- Caucasus**, campaign in the, 382, 394, 419  
independent state in, 978
- Caudron**, an aeroplane, 250, 252, 257
- Caures Wood**, near Verdun, 440-42
- Causes**, of the World War, 23
- Cavallino, Filippo**, sentenced to death, 502
- Cavalry**, during August offensive, 1141
- Cavalry Brigade**, of Great Britain, 121, 147-49, 396
- Cavan, Lord**, in Italy, 1172, 1175, 1178
- Cavell, Edith**, portrait, 1002
- Cavendish, Henry**, and hydrogen gas, 242
- Caverns**, for field hospitals, 466
- Caviglia, General**, Italian commander, 1179
- Cavour**, resignation of, 353
- Cecil, Sir Robert**, comment on blockade, 471



- Cemetery**, destroyed, 1022, 1207  
 during Somme battle, 547  
**Censorship**, during the war, 269  
**Central America**, status of states, 5  
**Central Powers**, forces of, 5  
 representatives taken from Saloniki, 568  
**Central Railroad**, in Africa, 964, 969, 972  
**Cerna**, during Saloniki Campaign, 573  
**Cettinje**, falls, 380  
**Ceuninck, General**, Belgian commander, 1143  
**Ceylon**, rifle corps from, 833  
**Chahbaish**, in Mesopotamia, 398  
**Chahela**, line of, 628  
**Chalcidice Peninsula**, disturbances in, 575  
**Challenger**, ship, 410  
**Challes-les-Baux**, negro recreation-centre, 1255  
**Châlons-sur-Marne**, German objective, 315, 1034  
**Chamber of Deputies**, parties in the, 498  
**Chambéry**, negro recreation-centre, 1255  
**Champagne**, campaign in the, 300, 302, 311, 418  
 French struggle in the, map, 313  
 hastening the retreat of the enemy in, map, 1144  
 terrain of the, 792  
**Champhenoux, Forest of**, entered, 132  
**Champnenville**, struggles for, 468, 802  
**Chanak**, forts at, 339, 342  
**Channel Islanders**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
**Chante, Octave**, and flying-machines, 249  
**Chapitre Woods**, French objective, 464  
**Chaplains**, Catholic, in U. S. army and navy, 1243  
 work of army, 1225  
**Charcoal**, in gas-masks, 20  
**Charge**, in the field, 1286  
 preparations for a, fixing bayonets, 550  
**Charlemagne**, crown of, 45  
**Charleroi**, and import of foodstuffs, 879  
 battle of, 117, 143  
 bombed, 255  
**Charles**, emperor of Austria, warning given, 1307  
**Charles, Archduke**, Austro-Hungarian commander, 590  
**Charles**, physicist, and balloons, 242  
**Charny**, American naval guns at, 1088  
**Charny Ridge**, near Verdun, 445, 450-51, 456-57  
**Charybdis** (H. M. S.), 191  
**Chasseurs**, 306-07, 312, 443, 464  
 in the Vosges, 305  
**Chasseurs Alpins**, before their hillside dug-out, 298  
**Château**, at Thiepval, 546  
**Château-Thierry**, Americans and, 1039, 1114  
 Germans at, 134, 1030  
 on the Marne, 1037, 1113  
**Chatel-Chehery**, taken, 1300  
**Chatillon Ridge**, captured, 1303  
**Chattancourt**, near Verdun, 457, 459  
**Chauchat**, a gun, 15  
**Chaulnes**, Allied objective, 142, 522, 806  
 drive for, 1133  
**Chaulnes Railway**, under British fire, 1265  
**Chaulnes Wood**, fighting around, 551  
**Chaumont**, A. E. F. Schools at, 1106  
 General A. E. F. Headquarters at, 1101, 1104, 1154  
**Chaussy**, captured by Germans, 1015  
 re-captured by French, 1135, 1270  
**Chauvel**, British commander in Palestine, 851  
**Chavonne**, German position near, 790  
**Chavalon Warfare Service**, of A. E. F., 1167  
**Chemin des Dames**, 26th U. S. Division on, 1109  
 and contiguous country, map, 792  
 and German defense lines, 1139, 1146-47  
 early struggles for, 139, 790, 804, 874  
 German attack on, 1028-29  
**Chenols Woods**, French objective, 464  
**Cheppy Wood**, American advance through, 1295  
**Chernobuzov**, Russian commander, 635  
**Cheshires**, at Messines battle, 816, 819  
**Chetwode, Sir Philip**, commander of Desert Column, 832  
**Chevaux de Frises**, revived, 432  
**Children**, Belgian, 1243  
 gifts of, 890  
**Chile**, as neutral, 5, 744  
 naval fight off: see Coronel, naval fight off  
**China**, European colonies in, 34  
 in the Great War, 4  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
 sent note of protest to Germany, 736  
**Chinatown**, Red Cross workers from, 1229  
**Chinese**, labor behind the lines, 876, 1206  
**Chinese Labor Corps**, Y. M. C. A. and, 1258  
**Chlorine**, used in warfare, 19  
**Choising**, steamship, 215  
**Cholm**, German objective, 325, 326  
**Chorok**, valley of, 632-33  
**Christie, Most Rev. Alexander**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Christmas Ship**, with gifts for Belgium, 888  
**Church, Russian**, property confiscated, 981  
**Church, Ruthenian**, turned into workshop, 164  
**Church of the Holy Sepulchre**, in Jerusalem, 841  
**Church of the Redeemer at Jerusalem**, emperor's portrait on ceiling of, 39  
**Churchill, Winston, 1st Lord of the Admiralty**, 144, 207, 340, 350, 471, 650-51  
**Cigarettes**, and the Y. M. C. A., 1252  
**Cigogne Escadrille**: see Stork Squadron  
 "Circus" of German airplanes, 914  
**Cité St. Elie**, fighting in, 292  
**Citizen-Army**, training the, 853  
**Civdale**, captured, 775-76  
**Civil War** (U. S.), ammunition expended in, 10  
 balloon used in, 243  
 cost of, 8  
 entrenchments, 8  
 forces of, 3  
 precedent concerning "ultimate destination" created, 265  
 submarines used in, 230  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**Civilian Relief Department**, of Red Cross, 1228  
**Clan MacTavish**, vessel, 475  
**Clapp, Senator**, and filibuster, 738  
**Claudel**, French commander in the Argonne, 1299  
**Clausewitz**, doctrine of, 125  
**Clearance**, false papers, 427  
**Clemenceau, Georges**, as Premier of France, 492, 494, 502, 1111  
 at St. Mihiel, 1292  
 chairman of Peace Conference, 1324-25  
 in Metz, 1311  
 on Victory, 1307  
 portrait in group, 1325  
**Clement**, head of Bulgarian church, 72  
**Clews, Henry**, and Belgian relief, 889  
**Clio**, ship, 386  
**Cliveden**, memorial for Canadians who died at Taplow, 1211  
**Cloth Hall**, of Ypres, 154, 293  
**Clothes**, in Germany, 947  
 packed for Belgium, 881  
**Coal**, conservation of, 1218  
 lacking in Italy, 1172  
**Coal-mines**, ceded to France, 1330  
**Coal-tar**, products of, 32  
**Cobbie, Lieut-General Sir A. S.**, in Mesopotamia, 753  
**Coblentz**, bombarded, 927  
 control and American occupation of, 1315-16, 1317, 1333  
 recreation-centre at, 1255  
**Codroipo**, crossing at, 776  
**Cody**, an airplane, 250  
**Coffin, Howard E.**, in Advisory Commission, 748  
**Col d'Echele**, on Italian front, 782, 1172  
**Col del Rosso**, on Italian front, 782, 1172, 1176  
**Col di Lana**, struggle for, 582, 588  
**Col Santo**, near Italian line, 591  
**Colleon, Bartolommeo**, removal of equestrian statue of, 586, 1185, 1186  
**Collins, Peter W.**, member of K. of C., 1242  
**Colmar**, Alsatian town, 114  
**Cologne**, Allied control and occupation of, 1315, 1333  
 bombarded, 927  
 First Canadian Division crossing Hohenzollern Bridge, 7320  
**Colombia**, as neutral, 5, 744  
**Colonies**, of European nations, 34  
 of Germany, 34, 222, 407  
 treaty disposal of German over-seas possessions, 1330, 1335  
**Combat-troops**, and supplies, 1155  
**Combles**, during Somme battle, 517-18, 521, 529, 533-34, 537, 544-45, 549, 557  
**Combres**, assault, 1292  
**Comet**, boat, 397, 402  
**Comitadjis**, in control of Macedonia, 708  
**Comité Français**, for relief in Northern France, 901

- Comité National**, for relief in Belgium, 108, 894
- Comités Provinciaux**, for Belgian relief, 894
- Commercy-Verdun Railway**, and St. Mihiel salient, 1288
- Commissariat-wagons**, German, 133
- Commission, British**, visits United States, 744
- Commission, French**, report on atrocities, 98 visits United States, 744
- Commission for Relief in Belgium**, Rotterdam office of, 882 work of, 108, 228, 877
- Commission of Inquiry**, etc., Belgium, report on atrocities, 98, 102
- Commission on Training Camp Activities**, organization of, 1230, 1236-38
- Committee**, The, Macedonian political organization, 73
- Committee of Fourteen of New York**, war-work of, 1233
- Committee of Union and Progress**, in Turkey, 76, 334
- Communication-trenches**, bringing ammunition through German, 9
- Compiegne**, German objective, 306, 1028, 1031 palace of Louis XV, 491
- Concessions**, of Germany to be renounced, 1330 renounced by Austria, 1337
- Condé**, English at, 117
- Condino**, Italian position at, 582
- Confians**, bombarded, 1304
- Connaught, Duke of**, Governor-General of Canada, 296, 1041
- Conneau**, command French Cavalry Corps, 149
- Connolly, Rt. Rev. Monsignor James N.**, overseas vicar-general, 1244
- Conscription**, in Canada, 1050, 1060 in Great Britain, 637, 652
- Constantine**, king of Greece, and Venizelos, 702 at manoeuvres, 41
- Constantinople**, 2nd Division of, 628 at the declaration of war, 385 Kaiser's visits to, 38, 39 political importance of, 333 question of its disposal, 1337 road to, 172 rulers of, 60 Russia and, 26, 31 under Allied military occupation, 1318 view of, 335
- Constanza**, chief port of Rumania, 612, 613, 619
- Constituent Assembly**, of Russia, 695
- Contrainais**, in the Somme battle, 520, 522, 524, 557
- Contraband**, during the Great War, 260
- Convent-Chapel**, as a hospital, 505
- Convoy-System**, for shipping, 1073, 1076, 1083
- Cook, J. H.**, and the war, 197
- Co-operative Unions**, of Russia, 611
- Copper**, cargoes seized, 262
- "Copts"**: see Gypsies
- Corbeaux Wood**, capture of fortifications, 802
- Corfu**, island of, 379, 569, 570, 587, 707, 1075, 1080
- Cornay**, taken, 1300
- Cornwall**, 212
- Cornwallis**, armored cruiser, 348-49
- Coronel**, naval fight off, 210, 211
- Cortina Pass**, in the Dolomites, 582
- Cossacks**, and the Russian revolution, 682 in warfare, 165, 167, 636 pictures of, 159, 325, 331, 715
- Cost**, of war, 6
- Costa Rica**, declared war, 6, 744 excluded from original members of League, 1327
- Côte de Dame Marie**, captured, 1303
- Côte de Talon**, fighting about, 468, 802
- Côte du Poivre**: see Pepper Hill
- Côtes de Meuse**, near Verdun, 436
- Cotton**, declared contraband, 264
- Coucy**, forest of, 1146
- Coulommiers**, occupied, 134
- Council for National Defense**, organization of, 1214
- Council of Four**, of Peace Conference, 1325
- Council of Ten**, of Peace Conference, 1325
- Council of the League of Nations**, 1327
- Council of Workmen's Delegates and Soldiers' Deputies**, in Russia, 680, 870 see also Soviet
- Coundouriotis, Admiral**, and Venizelist revolution, 710
- Courcellette**, battle for, painting, 541 during Somme battle, 531, 534, 536-37, 540, 543, 557 re-captured, 1015, 1267 struggle in the ruins of sugar refinery, 539
- Courland**, during war, 224, 325-26 map of campaign in, 329
- Court of International Justice**, and Peace Treaty, 1327-28, 1334
- Cowboys**, Canadian, 190
- Cracow**, Russian objective, 50, 165-67
- Craddock, Rear-Admiral Sir Christopher**, in command British fleet, 210, 210
- Craonne**, town of, 792, 794, 795, 796-97
- Craonne Plateau**, struggles for, 139, 141, 788-90, 805, 1028
- Crécy, Forest of**, English in, 129, 134
- Crème de Menthe**, tank, 539-40
- Crépy-en-Laonnois**, position of Big Berthas, 1019
- Crerar, T. A.**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062
- Cressy**, battle-cruiser, 209, 233, 236
- Crete**, revolutions in, 700
- Crete Division**, formation of, 572
- Crenot**, shell factory at, 799
- Crévecœur**, British objective, 823-24
- Crewe, Sir Charles F.**, in East Africa, 969
- Crispi**, policy of, 356
- Croatia**, claim to Fiume, 1338 part of Austria, 31, 50-51, 57
- Croatia-Slavonia**, cession of, 1337
- Crompton**, Colonel, and the tank, 18
- Crouy**, fighting near, 300
- Crow's Wood**, during battle of Verdun, 451
- Crozat Canal**, fighting along, 1013, 1015, 1270
- Ctesiphon**, and Mesopotamian campaign, 402, 419, 760, 761
- Cuba**, and Great War, 4, 6, 744 representation at Peace Conference, 1325
- Cuddihy, R. J.**, relief fund of, 889
- Cumières**, village of, 459
- Cumières Wood**, capture of, 451, 802
- Cummins**, Senator, and filibuster, 738
- Cunliffe**, General, in Africa, 410
- Currie, Major-General**, at Ypres, 514 dispatch of, 189 inspecting artillery column, 1206 portrait, 1203
- Curtiss, Glenn H.**, airplanes of, 250
- Curzolari Islands**, cession of, 358
- Curzon, Lord**, in War Cabinet, 659-60
- Cushing**, vessel, 236-37, 272, 274, 418
- Cutler, Colonel Harry**, war-work of, 1234, 1238
- Cuxhaven**, mutiny in, 1320
- Cyprus**, island of, 374, 703, 706
- Czecho-Slovak Brigade**, fighting of, 719
- Czecho-Slovak Division**, in Italian offensive, 1179
- Czecho-Slovakia**, new state of, 1332, 1337, 1340 representation at Peace Conference, 1325
- Czecho-Slovaks**, Slavic group, 54, 57 Y. M. C. A. and, 1258
- Czechs**, in Austria-Hungary, 46, 49, 50, 54-57
- Czermin, Count**, Austro-Hungarian minister to Rumania, 615-16, 870, 981
- Czernowitz**, capital of Bukovina, 318, 332, 603-04, 616, 619

D

- Dacia**, Roman colony, 52
- Daffodil**, ferry-boat, 1097
- Dago Island**, occupied, 728
- Dahra Bend**, in the Tigris, 754, 758
- Dalmatia**, cession of, 1337-38 negotiations over, 356-58, 360 part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 57-58, 78
- Damascus**, and Suez Canal expedition, 383 entered, 848, 849, 851
- Damascus Gate**, of Jerusalem, 840
- Damloup**, village of, 465
- Damloup Battery**, French objective, 464
- Danes**, in Germany, 28
- Danav**, Bulgarian premier, 367
- Danglis**, and Venizelist revolution, 710
- Daniels, Josephus**, portrait, 735
- Dankl**, in command of an Austrian Army, 164
- Dannevoux**, American line north of, 1296 wood of, 1142
- Danube River**, as frontier of Serbia, 171, 369-70, 559-60
- Danzig**, internationalized, 1330, 1331

- Dardanelles**, Anzacs at, 186  
 attempt to force the, 222, 338, 342, 343  
 map, 339  
 project for internationalizing, 616  
 submarines in the, 238, 342  
 the Queen Elizabeth at, 206  
 to be open, 1338  
 work of aeroplanes, 254  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
 see also Gallipoli
- Dardanelles Expedition**, and Greece, 704
- Dar-es-Salaam**, capital of German East Africa, 963, 966-67, 972
- Darfur**, rising in, 830
- Dartige du-Fournet**, Admiral, ultimatum to Greece, 710-11
- Darts**, released from airplanes, 256-57
- "Davids,"** or little submarines, 230
- Davison, Henry P.**, chairman Red Cross War Council, 1226
- Days**, the fateful twelve, 79
- Dazzle-painting**, for ships, 1071
- Dead**, estimates of, 1
- Dead Man Hill** (Le Mort Homme), fortifications re-captured near, 802  
 near Verdun, 436, 445, 450-57, 459, 468
- Deák, Francis**, Hungarian statesman, 48, 51
- Death Valley**, entrance to, 1304
- Debaskoum**, captured, 408
- Débénézy**, French commander, 1133, 1139
- Debts**, arising from Great War, 8
- Deccan Horse**, in the battle of the Somme, 527
- Decize, A. E. F.** School at, 1106
- Dedeagatch**, bombarded, 372
- Dedeagatch Railway**, in the Balkans, 568
- Deduna**, ship, 268
- "Defeatism,"** in France, 500, 502, 873
- Defense of the Realm Act**, passed by Parliament, 650
- Dégoutte**, French commander, 1036
- De Haviland**, aeroplane, 920, 924
- De Kalb**, ship, 1077
- Delamain, General**, brigade commander at Kut, 401
- Deiano, Miss Jane A.**, director-general of Red Cross nurses, 1230
- Delbrueck Law**, in Germany, 36
- Delcassé**, resignation of, 499
- Delegations**, of Austria-Hungary, 48
- Delhi**, wreck of the, 210
- Dell Abbas**, attack at, 764-65
- British troops** crossing near, 627
- Delmé**, French at, 115
- Delta**, Austrians in the Plave, 1177
- Delville Wood**, British objective, 525-32, 534, 537  
 "mystery corner" in, 543
- Demir Hissar**, fort of, 570
- Demir Kapu**, recaptured, 1127  
 seized, 560
- De Mitry**, French commander, 1038
- Demobilization**, of the armies, 1316
- Democratic Congress**, in Petrograd, 694
- Denain**, Canadians free, 1209
- Deniécourt**, and Somme battle, 521, 544
- Denmark**, as a neutral, 4, 5, 225, 260  
 territory added to, 1340
- Denominationalism**, discouraged by Y. M. C. A., 1258
- Dental Corps**, of Canada, 1053  
 of the A. E. F., 1167
- "Dente del Pasubio,"** fighting on the, 768
- Deportation**, from conquered areas, 958
- Depth-charge**, development and use of the, 22, 1074  
 pictures of dropping and exploding, 476, 1076, 1091
- Deraa**, captured, 851
- Derby, Lord**, Director of Recruiting, 652
- Dernburg, Dr. Bernhard**, German agent, 273, 424
- De Robilant**, Italian commander, 777, 1175
- Derringer**, vessel, 222
- De Saales**, French objective, 465
- Desert**, machine-gunners campaigning in, 829
- Desert Column**, actions of, 832, 851
- Desert Corps**, composition of, 833
- Desolation**, in wake of battle, 548
- De Souville Fort**: see Souville, fortress of
- Destination**, controversies over the "ultimate destination" of neutral trade, 262
- Destouches, René**, interview with Crown Prince, 310
- Destroyers**, American join British fleet, 751, 873  
 German, 472  
 Greek, off the Piraeus, 699
- Deutschland**, Commercial U-boat, 232
- Devil's Wood**: see Delville Wood
- Devonport, Lord**, Food Controller, 662, 666
- De Wet, Christiana**, troops in pursuit of, 185
- D'Eyncourt**, Naval Constructor, and tank, 18
- Dhaheriya**, British objective, 836
- Diala River**, crossing the, 761  
 defenses of, 402
- Diana** (H. M. S.), 191
- Diaries**, extracts from German, 128
- Diaz, General Armando**, and Austrian offensive, 1175  
 Italian operations, 770, 778, 875  
 plans for Italian offensive, 1178  
 portrait, 777
- D'Iberville**, torpedo-boat destroyer, 215
- Dickbush Sector**, 27th U. S. Division in, 1143
- Dickman, Major-General Joseph I.**, American commander, 1114, 1290, 1300  
 and Army of Occupation, 1316
- Diesel-Engine**, for submarines, 231
- Diest**, crossing at, 96
- Diet**, of Galicia, 54
- Dienleut, Forest of**, Americans in, 1304
- Dijon**, American use of, 1103
- Dilman Plain**, fighting on the, 405
- Dimitracopoulos**, Greek politician, 709
- Dimitriev, Radko**, in command Russian forces, 166, 324
- Dinant**, atrocities in, 100
- Dinaric Alps**, boundary line in, 360
- Dineen, Rev. Joseph P.**, private secretary, 1244
- Direction Island**, wireless station destroyed, 215
- Dirigibles**, development of, 244
- Dismounted Yeomanry Division**, in Palestine, 833
- Disraeli, B.**, comment of, 66
- Divisional Supply Column**, of Canadian troops, 1195
- Dixmude**, and Belgian attack, 1144  
 capture of, 151
- Djemaï Fasha**, Young Turk leader, 338, 383, 841, 847
- Djukitch, Major**, delayed Austrians, 174
- Djulfia**, Russian railhead at, 405
- Dniester River**, flanking counter-attack, 332
- Dobell**, British Commander in Palestine, 832
- Dobell-Mayer Column**, in Africa, 410
- Doberdo Plateau**, and Italian campaigns, 579, 584, 594
- Döberitz**, barracks in prison camp at, 869
- Dobropole Mountains**, Bulgars entrenched on, 1122
- Dobrudja**, cession of, 1337  
 during Rumanian campaign, 618-19  
 given to Rumania, 77, 366, 699  
 negotiations regarding, 616  
 under Allies, 1120
- Dockship**, Vulcan, 37
- Dodecanese**, negotiations over, 360
- Dodoma**, British objective, 971
- Doge's Palace**, protection of, 586
- Dogger Bank**, battle off the, 219
- Dog-Patrol**, German, 319
- Dohna-Schlodien, Captain Count von und zu**, commander of the Möwe, 475
- Doiran**, advances against, 380, 564, 708
- Doiran, Lake**, and Saloniki campaign, 562, 570, 576  
 Anglo-Greek offensive near, 1124-25
- Dollar Christmas Fund**, for Belgian relief, 889
- Dolomites**, fighting in the, 582
- Dominion Trades and Labor Congress**, and conscription, 1050
- Domplierre**, and battle of the Somme, 520-21
- Domremy-la-Pucelle**, Basilica of, 1240
- Donaldson, Sir Frederick**, and Kitchener, 488
- Donde**, torpedo-boat, 215
- Donon**, summit, 110
- Donovan, Col. William J.**, decorated, 1110
- Dormans**, near Marne, 1031, 1036
- Dorna Vatra Pass**, storming the, 318
- Dornach**, victory of, 114
- Donal, Grande Place**, 1277  
 on German defense lines, 1138-39
- Donaumont**, fort of, what was left, 458  
 fortress of, 436, 444, 448, 456-59, 462-65  
 French infantry advancing, 467  
 ravine of, 446

- Douellens**, conference at, 1026  
**Dougherty, Most Rev. Dennis J.**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Dousmanis, General**, military adviser of Constantine, 704  
**Dover Patrol**, part of the, 209  
     work of the, 471  
**Dover Straits**, closed, 473, 1086  
**Doxata**, occupied, 708  
**Drachen**, type of balloon, 246  
**Dragoon Guards**, in the battle of the Somme, 527  
**Drama**, Greeks in, 63  
     occupied, 561, 572, 708  
**Drei Grachten**, bridgehead taken at, 821  
**Dreikaiserbund**: see League of the Three Emperors  
**Drenova Glava**, taken, 374  
**Dresden**, light cruiser, 210, 213  
**Dressing-station**, advanced, near Inchy, 1205  
     underground, on the French Front, 466  
**Driant, Lieut.-Colonel**, heroism and death of, 443-44  
**Drina River**, fighting on, 171, 173, 369-70, 376, 380  
**Dracourt-Quéant Line**, final successful attack on, 1269  
     switch of Hindenburg Line, 810, 1135, 1138, 1207  
**Drugs**, German exports, 32  
**Drum-fire**, form of bombardment, 282  
**Drumgoole, Rt. Rev. Monsignor H. T.**, and Special War Activities, 1239  
**Dual Alliance**, origin of, 26, 354  
**Dual Monarchy**: see Austria-Hungary  
**Duala**, surrendered, 408, 410  
**Duala-Eseka Railway**, in Africa, 410  
**Dubail, General**, French commander, 111, 115, 141, 306-07  
     in portrait group, 745  
**Dublin**, attempted *coup d'état* in, 656  
     gutted post-office of, 655  
     Imperial Hotel ruin, 655  
**Dubno**, fortress of, 164, 604  
**Dubois, General**, in command Zouaves, 154  
     portrait in group, 996  
**Duchesse**, French commander, 794, 1028  
**Dneider**, attack at, 830  
**Dugouts**, German, 546, 718  
**Dujaila Redoubt**, in Mesopotamia, 626  
**Dukhonin, General**, and Russian Revolution, 692, 727, 976  
**Dukla Pass**, fighting in, 168, 318  
**Duma**, and the Russian revolution, 677-78, 680, 870  
     of Russia, 599-600, 608, 611  
**Dumba, Doctor Constantin**, recalled, 417  
**Dunen Insel**, part of Heligoland, 43  
**Dunkerque**, as a naval base, 472  
     bombed, 255, 926  
     naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Dunne**, aeroplane, 250  
**Dun-sur-Meuse**, on German 2nd line, 1138  
**Duperdassin**, aeroplane, 250  
**Durazzo**, bombardment of, 1131  
     occupied, 380, 587  
     on Albanian coast of Adriatic, 587  
     sub-chasers at bombardment of, 1081  
**Dushan, Stephen**, king of the Serbs, 57  
**Dutch-Spanish Commission**, took over work of C. R. B., 877  
**Duval**, condemned to death, 502  
**Dvina**, Russian line on the, 332  
**Dvinsk**, German objective, 255, 330, 332  
     Russo-German parley near, 977  
     warfare in and about, 602-03, 723, 987  
**Dye-stuffs**, German exports of, 32
- E**
- Eagle Hut**, in London, 1250  
**East African Mounted Rifles**, in African campaign, 966  
**East African Regiment**, in African campaign, 966  
**East Prussia**, invasions of, 124, 158, 320, 419  
     map of Russian advance into, 158  
     under Peace treaty, 1330  
**Eastern Catholic Church**, control of, 65  
**Eastern Front**, during 1915, 317; during 1916, 599  
     maps, 163, 169  
     Russia on the, 155  
**Eastern Galicia**, contest for, 1338
- Eastern Rumelia**, history of, 66, 68-69  
**Eastern South Africa**, Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**Eastleigh**, naval aviation at, 1090  
**Eaucourt l'Abbaye**, fight for, 548-49, 557  
**Eben, von**, German commander, 1038  
**Ebert, Friedrich**, posts in German republic, 1313, 1322  
**École de Joffre**, at Lyons, 509  
**Economics**, in Germany, 940  
**Ecuador**, representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
     severed diplomatic relations, 6, 744  
**Edea**, British objective, 410  
**Edgar, W. C.**, editor of the Northwestern Miller, 888  
**Edward VII**, king of Great Britain, and *Entente Cordiale*, 26  
**Egypt**, as British base, 390  
     Australians in, 196, 198, 200  
     claim for independence, 1339  
     General Allenby in, 833  
     Home Rule wanted in, 186  
     invaded by Senussi, 391  
     Khedive deposed, 228  
     made a British protectorate, 383  
     Turkish expedition against, 382  
     water in, 827  
**Egyptian Expeditionary Force**, campaigns of, 827  
     map illustrating advance of, 847  
**Egyptian Labor Corps**, 828  
**Ehrenbreitstein**, from the air, 1322  
**Einem, von**, German commander, 142, 302, 1036  
     portraits, 445, 1137  
**Einjährige**, of Germany, 148, 152  
**Eisner, Herr Kurt**, head of Bavarian republic, 1322  
**El Andja-Ismailia Route**, for main Turkish drive, 384  
**El Arish**, Turkish position, 384, 832  
**El Gharbi**, Cossacks arrive at, 636  
**El Ghoraniyeh**, bridge built at, 845  
**El Hanna**, failure at, 628  
**El Kubebeh**, Turkish position at, 840  
**El Kubri**, action near, 389  
**El Kuneitrah**, resistance at, 851  
**El Munghar**, resistance at, 840  
**El Shatt**, ship near, 386  
**El Ula**, Mücke at, 218  
**Elhasan**, captured, 1131  
**Election**, Presidential, of 1916, 430  
**Elizabeth**, queen of the Belgians, at outbreak of war, 92  
     end of letter from, 1004  
     enters Bruges, 1309  
**Ellershaw, General**, and Kitchener, 488  
**Elstot, Colonel**, of the Manchesters, 1012  
**Elwesh**, Mücke at, 218  
**Embargo**, on American munitions, question of, 277  
     on American shipping, 738  
     upon coasts of Greece, 570  
**Emden**, crew gets ovation at Constantinople, 217  
     cruise of the, map, 216  
     German raider, 196, 210, 214  
**Emergency Fleet Corporation**, construction of, 751  
**Emir Faisal**, Arab commander, 850  
**Emmich, General von**, German commander, 93-94  
     portrait in group, 445  
**Empress of Britain**, ship, 1312  
**Enab**, captured, 842  
**Encampment**, early British, in France, 225  
**Engine-cleaners**, women, 1061  
**Engineer Corps of the A. E. F.**, work of, 1103  
**Engineer-Establishment**, of Canadians, 1203  
**Engineer Train**, organization of, 861  
**Engineers**, erecting a cantonment in France, 751  
     German, 23  
     organization of regiment, 859  
     work of, 1155-56, 1184  
**England**, aircraft attacks on, 255, 930  
     aircraft of, 247  
     and Balkans, 61  
     and Bulgaria, 352  
     and Italy, 356, 360  
     and Rumania, 615-16  
     leave-area in, 1255  
     offers Cyprus to Greece, 374  
     see also Great Britain  
**English**, in Colonial Canada, 1187

**Enlistment**, in Australia, 198  
in Canada, 1046, 1060  
in New Zealand, 199  
**Entente Cordiale**, 26  
**Ever Pasha**, in Palestine, 841, 847  
Turkish Minister of War, 222, 334, 336, 341, 343, 394, 405  
**Epehey**, battle of, 1140  
**Epenancourt**, crossings near, 1015  
**Epervay**, German objective, 1034  
**Epinal**, defenses of, 304  
fortress of, 91, 123  
**Epionville**, airplane view of, 1286  
reached, 1295  
**Epirus**, and Greek Revolution, 710  
**Er Bente**, meeting at, 851  
**Er Eigm**, pool drained, 830  
**Ersatz Reserve**, of Austria-Hungary, 53  
**Erzberger**, **Mathias**, German peace-delegate, 1312, 1315  
**Erzerum**, Russian objective, 394, 632, 634  
**Erzhingian**, in Armenia, 632, 634  
**Es-Sinn**, British concentrate before, 753  
Turkish position, 626, 628-29  
**Es Sirr**, Turkish force at, 390  
**Esnes**, a branch of the Forges, 456, 459  
**Esnes**, 3rd U. S. Division moving through ruins of, 1153  
**Esperey**, **Franchet d'**, French commander, 122, 794  
**Espiegle**, boat, 397  
**Essad Pasha**, Albanian Chief, 380  
**Essen**, **Admiral von**, naval Commander-in-Chief, 224  
**Essen**, importance of, 961  
**Estonia**, cession of, 987-88  
**Estrées**, village in Picardy, 511, 521-22  
**étain**, German base at, 444  
**étaples**, bombed, 926  
**Etrich**, monoplane: see Taube.  
**Eugene**, **Archduke**, Austrian commander, 578, 774, 782  
**Euphrates River**, early civilization on banks of, 393  
**Euphrates Valley**, Indian troops in, 204  
**Europe**, status of states, 5  
**Evarts**, **General**, Russian commander, 324  
**Everyman's Clubs**, work of, 1241  
**Exchange**, fluctuations of, 421  
**Excise-Tax**, during war, 423  
**Exermont**, captured, 1299

## F

**Factories**, managed by workmen, 980  
**Fagare**, Austrians at, 1177  
**Fajti Hrib**, on Italian line, 598, 768  
**Falaba**, steamship, 236-37, 272, 274, 418  
**Falahiyeh Position**, in Mesopotamia, 628-29  
**Falkenhayn**, **General von**, and Verdun, 440, 447, 638  
German Chief of General Staff, 111, 149, 327  
in Jerusalem, 841  
in Rumanian campaign, 618, 620  
portraits, 438, 445  
**Falkenstein**, **Captain Count**, in command in East Africa, 971  
**Falkland Islands**, naval battle off the, 212  
**Fanning**, U. S. destroyer, 1079  
**Farley**, **John Cardinal**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Farm Women's Institutes**, war-work of, 1052  
**Farman** (**Henri and Maurice**), and aeroplanes, 250, 252, 258  
**Farmerettes**, Canadian, 1051  
**Farquhar**, **Colonel, D. S. O.**, commander of Canadian forces, 195  
**Farrar**, **Mme. Geraldine**, singing for loans, 1220  
**Fasciotti**, **Baron**, Italian minister to Rumania, 615  
**Fashoda**, dispute over, 26  
**Fausse Côte Ravine**, attacking slopes north of, 464  
**Fay**, **Robert**, arrest of, 425  
**Fay**, and Somme battle, 517, 520-21  
**Fayolle**, **General**, French commander, 514, 797, 1017  
in Italy, 778, 1171  
**Feltre**, advance towards, 1180  
**Feluja**, entered, 762  
**Fenian Ram**, a submarine, 231  
**Ferdinand**, czar of Bulgaria, abdication, 1129  
career and policies, 71-72, 366, 615, 1119  
**Ferdinand I**, emperor of Austria, abdication of, 46  
**Ferdinand I**, king of Rumania, portrait, 615  
**Ferdinand**, **Archduke**, claimed Hungary, 50  
**Fere-en-Tardenois**, during Marne battle, 1030, 1039, 1116  
**Fernando Po**, discovered the Cameroons, 408  
**Ferry**, **Jules**, French minister, 354  
**Festubert**, battle of, Canadians at, 1194  
fighting near, 149, 290; 308  
**Festubert-Laventie**, line of, 151  
**Feuillères**, and Somme battle, 521  
**Fiat**, aeroplane of, 253  
**Fiat**, a gun, 15  
**Fiat**, motor vehicles in war, 1184  
**Field-Artillery Brigade**, organization of, 858  
**Field-Fortification**, supply post of, 798  
**Field-kitchens**, German, behind Ypres, 294  
**Field-Post-office**, on the front, 803  
**Field Service**, of the Red Cross, 1228  
**Field Signal Battalion**, organization of, 860  
**Fife**, attack on, 967, 973  
**Filipescu**, Rumanian politician, 616  
**Finances**, derangement by war, 7  
in Canada, 1043-45  
in Germany, 944  
of the United States, 422  
**Finland**, declared independence, 978  
**Fires**, in factories and on shipping, 425  
**Firewood**, secured by peasants, 493  
**First American Army**, 1st division crosses the Moselle, 1377  
organization and operations of, 1118, 1141, 1287  
**Firth of Forth**, surrender of German fleet near, 1318, 1321  
**Fisher**, **Andrew**, and the war, 197  
**Fisher**, **H. A. L.**, of the War Ministry, 658  
**Fisher**, **Lord**, 1st Lord of the Admiralty, 212, 340  
resignation of, 471, 650  
**Fismes**, fall of, 1030  
**Fitzgerald**, **O. A.**, secretary of Kitchener, 488  
**Fiume**, Adriatic port, 58, 254, 587, 1338, 1339, 1341  
**Five Points**, Germans accept Wilson's, 1310  
**Flags**, the French flag at Strassburg, 113  
use of neutral, 268, 272  
**Flags of Honor**, for fulfilling loan-quotas, 1221  
**Flame-thrower**, use of, 20, 290  
**Flanders**, attack in, 1272, 1276  
fighting in 1915, 279  
proclaimed independent, 999  
second battle of, aircraft in, 924  
suffering in, 153  
**Flash-light Signalling**, post for, 1134  
**Flaucourt**, and Somme battle, 521  
**Flavelle**, **Sir Joseph**, and Canadian munitions, 1046, 1048  
**Fléron**, **Fort**, assault on, 94  
**Flers**, and Somme battle, 534, 537, 542, 544, 557  
**Flesquières**, German artillery officer at, 824  
**Fletcher**, **Rear-Admiral William B.**, American commander at Brest, 1075  
**Fleurbaix Sector**, 1st Canadian Division in, 1193  
**Fleurus**, battle of, observation balloon at, 243  
**Fleury**, village of, 452, 456, 459, 462  
**Fleury-devant-Donaumont**, German objective, 462  
**Fleville**, captured, 1299  
**Flirey**, dwellings of the 89th Division in Gas Hollow, 1177  
**Flondar**, Italians driven behind, 768  
**Florence Brigade**, loss of, 768  
**Florida**, battleship, 1088  
**Florina**, and Saloniki campaign, 572-74  
**Flotilla**, on the Tigris, 760  
**Foch**, **Marshal Ferdinand**, and American troops, 1110, 1287, 1302  
and Somme battle, 515  
appointed Chief of General Staff, 797, 874  
appointed to co-ordinate Allied forces, 1017  
at Rapallo, 778  
early commands of, 115, 123, 136, 148, 300, 306-07  
enters Strasbourg, 1318  
Generalissimo of Allied Armies on Western Front, 667, 1026  
in Metz, 1311  
in Supreme War Council, 826  
meets German envoys, and dictates terms of the armistice, 1314  
Nivelle preferred to, 788  
plans for the last offensive, 1139  
portraits, 745, 1026

- Foggia**, A. E. F. School at, 1106  
**Fokker**, aeroplane, 258, 911-12, 920, 926  
**Foley**, Rt. Rev. Monsignor, Great Lakes Vicariate, 1244  
**Fontaine-les-Croisilles**, on British front, 810  
**Fontaine Madame**, a spring, 310  
**Fontaine-notre-Dame**, captured, 824  
**Food**, conservation in America, 1215  
in Belgium, 1004  
in Canada, 1049  
in Germany, 949  
in Great Britain, 132, 660  
**Food Administration Board**, in United States, 1215  
**Food-Kitchen**, in Berlin, 954  
**Foodstuffs**, and blockades, 263, 272  
exports to Europe, 1216  
prices of Belgium, 878  
**Forbes**, Captain **Kenneth K.**, painting of Canadian artillery in action, 544  
**Forces of National Defense**, at Saloniki, 572  
**Ford**, Henry, peace ship of, 429  
**Foreign Office**, in Paris, 1324, 1326  
**Foreign Trade**, of the United States, 422  
**Forêt de Bourgogne**, occupied, 1150  
**Forêt de Compiègne**, armistice signed in, 1314  
**Forges**, fighting around, 451, 455, 457, 468  
in the Argonne, 1294, 1296  
**Formidable**, ship, 234  
**Fort Fao**, captured, 393  
**Fort Garry Horse**, joined without leave, 192  
on parade, and after Cambrai, 825  
**Fort Lamy**, in Africa, 408  
**Fosdick**, Raymond B., chairman of Commission on Training Camp Activities, 1230  
**Fosse S.**, fighting about, 292, 295  
**Fosses Wood**, near Verdun, 444  
**Foster**, Sir George, portrait, 1044  
**Four de Paris**, fighting at, 299  
**Four-Minutemen**, speeches of, 1220  
**Fourie**, Major, Boer leader, 414  
**Fourteen Points**, German use for Wilson's, 1310, 1334  
**Foyer du Soldat**, under the Y. M. C. A., 1258  
**France**, aircraft of, 247, 250, 254, 912  
alliances of, 26  
and Balkans, 61  
and Belgian neutrality, 24, 89  
and Bismarck, 352  
and Italy, 351, 355-56, 360  
and Morocco, 36  
and Rumania, 615  
and Tunis, 353, 356  
and Turkey, 333, 336, 381  
armies of, 5  
Army of Occupation, 1316  
at the end of 1914, 225  
attitude toward Serbian ultimatum, 86  
benevolent war societies in, 508  
Coalition Cabinet, 499  
colonies of, 34  
disposition of army in first fighting, 111  
evacuation of, required, 867  
extension of military service, 38  
fighting in, 1915, 299  
Finance Committee of, 499  
first fighting in, 112  
fleets of, 472, 643  
force at Saloniki, 370, 372, 375, 380  
German drive against, 109  
Germany declares war on, 87  
greetings of the liberated towns, 1262  
in conquest of German Africa, 407  
in Seven Years' War, 3  
in the East, 1338  
in war-time, 491  
included in work of C. R. B., 885, 900  
indemnity to Germany, 24  
influence of American troops on, 750-51  
leave-areas in, 1255  
loss of population, 7  
navy in Mediterranean, 208  
on Peace, 867  
on the French front in 1917, 787  
preparations to resist Germany, 110  
raided by Zeppelins, 255  
ratifies treaty, 1335  
Red Cross work in, 1227  
removal of government, 123  
represented at Peace Conference, 1325  
shipping of, 470  
special treaties to protect, 1330  
submarines of, 232  
subventions for Belgian relief, 880, 884  
**France**, supposed attitude of, 82  
to be evacuated, 1314  
topography of, 91  
trenches in, 9  
troops in Franco-Prussian War, 4  
troops in Italy, 782, 1171-72, 1175, 1179  
women's work in, 507  
Y. M. C. A. in, 1247, 1250, 1258  
**Franco Comté**, troops from, 312  
**Franchet d'Esperey**, General, on Macedonian front, 1119  
**Francis Assickinack**, Algonquin Indian, 205  
**François**, von, command East Prussians, 158, 160  
portrait in group, 445  
**Franco-Prussian War**, account of, 24  
ammunition expended in, 10  
and Belgian neutrality, 89  
cost of, 8  
forces in, 4  
situation in Europe after, 352  
**Francport**, German envoys at, 1314  
**Francois, M.**, meeting with Hoover, 894  
**Franke**, Colonel von, in command in Africa, 414  
**Frankenau**, battle of, 158  
**Frankfurt**, bombarded, 927  
**Frankfurt-on-Main**, view in, 420  
**Franks**, separation of East and West, 28  
**Franz Ferdinand**, Archduke, assassination of, 45, 78-80  
mourning in Vienna for, 81  
part of funeral cortège, 83  
policy of, 57  
portraits, 49, 69  
**Franz Josef**, emperor of Austria-Hungary, death of, and its effects, 45, 48, 772  
incidents in reign of, 30, 46, 50, 56, 354  
portrait of, 48  
**Frauenlob**, light cruiser, 906  
**Frederick the Great**, king of Prussia, army of, 2, 3  
palaces of, 25  
**Frederick**, Professor, case of, 998  
**Freedom of the Seas**, principle of, 733, 1327  
**Fregicourt**, and Somme battle, 521, 537, 544  
**French**, Field-Marshal Sir John, dispute over munitions, 850  
in command British Expeditionary Force, 112, 117-20, 129, 139, 148, 291-92  
portrait, 112  
relieved, and causes, 294-95, 418  
reports of, 253-54, 288  
**French**, fighting in improvised defenses, 447  
in Colonial Canada, 1187  
Infantry at Douaumont, 467  
Infantry awaiting attack, 669  
machine-gun corps, 442  
on Balkan front, 1122  
retreat down the Vardar, 562  
soldiers clearing wreck, 979  
soldiers incapable of active service mending roads, 670  
soldiers of the Army of the Orient, 576  
typical regiment resting on the march, 673  
**French African Forces**, transportation, 222  
**French Battle Fleet**, in the Mediterranean, 222  
**French-Canadians**, and Canadian policies, 1056, 1062  
and the war, 186, 188, 194  
at Quebec, 193  
in battle of the Somme, 540  
in Colonial Canada, 1187  
**French Clerical Party**, supported Pope, 354  
**French Colonial Corps**, at St. Mihiel, 1290, 1292  
fighting of, 131, 312, 314  
**French-Colonials**, fall back at Ypres, 1193  
in prison camp at Zossen, 786  
**French Independent Air-Force**, at St. Mihiel, 1291  
**Frenzela Torrent**, and Valley, on Italian front, 1172, 1176  
**Fresnes** heights of, 792, 794, 796  
**Fresnes-en-Woevre**, Franco-American objective, 1291, 1300  
**Fresnoy**, Canadians at, 1198  
**Freyja Stellung**, part of German 3rd line, 1139  
**Freyberg**, Lieut.-Colonel C. B., in Somme battle, 554  
**Freyneit, de**, in French Cabinet, 500  
**Freytag-Loringhoven**, Baron von, portrait, 638  
**Fresenberg**, taken, 819  
**Fricourt**, and the Fricourt Salient, 512, 514, 517, 520, 522, 534, 557  
**Friedrichshafen**, aeroplane, 926  
**Friedrichshafen**, with Zeppelin, 247



**Friends of Peace**, and propaganda, 277, 425  
**Friends of Truth**, and propaganda, 277, 425  
**Frise**, and Somme battle, 520  
**Froide-Terre**, hill near Verdun, 439  
**Fromentine**, naval aviation base at, 1090  
**Frushkagora Mountains**, Serbian objective, 178  
**Fuel**, American conservation of, 1215, 1218  
**Fuel Administration**, in United States, 1218  
**Fulton, Robert**, invented a submersible, 230  
**Fumin Woods**, French objective, 464  
**Furnes**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
 received French War Cross, 150

## G

**Gaafer Pasha**, Turkish leader, 391  
**Gaba Tepe**, landing near, 343, 344  
**Gagadima**, captured, 408  
**Galatea**, warship, 477  
**Galicia**, Austria mobilized in, 156  
 campaigns in, 163, 167, 317, 419  
 cession of, 1337  
 part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 54  
 Poles in, 28  
 Russian campaigns in, 604, 719  
 sorting German mail in, 601  
**Gallery**, Germans at work in underground, 793  
**Gaillien, General**, as Minister of War, 316, 500  
 military governor of Paris, 128, 131, 134, 496  
**Gallipoli**, and the Dardanelles, map, 339  
 expedition to, 197, 333, 419  
 Turkish and German officers at, 337  
 Venizelos and the campaign, 368  
 wounded taken to Egypt, 390  
**Gallwitz, General von**, Teutonic commander, 369  
**Gambetta**, escaped in balloon, 243  
**Gamli**, railroad terminus, 836  
**Garaix**, despatch telling of death, 258  
**Garda, Lake**, in the Trentino, 361, 582, 588, 1174  
**Gardes Civiques**, in Belgium, 91, 93, 96  
**Garfield, Dr. Harry A.**, Fuel Administrator, 748, 1218  
**Garibaldi, Constantin**, in Argonne attack, 304  
**Garibaldi, Giuseppe**, Italian liberator, 353-54  
**Garibaldi, Colonel Peppino**, Italian commander, 583  
**Garna**, Allied objective, 410  
**Garrison, Lindley M.**, resignation of, 429  
**Garros**, and aeroplane machine-gun, 258  
**Garub**, occupied, 415  
**Gas**, advancing wave of poison, 285  
 asphyxiating, 316  
 poisonous, 14, 19, 20, 285, 418  
 tear, 20  
 wave seen from the air, 523  
**Gasless Sundays**, in America, 1218  
**Gas-Mask**, American, 20  
**Gasolene**, conservation of, 1218  
**Gaspé Bay**, sailing port of Canadian troops, 191, 1190  
**Gas-Regiment**, 1st, in Meuse-Argonne offensive, 1167  
**Gatling, Dr. R. J.**, inventor, 14  
**Gattamelata**, removal of equestrian statue of, 1185  
**Gaucher, General**, decorating American soldiers, 1110  
**Gaul**, and Italy, 351  
**Gaulois**, battleship, 489  
**Gavrelle**, struggle about, 812  
**Gavrill Pasha**, arrest of, 69  
**Gaza**, British objective, 832, 834, 876  
**Gaza-Beersheba Line**, illustrating the Turkish defenses on the, map, 834  
**Gazi**, battle near, 967  
**Gebel Habelta**, Turkish forces at, 389  
**Geddes, Sir Eric**, as First Lord of the Admiralty, 666  
**General Revenue Act**, Amendment to, 268  
**General Staff**, the triune, 778  
**Genoa**, and American troops, 1181  
**George V, King of England**, in group picture, 557, 1329  
 visits France, 531, 557  
 visits Salisbury Plain, 195  
 with Sir Julian Byng, 1190  
**George, King of Greece**, death of, 702  
**George, Prince**, High Commissioner of Crete, 707  
**George, Prince**, of Serbia, 175  
**George Washington**, ship, 1077, 1155  
**"Georgian Gates,"** ravine of the, 632

**Gerard, Ambassador**, recalled from Germany, 736, 738, 872  
**Gerbéville**, Chasseurs Alpins at, 298  
**German East Africa**, colony of, 407, 409  
 conquest of, 963  
 Indian troops in, 204  
 mandate for, 1330  
 routes of invasion and lines of German retreat, 965  
**German New Guinea**, taken over, 223  
**German South-West Africa**, campaign in, 419  
 colony of, 407, 409, 411, 414  
 mandate for, 1330  
**Germans**, confiscating Serbian leather, 371  
 feeding the Kaiser's troops, 601  
 in Austria-Hungary, 46, 49-58, 79  
 in United States, 225  
 infantry reserves waiting, 323  
 parade of troops in Belgium, 108  
 peculiar mentality of, 34  
**Germany, Crown Prince of**, abdication of, 1322  
 and the advance on Paris, 1030  
 during Nivelle's attack, 794  
 in command German forces, 109, 116, 302  
 interview with, 310  
 portraits, 130, 445, 1313  
**Germany, Empire of**, advance and retreat, map, 137  
 advance in West, 101  
 advance into Belgium, 90-91  
 advance into France, 116  
 advance on Petrograd, 986  
 aid in reducing Serbia, 184  
 aircraft of, 912, 926  
 and Balkans, 77, 82, 84  
 and Belgian relief, 880, 883  
 and Bulgaria, 366, 1129  
 and European powers, 352  
 and Hague Convention, 92  
 and Ireland, 656  
 and Italy, 356, 360, 772  
 and Libya, 391  
 and Morocco, 36  
 and outbreak of war, 80, 86-90  
 and Persian Gulf terminus, 39  
 and relief in Northern France, 901-02  
 and Rumania, 614, 619  
 and Russia, 86, 155-56, 158, 606  
 and Russia's revolutions, 676, 687, 716  
 and separate peace with Russia, 600  
 and the League, 352  
 and the War Zone, 264, 270  
 and Turkey, 333, 335, 378, 381  
 at the end of 1914, 225  
 at war, 937  
 blunders of naval policy, 907  
 Bureau of Raw Materials for War, 503  
 Cavalry of, 134  
 Centre Party, 868  
 commerce of, 34  
 controversy with United States over submarines, 266, 269  
 declared war on France, 87  
 defensive position, August, 1918, 1138  
 disposition of armies about French frontier, 109  
 economic limitations imposed by Treaty, 1332  
 fleet of, 26  
 government of, 42  
 Great Britain declared war on, 90  
 in Triple Alliance, 26  
 increase of military strength, 38  
 industrial transformation of, 31  
 intercepted note regarding Mexico, 738  
 leave-areas in, 1255  
 lines, actual and projected, map, 1147  
 manoeuvres for armistice and peace, 1307  
 military service in, 39  
 National Assembly at Weimar, 1322  
 offensive of March, 1918, maps, 1011, 1014  
 offensive of March and April, 1918, 1007, 1027  
 opinion of France, 498  
 Parliamentary System ordered by Kaiser, 1146  
 peace gestures in, 868  
 peace offer of, 730  
 Peace Plenipotentiaries sent to Foch, 1314  
 plan of attack on France, 110  
 plans for re-making world, as shown in Berlin map, 903  
 prison camp in, 869  
 propaganda in America and Mexico, 5, 422, 424  
 republican constitution for, 1322



- Germany, Empire of**, restrictions on military power imposed by treaty, 1332  
retreat to the Arras-St. Quentin-Soissons line, 737  
revolution in, 1320  
states of, as republics, 1322  
submarines of, 232-33  
treaty with Bulgaria, 704  
troops in Franco-Prussian War, 4  
unification of, 24, 26  
war-time naval policy, 207  
Y. work in, 1251, 1258
- Gesnes**, captured, 1293
- Gette**, Belgian river, 93, 96
- Gettysburg**, forces engaged at, 4
- Gey Dag**, on Turkish flank, 632
- Ghaleb Pasha**, Vali and Turkish Commander-in-Chief, 850
- Gheluvelt**, British and, 149, 152, 154
- Ghenadiev**, Bulgarian minister, 77, 366
- Ghenes**, attack near, 1146
- Ghent**, bombed, 255  
capital of East Flanders, 1000, 1280  
fighting near, 1150  
town fined, 991
- Ghent Canal**, German stand at, 1147
- Ghent University**, German reorganization of, 999
- Ghurkas**, in Gallipoli, Mesopotamia, etc., 349, 753, 756, 833, 842
- Giardino**, Italian commander, 1175
- Gibbons, James Cardinal**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
portrait, 1237
- Gibeon**, northern outpost, 415
- Gibraltar**, anti-submarine base, 1075, 1080
- Gibraltars**, Straits of, guard at, 239
- Gibson, Hugh**, and Belgian relief, 879
- Gievres**, American use of, 1103, 1167
- Ginchy**, and Somme battles, 533-34, 537, 543, 557
- Giolitti**, Italian leader, 360
- Giordino, General**, Italian commander, 588, 778
- Gird Trench**, resistance of, 545
- Girls**, studying gas-engineering, 1051  
war-worker playing "Old Glory," 1254  
working a farm, 663
- Giudicaria Valley**, in the Trentino, 361, 582
- Givency**, Canadians at, 1194  
engagements at or near, 149, 290
- Givet**, fortress of, 117, 122
- Givet-Mauberge**, line of, 118
- Gladstone, [W. E.]**, premier, 70
- Glasgow**, light cruiser, 210, 212
- Glassware**, in Germany, 32
- Gleason, Rt. Rev. Monsignor Joseph M.**, Pacific Vicariate, 1244
- Glen**, tramp steamer, 215
- Glencorse Wood**, resistance at, 820
- Glennon, Most Rev. John J.**, in Catholic War Council, 1238
- Glory**, ship, 191
- Glossop, Captain John C. T.**, of the Sydney, 215
- Gloucester**, light cruiser, 222
- Gneisenau**, armored cruiser, 210, 212, 223
- Gnome**, an engine, 250, 252
- Godfrey, Dr. Hollis**, in Advisory Commission, 748
- Goeben**, battle-cruiser, 222, 336, 341
- Gogu Negulescu**, Rumanian senator, 622
- Gold**, in Germany, 944
- Golden Bystritsa**, on the Russian line, 608
- Golden Horn**, waterway, 335
- Goldop**, fighting at, 158
- Goliath**, ship, 347
- "Goliaths"** Northern vessels, 230
- Goltz**, premier of Russia, 870
- Goltz, General von der**, as Governor General of Belgium, 106  
confessions of, 427  
military tutor to Turks, 338
- Gommecourt**, and the battle of the Somme, 512, 517-18, 520, 534  
evacuation of, 805
- Gompers, Samuel**, in Advisory Commission, 748
- Gondrecourt**, A. E. F. trained near, 1105, 1108-09
- Gonnelleu**, taken, 824
- Good Hope**, armored cruiser, 210
- Goodenough, Commodore**, in battle of the Bight of Heligoland, 208
- Goose Crest**, hill near Verdun, 445-451
- Gordon, Sir Charles**, war-work of, 1049
- Gordon Highlanders**, annihilated, 122
- Gore Resolution**, presented in Congress, 276
- Goremykin, Ivan L.**, premier of Russia, 599
- gorizia**, and Caporetto disaster, 767-68, 776  
broken terrain, map, 596  
captured, 592-93, 597  
cession of, 1338  
key to Trieste, 578-79, 582, 584  
on the Isonzo front, 361, 364
- Gorrige, General**, expedition up the Karun, 396
- Gotha**, aeroplane, 252, 920, 926
- Gotha**, French objective, 465
- Gough, Sir Hubert**, British commander, 522, 808, 1010, 1016
- Gough, Brig.-General John**, staff officer of 1st Army, 284, 819
- Gounaris**, premier of Greece, 368, 704
- Gouraud, General**, and Army of Occupation, 1316  
enters Strasbourg, 1318  
French commander, near Rheims, 1035, 1141
- Gouzeourt**, taken and re-taken, 824, 826
- Goworowo**, Russians at, 326
- Gradisca**, part of Austria-Hungary, 50
- Gradsco**, French at, 376
- Graeco-Bulgarian Frontier**, on the, 563
- Graeco-Serbian Frontier**, Allied artillery on, 567
- Grain**, commandeered, 264  
declared contraband, 222
- Grajevo**, street scene in, 461
- Grand Couronne**, hills near Nancy, 115, 132, 1126
- Grandcourt**, during Somme battle, 555  
evacuation of, 805
- Grand Fleet**, of Great Britain, 470, 471, 480, 484  
6th Battle Squadron of the (American), 1087, 1088
- Grand Haneau**, captured, 1146
- Grandpré**, taken, 1148, 1302
- Grand Trunk Pacific System**, and the war, 1043, 1064
- Grave di Papadopoli**, Piave island, 1180
- Gravenstafel**, captured, 822  
on Canadian flank, 1193
- Graziani, General**, French commander, in Italy, 1179
- Grdzietza**, a typical Serbian village, 183
- Great Britain**, Admiralty and Belgian relief, 882  
aircraft of, 252, 258  
and Belgium's neutrality, 24, 89  
and Declaration of London, 259  
and Eastern Rumelia, 70  
and *Entente Cordiale*, 26  
and Koweit, 39  
and Russo-Turkish War, 31  
and Turkey, 333, 336  
armies of, 5  
Army of Occupation, 1316  
at Peace Conference, 1325  
at the end of 1914, 225  
attitude toward Serbian ultimatum, 85, 87-90  
breakdown of the Fifth Army, 1009  
British people at war, 645  
Canadians in Army and Navy of, 1204  
Coalition Cabinet of, 651-53  
Colonies of, 34  
commerce of, 34  
contributions to C. R. B., 885  
controversies with United States, 262  
declares war against Turkey, 381  
declares war on Germany, 90, 647  
effect of her naval policy on Germany, 908  
expenditure during Napoleonic Wars, 8  
forces moved to fill gap at North, 143  
in conquest of German Africa, 407  
in Egypt, 382-83  
in Seven Years War, 3  
in the East, 1338  
interest in Suez Canal, 382  
K. of C. in, 1242  
naval attack on German land troops, 150  
naval battles of, 210, 469  
naval raids on, 218  
Naval Reserve, 472  
new ministries formed, 659  
on Peace, 867  
on the British front in 1917, 805  
overseas empire heartily joins the war, 185  
preparedness and power of fleet, 207  
ratifies treaty, 1335  
Royal Naval Division, 340

- Great Britain**, shipping of, 470  
 submarines of, 232-33  
 subvention for Belgian relief, 880, 884  
 supposed attitude of, 84  
 Territorial Division, 340  
 treatment of refugees, 105  
 troops in Italy, 781, 1171, 1175-76, 1179-80  
 troops in Mesopotamia, 755, 759  
 ultimatum to Germany, 90  
 veterans at Victoria after furlough, 652  
 volunteer troops, 279, 649  
 war debt, 8  
 see also British Expeditionary Force, Gallipoli, Guards, Jutland, Mesopotamia, Palestine, Somme, Ypres, Zeebrugge, etc.
- "Greatest Mother in the World,"** original of poster, 1215
- Greece**, affected by Italy's entrance to war, 358  
 Allied ultimatum to, 707, 710-12  
 and Bulgaria, 70  
 and Constantinople, 333  
 and French politics, 499  
 and Macedonia, 74, 77-78  
 and Serbia, 365-66, 370, 374, 376, 380  
 and the Balkans, 60, 62, 63, 65  
 and the War—The Venizelist Revolt, 699  
 and Turkey, 24, 335  
 at the end of 1914, 225, 228  
 declares war against Bulgaria and German Empire, 714  
 during 1917, 876  
 in the East, 1338  
 land ceded to, 1337-38  
 mobilization ordered, 369  
 neutrality of, 365-66, 368, 370, 704-05  
 policy towards Allies, 559, 565, 572  
 profits by second Balkan war, 699, 702  
 Provisional Government of, 710  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
 royal family of, 709, 714  
 threatens Saloniki troops, 575
- Greek Catholic Church**, centered at Constantinople, 333  
 influence of, 74  
 see also Eastern Catholic Church
- Greek fire**, and flame-thrower, 20
- Greeks**, armies of, 2  
 on the Balkan front, 1119, 1122
- Green Cross**, members work with Y., 1250
- Greenland**, colony of Denmark, 5
- Greif**, raider, 475
- Gremilly**, wood of, 440, 452
- Grenades**, for rifles, 610  
 hand-grenades, 1, 14-15
- Grenadiers**, origin of, 15
- Gresham, Corporal James B.**, one of the first American casualties in France, 749, 751
- Grey, Sir Edward**, assurance regarding fleet, 908  
 comments of, 81-82  
 in Joint War Council, 500  
 on right of blockade, 265  
 policy of, 26, 86-90  
 portrait, 86  
 removed from office, 658
- Grigorovitch, Admiral**, Minister of Marine, 611
- Grindell, General**, German peace delegate, 1315
- Groddek**, fighting at, 165
- Grodno**, fighting near, 163
- Groener, von**, successor to Ludendorff, 1283, 1316
- Gronna, Senator**, filibuster and negative vote of, 738, 743
- Grootfontein**, provisional capital at, 415-16
- Guard**, at the Royal Salute, 1190
- Guard Rifles**, stand of, 134
- Guards**, British troops, 121, 295  
 in Somme battle, 537, 543
- Guatemala**, declared war, 6, 744  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325
- Guémappe**, struggle around, 812
- Guépratte, Admiral**, in command at Gallipoli, 341-42
- Guendecourt**, and Somme battle, 534, 544-45, 549
- Gufars**, Tigris boats, 763
- Guillaumat, General**, on Macedonian front, 1119
- Gullemin**, Greek protest handed to, 559
- Guillemont**, and Somme battle, 525, 529-34, 557
- Guipavas**, naval-aviation base at, 1090
- Guise, General de**, in command Belgian troops, 146
- Guise**, on German 2nd line, 1138, 1280  
 victory of, 122, 124
- Gujau**, naval aviation base at, 1090
- Gulflight**, vessel, 236-37, 272, 274, 418
- Gumbinnen**, actions about, 158, 162
- Gunner**, British, copying instructions, 1017
- Guns**, American naval, on Western front, 1087  
 anti-aircraft, 930  
 French, 11, 251  
 on a fixed mount, 454  
 Berthas at Verdun, 443  
 boring inside breech pieces of heavy, 661  
 British, rescued from the Carso, 776  
 bursting shells from anti-aircraft, 928  
 captured by Canadians on Arras front, 1205  
 captured from Serbia, 179  
 captured German, 1298  
 carried across Africa, 410  
 first American gun fired in France, 749  
 French 37-mm., and its crew, 1116  
 75s, 14, 300, 442  
 "heavies" in position, 1145  
 German, captured by British advance, 1282  
 German picture of English, 663  
 hauling into position on Canadian front, 1197  
 instruction in handling and loading, 40, 800-01  
 Italian, dragged up mountains, 362  
 large, on Isonzo front, 589  
 mounted on pontoons in marshes, 783  
 on floating batteries, 784  
 Japanese at Brest-Litovsk, 328  
 Lewis, on aeroplane, 21  
 moving them up, in spite of mud, 822  
 naval, in Serbia, 372  
 of the Queen Elizabeth, 206  
 position of German long-range, that bombarded Paris, 1019  
 railway-mounting for, 516  
 rapid-fire, used by Italians, 592  
 sent by Allies to Italy, 767  
 sent by French to Belgrade, 182  
 Skodas at Verdun, 443  
 spotted by aeroplanes, 253  
 temporarily lost in Sanctuary Wood, 1202  
 testing bores of French, 29  
 to be surrendered by Germany, 1315  
 types of, 12  
 see also Ammunition, Artillery, Gatling-gun, Howitzers, Machine-guns, Shells, etc.
- Gurin**, British frontier post, 410
- Gurko, General**, resignation of, 689
- Gushev**, former Bulgarian premier, 367
- Gutchevo**, dominated by Cat Rock, 178
- Gutchkov**, in Russian Revolutionary Cabinet, 686, 689
- Guthrie, Hugh**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062
- Guynemer**, French ace, 912, 914, 918, 920, 924  
 portrait, 918
- Guyot de Salins, General**, French commander, 464
- Gwendolen**, armed steamer, 224
- Gymnote**, a submarine, 232
- Gypsies**, in the Balkans, 64
- Gyroscopes**, use in torpedo, 232
- H**
- Haalen**, crossing at, 96
- Haeseler, Field-Marshal von**, German commander, 440, 441, 445, 447
- Hagen, Major von den**, killed, 388
- Hagen Stellung**, part of German 3rd line, 1139
- Hague Convention**, and gas, 19  
 and neutral powers, 92  
 forbade poison, 285  
 provisions for warfare, 98, 102
- Hai River**, crossing the, 753
- Haig, Sir Douglas**, and Allied offensive, 1133, 1140  
 and German offensive, 1009  
 and Nivelle, 788, 790, 808  
 as Commander-in-Chief, 295, 418  
 at Mons, 117, 119-22  
 at the Somme, 515  
 in last northern offensive, 1263  
 in Metz, 1311  
 portraits, 123, 499, 557, 1136, 1203  
 takes Messines Ridge, 874
- Haisnes**, fighting near, 292
- Haiti**, declared war, 6, 744  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325
- Hajvoronka**, engagement at, 330
- Halberstadt**, an airplane, 912, 918
- Haldane, Lord**, and the war, 646, 650-51
- Halicz**, during last Russian offensive, 723  
 engagement at, 318
- Hallik Bey**, Turkish commander, 405

## Hal—Hol

1360

- Holland-Belgium Frontier**, guards at, 265  
**Hollebeke**, captured, 820  
**Holnon**, and assault on Hin enburg Line, 1274  
**Holyhead**, auxiliary sub-chaser base, 1080  
**Holy War**, or Jihad, proclaimed, 222, 336, 385, 847, 964  
**Home Rule Bill**, for Ireland, 84, 654  
**Home Service**, of Red Cross, 1228  
**Homs**, fell, 852  
**Honduras**, representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
     severs diplomatic relations, 6, 744  
**Hong-Kong**, mountain battery from, 833  
**Hood, Rear-Admiral**, British fleet commander, 218, 471, 480, 483  
**Hooge**, actions near, 152, 290, 514  
     captured, 820  
**Hoover, Herbert C.**, Food Controller, 748, 879  
     meets M. Francqui, 894  
     relief work of, 880  
**Horizon-blue**, French uniform color, 300  
**Horn, Werner**, attempt to blow up international bridge, 425  
**Horne, Sir Henry**, position of his army, 808, 819  
**Horses**, of St. Mark's, 586  
**Horthy, Admiral**, Regent of Hungary, 1337  
**Hostess Houses**, in camps, 1223, 1233  
**Hotchkiss**, a gun, 15  
**Hötendorf, Conrad von**, on Italian front, 1177  
**Housatonic**, destroyed by submarine, 230  
     mine-planter, 1086  
**Houthuist Forest**, Belgians take, 1278  
**Howitzers**, Austrian, 145  
     British, directed by airplane, 538  
     description of, 12  
     English, 13  
     mammoth French, 6  
     on railway mounting, British, 516  
**Hudi Log**, captured, 768  
**Huerta, Victoriana**, arrest of, 427  
**Hughes, General Sir Sam**, Canadian Minister of Militia, 188, 647, 1046  
**Hughes, W. N.**, and the war, 198  
**Hulluch Quarries**, fighting in, 292, 295  
**Hulse, William**, and Belgian relief, 879  
**Humbert**, French commander, 1139  
**Humbert, King**, and Franz Josef, 354  
**Hunding Line**, of German defense, 1138  
**Hungary**, coronation of Karl IV, 45  
     Magyars and Slavs in, 46  
     member of dual monarchy, 48, 50  
     new state erected, 1340  
     occupied by Rumania, 1338  
     organization of army, 53  
     peasant recruits, 53  
     terms of treaty with 1337  
     treatment of Rumanians, 614  
**Huningen**, and French area of occupation, 1318  
     evacuated, 1132  
**Hurtelise Farm**, on Craonne Plateau, 792, 794, 797  
**Husab**, occupied, 415  
**Hussein, Emir**, conquests of, 850  
**Hussein Pasha**, made "Sultan of Egypt," 383  
**Hussite Movement**, in Bohemia, 54  
**Huts**, of the Y. M. C. A., 1251, 1259  
     portable Nissen, 1271  
**Hyderabad, Nizam of**, and the war, 204  
**Hydroaeroplanes**, floating and being lifted, 923  
     invention of, 250  
     used in Italian marshes, 784  
**Hydrophones**: see Listening Devices
- I**
- Idar, Maharaja of**, comment of, 203  
**Igel, Wolf von**, indictment, 427  
**Ile Tudy**, naval aviation base at, 1090  
**Ilescu, General**, Rumanian soldier, 622  
**Ilyria**, formation of, 58  
**Immelmann, Lieutenant**, aviator, 439, 915  
**Immigration**, into Canada, 1188  
     policy towards, 427  
**Imperator**, ship, 1213  
**Imperial Camel Corps**, actions of, 832  
**Imperial Guards**, revolt of, 684  
**Imperial Order of the Daughters of the Empire**, war-work of, 1052  
**Imperial War Cabinet**, of Great Britain, 659, 667, 1064  
**Inchy**, taken, 1205  
**Income Tax**, during the war, 423  
**Indefatigable**, battleship, 477, 643  
**Independent Air Force**, work of, 926  
**Independent Labor Party**, of Great Britain, 653  
**Independent Socialists**, revolt in Germany, 1320  
**India**, at the Mohammedan hour of prayer, 625  
     claim for independence, 1339  
     Home Rule struggles in, 186, 202  
     native princes and the war, 203  
     participates in war, 185, 201  
     representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
     troops in Bagdad, 761  
     troops in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 384, 833  
     troops sent to Africa, 966-67  
     Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**India**, auxiliary cruiser, 238  
**Indian Army**, in Mesopotamia, 393  
**Indian Army Corps**, actions of, 152, 282  
**Indian Artillery**, at Gallipoli, 344  
**Indians**, American, and the war, 205, 1224  
**Indomitable**, battle cruiser, 207, 219, 221  
**Infantry Brigades**, organization of, 856  
**Inflexible**, battle-cruiser, 212, 342  
**Ingenohl, Admiral von**, superseded, 222  
**Inheritance Tax**, during war, 423  
**Insignia**, covered, 688  
**Inspector-General's Department**, of A. E. F., 1169  
**Insterburg**, entered, 158  
**Instruments**, of warfare, 2, 14  
**Intelligence Departments**, of the A. E. F., 1167  
**Intelligence Service**, of Great Britain, 1081, 1084  
**Inter-Allied Games**, in Pershing Stadium, 1256  
**Inter-Allied Reparations Commission**, on German payments, 1327  
**Inter-Allied Supreme Council of War**, 1174  
**International Labor Conference**, and meeting, 1333-34  
**International Labor Organization**, and the League, 1330, 1333  
**International Law**: see Blockades, Contraband, Submarines, etc.  
**International Naval Conference**, and Declaration of London, 259  
**Intrepid**, block-ship at Zeebrugge, 1098  
**Invergordon**, mine-base at, 1086  
**Inverness**, mine-base at, 1086  
**Inverness Copse**, resistance at, 820  
**Invincible**, battle-cruiser, 212, 480  
**Iphigenia**, block-ship at Zeebrugge, 1098  
**Ireland, Most Rev. John**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Ireland**, and Home Rule, 84  
     claim for independence, 1339  
     K. of C. in, 1242  
     Sinn Fein rebellion in, 656  
     troubles in, 654  
     United States reservation concerning, 1336  
**Iranga**, reached, 971  
**Iris**, a ferry-boat, 1097  
**Irish**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
     in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
     in Messines and Ypres battle, 816, 819  
     in Somme battle, 532  
     in United States, 225  
**Irish-Americans**, and Germans, 424  
**Irish Nationalists**, political party, 648, 654  
**Irish Republic**, declared, 656  
**Iron**, and Alsace-Lorraine, 29, 32  
**Iron Corps**, the 20th Corps of France, 115, 123, 137  
**Iron Division**, the 28th U. S. Division, 1300  
**Iron Duke (H. M. S.)**, super-dreadnaught, 485  
**Iron Gate**, of the Danube, 59  
**Irredentists**, hopes of the, 354, 360  
**Irresistible**, ship, 343  
**Ishtip**, Allied objective, 1127-28  
**Iskan Pasha**, Turkish commander, 396  
**Ismail**, Khedive of Egypt, 382  
**Ismailia**, British headquarters, 384, 388  
**Ismailia Ferry**, British headquarters at, 384, 388  
**Isonzo Front**, attack on, 767  
     map, 595  
**Isonzo River**, and Italian campaigns, 578, 588, 770, 775  
     and the Carso Plateau, map, 579  
     valley of the, 361, 364  
**Isotta-Fraschini**, aeroplane of, 253  
**Issoudun**, A. E. F. Schools at, 1106  
**Is-sur-Tille**, A. E. F. Schools, etc., at, 1106, 1161  
**Istria**, negotiations over, 360  
     part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 57

**Istrian Peninsula**, cession of, 1337-38  
**Italia Irredenta**, disputed frontier between Italy and Austria, 50, 352, 356, 358  
 map of that part called the Trentino, 359  
**Italian Front**, added to Foch's command, 1174  
 winter on the, 1151  
**Italians**, and Serbian refugees, 379  
 at the Marne, 1036  
**Italy**, advance in August, 1916, map, 593  
 A. E. F. in, 1161  
 aircraft of, 253, 254  
 and Austria, 24, 28  
 and Balkans, 77, 86  
 and France, 351, 355-56  
 and Greek Revolution, 712  
 and Prussia, 354  
 and the Congress of Berlin, 353, 356  
 and the Treaty of London, 360  
 army of, 362  
 army positions and battle-lines in the last offensive, map, 1179  
 bicycle battalions, 578  
 British troops in, 781  
 claim to Fiume, 1338  
 Coalition Cabinet, 591  
 contingent in the Balkans, 572  
 declares war against Germany, 771  
 disaster at Caporetto, 767  
 disposition of forces before offensives of 1918, 1175, 1179  
 enters the war, 351, 358, 417  
 first Italian campaigns, 577  
 fleet of, 643  
 her hour of triumph, 1171  
 in Albania, 380, 1122, 1130  
 in the East, 1338  
 in Triple Alliance, 26, 354-55  
 K. of C. in, 1242  
 lands ceded to, 1337-38  
 limits of advance, and of retreat to the Piave, map, 779  
 Ministry changed, 777  
 navy and Piave stand, 782  
 offensive of 1918, 1178  
 on Peace, 867  
 Red Cross work in, 1227  
 representation at Peace Conference, and withdrawal, 1325, 1327, 1338  
 secret treaty with Entente, 1338, shipping of, 470  
 submarines of, 232  
 territorial promises made to, 977  
 Teutonic propaganda in, 773  
 treaty with Jugo-Slavia, 1339  
 troops in France, 1172  
 troops on Saloniki front, 1123  
 unification of, 24, 26  
 volunteers in Argonne, 304  
 war in Tripoli, 76, 335  
 Y. M. C. A. and, 1247, 1258  
**Ivangorod**, Germans near, 325-26  
**Ivanov, General**, Russian commander, 164, 166, 318, 602  
**Izzet Bey**, defense of Jerusalem, 841

## J

**Jablonitz, Pass**, in the Carpathians, 318, 608  
**Jack, Major Richard**, A. R. A., painting of Canadian trenches, 287  
**Jackson, Sir Henry**, in the Admiralty, 471  
**Jacob Jones**, U. S. destroyer, 1070, 1104  
**Jadar River**, advance along, 174  
**Jaffa**, fall of, 838, 840  
**Jaffa-Jerusalem Road**, penetrates Judean Hills, 842  
**Jamiano**, captured, 768  
**Janina**, occupied, 712  
**Japan**, at the end of 1914, 225  
 declares war upon Germany, 223  
 navy's work in Pacific, 223  
 on Peace, 867  
 ratifies treaty, 1335  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Jarebitze**, entrenchment at, 174  
**Jaroslav**, captured, 166, 167  
**Jason**, ship, 474  
**Jassy**, Rumanian government established at, 620  
**Jaurés**, oration upon, 492  
**Javal, Mlle.**, association of, 509  
**Jebel Hamrin**, Turks in, 764, 766  
**Jeddah**, captured, 850  
 Mücke at, 217  
**Jehad**, or Jihad: see Holy War

**Jellicoe, Admiral Sir John R.**, and battle of Jutland, 476  
 naval commander, 470, 488, 668  
 on German raids, 218  
 on Merchant Marine, 470  
**Jemammeh**, British objective, 838  
**Jericho**, captured, 845  
**Jericho-Bersan Road**, fighting on the, 850  
**Jericho-Jerusalem Road**, 842  
**Jerusalem**, campaign and surrender of, 840, 876  
 from the Mount of Olives, 841  
 last stages in Allenby's campaign against, map, 839  
 Turkish Council of War in, 841  
 see also Church of the Redeemer at Jerusalem  
**Jewish Holidays**, and the Y. M. C. A., 1258  
**Jewish Welfare Board**, and Y. M. C. A., 1257, 1261  
 war-work of, 1234  
**Jews**, Anti-Semitic policy in Russia, 600  
 in Austria-Hungary, 54  
 in the Balkans, 63  
**Joan of Arc**, and Rheims, 315  
 Basilica erected in memory of, 1240  
 statue uninjured, 1024  
**Joffe**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Joffe, Madame**, in portrait group, 745  
**Joffre, Marshal Joseph J.**, and American forces, 750  
 appointed Commander-in-Chief of French armies, 316  
 battle tactics of, 442, 446  
 became military adviser, 500  
 in Joint War Council, 500  
 orders to troops, 313, 494  
 policies of, 110, 114, 123, 340, 418  
 portraits, 110, 499, 745, 996  
 visits United States, 744  
**Johannesburg**, police cordon around, 413  
**Joint War Council of France and Britain**, meeting of, 500  
**Jonchery**, attack near, 1146  
**Jonnart, Charles**, French Senator, 713  
**Jordan**, bridge built over the, 845  
 fighting along the, 848, 850-51  
**Joseph Ferdinand, Archduke**, in command Austrian Reserve Army, 165, 1177  
**Journal**, of Providence, evidence furnished by, 426  
**Judean Hills**, campaigning about, 838, 841  
**Judrio Valley**, penetration through, 774  
**Jugo-Slavia**, claim to Fiume, 1338  
 new state erected, 1340  
 treaty with Allies, 1339  
**Jugo-Slavs**, and Italian propaganda, 1174  
 on Balkan front, 1122  
 racial group of, 31, 57  
**Jugo-Slav States**, projected, 358  
**Julian Alps**, and the Trentino, 361, 579  
**Julius Caesar**, and the Gauls, 351  
**Julnar**, steamer, 628-30  
**Junction Station**, capture of, 840  
**Junkers**, of Prussia, 42, 160  
**Justicia**, ship, 1084  
**Jutland**, diagrams illustrating battle of, 478-82  
 fight off, 476, 642  
**Juvinoy**, captured by 32nd U. S. Division, 1118  
**Juvinoy, Gap of**, British troops at, 1028

## K

**Kadets**, of Russia, 611  
**Kafa-Kantara Route**, to Suez Canal, 384  
**Kagera River**, line on, 967  
**Kahe Station**, seized, 969  
**Kaiser**, abdication of, 1313-14, 1320  
 and the "contemptible little army," 118  
 at Verdun, 447  
 during August offensive, 1146  
 in command of German offensive, 1011  
 in German peace conferences, 1279, 1307, 1310  
 portraits of, 130, 309, 445  
 proposed entry into Nancy, Soissons, etc., 115, 132, 302  
 telegram to the Queen of Greece, 325  
**Kaiser Wilhelm Canal**, terminus of, 37  
**Kaiser Wilhelm der Grosse**, German raider, 214  
**Kaledin, General**, revolt of, 978  
 Russian commander, 603  
**Kalfontein**, occupied, 415  
**Kalkit-Tchiflik Sector**, offensive in, 728  
**Kalus**, fighting for, 720-21

- Kamerun**, mandatory for, 1330  
see also Cameroon
- Kaminev**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982
- Kanin**, Vice-Admiral, in command Russian fleet, 224
- Kansas**, food ship, 888
- Kantara**, British headquarters, 384, 388, 828
- Kara Dere**, line of, 633
- Kara Hodjall**, captured mountain, 561
- Karagahan**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982
- Karas Mountains**, in South Africa, 415
- Karibib**, captured, 415-16
- Karl I**, of Austria, crowned Karl IV of Hungary, 45
- Karl Franz Josef**, emperor king of Austria-Hungary, portrait, 51
- Karlsruhe**, bombarded, 927
- Karlsruhe**, raider, 210, 214
- Kars**, fortress of, 394-95
- Karun River**, fighting along, 396
- Katia**, attack at, 830  
enemy retired toward, 389
- Katrah**, resistance at, 840
- Katshanik**, manoeuvre of, 561
- Katshanik Pass**, fighting for, 374, 378
- Kavadar**, triangle of, 562
- Kavalla**, captured, 561, 570, 572, 708  
Greeks in, 63
- Kavanaugh**, Rt. Rev. Monsignor Leslie J., Gulf Vicariate, 1244
- Kaymakchalan**, Mount, in Serbia, 573-74, 1122
- Keane**, Most Rev. James J., in Catholic War Council, 1238
- Kellogg**, Prof. V., comments of, 35
- Kelly**, Father, portrait, 1227
- Kelly**, Rt. Rev. Monsignor Edward A., and Special War Activities, 1239
- Kemball**, General, in Mesopotamia, 624
- Kemmel Hill**, captured, and re-captured, 1022, 1275
- Kemp**, Major, Boer leader, 412-14
- Kenali Line**, Bulgarian entrenchment, 573, 575
- Kent**, armored cruiser, 212
- Kepri-Keui**, attack on, 632
- Kerby**, Rev. William J., and Special War Activities, 1239
- Kerensky**, Alexander, and the Russian army, 715-17, 724, 726  
and the Russian Revolution, 681, 683-85, 687, 689  
in portrait group, 691  
policy of, 975
- Kermanshah**, fighting at, 634-35
- Keyes**, Vice-Admiral Sir Roger, and Zeebrugge, 1095-96
- Khadairi Bend**, in Tigris, 754
- Khalil Pasha**, Turkish commander, 628, 758
- Khanikin**, march upon, 635, 762, 764-65
- Kharasan**, Russians retire on, 394
- Kharkeh Elver**, operations along, 396
- Khvostov**, A. N., assassinated Rasputin, 679
- Klan-Chau**, fall of, 224
- Kiel**, German naval station, 37, 477, 909, 1320
- Kiel Canal**, to be free, 1333
- Kifri Kirkuk-Keupri Road**, advance along, 852
- Kigoma**, railroad terminus, 964, 970
- Kilid Bahr**, plateau of, 336, 343, 348
- Killmanjaro**, Mount, African peak, 964, 969
- Killmatinde**, African town, 969, 971-72
- Killingholme**, naval aviation at, 1090
- Kilosa** (or Kilossa), African town, 969, 971
- Kilwa**, in German East Africa, 963, 972-73
- Kimpolung**, carried, 604-05
- King Bell**, native king, 408
- King's African Rifles**, in African campaign, 966, 970, 973
- Kirby**, Senator, and filibuster, 738
- Kiribaba Pass**, storming the, 318, 604-05
- Kitchener** of Khartoum, Lord, and Joffre's strategy, 124  
at Gallipoli, 350  
British Secretary of State for War, 279, 648, 650-51  
death of, 488, 657  
on air-defense, 256  
portrait, 280  
restrains Lord Fisher, 340  
scheme for military training, 196  
visits Salisbury Plain, 195
- Kivu**, Lake, German use of, 963
- Kizil Bobat**, meeting of Russians and British at, 756, 764-65
- Klaw**, Marc, war-work of, 1231
- Klein Zillebeke**, actions about, 152, 154  
captured, 820
- Kleist**, Captain Charles von, confession of, 427
- Klondikers**, en route from Dawson, 187
- Kluck**, General Alexander von, in command 1st Infantry of, 116
- Knights of Columbus**, and Y. M. C. A., 1257, 1261
- war-work of**, 1231, 1236, 1238, 1239, 1241
- Knox**, Senator, resolution of, 1337
- Koetmansdorp**, point of departure, 414
- Koetmenshoop**, occupied, 415
- Kolomea**, captured, 318
- Kolnbara**, trenches and stand at, 180-81, 373
- Konak**, palace built on site of, 181
- Kondoa Irangi**, defeat at, 970
- Königsberg**, East Prussian capital, 159, 160
- Königsberg**, cruiser, 214, 254, 966-67, 971, 1318
- Königsberg Ship Canal**, use of, 159
- Köningshoyekt**, a fort, 144
- Koprikeni**: see Kepri-Keui
- Korabia**, British near, 416
- Kornilov**, General, and Russian revolutions, 689, 691-93  
Cossack commander, in last Russian offensive, 719, 722, 724, 726  
escape, and revolt of, 976, 978
- Kossovo Plain**, battle during the Great War, 378
- Kossuth**, Louis, Hungarian patriot, 51
- Kostanjevica**, and Italian campaigns, 598, 768, 770-71
- Kosturino Pass**, Bulgars retreat through, 1126, 1128
- Kovel**, Russian objective, 604
- Kövesshaza**, General Kövess von, Austrian commander, 369
- Kovno**, German objective, 328, 329
- Koweit**, Arabs revolt in, 762
- Koweit**, Sheikh of, and railway terminus, 39
- Koziowa Ridge**, holding the, 318
- Kozyak Peak**, Allied objective, 1124-25
- Kragujevatz**, evacuated, 373
- Kralievo**, Serbian government moved to, 374, 376
- Krasnov**, General, Cossack commander, 697
- Kremlin**, in Moscow, 694
- Kressenstein**, Colonel Kress von, Teutonic commander, 384, 831
- Krevo**, on Russian front, 603
- Kriemhilde Stellung**, Franco-American attack on, 1302  
German defense, 1138, 1147-48, 1150
- Krimov**, General, death of, 692
- Krithia**, British objective, 348
- Krivo**, Russian attack from, 723
- Krivolac**, French at, 376, 561
- Kroumir Tribe**, uprising of, 354
- Krugerdsorp**, Boer objective, 412
- Krupan**, Austrian objective, 174
- Krupp Works**, in Essen, 961
- Krushevo**, during Macedonian troubles, 75
- Krylenko**, Ensign, as Minister of War, 976, 976, 986-87
- Kubas**, British objective, 415
- Kuhmann**, Dr. Richard von, at Brest-Litovsk, 982, 984
- Kuk**, struggle, and retreat from, 580, 767-68, 776
- Kum**, fighting at, 634
- Kum Kale**, fortified point, 339, 342, 346
- Kurlachista**, fighting about, 178
- Kuri Burnu**, forts of, 570
- Kurna**, engagements at, 393, 396
- Kuropatkin**, General, Russian commander, 602
- Kusmanek**, General von, surrender of, 320
- Kut-el-Amara**, battle and investment of, 401, 419  
capture of, 623, 628, 876  
maps of, 401, 629  
Maude's attack on, 753-54  
story-teller in bazaar at, 758
- Kutno**, movements about, 168
- Kutunie**, British at, 402
- L**
- Laage**, de, in Lafayette Escadrille, 912
- La Bassée**, actions about, 143, 147-49, 151, 292, 808  
Canadian objective, 1194  
German post in, 1276
- La Bassée Canal**, fighting on, 292, 1019  
in the ruins, 1273

- La Basse Ville**, captured, 820  
**L'Aber Wrach**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**La Boisselle**, British objective, 516-17, 520, 522, 529, 534, 557  
**Labor**, in Canada, 1050  
     in Germany, 940  
     in Great Britain, 647, 652, 653, 667  
     under the treaty, 1333  
**Labor's National Peace Council**, establishment of, 425  
**Labyrinth**, underground fortification, 307-08  
**Lacaze**, in Joint War Council, 500  
**Lafayette**, General Pershing at tomb of, 745  
**Lafayette Escadrille**, combats of, 912  
**La Fère**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1140  
     capture of, 122  
     railway to, 512  
**La Fère-Champenoise**, Foch's army at, 126, 136, 138  
**La Ferté-sous-Jouarre**, English and, 126, 134  
**Laffaux**, German line west of, 790, 794, 797  
**La Follette**, Senator, vote and filibuster of, 738, 744  
**Lagny**, English near, 126  
**La Harazée**, in the Argonne, 1294  
**Lahore Division**, in Mesopotamia, 623  
**Laibach**, road to, 578  
**Laj**, Townshend at, 402, 761  
**Lake, Lieut.-General Sir Percy**, in Mesopotamia, 624, 636  
**Lalgan**, Turkish defeat at, 635  
**La Main**: see Hand of the Massiges  
**La Maissonette**, and Somme battle, 521  
**Lambros**, Professor Spyridon P., a Greek, 710-12  
**Lancashires**, in action, 514  
**Land Army**, of women, 1223  
**Land Settlement Board**, loans of the, 1054  
**Landing, Battle of the**, at Gallipoli, 343  
**Landrecies**, battle at, 120, 121  
**Landres-St. George**, taken, 1303  
**Landsturm**, of Austria, 53  
     of Germany, 40, 142, 148  
     King Ludwig bidding farewell to the officers, 309  
**Landwehr**, of Austria-Hungary, 53  
     of Germany, 40, 142  
**Lane**, Senator, vote and filibuster of, 738, 744  
**Lang, Anton**, portrait, 939  
**Langaza**, Lake of, in Balkans, 568  
**Langemarck**, captured, 821  
**Langemarck-Gheluvelt Line**, German third position, 821  
**Langle de Cary**, General, French commander, 112, 115, 312, 457  
**Langley**, Professor Samuel P., and flying machine, 249  
**Langres**, Schools for A. E. F. at, 1105-06  
**Langrezac**, General de, French commander, 97, 112, 117, 119  
**Lansdowne**, Lord, pacifist letter of, 667  
     removed from office, 658  
**Lansing**, Robert, notes of United States Secretary of State, 730  
     on British blockade, 266  
     portrait, 733  
**Laon**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1144, 1147  
     capital of the Dept. of Aisne, 300, 512, 795  
     French objective, 790, 792, 794, 797  
**Laon Cathedral of Notre Dame**, view of, 797  
**La Pallice**, American use of harbor, 1073, 1090, 1103  
**Lardemelle**, General de, French commander, 464  
**La Roche**, Wood of, carried by Americans, 1112  
**La Rochelle**, A. E. F. base at, 1161  
**Lassigny Plateau**, drive for, 1133-34  
**Latisana**, crossing at, 776  
**La Trinité**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**La Tuillerie Farm**, captured with officers, 1304  
**Laurier**, Sir Wilfrid, Canadian party leader, 188, 194, 1042, 1043, 1055-64  
**Laurier Government**, in Canada, 1055  
**Lauterbourg**, and French area of occupation, 1318  
**La Valbonne**, schools for A. E. F. at, 1106  
**Laurentie**, fighting about, 290  
**Lave River**, crossed, 1020  
**Lawrence**, General Sir Herbert, portrait, 833  
**Lazar**, Serbian czar, 378  
**Lazarevatz**, fighting about, 180  
**Lazistan**, mountain chain, 633  
**League of Nations**, Canada and, 1064  
     early stages, 430, 732  
**League of Nations Covenant**, American objections and reservations to, 1335  
     analysis of, 1327  
     effort to include it in treaty, 1326  
**League of the Three Emperors**, informal alliance, 26, 352  
**League to Enforce Peace**, organization of, 430  
**Leather**, confiscated, 371  
     exports from Germany, 32  
**Leave Areas**, Y. M. C. A. work in, 1254  
**Lebandy**, type of airship, 247  
**Le Cateau**, battle of, 120, 121  
     on German 3rd line, 1139, 1148  
     second battle of, 1280, 1281  
**Le Catelet**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
**Lechitsky**, General, Russian commander, 603, 606  
**Le Croisic**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Lee**, Sergeant Ezra, attempted to blow up English ships, 230  
**Lee-Enfield**, a rifle, 16, 1059  
**Legations**, demonstrations against Allied, in Athens, 707  
**Leinster**, troops in Somme battle, 532  
**Leipzig**, light cruiser, 210, 213  
**Leipzig Redoubt**, fighting for, 531, 534  
**Leman**, General, at Liège, 94  
**Le Mans**, A. E. F. School at, 1106  
**Lemberg**, Austro-German objective, 54, 158, 164-65, 318, 324  
     Russian objective, 604, 606, 719, 875  
**Le Mesnil**, during Champagne attack, 312  
**Lemnos**, advanced base, 340  
**Lemnos**, battleship, 710  
**Lemonier**, Burgomaster, of Brussels, 998  
**Lenin**, Nikolai, Socialist Russian Dictator, 687, 690, 697, 975  
**Lens**, Canadian captors of, 1199  
     Canadians opposite, 1198-1200, 1203  
     first house rebuilt in, 1269  
     French objective, 141, 292, 307  
     on British front, 808, 810, 821  
**Lens-Armentières Sector**, attack on, 1019  
**Leon Gambetta**, cruiser, 239  
**Leopold of Bavaria**, Prince, and Brest-Litovsk, 982, 986  
     enters Warsaw, 326, 327  
     portrait, 983  
**Leopold, Prince**, of the Belgians, enters Bruges, 1309  
**L'Epine de Vedegrange**, seized, 314  
**Le Plongeur Marin**, early submarine, 230  
**Le Priex Farm**, and Somme battle, 521, 544  
**Le Quesnoy**, on 3rd German line, 1139, 1284  
**Le Sars**, during Somme battle, 536, 548-49, 551, 557  
**Lesboeufs**, and Somme battle, 534, 537, 543-45, 548-49, 557  
**Leschnitz**, on Serbian frontier, 171  
**Les Barges**, French objective, 304  
     on flank of St. Mihiel salient, 1290, 1292  
**Le Transloy**, operations towards, 549  
**Lettow-Vorbeck**, Colonel von, in German East Africa, 964, 971  
**Leviathan**, United States transport, 32, 1107, 1213, 1287  
**Lewis Gun**, description of, 15  
     on airplane, 253  
**Liakhov**, General, Russian commander, 633  
**Liaptchev**, Bulgarian Finance Minister, 1129  
**Libau**, captured, 224, 325  
**Liberal-Labor Coalition**, of Parliament, 84  
**Liberal Party**, of Great Britain, 646-47, 652-53, 667  
**Liberal-Radical Coalition**, in Great Britain, 87  
**Liberation, Battle of the**, in Belgium, 1144  
**Libercourt**, air-raid on, 918  
**Liberia**, in the Great War, 4  
     representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Liberty Hank**, erection of, 1220  
**Liberty Bell**, rung, 1220  
**Liberty Day**, observed, 1221  
**Liberty Loan Acts**, passed, 873  
**Liberty Loan Drives**, of United States, 1220  
**Liberty Theatre**, built in camps, 1231  
     work in, 1220  
**Libraries**, for soldiers and sailors, 1225, 1231  
**Libre Belgique**, La, newspaper, 996  
**Libya**, rebellion wished for, 391  
**Lichnowsky**, Prince, memorandum of, 87  
**Lichtenberg**, Boer objective, 412  
**Liebnecht**, Dr. Karl, imprisonment of, 962  
     party of, 1322  
**Liège**, fortress of, 91, 93



- Liège**, gap near, 1150  
**Lierre**, a fort, 144, 146  
**Liffol-le-Grand**, A. E. F. regulating section at, 1161  
**Liggett, General Hunter**, American commander in France, 1147, 1290, 1295, 1300  
**Light Cruiser Squadron**, of Great Britain, 477  
**Light Infantry**, in Somme battle, 543  
**Lightless Nights**, in America, 1218  
**Lightning**, ship, 238  
**Light-shell Rocket**, patrol caught in light of, 1270  
**Lihons**, attack at, 440  
**Lillenthal, Otto**, and flying machines, 249  
**Lille**, and Aubers ridge attacked, 282, 307 and Hindenburg Line, 1137-38, 1144  
 British troops entering, 1262  
 fortress of, 118, 120, 122, 148  
 linen mills destroyed by Germans, 1278  
 menace to, and evacuation of, 1278, 1280  
**Limburg Province**, of Holland, 1316  
**Limpus, Admiral**, replaced, 336  
**Linderhof**, a castle, 27  
**Lindi**, in German East Africa, 963, 972-73  
**Liners**, to be warned, 275  
**Linsingen, von**, command of, 318  
**Lintier, Paul**, death of, 507  
**Lion**, battle-cruiser, 207, 219, 221, 477, 479  
**Lipsky**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Lisle, Ronget de**, speech on transfer of body, 499  
**Listening-apparatus**, French, 1025  
**Listening-devices**, of United States navy, 1074, 1080  
**Listening-posts**, views of, 9, 311  
**Literary Digest Fund**, for Belgian relief, 889  
**Lithuania**, land ceded to, 1330  
 passed to Germany, 988  
**Little**, United States destroyer, 1074  
**Little Bees**, of Belgium, 900, 1004  
**Little Russians**: see Ukrainians  
**Liubovia**, fighting near, 173, 178  
**Livenza River**, and Italian front, 777, 1180  
**Livonia**, cession demanded, 987-88  
**Lizy-Château-Thierry**, contested road, 134  
**Lloyd George, David**, and German peace offer, 730  
 and the war, 648, 651, 657-59, 667-68  
 at Rapallo, 778  
 attended Peace Conference, 1324  
 in charge of munitions, 290  
 in Joint War Council, 500  
 meets Hoover, 883  
 message to Orlando, 1178  
 portraits, 499, 651, 1325  
**Lloyd George Ministry**, during war, 658, 666  
**Loans**, made by the United States, 422  
**Lochiel**, led Cameron Highlanders, 292  
**Lochowsky**, command Russian brigade in France, 786  
**Lodz**, fall of, 168  
**Loesser, Lieut.-Colonel Paul**, in charge Woman's Motor Corps, 746  
**Lom Plateau**, in Austrian possession, 769, 774  
**Lombardy**, taken from Austria, 47  
**Lombartzyde**, attack on bridgehead at, 819  
**Lome**, surrendered, 407  
**Lomnitsa River**, Russians advance to, 720  
**Loncin, Fort**, assault on, 94  
**London, Bishop of**, recruiting, 658  
**London**, American bases in, 1072, 1161  
 bombing and aerial defenses of, 255-56, 420, 926, 930  
**London, Declaration of**, and the Great War, 259, 270  
**London, Treaty of**, agreements of, 360  
**London Division**, in Palestine, 833  
**Londoners**, in operations around Loos, 292  
**London-Irish**, and foot-ball, 292  
**London-Scottish**, behind sand-bags, 1263  
 territorial battalion, 154  
**London Territorials**, divisions in Somme battle, 537  
**Lone Pine**, hill of the, 348  
**Longido**, Germans at, 967  
**Longueval**, and Somme battle, 525, 534, 557  
**Longuyon**, bombarded, 1304  
 gap in German defenses near, 1150  
**Longwy**, fortress of, 116, 122, 1305  
**Loos**, operations around, 292, 418  
**Lorraine**, French and, 114, 300  
 troops from, 312  
 see also Alsace-Lorraine  
**"Lost Battalion"**, in the Argonne Forest, 1298
- Lough Foyle**, naval aviation at, 1090  
**Louvain**, Belgians make sortie towards, 143  
 destruction of, 97, 99-100  
**Louvemont**, near Verdun, 446, 465-66  
**Lowcen, Mt.**, bombarded, 380  
**Lowicz**, retirement beyond, 168  
**Loyalists, U. E.**, in Canada, 1187  
**Loznitzka**, attacks near, 171, 173, 178  
**Lübeck**, city republic, 44  
**Lubinski**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Lublin**, Teutonic objective, 164-65, 325-26  
**Ludendorff, General Eric von**, and the last Allied offensive, 1266  
 at Austrian headquarters, 718  
 at Trois-Fontaines, 1141  
 comments on fighting at Verdun, 434, 465-66  
 in command Teutonic forces, 167, 1008, 1037, 1147-48  
 in German peace conferences, 1134, 1204, 1279, 1307  
 on the Italian front, 774  
 portraits, 445, 1027  
 resignation of, 1283, 1312  
 war-policies of, 1025  
**Luderitz Bay**, Coaling Station of German South-West Africa, 407, 412, 415  
**Ludwig I**, king of Bavaria, and Munich, 27  
**Ludwig II**, king of Bavaria, castle of, 27  
**Ludwig III**, king of Bavaria, farewell to Land-sturm officers, 309  
**Ludwigshafen**, bombed, 255  
**Lufberry, Captain**, in Lafayette Escadrille, 912  
**Lukatic**, captured, 768  
**Lukin, Brigadier-General**, portrait, 415  
**Lukov, General**, Bulgarian commander, 1129  
**Lumber**, Canadians supplied to Allies, 1203  
**Lunéville**, bombed, 255  
 42nd U. S. Division under fire near, 1109  
**Lupkov Pass**, in the Carpathians, 318  
**Lusitania**, funeral for the victims of, 423  
 the sinking of the, and its effects, 236-37, 268, 272-75, 418, 424  
**Lutsik**, fortress of, 164, 603, 605, 987  
**Lüttwitz, Major-General**, German military governor of Brussels, 879  
**Lützow**, battle-cruiser, 479  
**Luxembourg**, Americans traverse, 1316  
 neutralized, 92  
 to be evacuated and railways given up, 1314-15  
**Lvov, Prince George**, and the Russian revolution, 683, 685, 689  
**Lvov, Vladimir**, and Kornilov rebellion, 692  
**Lyck**, fighting at, 320  
**Lydda**, occupied, 840  
**Lye River**, entrenchments along, 180  
**Lynoria**, relief ship, 888  
**Lynx**, destroyer, 474  
**Lys River**, and various battles, 149, 819, 1140  
 battle of the, map, 1020  
**Lys Salient**, German withdrawal from, 1267
- M**
- Ma'an**, cutting railroad near, 850  
**Mabeuk**, and the Turks, 389  
**McConnell, Jim**, portrait, 933  
**Macedonia**, armed liner, 212  
**Macedonia**, Balkan region, 60, 62, 77-78, 335-36  
 cession of, 1337  
 expeditionary force retires into, 380  
 German baggage column in, 571  
 Greeks re-enter, 1130  
 invaded by Bulgarians, 370, 707  
 struggles for autonomy, 73  
 taken from Bulgaria, 699  
 trenches blasted in, 9  
 under Berlin treaty, 68  
**Macfie, Lieutenant**, and tank, 18  
**MacGahan, [J. A.]**, and Russo-Turkish War, 66  
**McGivney, Rev. F. J.**, supreme chaplain K. of C., 1242  
**Machine-gun Battalion**, organization of divisional, 859  
**Machine-gun Corps**, Heavy Section, 540  
**Machine-gun Division**, German, 130  
**Machine-gun Establishment**, organization of, 1203  
**Machine-gunner**, British, 1007  
**Machine-gunnery**, training, 858  
**Machine-guns**, 165th infantry setting up, 1300  
 and Belgians, 1023  
 development of, 14  
 dragged up Belgian sea-coast, 1145

- Machine-guns**, early use of, 284  
 French in orchard, 803  
 German troops carrying, 610  
 in aeroplanes, 257
- Machinery**, destruction of during 1917, 789  
 fate of French, 300
- Machines**, heavier than air, 248  
 produced in Canada, 1046  
 that are lighter than air, 242
- Mackensen, General von**, at Verdun, 440  
 in Balkans and Rumania, 369, 560, 618-20, 725  
 portraits, 445, 619
- Teutonic commander**, 167, 330, 332
- Mackenzie, Brigadier-General Sir D.**, South African commander, 414
- McKubbin**, aviator, 915
- MacLachlan, Major**, in command Punjabis, 388
- MacLay, Sir Joseph**, British War Ministry, 658
- Maclean, A. K.**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062
- McLemore Resolution**, presented in Congress, 276
- Macrophone**, for wireless, 926
- Madras**, firing the oil-tanks of, 214
- Maeseyck**, surrender of German arms at, 1316
- Magahaba**, Turkish position near, 832
- Magasis**, feint at, 755
- Magdeburg**, cruiser, 224
- Magyars**, in Austria-Hungary, 28, 46, 48, 50-58, 73, 614  
 stand at Torlak Hill, 183
- Mahenge**, German objective, 972
- Mahmud Shevket Pasha**, military leader, 75
- Mahomet V.**, proclaimed Sultan of Turkey, 335
- Mahon, General Sir Bryan**, at Saloniki, 560
- Mall**, detention and examination of, 268  
 German, in Galicia, 601
- Main**, or **Rock Island**, part of Heligoland, 43
- Mainz**, bombarded, 927  
 see also Mayence
- Maisons de Champagne**, fighting at, 314, 316
- Malzey**, German raid repulsed at, 1110
- Majestic**, battleship, 238, 347
- Malancourt**, in the Argonne, 1295
- Malaya**, battleship, 477, 487
- Malines**, fighting at, 100  
 fired, 998
- Malinov**, Bulgarian party leader, 367, 1128
- Malmalson**, captured, 1146
- Malmalson Fort**, carried, 802
- Malta**, Y. M. C. A. in, 1246
- Malvy, Louis J.**, in French Cabinet, 500, 502
- Mametz**, and the Somme battle, 520, 522, 525, 534, 557
- Manajov**, on Russian line, 721
- Manchester Hill**, defense of, 1012
- Manchesters**, in action, 520
- Mandates**, of the League of Nations, 1328, 1330
- Mangin, General Charles**, and Verdun, 457-58, 463-65  
 citation for 3rd U. S. Division, 1118  
 French commander, 462, 794, 1036-39, 1133
- Mann, von**, German Minister of Marine, 1086
- Mannheim**, bombarded, 927
- Mannlicher**, a rifle, 172
- Manoury, General**, French commander, 123, 129, 301
- Mansourah**, retreat to, 833
- Mantis, H. M. S.**, on the Tigris, 760
- Manufactories**, French, under German control, 300  
 of the Y. M. C. A., 1253
- Maoris**, in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833
- Map**: see lists in front of vols.
- Marasesti**, battle of, 725
- Marcelcave**, and the German offensive, 1016
- Marchand, General**, command of, 312
- Marching**, taken, 824
- Marghiloman**, Minister of Finance, 614, 616
- Maricourt**, fighting near, 514, 517, 520
- Marine Brigade**, captured Belleau Wood, 1112  
 in the Argonne, 1304
- Marines**, French, 147, 151  
 German, in Turkish uniform, 337  
 United States, in France, 1105
- Maritz, Lieut.-Colonel**, Boer leader, 412-14
- Mark**, depreciation of the, 944
- Marmora**, Sea of, submarines in, 239
- Marne**, battle of the, 131  
 preparation for and incidents relating to battle, 115, 128, 143, 494  
 retreat to, 122, 124  
 second battle of the, beginning of victory, 1025-27
- Marne River**, and the last German offensive, 1031, 1034, 1114
- Marne Salient**, Foch's flank attack on, map, 1036
- Mars**, hospital at, 1162
- Marseilles**, Americans use port of, 1103, 1161
- Marsh, General Peyton C.**, portrait, 1152
- Marshall, Lieut.-General Sir W. R.**, in Mesopotamia, 753, 766
- Martin, Dr. Franklin**, in Advisory Commission, 748
- Martinpuich**, and Somme battle, 531, 534, 536-37, 542-44, 557  
 re-captured, 1267
- Marwitz, General von der**, Teutonic commander, 134, 824
- Mary, Queen of England**, inspecting Y. M. C. A. hut, 1247  
 portrait, 1329
- Masai**, in African campaign, 966
- Masnieres**, in Cambrai battle, 824, 825
- Massachusetts Relief-ships**, for Belgium, 888
- Massey, W. F.**, and the war, 198
- Masurian Lakes**, fighting in the region of the, 158, 160  
 region of the, 155, 320, 419
- Matz-Montdidier Salient**, 1133
- Matz Valley**, German advance in, 1031
- Maubeuge**, Allied objective, 1139, 1144, 1147, 1150  
 fortress of, 117, 122  
 Mons Gate and Irish Guards, 1283  
 taken, 1283-84
- Maubeuge-Baval**, line of, 120
- Maucourt**, attacks on, 441-444
- Maude, Lieut.-General Sir Frederick Stanley**, and Mesopotamian expedition, 636, 753, 876  
 death of, 766  
 portrait, 754
- Maud'huy, General**, French commander, 141, 307, 1029, 1031
- Maurepas**, and Somme battle, 521, 531-32
- Maurice, General Sir Frederick**, letter of, 668
- Mausser**, a rifle, 172, 258
- Mavromichaelis, Naval Commander**, of Greece, 713
- Max**, Burgomaster of Brussels, 96, 878-79, 995, 998
- Maxim, Sir H. S.**, inventor, 14, 249
- Maximilian of Baden, Prince**, German Chancellor, 962, 1146, 1279, 1308, 1310, 1312, 1322
- Maxwell, Lieut.-General Sir John**, 383
- Maybach-Mercedes**, engines, 246
- Mayence**, Allied control of, 1314  
 bridgehead occupied by French, 1318, 1333  
 see also Mainz
- Mazel**, French commander, 794
- Meat**, imported by neutrals, 262
- Meatless Days**, in America, 1216  
 in Germany, 952
- Mecca**, Emir of, rescues Mücke's men, 217
- Mecca, Grand Sherif of**, Custodian of the Holy Places, 848
- Medeazza**, advance beyond, 770
- Medical Department**, of the A. E. F., 1167
- Medina**, Turkish base at, 850
- Mediterranean**, submarines in, 239
- Mediterranean Expeditionary Force**, Egypt base for, 390
- Meerut Division**, in Mesopotamia, 623
- Mehun**, ordnance at, 1166
- Melghen, Arthur**, premier of Canada, 1065
- Melangali**, stand at, 971
- Melbourne**, cruiser, 196, 223
- Memel**, captured, 224
- Menin**, advance towards 149  
 and Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1278
- Menin Road**, and Wytshaete-Passchendaele Ridge, 819, 821
- Mennonites**, contributions of, 1053
- Mensheviks**, minority wing of Russian Socialists, 690
- Mercedes**, engine for aeroplane, 920
- Mercer, Major-General**, Canadian commander, 514
- Merchant-Marine**, British, 470  
 German, 32
- Merchantmen**, bombed, 255  
 filibuster defeats arming of, 872  
 question of armed, 274, 275, 729, 740  
 submarine attacks on, 239
- Mercier, Cardinal**, Belgian Catholic leader, 992  
 portraits, 992, 1237
- Merckem Peninsula**, in 1915, and in 1917, 817

- Méreaucourt**, and Somme battle, 520  
**Mersey**, monitor, 214, 254  
**Mesopotamia**, airplanes, in, 254  
 bullock-transport in, 623  
 Canadians in, 1203  
 expedition to and campaigns in, 338, 393, 419, 852, 876  
 Holy Places preserved, 204  
 Indian troops in, 204  
 mandate for, 1338  
 Mohammedans in, 186  
 operations in 1914-17, map, 764  
 quasi-independent state of, 1340  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**Mesopotamian Commission**, censure of, 404  
**Message** *Van Gand*, in Antwerp, 897  
**Messines**, village near Ypres, 813  
**Messines, Ridge of**, 143, 149, 1020  
 British regain, 1278  
**Messines-Wytschaete Ridge**, battle of, 814, 874  
 map, 816  
**Messmer, Most Rev. Sebastian G.**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Messudiyeh**, battleship, 227, 234, 342  
**Messves**, hospital at, 1162  
**Metal**, collections in Germany, 945, 946  
 found in German encampments, 1141, 1264  
 seizure by Germans in France, 505  
**Metaxas, Colonel**, military adviser of Constantinople, 704  
**Meteor**, commerce raider, 220, 474  
**Metropolitan Division**, in France, 1106  
**Metternich, Prince [C. W. L.]**, 24, 46, 51  
**Metz**, and St. Mihiel offensive, 1291-93  
 battle of: see Morhange, battle of  
 demanded by Germany, 29  
 French return in triumph to, 1311  
 German base at, 304, 1139  
 restoration to France, 1132  
**Metz Front**, French armies exchanged, 1316  
**Metz-Lille Railway**, German hold on, 1294  
**Metz-Strassburg Railway**, crossing the, 115  
**Metz-Verdun Railway**, possible German route, 462  
**Meurcy Farm**, fighting near, 1116  
**Meurer, Rear-Admiral Hugo**, and surrender of German vessels, 1318  
**Meurthe River**, Germans attack at, 132  
**Meuse, Heights of the**, during battle of Verdun, 446, 454  
 during St. Mihiel offensive, etc., 1294, 1299-1304  
 view of war-tortured, 439  
**Meuse River**, and Argonne attack, 1238, 1294-95, 1303  
 and the August offensive, 1137, 1139, 1147-48  
 at Namur, 97  
 during last Verdun attack, 802  
 the line of the, 117, 300  
**Meuse-Aisne Canal**, Germans driven from, 1150  
**Meuse-Argonne**, aircraft during battle, 934  
 see also Argonne  
**Mexico**, as neutral, 5, 744  
 excluded from original members of League, 1327  
 Germany's note regarding alliance with, 738, 872  
**Mesera**, action at, 396  
**Mesey**, 3rd U. S. Division at, 1114  
**Mézières**, and August offensive, 1139, 1141, 1150  
 fortress of, 122  
**Michael, Grand Duke**, and Tsar's abdication, 686, 686, 870  
**Michaelis, Doctor**, Chancellor of Germany, 868, 962  
**Michel Stellung**, part of German defense line, 1138  
**Micheler, General**, French commander, 514, 794  
**Middle Steel and Ordnance Co.**, fire in works of, 425  
**Militarism**, what is meant by, 39  
**Military Council**, for co-ordinating strategy, 1026  
**Military Justice, Department of**, with A. E. F., 1169  
**Military League**, of Greece, 702  
**Military Police**, British, 1156, 1307  
 work of, 1157, 1169  
**Military Postal Express Service**, with A. E. F., 1169  
**Military Service**, in England, 646, 652, 664  
 in Europe, 44  
 in Germany, 39
- Military Service Act**, of Canada, 1052, 1060, 1202  
**Miliukov, Paul**, and the Russian revolution, 683, 685, 688-89  
 Russian Chief of Constitutional Democrats, 602, 611  
**Millerand, M.**, replaced by Gallieni, 316  
**Miller's Belgian Relief**, movement of, 888  
**Milne, General**, and Saloniki Campaign, 576  
**Milner, Lord**, in War Cabinet, 659  
**Milovatz**, assault on, 180  
**Minenwerfer**, appearance of, 281  
 see also Trench-Mortar  
**Miners**, hazardous task of the, 311  
 Lancashire, at Somme, 520  
**Mines**, about Heligoland, 219  
 American, in North Sea, 1086  
 contents, 476  
 destroying of drifting, 475  
 explosion of a German mine, 1081  
 fields of, in North Sea, chart, 1085  
 United States notes concerning, 270  
**Mine-Sweepers**, diagram of their work, 471  
 work of, 470, 473  
**Minorities**, treaties for protection of racial, 1339  
**Miramont**, re-captured, 1267  
**Misery**, as the invaders left it, 554  
**Mishtich, General**, Serbian commander, 182, 573  
**Missions, Allied**, on their way out of Russia, 979  
**Missy**, battery at, 302  
**Missy-sur-Aisne**, German position at, 790  
**Mistau**, railroad centre, 326  
**Mitrailleur**, in position in the Vosges, 315  
**Mitry, General de**, cavalry of, 154  
**Mitsotakis**, leader Greek Liberal Party, 700  
**Mittel-Europa**, scheme of, 36, 334  
**"Mixed Vermouth"**, brigade of French and Italian troops, 834  
**Mlynov Regiment**, 607th, retired from line, 721  
**Mobilization**, Germany's faith in her, 86  
 in France, 492  
**Moderate Socialists**, fighting, 1322  
**Moeller, Most Rev. Henry**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Moglena Ridge**, fighting on, 558, 573  
**Mohacs**, defeat of, 50  
**Mohammedans**, participate in war, 186, 204  
 subjects of Great Britain, 381  
 troops at hour of prayer, 625  
**Moltke, General H. J. L. von**, Chief of the Imperial General Staff, 81, 110, 149  
 portraits, 111, 455  
**Mombasa**, African sea-port, 964, 966-68, 970  
**Monastir**, Allied army operations against, map, 573  
 Allied objective, 561, 572-75  
 bridge on railway to, 559  
 French troops marching on, 558  
 military mutiny at 75  
 taken, 1121  
 Teutonic objective, 14, 376, 378  
**Monchy-le-Preux**, stormed, 810, 1269  
**Monfalcone**, Italian objective, 578, 586-87, 593  
**Monitors**, Austrian, on the Danube, 182, 369  
 British, 150, 218, 472  
 in action against Turks on the Tigris, 625  
 in the Dardanelles, 238  
 Italian, 770  
 work on Belgian coast, map, 220  
**Monk, F. D.**, Canadian French leader, 1056  
**Monmouth**, armored cruiser, 210  
**Monro, General Sir Charles Carmichael**, in command of evacuation at Gallipoli, 348, 350  
**Monroe, President**, on European affairs, 424  
**Monroe Doctrine**, and the League, 1326, 1328  
 United States Reservation on, 1335  
**Mons**, and German defense lines, 1139, 1150  
 battle of, 118  
 Canadians take, 1208, 1209, 1284  
 fines on, 998  
 retreat from, 119, 253  
**Mons-Condé Canal**, English along, 117  
**Montagne de Bheims**, Italians at, 1036  
**Montauban**, and Somme battle, 517, 520, 522, 534, 557  
**Montblainville**, Americans take, 1295  
**Montcalm**, cruiser, 223  
**Montdidier**, captured, 1017  
 during last northern offensive, 1264  
 during Somme-Oise offensive, 1133  
 1st U. S. Division near, 1111

- Monte Asolone**, partly recovered, 1174  
**Montebelluna**, threatened, 1172  
**Monte Corno**, captured, 1174  
**Monte Croce Pass**, in the Carnic Alps, 361, 364  
**Monte di Val Bella**, Italians on, 782, 1172, 1176  
**Monte Grappa**, section of, 780, 1172, 1174-76, 1179-80  
**Montello**, heights of, 780-81, 1175-78  
**Montenegro**, and Balkan Wars, 75, 335  
     at the end of 1914, 225  
     Balkan state, and its people, 58, 61-62, 65, 67, 179  
     halts Austrians, 376  
     on Peace, 867  
     open communication with, 587  
**Monte Nero**, in Italian campaigns, 578-80, 580, 774-75  
**Monte Sabotino**, Austrian stronghold, 578, 582, 584  
     storming of, 592-93  
**Monte San Gabriele**, Austrian stronghold, 592, 596  
**Monte San Michele**, attacks on, 580, 584, 592-94  
**Monte Santo**, attacks about, 767, 769-70, 776  
     Austrian stronghold, 580, 584, 592, 596  
**Monte Sei Busi**, captured, 580, 594  
**Monte Tomba**, struggle for, 780, 782, 1172  
**Montfalcon**, near Verdun, 451, 1142, 1294-96  
**Montgolfier Brothers**, balloon of, 242  
**Mont Houy**, Canadians take, 1208  
**Monticano River**, advance towards, 1180  
**Montmédv**, bombarded, 1304  
     fortress of, 122, 1139  
**Montmirail**, occupied, 134  
**Montoir**, chemical central depot at, 1167  
**Mont Sec**, and St. Mihiel attack, 1292  
**Montuori**, General, Italian commander, 775, 785, 1175  
**Moon Island**, occupied, 728  
**Moore, Bear-Admiral A. G. H. W.**, at the Dogger Bank, 220  
**Mora**, operations about, 408, 411  
**Morane-Saulnier**, an aeroplane, 250, 258  
**Morava**, action along Western, 376  
     valley of, 60, 172, 182  
**Morava-Maritza Valleys**, Teutonic objective, 559  
**Moravia**, cession of, 1337  
     part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 54  
**Morgen**, General von, on Russian front, 162  
**Morgenthau**, American ambassador, 81, 338, 405  
**Morhange**, battle of, 115  
**Morley**, Lord, resignation of, 647  
**Mormal**, forest of, 1150, 1282-84  
**Moroccan Division**, during Marne battle, 1038  
**Moroccans**, at Verdun, 444, 446, 448, 464  
     Y. M. C. A. assists, 1258  
**Morocco**, effects of crisis in, 356  
     the incident of, 36  
**Morone**, Italian commander, 780, 1175  
**Moronvilliers**, hills of, 792, 794-97  
**Mort Homme**: see Dead Man Hill  
**Mortar**, Austrian, bombarding Przemyśl, 321  
     see also Artillery, Skoda, Trench-Mortar  
**Morval**, during Somme battle, 529, 534, 536-37, 543-45, 548, 557  
**Morval Road**, fortified, 543  
**Moscow**, Russian National Conference at, 692, 694  
**Moselle River**, on flank of St. Mihiel Salient, and Meuse-Argonne, 1290, 1293  
**Moshi**, German concentration point, 965, 969  
**Mosquet**, torpedo boat, 214  
**Mosquito-tanks**: see Tanks  
**Mosul**, captured, 852  
     Turkish base, 405  
**"Mother Carey's Chickens"**, in action, 1016  
**Motor-boats**, Italian, sink Austrian battle-ships, 1175  
     photographed from air, 209  
     trip to Lake Tanganyika, 968  
     see also Submarine-chasers  
**Motor-bus**, war-time use of, 187  
**Motor-Cyclists**, Australian Military, in Palestine, 838  
**Motor-Machine-gun Brigade**, of Canadians, 1206  
**Motor Patrol**, Canadian, 206  
**Motor-Service**, of Red Cross, 1228  
**Motor-transport**, of the Y. M. C. A., 1253  
**Motor-workshop**, and trailer in Aviation Service, 251  
**Mott, Dr. John B.**, of the Y. M. C. A., 1238, 1247
- Moulin-du-Piètre**, resistance at, 283  
**Mount of Olives**, cleared, 842  
**Mouquet Farm**, during Somme battle, 530, 533-34, 540-41, 546-47  
**Möwe**, commerce raider, 474, 966  
**Mozambique**, Germans enter, 973  
**Mapana**, taken, 971  
**Mogoro**, African settlement, 964, 969, 971  
**Mt. Kemmel**, 27th U. S. Division entered war near, 1143  
**Mücke**, Lieutenant, of the Emden, 214-18  
**Mudra**, von, German commander, 1035  
**Mudros**, harbor of, 340-41  
**Mukhtar Pasha**, and Turkey, 335  
**Muldoon**, Rt. Rev. Peter J., war-work of, 1238  
**Mühlhausen**, French and, 114, 300  
**Mulhouse**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
**Müller**, Captain von, in command of the Emden, 214  
**Mulligan**, William J., chairman K. of C., 1242  
**Mundelein**, Most Rev. George W., in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Munich**, capital of Bavaria, 27  
**Munitions**, busy scene in workshop, 653  
     controversy over ships carrying, 274  
     during 1916, 637  
     Germans and, 424, 426  
     in Canada, 1045, 1046  
     in France, 502  
     in Great Britain, 279, 289, 290, 650-51  
     in Holland, 271  
     in Italy, 1184  
     questions of American, 277, 417  
     traffic through Rumania, 616  
**Munster**, troops in Somme battle, 532  
**Murmansk**, port of exit from Russia, 979  
**Murray**, Sir Archibald, on the Eastern Egyptian front, 830, 833  
**Mush**, fighting for, 632-34  
     Russians retire from, 728  
**Mushadja**, attack at, 762  
**Mute**, a submarine, 230  
**Mutilated**, propaganda of the, 778  
**"Mystery Corner"**, cleared out, 543  
**Mystery-ship**, use of, 1091
- N**
- Nablus-Jerusalem Road**, 841-42, 850  
**Nahr Kellak Bend**, in the Tigris, 760  
**Nairobi**, German objective, 966  
**Namur**, Allied objective, 1150, 1280  
     burning of, 100  
     fortress of, 91, 93-95, 97, 117  
**Nancy**, attacks on, 114, 115, 123, 132  
     bombed, 255, 926  
     refugee children of, 1229  
**Nantes**, Americans use port of, 1103  
**Nanteuil-le-Haudouin**, occupied, 134  
**Nantillois**, Americans reach, 1142, 1296  
**Napoleon I**, and Fulton's submersible, 230  
     and Illyria, 58  
     armies of, 3  
     balloon ordered by, 243  
     comment on Constantinople, 333  
**Napoleon III**, and Germany, 24  
     and Italy, 47, 353  
**Napoleonic Wars**, cost of, 8  
     men engaged in, 1, 3  
**Naraynoka River**, offensive on, 719  
**Narzew**, flanking Army of Poland, 158  
**Narzew River**, crossed, 326  
**Narin Kupri Bridge**, repairing, 759  
**Narodna Odbrana**, Serbian organization, 78, 82  
**Nasiriyeh**, British objective, 396, 398  
**Natal**, troops from, 414  
**National Assembly**, of Germany, ratifies treaty, 1335  
**National Catholic War Council**, war-work of 1235  
**National Committee for Relief in Belgium**, in British Empire, 886  
**National Council of Women of Canada**, war-work of, 1052  
**National Guard**, absorbed into United States Army, 750  
     A. E. F. divisions representing, 1106  
     increased, 872  
     7th and 12th Regiments parading, 752  
**National League for Women's Service**, organization of, 1214, 1220  
**National Liberals**, of Germany, 962  
**National People's Party**, protests of German, 1334

**National Security League**, institution of, 428  
**National Unity Conventions**, in Canada, 1062  
**National War Work Council**, financed work of Y. M. C. A., 1254, 1261  
**National Women's Service League**, in Germany, 960  
**Nationalism**, growth of the principle of, 1340  
**Nationalist Volunteers**, in Ireland, 84  
**Nationalists**, French political party, 498  
**Nationality**, and Vienna Congress, 24  
**Nations**, neutral, 4, 5, 259  
 that declared war, 4, 5,  
 war costs of, 7  
**Naturalization**, of Germans, 36  
**Nautilus**, an early submersible, 230  
**Naval Aviation**, American, 1088  
 Austrian, 1177-78  
 British, 254, 477, 923, 1094, 1096  
 French, 254  
 German, 255, 483  
**Naval-Aviation Camps**, Y. M. C. A. at, 1249  
**Naval Division**, in Somme battle, 554  
**Naval Flotilla**, at Zeebrugge, 1096  
 German attack on Riga, 329  
 off Belgium and Flanders, 218, 220, 472  
 on Palestine coast, 851  
 on Tigris, 397, 402, 626  
 protecting Venice, 784  
**Naval Reserve**: see under Countries  
**Navarin Farm**, struggle for, 314  
**Navy**, battles of the British: see Coronel, Jutland, etc.  
 German, revolution in, 1320  
 under terms of armistice and treaty, 1315, 1333  
 increasing the United States, 429  
 of Austria, after treaty, 1337  
 of Canada, 1055  
 of the United States in European waters, 1067  
 work of British, 469  
**Navy League**, institution of, 428  
 of Germany, 36  
**Nazareth**, taken, 851  
**Near East**, war in the, 393, 623  
**Nebly Samwil Ridge**, captured, 842  
**Negotin**, action at, 372  
**Neldenburg**, action at, 158  
**Nervessa**, crossings at, 1177, 1180  
**Nesim Bey**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Nesle**, Allied cavalry meet in, 866  
 captured, and re-captured, 1016, 1267  
**Nette River**, Belgians driven behind the, 144, 146  
**Netherland Overseas Trust**, in Holland, 260  
**Netherlands**, and Vienna Congress, 24  
 as neutral, 4, 5  
 at the end of 1914, 225  
 see also Holland  
**Nettancourt**, Pétain's headquarters at, 1141  
**Neufchâteau**, A. E. F. in, 1106, 1161  
 battle of, 116  
**Neuilly**, Treaty of, with Bulgaria, 1337  
**Neutral Zone**, declared by Armistice, 1315  
 in Greece, 711  
**Neutrals**, and the German raiders, 210  
 and the submarine campaigns, 234, 736  
 difficulties in 1916, 644  
 throughout the war, 4, 5  
 traveling rights of, 273  
 war and the, 259  
**Neuve Chapelle**, battle of, 151, 282, 283, 418  
**Neville St. Vaast**, assault upon, 308  
**Nevada**, dreadnaught, 1088  
**Nevers**, American use of, 1103  
**New Armies**, of Lord Kitchener, 291, 297, 537  
**Newburn, S. C.**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062  
**Newfoundland**, Naval Reservists of, 201  
 participates in war, 185, 201  
**Newfoundland Regiment**, sailing and engagements of, 201, 1190  
**Newfoundlanders**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
**New Pomerania**, taken over, 223  
**Newport News**, embarkation port for A. E. F., 1108  
**New York**, battleship, 1088, 1089  
**New York**, chief embarkation port for A. E. F., 1108  
**New York Chamber of Commerce**, Relief-fund, 889  
**New York Public Library**, as a rostrum, 1220  
**New Zealand**, contribution to Belgian relief, 886  
 participates in war, 185, 198  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325

**New Zealand**, troops in Somme battle, 537, 542  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**New Zealand**, battle-cruiser, 198, 219  
**New Zealand Division**, engagements of, 822, 1284  
**New Zealand Mounted Rifles**, in the Eastern desert, 832  
**New Zealanders**, during last offensive, 1267  
 in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
 see also Anzacs  
**Ngaundere**, surrendered, 410  
**Niblack, Rear-Admiral A. P.**, American commander at Gibraltar, 1075  
**Nicaragua**, declared war, 6, 744  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Nice**, ceded to France, 353  
**Nicholas, Tsar of Russia**, abdication, 685-86  
 and Rasputin, 676, 678-79  
 assumed command, 330  
**Nicholas**, king of Montenegro, 67  
**Nicholas Michailovitch, Grand Duke**, and the Tsar, 611  
 in the Caucasus, 405, 631, 633  
 on the Eastern Front, 623  
 portrait, 165  
**Russian Commander-in-Chief**, 157, 167, 328  
 superseded, 419, 599  
**Nicolay, Major**, report on capture of Douaumont, 464  
**Niemen River**, attempts to bridge, 162  
 Russian line on the, 328  
**Nieppe, Forest of**, Australians in, 1020  
**Nieuport**, an aeroplane, 21, 250, 252, 258, 914  
**Nieuport**, attack near, 150  
 Belgian forces at, 213  
**Nish**, city in Serbia, 60  
 railway captured at, 1130-31  
 temporary Serbian capital, 181, 182, 560  
 Teutonic objective, 373, 376  
**Nitti**, in charge Italian treasury, 777  
**Nivelle, General**, attack on Craonne Plateau, 788, 808, 874  
 became Generalissimo in the West, 500, 790  
 superseded by Pétain at Verdun, 456  
**Nixon, General**, in command in Mesopotamia, 400, 404, 624  
**Nogent l'Abbesse**, hills of, 792  
**Nonnebusch**, Germans driven from, 152  
**Nooitgedacht**, defeat at, 414  
**Nordenfelf**, designed submarine, 231  
**Norris, Senator**, filibuster and vote of, 738, 744  
**Norroy Quarries**, American objective, 1291  
**Northcliffe, Lord**, and the war, 650, 667  
 appointed Special Commissioner, 746  
**Northern Front**, last offensive on the, 1263  
**Northern Mine Barrage**, laying the, 1087  
**Northey, Brigadier-General Edward**, in East African Campaign, 969  
**North German Lloyd**, and German propaganda, 427  
**North Keeling Island**, Emden ashore on, 215  
**North Sea**, declared to be military area, 262, 471  
 German fleet surrendered in, 1318  
 submarines in, 238  
 Zeppelins, and the control of, 255  
**Norway**, as neutral, 4, 5, 225, 260  
 protests torpedoing, 238  
**Notre Dame de Lorette**, advance upon ridge, 307, 308  
**Notre Dame des Champs**, massif, 1142  
**Novgorod**, German line at, 325  
**Novica**, occupied, 720  
**Novo-Georgievsk**, German line at, 325  
**Noyon**, birthplace of Calvin, 511  
 fighting near, 142  
 French regain, 1267  
 Germans at, 787, 1016  
**Noyon-Montdidier Sector**, offensive of, 1031, 1035  
**Nungesser**, French aviator, 918  
**Yunsheet**, refugee camp, 106  
**Nur-ed-Din Bey**, in command Turkish forces, 400,  
**Nürnberg**, light cruiser, 210, 212  
**Nyasa, Lake**, German use of, 963  
 naval affairs on, 224, 966

O

**Oberndorff, Count von**, German peace-delegate, 1315  
**Obrenovatz**, head of entrenched line, 180, 372  
**Observation-Post**, German, near Grand Pré, 1303

- Observer**, in basket of balloon, 246  
**Ocean**, ship, 343, 386  
**Ocean Escorts**, or cruisers, 1078  
**Ochrida, Lake**, and d'Esperey's campaign, 1122  
**Ocna**, attack on, 725  
**O'Connell, William Cardinal**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Odessa**, bombardment of, 336  
**Officers**, British with Canadian forces, 1204  
   election of Army, 981  
   German, learning the Turkish language, 406  
   purchasing food in Belgium, 1003  
   training United States, 854  
   Turkish and German, at Gallipoli, 337  
**Officers' Inn**, in London, 1250  
**Officers' Training Camps**, established, 750  
**Oghratina**, attack at, 830  
**O'Gorman, Senator**, and filibuster, 738  
**O'Hern, Rev. Lewis J.**, executive secretary, 1244  
**Oil-fields**, Caspian, 394  
   in Galicia, 156, 165  
   in Mesopotamia, 393  
   plans to seize, 382  
**Oil-tanks**, of Madras fired, 214  
**Oil-Well**s, destroyed during Rumanian retreat, 620  
**Oise Canal**, Germans thrust behind, 1281  
**Oise River**, and German offensive, 1011-12, 1027  
   crossed by Hindenburg Line, 805  
   during August, 1918, offensive, 1139  
   French line crossed, 300, 306  
   retreat to, 122, 126  
**Oise, Valley of**, fighting in, 142  
**Oise-Aisne Canal**, reached by French, 802  
**Oklahoma**, dreadnaught, 1066, 1088  
**Old-age Pensions**, in Germany, 40  
**Old Amiens Defense Line**, Allied objective, 1205  
**Old Euphrates Channel**, valley of the, 398  
**Old Gang**: see Asquith Government  
**Oldebroek**, Belgian camp at, 106  
**Oldenburg**, dreadnaught, 936  
**O'Leary**, cleared German trench, 281  
**O'Leary, Jeremiah**, letter of the President, 431  
**Olmütz**, "humiliation of, 47  
**Olsen, Colonel**, of Belgian army, 970  
**Olti**, attack on, 632  
**Omaruru**, occupied, 416  
**Omission River**, gap near, 1013  
**Oostaverne**, end of British front, 814  
**Operations Section**, of the General Staff of A. E. F., 1170  
**Oppressed Nationalities of Austria-Hungary**, Congress of, 1172  
**Oppy Line**, of the Germans, 806  
**Orah**, Turkish position at, 624, 626, 629  
**Orange Free State**, uprising in, 412-13  
**Orava River**, valley of the, 318  
**Ore**, imported by neutrals, 262  
**Orfano Gulf**, and Saloniki campaign, 568, 570  
**Organization of American Women for Strict Neutrality**, during war, 425  
**Orient Railway**, Teutonic objective, 559  
**Orlando, Premier**, attended Peace Conference, 1324  
   portrait in group, 1325  
   premier of Italy, 773, 777-78  
**Orleans**, American use of, 1103  
**Orly**, aircraft acceptance park at, 1166  
**Ornes**, near Verdun, 441, 444, 446, 452  
**Orsova**, limit of Teutonic invasion, 369, 372  
**Osavla**, ridge of, 584, 592-93  
**Osman I**, ship, 336  
**Ostend**, bombed, 255  
   British fleet at, 218  
   German troops at, 1147  
   naval operations against, 473, 1095, 1100, 1100  
   re-occupied, 1280, 1281  
**Ostfriesland**, dreadnaught, 936  
**Ostrolenka**, Germans at, 326  
**Ostrovno**, and Serbian campaign, 572  
**Otavifontein**, occupied, 416  
**Othain River**, passage forced, 116  
**Otranto**, auxiliary cruiser, 210  
**Otranto, Straits of**, blockade of, 586  
**Ottawa**, Federal Trade Board of, 1049  
**Ottoman Empire**: see Turkey  
**Oudenarde**, captured, 1150  
**Outchy-le-Château**, line of, 1039  
**Ourcq River**, battle of the, 128, 131  
   during second Marne battle, 1038  
   42nd U. S. Division at, 1116  
**Ouvroirs**, or workshops, in France, 509  
**Ouvillers**, and the Somme battle, 520, 522, 534  
**Ouvillers-la-Boiselle**, British objective, 528, 557

P

- "P." Bridge**, Allied objective, 1125-26  
**Pact of Rome**, made in Italy, 1172  
**Padang**, Ayeshah at, 215  
**Padua**, bombed, 1172, 1173  
   Italian headquarters at, 776  
**Page, Walter H.**, Ambassador to Great Britain, 733, 880  
**Pagny-sur-Moselle**, on German 2nd line, 1138  
**Painboeuf**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Painlevé**, at Rapallo, 778  
   in French Cabinet, 500, 502  
**Palanteken Mountains**, south of Erzerum, 632  
**Palestine**, agriculture in, 835  
   Canadians in, 1203  
   conquest of, 827, 876  
   Indian troops in, 204  
   mandate for, 1338  
   Mohammedan troops in, 186  
   quasi-independent state of, 1340  
**Pallada**, cruiser, 224, 234  
**Panama**, declared war, 6, 744  
   representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Pan-German League**, ideals of, 35  
**Pan-Serbia**, movement for, 73, 79  
**Pan-Slavism**, movement for, 31, 57, 61  
**Panther**, gunboat, 38  
**Papacy**, and Italy, 355  
**Papen, Captain Franz von**, recall of and evidence, 417, 425-27  
**Paper**, manufactories of "Y.", 1253  
**Parachutes**, use of, 246  
**Paraguay**, as neutral, 5, 744  
**Paravane**, invented by Lieutenant Birney, 1099  
**Paris**, advance on, 1028, 1030  
   A. E. F. Headquarters in, 1102  
   bombardment and aerial defense, 255, 926, 931  
   celebrates victory, 1318  
   forts defending, 125  
   map illustrating drive towards, 1028  
   on to, 109  
   Peace Conference at, 1324  
   position of Big Bertha that bombarded, 1019  
   Siege of, 24, 243  
**Paris-Amiens Railway**, to free, Allied objective, 1133, 1263, 1204, 1264  
   under German fire, 1017  
**Paris-Nancy Railway**, and St. Mihiel Salient, 1288  
**Paris-Verdun-Metz Railway**, tunnel of, 462  
**Parseval-Siegsfeld**, a type of balloon, 244, 246, 256  
**Pashitch, Premier**, attended Peace Conference, 1324  
**Passaga, General**, French commander, 464  
**Passain Plain**, near Erzerum, 632  
**Passchendaele**, Belgians pass, 1144  
**Passchendaele Ridge**, Allied objective, 818, 821, 821-23, 874, 1198  
   withdrawal from, 1020  
**Pasubio**, massif of, 1174  
   resistance at, 590  
**Patapasco**, mine-sweeper, 1086  
**Patchou, Dr. Laza**, portrait, 83  
**Pathans**, propaganda among, 634  
**Pathfinder (H. M. S.)**, sinking of, 233  
**Patriarch**, the Greek, 65  
**Patricia, Princess**, inspects troops, 195  
**Patriotic Fund**, in Canada, 1053  
**Patrol**, Austro-Hungarian, 773  
**Pau, General**, French commander, 111, 114  
**Pauillac**, embarkation camp at, 1162  
   naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Pavlovitch, Colonel**, associated with Serbian Command, 172  
**Pavlovitch, Grand Duke Dimitri**, murdered Rasputin, 678  
   Pavlovitch, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Peace**, Germany manoeuvres for, 1307  
   plans for securing, 429  
   Russia makes a separate, 976, 988  
**Peace Conference**, in Paris, 1324  
   proposed by Central Powers, 867  
**Peace Negotiations**, in 1916-17, 730  
**Peace of Prague**, effect on Austria, 48  
**Peace Treaties**, analysis of, 1327, 1330  
   making the, 1323  
**Pecori-Girardo**, Italian commander, 590, 777, 780, 1175



- Pedikona**, captured, 408  
**Pegasus**, Germans destroy, 967  
**Pelletier, General**, attended General Pershing, 743, 745  
**Pemba**, island of, 963  
**Penang Harbor**, attack on, 214  
**Pennella**, Italian commander, 1175  
**Pennsylvania Guard**, trained at Camp Hancock, 855  
**Pensions**, in Canada, 1054  
**Pepper Hill** (Côte du Poivre), near Verdun, 445, 451, 465-66  
**Periscope**, giant German, 556  
**Perkin, W. H.**, and coal-tar, 32  
**Péronne**, Allied objective, 141, 806, 874, 1267 and the German lines, 787, 1014 during Somme battle, 516-17, 520-22, 524 ruins of Grande Place, 807  
**Péronne-Bapaume Road**, and Somme battle, 521, 544, 547, 550  
**Péronne-Cambrai Road**, and battle of Cambrai, 823  
**Perry, Bishop James De Wolf**, on Committee of Six, 1238  
**Pershing, General John J.**, and battle of Armageddon, 1140 and operations of First American Army in St. Mihiel and Meuse-Argonne, 1287 and staff on board the Baltic, portrait group, 734 arriving at Boulogne, 743 as Commander of the American Expeditionary Force, 750, 873, 1101, 1135, 1152 at the tomb of Lafayette, 745 enters St. Mihiel, 1292 portrait, 736, 745, 1102 turns over American forces to Foch, 1110  
**Pershing Stadium**, history of, 1256  
**Persia**, fighting in, 634 scene on route of Russian advance, 635 threatened campaign in, 735, 765 Turkish offensive in, 465  
**Persia**, steamship, 239  
**Persian Gulf**, British and the, 228, 393  
**Persians**, army of, 2  
**Perthes**, in Champagne campaign, 312  
**Pern**, representation at Peace Conference, 1325 severed diplomatic relations, 6, 744  
**Pescara**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Pétain, General Henri P.**, address to troops, 455 and August, 1918, offensive, 1141 and disposal of American Army, 1288, 1290 and Nivelle, 788, 797, 874 at Verdun, 447, 449, 468 congratulates 1st Division (U. S.), 1111 enters St. Mihiel, 1292 enters Strassburg, 1318 French commander, 307, 456, 794 in Metz, 1132, 1311 preparation for German offensive, 1009  
**Peter, King of Serbia**, behavior of, 375-79 portrait, 67  
**Petit Morin River**, passage of, 134  
**Petrograd**, Democratic Congress in, 694 street-fighting in, 680 strike in, 82 under Bolshevik control, 870  
**Petska**, fighting near, 178  
**Pforte-Jakalwater-Biet**, line of battle, 415  
**Philadelphia**, A. E. F. embarkation port, 1108  
**Philip of Macedonia**, territory of, 60  
**Philippopolis**: see Plovdiv  
**Phosphorus**, in grenades, 16  
**Pia Tak Pass**, Russians in, 764-65  
**Piave River**, approach to passes, 361 islands in the, 1180 last stand at the, 777-78 line of the, 1172, 1175 retreat to, 779, 875  
**Piave Vecchia**, flooded, 780  
**Picardy**, fighting in, 511 1st U. S. Division sent to, 1111 seams and scars on the surface of, 523 troops from, 312  
**Piedmont**, and Austria, 47  
**Piedmont Plain**, in the Trentino, 361  
**Pieris**, bridges blown up at, 364  
**Pigeon-house**, at the front, 1013  
**Pigeons**, in war, 1013, 1165, 1173  
**Pilgrim's Railway**, and Mücke, 216 built, 846  
**Pilgrim's Road**: see Akaba-Suez Route  
**Pilitza River**, campaigning along, 167, 326  
**Pilkem**, taken, 819  
**Pill-boxes**, machine-gun forts, 15 on Messines Ridge, 815  
**Pilsudski, General**, Polish commander, 606  
**Pincers**, Marshal Foch's strategy of the, map, 1170  
**Pinsk Marshes**, stopped German offensive, 323  
**Pioneers**, in Somme battle, 547  
**Piontek**, action at, 168  
**Pirot**, peoples about, 64 taken, 374  
**Pistolet**, torpedo-boat, 215  
**Pitaval, Most Rev. John B.**, in Catholic War Council, 1238  
**Pitt**, and Fulton's submersible, 230  
**Place de la Concorde**, statues of cities in, 29  
**Plains of Abraham**, force at battle of, 2  
**Platana**, landing at, 633  
**Plava**, in Italian campaigns, 580, 582, 584, 767-69  
**Playground and Recreation Association of America**, war-work of, 1232, 1234  
**Pleasant Island**, mandate for, 1330 wireless captured on, 223  
**Plekhanov**, and the Russian army, 716  
**Plovdiv**, capital of Eastern Rumelia, 63, 66, 70  
**Plumer, General Sir Herbert**, and army of occupation, 1316 and 3rd battle of Ypres, 808, 819, 821 in Italy, 778, 781, 823, 1171-72 in Messines battle, 814, 814 on Hohenzollern Bridge, 1320  
**Plunkett, Rear-Admiral C. F.**, and guns for Western Front, 1088  
**Plymouth**, submarine-chaser base, 1075, 1080 welcomes Canadians, 192  
**"Pocket"**, system of defenses, 314  
**Podgora**, ridge of, 578-79, 584, 592-93  
**Poelcappelle**, captured, 821, 822  
**Pogroms**, in Russia, 600  
**Pohl, Admiral von**, naval policy of, 470 supersedes von Ingenohl, 222  
**Poilu, M.**, as I knew him, 669  
**Poincaré, President**, at St. Mihiel, 1292 comment on America, 744 in Metz, 1311 meets King George, 531 portrait in group, 996 welcomes Peace Conference, 1324  
**Poison**, forbidden by Hague Convention, 285  
**Poison-gas**: see Gas, Poisonous  
**Pokrosky**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Pola**, Austrian naval base, 586  
**Poland**, added to Germany, 988 at beginning of the war, 156 autonomy, 606 division of, 28, 54 effects of German bombardment in, 678 land ceded to, 1330, 1337-38 new state erected, 1340 operations in, 165, 167, 325, 419 outrages in, 228 representation at Peace Conference, 1325 scene in Russian, 609 supplies to be sent to, 1315 treaty with Allies, 1339 Y. M. C. A. in, 1258  
**Poles**, at Verdun, 452 Slavic race, 24, 28, 50, 54, 57 support bid for, 156  
**Polish Legion**, with the French, 606  
**Poloshko**, Allies enter, 1125  
**Pont-à-Mousson**, American troops above, 1290 bombed, 255 French objective, 304, 306 taken, 132  
**Pont-des-Arches**, at Liège, 96  
**Pontebba Pass**, in the Carnic Alps, 361, 578, 583  
**Pontoon-bridges**, used by Suez Canal expedition, 384-85, 388  
**Pontoons**, used for crossing Tigris, 755  
**Pools of Siloam**, rendezvous at, 627  
**Pope**, and United Italy, 354  
**Popov**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Population**, as affected by war, 7  
**Populations**, of warring nations, 4  
**Port Said**, view of, 389  
**Porte**, The: see Turkey  
**Portland**, A. E. F. embarkation port, 1108  
**Porto Corsini**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Ports of Entry**, for America, in France, 1103 Y. M. C. A. at, 1249  
**Port-sur-Seille**, on flank of the Argonne, 1293



- Portugal**, enters war, 644  
 in the Great War, 4  
 on Peace, 867  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Portuguese**, in German offensive, 1019  
 on the Western front, 1021  
 Y. M. C. A. and, 1258  
**Portuguese East Africa**, and East African  
 campaign, 963, 972  
**Posen**, ceded to Poland, 1330  
 invaded, 167  
**Posen Brigade**, at Verdun, 452  
**Posen-Cracow Railroad**, cut, 167  
**Post Exchanges**: see Canteens  
**Posters**, for war uses, 648, 1040, 1057, 1215,  
 1219, 1221  
**Post-Office**, German, on Western front, 301  
**Potchefstroom**, proposed rising in, 412  
**Potiorek**, General, Austrian Commander-in-  
 Chief, 178, 181  
**Potsdam**, in Brandenburg, 25  
 Teutonic conference at, 80  
**Potsdam Place**, in Berlin, 227  
**Pozieres**, captured and re-captured, 1015, 1267  
 during Somme battle, 525, 528-31, 534, 557  
**Prague**, University of, 56  
**Prabhava Valley**, German forces in, 620  
**Preobrajensky Regiment**, and the Revolution,  
 682  
**Preparedness**, policy of military, 428  
**Presha, Lake**, and d'Esperey's campaign, 1122  
**Pressburg**, city of Austria-Hungary, 50  
**Pretoria**, Boer objective, 412  
**Preussen Stellung**, part of Hindenburg Line,  
 1137  
**Prilep**, Allied objective, 1122, 1125, 1127  
 and Monastir campaign, 575  
 Serbs fall back on, 376  
**Primary School**, aided by commission, 898  
**Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry**,  
 193, 281, 514, 1190-91  
**Princess Royal**, battle cruiser, 219; 477  
**Pringle, Captain J. E.**, at Queenstown, 1075  
**Prinkipo Island**, proposed All-Russian confer-  
 ence on, 1339  
**Prinz Eitel Friedrich**, raider, 214, 1077  
**Pripet Marshes**, Teutons in the, 330, 332  
**Pripet River**, and the Russian line, 330, 605  
**Prison Camps**, in Germany, 869  
 work of Y. M. C. A. in, 1258  
**Prisoners**, American collection of German, in  
 the Argonne, 1297  
 German, 1315  
 number of, 1  
 Russian, 170, 607, 717, 726  
 treatment of Austrian, 1182  
 treatment of Italian, 1182  
 work in Germany, 958  
**Prisrend**, refugees near, 375  
**Proclamation of Peace**, in London, 1336  
**Professors**, remarks of German, 35  
**Profiteering**, in Germany, 942  
**Progressists**, political party, 498  
**Progressive Bloc**, of Russian Duma, 600, 608,  
 715  
**Prohibition**, American war-time, 1215  
 in Canada, 1053  
**Propaganda**, anti-German, 1222  
 German, in U. S., 1214  
 in bombs and tubes, 955, 961  
 Italian, in Vienna, 929  
**Propaganda, Department**, of Great Britain,  
 667  
**Prothero, R. E.**, of the War Ministry, 658  
**Protopopov, Alexander**, Minister of the In-  
 terior, 608, 676-82, 684, 715  
**Provost-Marshal-General's Department**, of  
 A. E. F., 1169  
**Prussia**, advance of, 24  
 and Belgian neutrality, 24, 89, 92  
 and the Balkans, 61  
 and the Dual Alliance, 354  
 in Seven Years War, 3  
 Poles in, 24, 28  
**Prussian Guards**, actions of, 138, 151-52, 154,  
 297, 528, 533  
**Pruth Boundary**, cession of, 615-16  
**Pruth River**, end of counter-attack, 332  
 valley of the, 318  
**Przemysl**, after bombardment, 321  
 drives for base at, 164-67  
 siege and capture of, 317-20, 419  
**Przerosl, Russia**, church in, 685  
**Pskov**, taken, 987  
**Public Information, Committee on**, work of,  
 1222  
**Pultiere Wood**, captured, 1303  
**Pultusk**, fortress, 326  
**Punjabis**, in Egyptian Expeditionary Force,  
 833  
**Punjab**, Nationalist movement in, 202  
**Purchasing Boards**, of the Allies, 1167  
**Purishkevitch, Vladimir**, Anti-Semitic, 600, 611  
 assassinated Rasputin, 679  
**Pusht-i-kuh Hills**, and Cossack march through,  
 624, 636  
**Putnam, Dr. Herbert**, war-work of, 1231  
**Putnik, Field-Marshal**, in command Serbian  
 forces, 172, 178, 375, 379  
  
**Q**  
**Quadrangle, The**, taken, 522  
**Quadrilateral, The**, fortified point, 543  
**Quarries**, German stronghold, 792, 793  
**Quartermaster's Department**, of A. E. F., 1164  
**Quéant**, on Hindenburg Line, 805-06, 1137, 1268  
**Quebec**, and the war, 1062  
 battalions from, 193  
**Queen Elizabeth (H. M. S.)**, 487  
 guns of the, 206  
 super-dreadnaught, 254, 339, 342, 347, 1318  
**Queen Mary (H. M. S.)**, battle-cruiser, 143, 191  
**Queen's Own Regiment**, departure from To-  
 ronto, 189  
**Queenstown**, naval base, 1071, 1075, 1080, 1090  
**Quennevières**, farm of, 308  
  
**R**  
**Race for the Sea**, story of, 131  
**Rada**, popular assembly of Ukraine, 978,  
 985-86, 988  
**Radautz**, occupied, 604, 605  
**Radev**, Bulgarian Minister, 1129  
**Radical Socialists**, political party, 498, 500  
**Radicals**, political party, 498  
**Radomka**, and German crossing, 326  
**Radoslavov**, Bulgarian party leader, 367, 1128  
**Rafa**, crossing at, 832  
**Ragusa**, Adriatic port, 61  
**Railroads**, German on Polish border, map, 156  
 United States takes over, 873, 1219  
 use for mobilization, 155  
**Railway**, light, to the front, 639  
**Railway Triangle**, east of Arras, 810  
**Rainbow Division (42nd)**, "over there," 751,  
 1026, 1106  
 trained at Camp Mills, 854  
**Ram**, Danube crossed at, 370  
**Ramadiya**, evacuation of, 757, 766, 876  
**Ramah**, occupied, 840  
**Raman's Drift**, occupied, 415  
**Ramscapele**, captured, 151  
**Ramsey**, encounter with Meteor, 474  
**Rancourt**, and Somme battle, 521, 537, 544, 548  
**Raney, Dr. M. S.**, arranged for army and navy  
 libraries, 1232  
**Range-finders**, on anti-aircraft guns, 11  
**Rapallo**, council of Allies at, 778  
**Rappes Wood**, taken, 1303  
**Rasputin**, and his coterie, 677  
 intrigues and death of, 675-78  
 Russian monk, 317, 608, 611, 642  
**Rathenau, Dr. Walter**, and economic mobiliza-  
 tion, 940  
**Ration**, for the Belgians, 897  
 of C. R. B. in France, 901  
**Rationing**, in Great Britain, 662  
**Rausenberger, Professor Fritz**, portrait, 104  
**Ravenna**, raided, 586  
**Ravin de la Dame**, ridges attacked, 464  
**Ravitaillement**, of the Belgian relief, 885  
**Rawlinson, General Sir Henry S.**, and Army  
 of Occupation, 1316  
 and German offensive, 1016  
 at the Somme, 514, 522  
 British commander, 147, 149, 282  
 in group picture, 557  
 position of his Fourth Army in 1917, 808, 818  
**Rayak-Beirut Line**, taken, 852  
**Raynal, Major**, commander at Fort Vaux, 460  
**Reciprocity**, in Canada, 1056  
**Reconstruction**, and Employment Service, of  
 K. of C., 1242  
**Reconstruction Programme**, publication of,  
 1241  
**Records**, of individuals in the A. E. F., 1169  
**Recruit**, the land-ship in Union Square, 739

- Red Cross**, American, in Italy, 1171  
and Y. M. C. A., 1257  
Clothing Bureau, 949  
German, 943, 960  
work of the American, 1226
- Red Cross Ambulance**, in Ypres, 815
- Red Cross Departments**, for Military Affairs  
and Civil Affairs, 1227
- Red Cross Drives**, results of, 1223
- Red Cross Nurses**, Japanese, in France, 1231
- Red Cross Parade**, in New York, 1230
- Red Cross Unit**, British, in Italy, 770, 776
- Red Cross Workers**, in Toronto, 1053
- Red Guards**, to be disbanded, 988
- Red Tower Pass**, attack on, 618
- Redmond, Major**, grave of, 654
- Reds**, riots of, in Germany, 1322
- Refugees**, Belgian, 103, 104  
freed by British, 1308  
Italian care of, 1203  
messages for, 991  
returning, 1139
- Begina Trench**, Allied objective, 547, 551, 553
- Registration Day**, for soldiers, 750, 873
- Regnéville**, near Verdun, 451
- Reichstag**, and Peace, 868  
and the Armistice, 1310  
German lower house, 44
- Reitz**, republic proclaimed at, 414
- Relief and Welfare Organizations**, at the front, 1225
- Relief Funds**, subscribed to by Americans, 1213
- Relief-Post**, French, in Alsace, 640
- Relief-ships**, markings of C. R. B., 891  
of C. R. B., 883  
safe passage guaranteed, 880  
unloading, 887
- Religions**, in Austria-Hungary, 52, 54  
in Balkans, 57
- Renard**, dirigible of, 244
- Renault**, an engine, 252
- Rennenkampf, General**, command of the Nienmen Army, 157, 158
- R. E. P.**, type of aeroplane, 250
- Reparation**, demand for German, 1327, 1332  
of Austria, 1337
- Representation of the People Act**, 668
- Reshadie**, ship, 336
- Rethel**, fight at, 122, 124  
on German 2nd line, 1138, 1150
- Rethondes**, Armistice signed near, 1314, 1315
- Reuss, Prince**, German minister, 634
- Reventlow, Count zu**, and Belgian relief, 884  
comment on German fleet, 469
- Révigny**, bombed, 439  
French near, 136
- Revillon**, action near, 1146
- Revolution**, American, men engaged in, 2  
use of submersible boat in, 229
- Revolutionists**, starting on a police-hunt, 681
- Rey, General de la**, Boer leader, 412-13
- Rheims**, aeroplane meet at, 250  
and Hindenburg Line, 805, 1137, 1140, 1280  
during last German offensive, 1028, 1031  
end of French front, 790, 792, 794  
German objective, 140, 302, 315  
in ruins, resumes business, 1148
- Rheims Cathedral**, firing the, 140
- Rheims Mountain**, Germans hold, 1142
- Rheinish Prussia**, occupied by Belgians, 1316
- Rhine River**, areas of occupation along, 1314-16, 1333
- Rhineland**, aircraft bombard, 926
- Rhodesia**, during African campaign, 966-67  
troops from, 414
- Rhondda, Lord**, of the War Ministry, 658, 662, 666
- Ribot**, in French Cabinet, 500, 712
- Rice, General**, in Mesopotamia, 624
- Richembourg**, fighting about, 290
- Richthofen, Baron von**, German ace, 914, 920, 924
- Richard, Edgar**, and Hoover, 880
- Rifle-Grenades**, training in the use of, 857
- Rifles**, war requirements for, 16
- Rifling**, of artillery pieces, 12
- Riga**, operations about, 602-03, 719-20, 725, 728  
Russian port, 255, 332
- Riga, Gulf of**, campaigns about, 725  
naval operations in, 419, 643, 728  
operations around, maps, 329, 727
- Rintelen, von**, German agent, 427
- Ritter, Dr. Paul**, Swiss Minister, 738
- River Clyde**, at Gallipoli, 344, 345
- Rizzo, Lieutenant**, exploit of, 784, 1174
- Robeck, Vice-Admiral de**, in command at Gallipoli, 341, 348
- Robert Brothers**, balloon of, 242
- Roberts, Lord**, visits Salisbury Plain, 195  
warnings of, 646
- Robertson, General Sir William E.**, at Rapallo, 778  
out of General Staff, 668  
portrait, 1008
- Robilant, de**, Italian commander, 780
- Rochefort**, Americans use port of, 1103
- Rocher Bayard**, at Dinant, 100
- Rockefeller Foundation**, and Belgian relief, 886
- Rodman, Rear-Admiral Hugh**, in command 6th  
Battle Squadron, 1088
- Rodzianko, Michael**, President of the Duma, 600, 679, 682-84, 686, 715
- Roe**, aeroplane, 250
- Roebing Works**, havoc by fire in, 425
- Rogers, Rear-Admiral T. S.**, command of, 1088
- Rolanpont**, 42nd Division in, 1106
- Romagne**, German stronghold, 1299, 1302, 1303
- Romain**, battle of, 830  
captured, 1146
- Rome**, added to Italy, 354
- Romerantin**, aviation base at, 1166
- Romarch, Admiral**, command French marines, 147, 151
- Ronchères Wood**, Americans at, 1116
- Roosevelt, Ex-President Theodore**, on peace  
without victory, 734  
on preparedness, 428
- Rosenwald, Julius**, in Advisory Commission, 748
- Ross**, rifle, replacement of, 1059
- Rostov**, and anti-Bolshevik military state, 978
- Rotary Club**, and "Y," 1250
- Rothermere, Lord**, portrait in group, 647
- Rotterdam**, A. E. F. base at, 1161  
port of C. R. B., 890, 892
- Roulers**, Belgians take, 1278, 1280  
on Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1144, 1146
- Rovereto**, on Italian front, 582, 1174
- Rowell, N. W.**, Canadian Liberal leader, 1062  
portrait, 1059
- Royal Engineers**, and airplane observers, 514
- Royal Flying Corps**, aeroplanes of, 252  
in the East, 832, 838  
work of, 253-54, 514, 1126, 1204
- Royal Marines**, in Antwerp, 144
- Royal Naval Air Service**, seaplanes of, 252, 254
- Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve**, in Antwerp, 144
- Roze**, captured, and re-captured, 1016, 1133  
on French front, 123, 142, 787, 805-06
- Roze-Lassigny-Noyon**, advance to line of, 1135
- Ruquoy, General**, Belgian commander, 817
- Ruffey, General**, in command, 3rd French  
Army, 112, 115
- Rufji River**, German retreat to, 971-72
- Rumania**, and Bukovina, 318  
declares neutrality, 365, 368  
disaster of, 604, 608  
during Balkan War, 77  
entry into war, 572, 617  
evacuation of, required, 867  
fighting on the front of, 725  
Germany to withdraw from, 1315  
lands ceded to, 1337  
map of area captured to the end of 1916, 618  
occupied Hungary, 1338  
on Peace, 867  
peace negotiations of, 978  
representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
sacrifice of, 613, 642, 977  
treaty with Allies, 1339  
under Berlin treaty, 68  
under the Turks, 65  
Y. M. C. A. and, 1247, 1258
- Rumanians**, and the Wallachs, 63  
in Austria-Hungary, 28, 49-52, 79  
racial claims of, 60
- Rupel**, fort of, 570, 707
- Rupprecht**, Crown Prince of Bavaria, at the  
Somme, 519  
German commander, 110, 115, 132, 141, 519  
in Belgium, 814, 1030  
portraits, 445, 814
- Russell, Rt. Rev. William T.**, war-work of, 1238

- Russia, Tsar of**, abdication of, 870  
 and the Grand Duke Nicholas, 611  
 and the Revolution, 681-82  
**Russia, the Tsarevitch of**, 676, 685  
**Russia, Tsarina of**, 599, 611, 676  
 pro-German influence, 642  
 suspected treachery and arrest, 676, 678, 684  
**Russia**, advance into Mesopotamia, 756, 764  
 advance into Persia, 634  
 affairs in 1915, 317  
 aircraft of, 247, 252  
 alliances of, 26  
 and Austria, 352  
 and Belgian neutrality, 24, 89  
 and Bulgaria, 68-70  
 and Constantinople, 26, 30, 333  
 and Germany, 352  
 and Italy, 360  
 and Rumania, 365, 613-15, 621  
 and the Balkans, 61, 76  
 and the Dardanelles project, 338  
 and the ultimatum to Serbia, 82, 84, 86  
 army and the Soviets, 688  
 army disintegrates, 722  
 Canadians in, 1203  
 Caucasian Army, 631  
 Constituent Assembly of, 870, 977, 985  
 declared a Republic, 693  
 declared war against Turkey, 66, 381  
 Dual Alliance aimed at, 354  
 fleets of, 643  
 Galician Army, 158  
 German troops and agents to be withdrawn from, 1315  
 German ultimatum to, 86  
 Grand Duke's retreat, 329  
 in East Prussia (1914), 158  
 invasion of East Prussia, 124  
 last offensive, map, 719  
 makes a separate peace, 975  
 menaced by Turkey's cruisers, 222  
 military operations during the Revolution, 715  
 navy in Baltic Sea, 208, 224  
 offensive against Austria, 602  
 offensive of 1916, 642  
 offensive of 1917, 718  
 on Peace, 867  
 operations in the Caucasus, 393-94, 405  
 Pan-Slavism and, 131  
 peasantry of, 612, 696  
 Poles in, 24, 28  
 problem of, 1339  
 Provisional Government of, 684, 715, 870  
 raided by Zeppelins, 255  
 revolution in, 675, 868, 870  
 shipping of, 470  
 ships taken over by Allies, 1318  
 supplies to be sent to, 1315  
 trainload of soldiers leaving for home, 721  
 troops in France, 786, 787  
 work of Black Sea Fleet, 470  
 work on the Turkish front, 728  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1247, 1258  
**Russian Co-operative Movement**, work of, 980  
**Russians**, in Saloniki campaigns, 576  
 Slavic race, 57  
**Russo-Japanese War**, ammunition used in, 10  
 trench warfare in, 280  
 Y. M. C. A. in, 1246  
**Russo-Turkish War**, results of, 31, 352  
 Rumania and, 613  
**Ruthenians**, peasant's house, 55, 609  
 religion of, 164  
 subject race, 28, 50, 55  
**Ruzsky, General**, Russian commander, 162,  
 164, 686
- S
- Saar Basin**, under control of League, 1330  
**Saar Valley**, concessions in, 1327  
**Saarbruck**, bombed, 257  
**Sagrado**, bridgehead at, 578  
**Sailly**, Allies reach, 1144  
**Sailly-Saillisel**, French objective, 529, 537,  
 548-51  
**St. Blin**, 42nd Division in, 1106  
**St. Cyr**, students of, 492  
**St. Denis**, bombed, 255  
**St. Denis Gate**, protected by sandbags, 1024  
**St. Dizier**, A. E. F. regulating section at, 1161  
**St. Elol Craters**, Canadians at, 1196  
**St. Georges**, actions near, 151  
**St. Germain, Treaty of**, with Austria, 1337  
**St. Gobain**, massif of, 790, 1134, 1139, 1144,  
 1146-47  
**St. Gobain Salient**, Germans withdraw from,  
 1280-82  
**St. Gond**, marshes, gap near, 136-37  
**St. Julien**, and Canadians, 278, 1193  
 English in, 820  
**St. Mark's, Cathedral of**, protection, 586  
**St. Martin's Cathedral**, wreckage in, 290  
**St. Michel**, fortress of, 461-62, 463  
**St. Mihiel**, town of, 1137, 1288, 1289, 1292  
**St. Mihiel Salient**, aircraft in battle of, 934  
 Americans in, 1027, 1111, 1135, 1287  
 early struggle for, 141, 300, 304, 306  
 Franco-American operations in, 1287, 1288  
 plans for operations in, 1118, 1291  
**St. Nazaire**, American use of, 1073, 1088, 1103,  
 1161  
 British base at, 124, 204, 1160, 1190  
**St. Pierre Division**, during Somme battle, 520,  
 534, 552-53, 557  
**St. Pierre Vaast**, fortified wood of, 529, 537,  
 551  
**St. Quentin**, and Hindenburg Line, 512, 787,  
 805, 808, 1137, 1140  
 assault near and capture of, 1274, 1276  
 break opposite, 1013  
 civilians transported, 508  
 during August offensive, 1146  
 English at, 122  
**St. Quentin Canal**, south portal of, 1284  
**St. Quentin Sector**, and Cambrai battle, 824  
**St. Sulpice**, chemical central depot at, 1167  
**St. Trojan**, naval-aviation base at, 1090  
**Salonji, Premier**, at Peace Conference, 1324  
**Saizerais**, A. E. F. School at, 1106  
**Salamis, Bay of**, Allies sending force to, 707  
**Salandra, Signor**, resignation of, 360, 591  
**Salisbury, Lord**, at the Congress of Berlin, 353  
 ceded Heligoland, 208  
**Salisbury Plain**, camp on, 187, 192, 195, 201  
 First Canadian Division trained at, 1190  
**Saloniki**, Allied operations from, map, 561  
 as Allied base, 316, 370, 380, 417  
 first operations around, 559  
 from the north, 566  
 Greece and the expedition, 706  
 Greek revolutionists at, 875  
 Macedonian seaport, 60, 63, 68, 565  
 provisional government established in, 572  
 revolution in, 708  
 roads to, 172, 369-70, 372  
 Serbians arrive at, 568  
 with the British contingent at, 567  
**Salow, Admiral von**, German peace delegate,  
 1315  
**Salvador**, as neutral, 5  
**Salvage Depot**, in Verdun concert-hall, 1170  
**Salvation Army**, and Y. M. C. A., 1257, 1261  
 war-work of, 1231, 1233, 1234  
**Samarra**, railroad at, 762, 766, 876  
**Sambre River**, operations around, 97, 117, 1148,  
 1150, 1281-83  
**Samoa**, expedition against German, 198, 223  
 mandate for, 1330  
**Samogneux**, near Verdun, 444-45, 451, 468  
**Samsenov, General**, in command Army of the  
 Narew, 158, 160  
**San Gabriele**, fighting about, 770-71, 776  
**San Giovanni**, and Italian offensive, 768, 770-71  
**San Marino**, during Great War, 4  
**San Salvador**, severs diplomatic relations, 744  
**San Stefano**, treaty of, 66, 68, 352  
**Sanctuary Wood**, defense of guns in, 1202  
 passed, 820  
 resistance in, 514  
**Sandanski, Yani**, Macedonian leader, 75-77, 366  
**Sandeman-Carey, Brig-General**, portrait, 1016  
**Sanders, General Liman von**, Turkish com-  
 mander, 337, 343, 631, 851  
**Sandfontein**, defeat of, 412  
**Sandford, Lieutenant D.**, at Zeebrugge, 1097  
**Sanitary Train**, organization of, 861, 1157  
**Sannai-Yat**, Turkish position, 400, 628-30, 753  
**Sans-Souci**, palace of, 25  
**Santa Lucia**, protection for Tolmino, 578, 581,  
 769, 774  
**Santee**, American mystery ship, 1092  
**Santo Domingo**, severs relations, 744  
**Santos-Dumont**, and aircraft, 244, 250  
**Sarafov, Boris**, Macedonian traitor, 74-75  
**Sarajevo**, capital of Bosnia-Herzegovina, 78-79,  
 83  
**Sari Bair**, heights of, 339, 343, 348-49

- Sarikamish**, railhead at, 394-96  
**Sarrail, General**, advance in Macedonia, 620  
 and Greeks, 709, 711  
 and Saloniki, 316, 372, 559-60  
 at Verdun, 441  
 French commander, 125, 304, 574  
**Save River**, 171, 173, 369  
 and war in the Balkans, 559-60  
**Savinkov**, Kerensky's Minister of War, 692  
**Savoy**, ceded to France, 353  
**Saw-mill**, German, in France, 501  
**Saxony**, **King of**, and Poland, 167  
**Saxony**, in Seven Years War, 3  
**Sazonov, Count Sergius**, Russian Minister of Foreign Affairs, 87, 88, 600, 608  
**Scandinavia**, conferences during the Great War, 260  
 export trade interrupted, 238  
**Scapa Flow**, German vessels sunk at, 1321  
**Scarborough**, bombarded, 218  
**Scarpe River**, during August offensive, 1139  
 during last northern offensive, 1269  
 fighting south of, 810, 811  
**Scharnhorst**, armored cruiser, 210, 213, 223  
**Scheer, Vice-Admiral**, at the battle of Jutland, 476, 484  
**Scheidemann, Philip**, Chancellor of Germany, 1312, 1322  
**Scheldt**, actions near, 146, 1140, 1146, 1148, 1150  
**Scheldt Canal**, and Cambrai battle, 823  
 on Hindenburg Line, 1273, 1275-76  
 tunnel of the, 1284  
**Schenck, Baron**, in Greece, 706-07, 709  
**Scherbachew, General**, Russian commander, 604, 725  
**Schleswig**, plebiscite in, 1330  
**Schleswig-Holstein**, seizure of, 24, 28  
**Schmidt, Hugo**, and German propaganda, 426  
**Schoenbrunn**, palace of, 45  
**School-Colonies**, near Antwerp, 899, 901  
**Schrecklichkeit**, policy of, 104, 126, 228  
**Schrems, Rt. Rev. Joseph**, war-work of, 1238  
**Schubert, von**, on Russian front, 163  
**Schwaben Redoubt**, during Somme battle, 520, 534, 547, 549-52  
**Schwarze**, a gun, 15  
**Scotch**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
 in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
 in German prison-camp, 869  
 in third battle of Ypres, 819  
**Scott, General**, American Chief of Staff, 429  
**Scott, Sir Percy**, comment on the submarine, 233, 470  
**Scottish Division**, in Somme battle, 537  
 (9th) stand on Messines Ridge, 1020  
**"Scrap of Paper"**, origin of phrase, 88, 90  
**Scutari**, during war, 1125  
**Seaforths**, in Mesopotamia, 758  
**Seaplanes**, arising from parent ship, 911  
 in battle at Bagnl, 768  
 in Dogger Bank affair, 219  
 of Great Britain, in 1914, 252  
 use of, 1090  
**Search-lights**, and aircraft, 240  
 for aerial defense, 931  
 French, 1025  
**Secours**, of the Belgian relief, 885  
**Secretariat**, of the League of Nations, 1327  
**Sedan**, anniversary of, 128  
 attack and capture, 1303, 1305  
 French in front of, 116  
 on German 3rd line, 1139, 1141, 1150  
**Sedd-el-Bahr**, landing near, 343, 347  
**Seicheprey**, attack on 26th Division at, 1109  
**Seitz, Doctor**, German governor, 416  
**Selechka Mountains**, in Serbia, 558, 574  
**Selective Service Act**, passed, 748, 750, 873  
**Selective Service Men**, from Chicago parading, 747  
 on way to Yaphank, 747  
**Seligman, Prof. E. E. A.**, on war costs, 7  
**Selle River**, and battle for, 1148, 1280-81  
**Senlis**, Germans at, 126, 127  
**Sensée River**, and German offensive, 1012  
 during last Allied offensive, 1269, 1273  
**Senussi**, fighting with the, 383, 387, 391, 830  
**Septsarges Wood**, taken, 1296  
**Serbia**, and Austria-Hungary, after assassination, 78-82  
 and Balkan Wars, 335  
 and Bulgaria, 70, 76-77, 699  
 and Greece, 704-07  
 and the Moslems, 64  
 attempted invasion of, 165  
**Serbia**, Austria fails to conquer, 171, 173  
 Austria's war upon, 357  
 bars Central Powers, 559  
 Bulgarian evacuation of, 1130  
 communication kept open, 587  
 conquered, 417  
 flight of the refugees, 373, 375, 378  
 former kingdom of, 60  
 freeing of, 24, 28, 31  
 heir to, and Rear-Admiral Troubridge, 373  
 invasions of, 173, 178, 180  
 land ceded to, 1337  
 on the border, 563  
 peasants interned in prison camp, 377  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
 restoration required, 867  
 retreat of soldiers and civilians, 374  
 Slavs and, 58  
 topography of, 171  
 tragedy of, 4th invasion, 365  
 troops en route for the frontier, 175  
 under Berlin treaty, 68  
 under the Turks, 65  
 withdrawal of Serbian 2nd Army, map, 379  
**Serbians**, arrive at Saloniki, 568  
 at Corfu, 570  
 on Balkan front, 1122  
 peasant women returning, 1130  
 Slavic race, 57  
 volunteers from United States, 1123  
**Serbo-Croat-Slovene State**, commonly called  
 Jugoslavia, 1339  
 lands ceded to, 1337  
**Seres**, during Saloniki campaign, 561, 567, 572  
 occupied, 708  
**Sereth River**, flanking Galician Army, 158, 330  
 Germans cross, 723  
 Rumanian line on, 621  
 Russian objective, 164, 603, 605  
**Serre**, evacuation of, 805  
 fortified works at, 514, 552-53, 555  
**Serre Road**, British objective, 522  
**Services of Supply**, of A. E. F., 1158  
**Seven Weeks War**, effect on Austria, 48  
**Seven Years War**, men engaged in, 3  
**Seyern**, monitor, 214, 254  
**Shabat**, fall of, 372  
 fighting about, 171, 174, 176, 178  
**Shaler, Millard**, and Belgian relief, 879-80  
**Shantung Peninsula**, treaty settlement regard-  
 ing, 1327, 1330, 1335  
**Shatt-el-Arab**, troops disembarking, 755  
 union of Tigris and Euphrates, 393, 397  
**Shatt-el-Hai**, actions on, 398, 626-27, 753  
**Shaughnessy, Baron**, portrait, 1048  
**Shaw, Most Rev. John W.**, in Catholic War  
 Council, 1238  
**Sheikh Saad**, British stores and airplane at,  
 399  
 Turkish position, 624, 629  
**Shells**, description of, 12  
 German, at the moment of explosion, 365  
 havoc wrought by, 181  
 inspecting those for 75s, at le Creusot, 495  
**Shelters**, on the Isonzo front, 584  
**Shepherd, William G.**, report on Serbian refu-  
 gees, 378  
**Shevket Pasha**, and Turkey, 335  
**Shingarev**, in Russian Provisional Govern-  
 ment, 685, 689  
**Shipping**, American, sunk, 872  
 and the submarine menace, 661  
 armed, 729, 738  
 bill for arming merchant ship, 738  
 concrete ship, 872  
 effect of war on, 422  
 fires and explosions on, 417, 425  
 in Canada, 1048, 1049  
 rights of neutral, 273  
 under the Armistice, 1315  
 war-time control of movements, 1081  
 see also Merchantmen  
**Shipping Board**, creation and powers of, 422  
 efforts of, 751  
**Ship-Purchase Law**, provisions of the, 422  
**Shiraz**, cleared up, 635  
**Shot**, first American fired in France, 1108  
**Shrapnel**, form of shell, 14  
**Shumran Bend**, in the Tigris, 755, 758  
**Siam**, during Great War, 4  
 representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
**Sibert, Major General W. L.**, in command 1st  
 American Division, 1105

- Siege-mortars**, testing, at Schneider works, 497  
**Siegfried Line**, carried, 810, 812, 824, 826, 874  
part of Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1139  
**Sifton, Hon. Arthur**, in Canadian Cabinet, 1062  
**Sifton, Sir Clifford**, Canadian; 1062  
**Signal Corps**, men learning the use of the telephone, 860  
training the, 859  
work of, 1104, 1155-56, 1165  
**Sikhs**, in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
**Sikorski**, a biplane, 253, 254  
**Silesia**, Upper, plebiscites in, 1330  
**Silistria**, evacuated, 619  
**Sims, Vice-Admiral Wm. S.**, in command U. S. Navy, 1066  
portrait, 736  
representative in Great Britain of U. S. Navy, 751  
**Sinn Fein**, Irish society, 655  
**Sirius**, block-ship at Ostend, 1100  
**Sirjan**, cleared of Germans, 635  
**Sivas**, Russian objective, 634  
**Sixtus, Prince**, of Bourbon, and Austria's Peace hopes, 867  
**Skagerrack**: see Jutland  
**Skoda**, Austrian gun, 13  
**Skoulondis**, Greek politician, 706-07  
Premier of Greece, 380, 570  
**Slattery, Michael J.**, and special war activities, 1239  
**Slavonia**, in Austria-Hungary, 31, 50, 51, 57  
**Slavs**, affinities of, 28, 31  
divisions of the race, 57  
in Austria-Hungary, 46, 49, 50, 79  
in the Balkans, 60, 63-64  
surrender of Austrian, 165  
**Silvitz**, battle of, 70  
**Slovakia**, cession of, 1337  
struggle for Teschen, 1338  
**Slovaks**, nationalization of, 50, 56  
**Slovenes**, a Slavic people, 50, 57  
**Smith-Dorrien, General Sir Horace L.**, and Mons, 117, 120-22, 253  
appointed to African command, 968  
**Smuggling**, on Belgian frontier, 995  
**Smuts, General Jan Christiaan**, and the war in South Africa, 200, 414, 968  
at Rapallo, 778  
attended Peace Conference, 1325  
goes into War Cabinet, 972  
portrait, 413  
**Smyna**, mandate for, 1338  
**Snow, General Sir T. d'Oyley**, portrait, 120  
**Sobranje**, National Assembly of Bulgaria, 71  
**Social Democrats**, Russian party, 683, 690  
**Social Revolutionist Party**, in Russia, 681, 683  
**Socialism**, theory of Marxian, 687  
**Socialists**, French political party, 498, 500, 502  
of Germany, 35, 868, 962  
of Russia, 611, 715  
**Société de Secours aux Blessés Militaires**, section of the Red Cross, 508  
**Société des Gens de Lettres**, commemorated fallen authors, 507  
**Sofia**, Parliament House at, 71  
**Soissons**, American naval guns at, 1088  
and Hindenburg Line, 805, 1137  
attack north of, 874, 1146  
during last German offensive, 1030-39  
German position at, 787, 790, 796  
in early days of war, 141-42, 300, 302  
**Sokol Peak**, Allied objective, 1124  
**Soldan**, actions at, 158  
**Soldiers' and Sailors' Councils**, established in Germany, 1322  
**Soldiers' and Workingmen's Soviets**, convention, 688  
**Solf**, and Peace, 1312  
**Somme**, advance near, map, 809  
air forces in battle of the, 914  
Allied attack on, 873  
and battle of Amiens, 1264-65  
area of the great battle, 517  
banks partly under Allied control, 806  
battle of the, (I) 511, (II) 535, 640  
British front in 1916, after its extension, 515  
Canadians in the battle of the, 1198  
during early days of war, 123, 141, 306  
during German offensive, 1016  
scene of French successes on the, 1916, map, 521  
where men from every part of the British Empire fought in 1916, 534  
**Somme Canal**, German soldiers beside, 519  
**Somme-Oise Sector**, offensive in the, 1027  
**Sommervillers**, 1st Division in, 1108  
**Sonnino, Baron**, Italian Minister of Foreign Affairs, 358, 591, 777-78  
**Sophia, Queen of Greece**, at manoeuvres, 41  
pro-German policy of, 366, 700, 704  
**Sopwith**, aeroplane, 258, 920, 924  
**Sordet, General**, French Cavalry Corps of, 121  
**Soscecu, General**, treachery of, 620  
**Souain**, in Champagne campaign, 312  
**Souchez**, fighting for, 296, 299, 307-08  
**Souchon, Admiral**, and Turkish fleet, 336  
portrait, 341  
receives Mücke's landing party, 218  
**Soupir**, German line through, 790  
**South Africa, Union of**, armies of, 415  
loyalty of, 407, 411  
participates in war, 185, 199  
rebellion in, 200  
regiment in Egypt, 291  
representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
troops at Vimy Ridge, 809  
troops in Somme battle, 528  
**South America**, status of states, 5  
**South Ireland Division**, at Wytschaete, 816  
**Souville**, fortress, 459, 461  
**Soviet**, and the Russian army, 716-17  
or Council of Workingmen's Delegates, etc., 680, 683, 685  
**Spa**, German conference at, 1134, 1146, 1307, 1313  
**Spad**, aeroplane, 914  
**Spain**, as neutral, 5, 225  
Embassy takes over United States affairs in Germany, 738  
**Spalato, Y. M. C. A.** at, 1249  
**Spee, Admiral von**, in command German Fleet, 210, 212, 224  
**Speer, Dr. Robert E.**, on Committee of Six, 1239  
**Spincourt**, forest of, 452, 1304  
**Splaine, Rt. Rev. Monsignor M. J.**, and Special War Activities, 1239  
**Springfield**, American rifle, 16  
**Stambulov, [S. N.]**, Bulgarian statesman, 72, 1119  
**Stambulovski**, Bulgarian party leader, 366-67  
**Stamp-taxes**, during war, 423  
**Stanislan**, fighting at, 604, 719  
**Stanislavov**, engagement at, 318  
**Stanley, Sir Albert**, of the War Ministry, 658  
**Steenstraete**, on British front, 417, 819  
**Steinbach**, captured, 306  
**Stelvio Pass**, across the Alps, 578, 582  
**Stewart, Brig-General J. M.**, in command German East Africa, 966  
**Stink-pots**, of early warfare, 14  
**Stirling Castle**, captured, 820  
**Stock Exchange**, Berlin, 873  
**Stock Exchanges**, effect of war on, 421  
**Stokes**, trench-mortar, 16, 864  
**Stokhod River**, advance along, 604  
**Stone, Senator**, appeals to the President, 276  
filibuster and negative vote of, 738, 744  
**Stork Squadron**, work of, 912, 918  
**Strantz, General von**, in Lorraine, 141  
**Strassburg**, Cathedral of, 113  
entry into, 1318  
statue of, 29  
**Strathness**, relief-ship, 989  
**Strauss, Rear-Admiral Joseph**, in command of mine-layers, 1086  
**Strikes**, in Canada, 1052  
in Great Britain, 653  
in United States factories, 417  
**Struma River**, and Saloniki campaign, 561, 570, 572, 575, 1126  
**Strumlitza**, Allied headquarters at, 560-61, 1124  
**Strypa River**, area of Russian victories on the, map, 605  
Russian objective, 330, 718  
**Student Army Training Corps**, of College of the City of New York, 1217  
**Stuff Redoubt**, near Thiepval, 545, 547, 549  
**Sturdee, Vice-Admiral Sir F. C. Doveton**, in command of naval squadron, 212  
**Stürmer, Boris von**, denies troops to Rumania, 619, 622, 642  
Premier of Russia, 600, 608, 676  
treachery of, 870  
**Stuttgart**, bombed, 257, 927  
**Styria**, province of, 57  
**Submarine Blockade**, and the United States, 236-37, 418  
instituted, 222, 234

- Submarine Blockade**, map of, 237  
**Submarine-chasers**, and their use, 1075, 1080, 1082  
**Submarines**, and international law, 269, 272 and naval policies, 470  
 British, 208; B-11, 342; C-3, 1097; E-9, 233  
 campaign of, 227, 229, 660  
 see also Submarine-warfare  
 controversy between United States and Germany, 266, 269, 729  
 development of, 229  
 diagram showing French and Italian losses, 1068  
 effect on war, 21  
 forced to operate inshore, 1078  
 German mine-laying at work, 1083  
 German on patrol, 1101  
 in Dogger Bank affair, 219, 220  
 in the Dardanelles, 342  
 instructions to German commanders, 729  
 loading torpedoes into, 235  
 new French cruiser, 1090  
 surrendered by Germany, 1079, 1318, 1321  
 see also U-boats  
**Submarine-tester**, German, 1094  
**Submarine-warfare**, and American naval effort, 1068  
 chart of the intensity of, 1069  
 Germans declare unrestricted, 660, 735, 872  
**Sudanese**, loyal to Great Britain, 387  
**Suez Canal**, and the war, 336, 381, 419, 827  
 maps of, 383, 386  
 open, 228  
**Suez Canal Company**, shares sold, 382  
**Suffolk**, coast bombed, 255  
 troops from, 532, 546  
**Suffolk**, ship, 191  
**Suffrage**, in England, 668  
**Sugar**, American conservation of, 1215-16  
 exported from Germany, 34  
**Suppe**, on French front, 139, 796, 1114, 1141  
**Sukhomlinov**, General, Russian War Minister, 157, 317, 690  
**Sultan Suleiman**, mosque of, 335  
**Summerville**, Major-General C. P., American commander, 1300  
**Sunset Division** (41st), "over there," 751  
**Supply-train**, Austrian, 177  
 organization of, 861  
**Supply-troops**, necessity for, 1155  
**Supreme War Council**, of the Allies, 667, 826, 1034, 1204  
**Susitz**, fighting in the valley of, 725  
**Sussex**, sinking the, 729  
**Suvla Bay**, landing in, 197  
 on Gallipoli, 342, 348-49  
**Suvobov Mountains**, fighting in, 173, 182  
**Suwaicha Marsh**, in Mesopotamia, 626, 753  
**Swakopmund**, British objective, 312, 415  
**Sweden**, as neutral, 5, 225, 260  
 controversy with Great Britain, 269  
 in Seven Years War, 3  
**Swiftsure**, ship, 386  
**Swinton**, Colonel, and tank, 18  
**Switzerland**, as neutral, 5, 92, 260, 267  
**Sydney**, cruiser, 196, 215  
**Sykes**, Sir Percy, British commander, 635  
**Syria**, campaign in, 851  
 mandate for, 1338  
 quasi-independent states, 1340  
**Szeklers**, outpost of Hungarians, 50, 52
- T**
- Taafe Ministry**, under Hapsburgs, 54, 56  
**Table Top**, on Gallipoli, 349  
**Tabora**, Allied objective, 969-70, 972  
**Taga Bay**, Germans landed at, 728  
**Tag-i-Garra Pass**, battle in, 635  
**Tagliamento River**, Allies cross the, 1180  
 approach to passes, 361, 364  
 retreat from Isonzo front to, 775, 776  
**Talure**, during Champagne campaign, 313, 316  
**Taif**, surrender of, 850  
**Take Jonescu**, Rumanian politician, 616  
**Talaat Bey**, Turkish Minister of the Interior, 338, 405, 847, 1121  
**Tanga**, seaport of Africa, 963-64, 967, 970  
**Tanganyika, Lake**, and East African campaign, 963, 968-69  
**Tanks**, advancing into action, 535  
 and British crew, 1272  
 at Cambrai, 823  
 at St. Mihiel, 1290  
**Tanks**, baby-tanks, 804, 1039  
 during Marne battle, 1038  
 first used in Somme battle, 537, 539, 540  
 improved French, 1038  
 in Palestine, 837  
 meeting in action, 1022  
 on Fifth Avenue, 1223  
 the whippet, 1035, 1266  
 types of, 14, 16, 18, 19  
**Tannenberg**, battle of, 162  
**Taranto**, Allied navy at, 777  
**Tardieu**, M. André, appointed special commissioner, 746  
**Tarnopol**, and Teutonic defeat, 330  
 Russian retreat before, 722-23  
**Tarnov**, a city, 50  
**Tarvis**, opposite Pontebba Pass, 578  
**Taube**, aeroplane, 250, 252, 258  
**Tauscher**, Captain Hans, indictment of, 427  
**Tausig**, Commander J. K., in charge of destroyer flotilla, 751, 1071  
**Tavannes**, fort of, 459, 461  
**Taveta**, seized, 966, 969  
**Taxation**, during war, 8, 423  
 in Canada, 1043, 1065  
 in Germany, 944  
 in Great Britain, 666  
 in United States, 423  
**Tchernia River**, and the Monastir campaign, 562, 573, 575-76  
 junction with Vardar, 376  
 passage of, 1122, 1125  
**Tchernov**, chairman of Russian Assembly, 985  
**Tchkeidze**, N. S., and the Russian revolution, 683-84, 694  
**Tekrit**, troops fall back on, 766  
**Telephones**, from listening posts, 9, 1168  
 repairing wire in a crater, 1033  
**Temesvar**, Banat of: see Banat of Temesvar  
**Tenedos**, headquarters on, 340  
**Terestchenko**, in Russian Provisional Cabinet, 689  
**Ternova**, batteries, 770  
**Tervueren**, arrangements at, 97  
**Teschén**, plebiscite ordered in, 1338  
**Teutonic Powers**, and outbreak of war, 80, 82  
**Texas**, battleship, 1088  
**Thaw**, in Lafayette Escadrille, 912  
**Thessaly**, and Greek revolution, 710  
 occupied, 1119  
**Thetis**, block-ship at Zeebrugge, 1098  
**Thiaucourt**, Americans take, 1292  
**Thiamont**, the work of, 456, 461-62, 464  
**Thiéval**, captured, and re-captured, 1015, 1267  
 during Somme battle, 517, 520, 530-37, 544-45, 551, 553, 557  
**Thierville**, American naval guns at, 1088  
**Thirty-Third Division**, on guard in Meuse Valley, 1301  
**Thomas**, Albert, leader of unified socialists, 499, 502  
**Thomas-process**, and German ores, 32  
**Thomson**, H. B., war-work of, 1049  
**Thorn**, advance from, 167  
**Thrace**, Balkan region, 60, 64, 68  
 cession of, 1337  
**Thrasher**, Leon C., drowned from Falaba, 272  
**Tiberias**, occupied, 851  
**Tiflis**, Turkish objective, 394  
**Tiger**, battle-cruiser, 219, 477  
**Tighe**, Major-General Sir M. J., in command in Africa, 967  
**Tigris River**, early civilization on banks of, 393  
 operations on the, 396, 624, 636, 753  
**Tilloy-les-Moffaines**, fighting south of, 810  
**Timavo River**, crossed by Italians, 768  
**Timok Valley**, threatened by Bulgarians, 370  
**Tirailleurs**, at Verdun, 464  
**Tirpitz**, Grand Admiral von: at Potsdam conference, 81  
 comment on Gallipoli, 342  
 comment on Jutland fight, 483  
 policies of, 470, 907, 962  
 portraits, 213, 445  
**Tisza**, Count, Hungarian Dictator, 319  
**Todorov**, Bulgarian commander, 372, 573, 1128  
**Togo**, taken, 227  
**Togoland**, German Colony in Africa, 407, 409  
 mandatory for, 1330  
**Tolmezzo**, crossing at, 777  
**Tolmino**, during Italian offensive, 767, 769, 771, 774  
 on the Isonzo front, 361, 578-81



- Tombour, General**, of Belgian Congo, 969
- Tonale Pass**, fortified, 582, 588, 1176
- Tor**, action near, 389
- Torlak Hill**, stand of Magyars at, 183
- Toronto Globe**, a newspaper, 1061-62
- Toronto Star**, a newspaper, 1062
- Torpedo**, construction of a, 232
- diagram of a, 232, 233, 235
- Torpedo-boat Destroyers**, and submarines, 1070
- on patrol duty, 1071
- sunk in Scapa Flow, 1321
- German, 909
- Tortille River**, critical situation at, 1014
- Tortoum**, attack on, 632
- Toscanini**, on Monte Santo, 770
- Toul**, 1st U. S. Division near, 1109
- fortress of, 91, 123, 304
- Tournal**, French at, 118, 121
- Tours**, Americans and, 1103, 1106, 1159, 1159, 1260
- Toussoum**, Turkish objective, 388
- Toutou**, motor-boat, 968
- Townsend, Major-General Charles V. F.**, in command Tigris expedition, 396, 400, 623
- Tractor**, for threshing, 1041
- Trade**, in Europe, 34
- see also Blockades
- Tragnier**, naval-aviation base at, 1090
- Train**, Austrian armored, 166
- French armored, 3
- Train-Headquarters and Military Police**, organization of, 860
- Training-Camps**, for Selective Service Men, 750
- Training Schools**, for A. E. F., in France, 1105
- Trains**, belonging to United States Army Division, 1156
- Trajan**, Roman emperor, 52, 619
- Trajectory**, of various guns, 6, 12
- Transcaucasia**, Russian province, 394
- Transports**, American, entering French harbor, 1073
- Canadian, 1190
- failure to sink, 1084
- French re-victualing, 451
- Turkish, sink, 254
- Y. M. C. A. secretaries on, 1248
- Transvaal**, troops from, 414
- uprising in, 412-13
- Transylvania**, cession of, 1337
- offered as bribe, 615
- part of Austria-Hungary, 50, 52, 365
- Rumania's invasion of, 612-13, 618-20
- Trawlers**, as mine-sweepers, 473
- mines cut from deserted, 475
- Treaties**, making the Peace, 1323-41
- published by Russian Bolsheviks, 977
- Trebizond**, Black Sea port, 394, 395, 633, 643
- Treitschke, Professor von**, comments of, 42
- Trembovka**, and Teutonic defeat, 330
- Trenchard, General**, head of Independent Air Force, 926
- Trenches**, a section at a training camp, 863
- Belgian above-ground, 281
- defenses in reserve at, 432
- German pioneer, 138
- Germans in snow-lined, 610
- mopping up German, 532
- of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 829
- Russian, on the Eastern Front, 724
- sandbag, on the Carso, 771
- some souvenirs from, 525
- Tommies in Boche, 552
- Trench-Instruction**, in training camps, 863
- Trench-knife**, use of, 19
- Trench-mortar**, use of, 16, 281
- see also Mortars
- Trench-warfare**, conditions of, 8, 280, 291, 308
- Trent**, during first Italian campaigns, 578, 582
- of the Trentino, 361, 364, 1180
- Trentino**, Austrian diversion on, 768
- first Italian campaigns, 578, 590
- map of the, 359
- negotiations over, 355, 358, 360-61, 868
- part of Austria-Hungary, 50
- stations of Italian troops near, 1175, 1179
- Trentino Salient**, topography of, 582
- Trepov**, Russian premier, 676
- Treves**, bombed, 257
- recreation-centre at, 1255
- Treviso**, Austrian regiment near, 1181
- Austrian objective, 1172, 1176
- Trialism**, the plan of, 57, 80
- Trieste**, cession of, 1337-38
- Italian objective, 577, 584, 586-87, 874
- negotiations over, 355, 358, 360
- occupied, 1182
- seaport, 57, 254, 784, 785
- Trieste-Gorizia Railway**, cut, 578-79
- Trinquis Brook**, during last Allied offensive, 1269
- Triple Alliance**, and Italy, 351, 354-55
- and Rumania, 617
- formation of, 26
- Tripoli**, fell, 852
- Italy and, 356
- war in, 76, 335
- Tripoli-Cyrenaica**, taken by Italy, 391
- Tripolitan War**, aeroplanes in, 253
- Italy's gains, 391
- Tritton, Sir William**, and tank, 18
- Triumph**, battleship, 238, 347
- Trois Fontaines**, Ludendorff at, 1141
- Trônes Wood**, fighting for, 524-26, 534
- Troopships**, of United States, outward bound, 730
- safety of, 751
- Troop-trains**, Y. M. C. A. on, 1248
- Trotzky, Leon**, and Russian government, 688, 694, 696-97
- at Brest-Litovsk, 984
- note proposing Armistice, and results, 976, 981
- Trou Bricot**, fortress, 313
- Troyon**, German position at, 790, 792
- Tsavo**, repulse at, 967
- Tseretelli**, Socialist representative, 692
- Tsing-Tau**, fortress of, with map, 223
- Tsontchev, General**, a Bulgarian, 74
- Tumorri, General**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982
- Tump-line**, Canadians carrying loads with, 1195
- Tunis**, France and Italy and, 353-54, 356
- Turcos**, French Colonial troops, 131
- Turin**, bread riots in, 774
- Turkestan**, 2nd Corps of, 632
- Turkey**, and Balkan Wars, 76
- and Congress of Vienna, 23
- and European powers, 333
- and Italy, 356, 360
- and Macedonia, 73
- and the Central Alliance, 623
- and the Saloniki front, 1121
- and Young Turks, 75-76
- army, after treaty, 1338
- communication with Germany, 378
- declares war against Allies, 186, 205, 381, 385
- during the war, 336
- Germany to withdraw from, 1315
- in Asia Minor, 876
- in desert lands, 633
- infantry of the 20th century, 403
- joins Germany, 222
- munitions for, 616
- policy in Crete, 700
- severs diplomatic relations with United States, 744
- surrender of, 1312
- terms of treaty with, 1337-38
- treaties with Bulgaria, 704-05
- Turks**, at Kosovo, 57
- in the Balkans, 60, 62-66
- propose cessation of hostilities, 978
- Turner, Captain**, of the Lusitania, 236
- Turnu-Severin**, capture of, 620
- Turtukai**, fortress taken, 619
- Tuscania**, ship, 1084
- Typhus Fever**, epidemics of, 184, 369
- Tyrol**, and Italy, 360-61, 1327
- cession of, 1337-38
- part of Austria-Hungary, 50
- Tyrwhitt, Rear-Admiral Reginald W.**, receives German submarines, 1318
- Tzer Mountains**, advance on, 173-74, 176

## U

- U-boats**, U-5, 231
- in Dardanelles, 234-38
- interned at Harwich, 1321
- length of voyage, 1092
- Uden**, refugee-camp at, 106
- Udine**, Italian headquarters removed from, 776
- Udine-Vicenza Railway**, Austrian objective, 1176
- Uganda**, and fighting in, 963-69
- Ughans**, in France, 118, 142
- Ujiji**, captured, 970



- Ukraine**, at Brest-Litovsk, 984-85  
movement for independence, 978  
struggles for Galicia, 1338
- Ukrainians**, in Austria-Hungary, 54  
of Russia, 28
- Ulema**, spokesman of the Moslems, 383
- Ulster County**, opposition of, 84
- Ulster Division**, engagements of the, 520, 551, 816
- Ulster Volunteers**, organization of, 84, 648, 654
- Ulmermen**, and the war, 648
- Ulyanov, Vladimir Ilich**: see Lenin, Nikolai
- Umm-el-Hanna**, entrenched position, 626, 629
- Umm-el-Jubail**, engagement at, 403
- Unified Socialists**, French political party, 82, 498, 502
- Union des Femmes de France**, a Red Cross Society, 508
- Union of Democratic Control**, in Great Britain, 653
- Union Sacrée**, of France, 498, 502, 506
- Unionist Party**, of Great Britain, 646, 650
- United Empire Loyalists**, forebears of, 1187
- United Farm Women of Alberta**, war-work of, 1052
- United States**, American army in France, 1101-18  
and the Declaration of London, 259  
and the World War, 5, 421  
Army of Occupation, 1316  
at Peace Conference, 1325  
breaks diplomatic relations with Germany, 736  
change in policy of, 734  
Civil War debts, 8  
contributions to C. R. B., 880-84, 885-86  
controversies with Great Britain, 262  
Council of National Defense, 746  
declares war against Austria-Hungary, 744  
enters the war, 729, 743, 872  
first soldiers in London, 741  
first soldiers parade in Paris, 751  
flag of the 16th Regiment, U. S. A., 737  
General Staff of army, 1153  
headquarters of army in France, 1154  
increasing the army, 429, 872  
munitions ordered from Canada, 1047  
naval forces in European waters, 1067-93  
neutrality of, 225, 259, 417, 740  
organization of army in France, 1151  
platoon of 118th Infantry Regiment, 1274  
Regular Army in France, 1105  
2nd Army constituted, 1300  
Senate alters rules regarding vote, 740  
Senate filibuster, 738  
special session of Congress, April 4, 1917, 741  
submarines of, 231  
the people and the war, 1213-24  
training the citizen army, 853-866  
treaty fight in, 1335  
troops in France, 737, 873  
war debts, 8  
war taxation, 746, 1219  
see also Americans, First American Army, Ports of Entry, Submarines, United States Army Divisions, etc.
- United States Army Divisions**, at the Marne, 1036  
during last northern offensive, 1264  
honoring the dead of the 2nd Division, 1112  
in St. Mihiel and the Meuse-Argonne, 1287  
landing in France, 1104, 1106  
organization of, 1154  
organization of headquarters, 856  
training an, 853  
training and fighting in France, 1108-18  
Twenty-seventh returning from Hindenburg Line, 1143  
see also Americans, Rainbow Division, etc.
- Unwin, Commander**, at Gallipoli, 344
- Upington**, Boer defeat near, 414
- Upolu**, Samoan island, 223
- Upper Beth-Horon**, falling back upon, 842
- Urbal, General d'**, French commander, 295, 307, 515
- Uruguay**, representation at Peace Conference, 1325  
severs diplomatic relations, 744
- Urumiah Lake**, war near, 405
- Usambara Highlands**, in German East Africa, 964, 970
- Uskub**, Bulgarian objective, 370, 374, 561  
campaign for, 1121
- Utah**, dreadnaught, 1088
- V**
- Vacheranville**, near Pepper Hill, 445, 466
- Val d'Astico**, on Italian line, 591
- Val Frenzela**, defense of, 780-82
- Val Giudicaria**, Austrian line in, 588
- Val Lagarina**, and Trentino operations, 590
- Val Lugana**, and Piave retreat, 780  
in the Trentino, 361, 582, 590, 768
- Valcartier Camp**, for Canadian soldiers, 188, 1189
- Valdahon**, American artillery in, 1105
- Valenciennes**, French at, 118  
German line rests on, 1147-48, 1280  
taken, 1208, 1282-83
- Vallant**, battleship, 477, 487
- Vallevo**, fighting about, 173-74, 176, 180, 182
- Vall'Arsa**, Italian position at, 582, 1174
- Vallone**, on the Carso Plateau, 579, 594, 776
- Valmy**, and the French Republic, 315
- Valona**, Italian force at, 379-80, 587  
promised to Italy, 360
- Valstagna**, section of, 1172
- Van**, fighting at, 405
- Van, Lake**, region of, 634
- Van der Venter, Colonel**, South African commander, 414
- Van Deventer, Major-General J. L.**, in East Africa, 969, 972
- Van Dreibbel**, and the submarine, 229
- Vanga**, seized, 966
- Vardaman, Senator**, filibuster and negative vote of, 738, 744
- Vardar River**, action along, 372, 376, 380, 560  
and Allied defenses, 568, 575  
and d'Esperey's campaign, 1121  
proposed expedition up, 572  
Teutonic objective, 559-62
- Varenes Road**, view of, 1295
- Varna**, a city, 63-64  
bombarded, 373
- Varoonitza**, Serbians retire at, 181
- Vasitch, General**, Serbian commander, 374, 561, 573
- Vaterland**, ship, 32
- Vatican Peace Note**, utilized in Teutonic propaganda, 773
- Vauban**, fortified Verdun, 435
- Vauconleurs**, 42nd Division in France, 1106
- Vandesson**, carried, 802
- Vauquois**, German stronghold, 1294-95
- Vaux**, view from airplane, 1113  
village of, 452, 1112
- Vaux, Fort of**, near Verdun, 452-53, 456, 465
- Vaux, Hill of**, near Verdun, 444, 465
- Vauxaillon**, on French front, 790, 797, 1029
- Vaux-Chapitre**, near Verdun, 463
- Vaux les Palameix**, view of, 1301
- Veenhizzen**, Belgian camp at, 106
- Veles**, Allied objective, 561  
captured, 374
- Vendhuile**, and Hindenburg Line battle, 1274
- Venetia**, added to Italy, 48, 354  
exposed to Teutonic attack, 777
- Venezuela**, as neutral, 5, 744
- Venice**, Austrian objective, 1176-78  
bombed, 1172  
defensive protection of, 353, 586  
naval defense of, 782  
views of, 353, 585, 783
- Venzelos, Eleutherios**, and Macedonian invasion, 708  
and provisional government at Saloniki, 572, 575  
and the Venizelist revolt, 700-13, 875  
asks Allies for help, 559  
attended Peace Conference, 1324  
policy of, 225, 366, 368, 370, 380  
portrait, 701  
resignation demanded, 560
- Verbeni**, during Saloniki campaign, 573
- Verdun**, aircraft at, 911  
and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
attacks on, 802, 874  
battle of, (I) 433, (II) 455, 638  
defenses of, 304  
maps, 437, 452, 457  
fortress of, 91, 115, 122-23, 125-26, 136, 300  
menaced by St. Mihiel salient, 1288  
views of, 435, 468
- Verdun-Toul Barrier**, of French, 114
- Vermadvillers**, and Somme battle, 521, 536-37, 544
- Verona**, in Austro-Italian campaigns, 578, 586, 1176

**Verria**, and Saloniki campaign, 575  
**Versailles**, German emperor crowned at, 26  
 headquarters triune General Staff, 778  
 Peace Treaty signed at, 1, 1334  
**Versailles Council**, establishment of, 1026  
**Versailles, Palace of**, from the Gardens, 1323  
**Versailles, Treaty of**: see Peace Treaty  
**Very**, hills taken, 1295  
**Vesle Front**, Americans on the, 1118  
 and Aisne attack, 1029  
 during August offensive, 1116, 1146  
**Vetrenik Peak**, Allied objective, 1124  
**Vicenza**, on Italian front, 590, 1174  
**Vickers Gun**, of British, 15  
**Victor Emmanuel**, and United Italy, 353-54  
**Victor Emmanuel III**, king of Italy, at Gorizia, 594  
 portraits, 357, 1182  
**Victoria**, empress of Germany, portrait, 30  
**Victoria Crosses**, number won by Canadians, 1210  
**Victoria Nyanza**, and African campaigns, 963, 966, 968  
**Victory Loan**, of United States, 1219  
**Vienna**, capital of Austria-Hungary, 48, 50, 61  
 mourning for Archduke, 81  
**Vienna, Congress of**, work of, 23, 46, 58  
**Vienne-le-Château**, and Gouraud's offensive, 1141  
**Vierstand Ridge**, 27th U. S. Division attack, 1143  
**Vieux Berquin**, taken, 1020  
**Vigneulles**, taken, 1292  
**Villers-Bretonneux**, captured, 1022  
**Villers-Cotterets**, forest of, 1031, 1037  
**Villers-Guislain**, taken, 824  
**Vilna**, capture of, 329, 330  
 in West Russia, 723, 988  
**Vimy Ridge**, and the Hindenburg Line, 788  
 attacks on, 292, 296, 418, 514, 808-09, 874, 1018  
 Canadians at, 1194, 1198, 1200  
 map of, 812  
**Vimy-Farbus**, defenses of, 1198  
**Vindictive**, cruiser, 1097-1100  
**Vipacco Valley**, and Italian line, 598  
 railway in the, 579  
**Virton-Neufchâteau**, line of, 116  
**Virubova, Madam**, lady-in-waiting, 676  
**Visé**, Germans crossed frontier at, 93  
**Vlaska**, Russian stand at, 324  
**Vistula River**, and battle-line, 167, 326  
 Polish control of, 1330  
**Vittorio**, captured, 1180  
**Viviani**, French statesman, 492, 499-500  
 visits United States, 744  
**Vlachs**, and Slavs, 75  
 see also Wallachs  
**Vladimirovitch, Grand Duke Cyril**, and the revolution, 684  
**Vladivostok**, munitions landed at, 330  
**Voisin**, aeroplane, 250, 257  
**Volhynia**, Russian conquests in, 604  
**Volhynian Life-Guards**, and Russian revolution, 682  
**Volunteers**, in Canada, 1202  
**Voomezele**, and Belgian attack, 1144  
**Vosges**, Americans in the, 1118  
 chasseur in the, 305  
 forest road in the, 305  
 French in the, 300, 306  
**Vouziers**, French objective, 315  
 on German 2nd line, 1138, 1148  
**Vozartzi**, crossing at, 562

## W

**"Waacs:"** see Women's Army Auxiliary Corps  
**Wadi-Gaza**, outposts carried, 833  
**Waelhem**, a fort, 144, 146  
**Wahle, General**, in East Africa, 972  
**Wales**, troops in Messines and Ypres battles, 816, 819  
**Walfish Bay**, occupied, 415  
**Wallachs**, a Balkan people, 63  
**Walsh, Rev. Matthew J.**, conducting funeral, 1241  
**Wangenheim, Baron von**, and Turkey, 80, 335  
**War Camp Community Council**, and Y. M. C. A., 1261  
**War Camp Community Service**, and war-work of, 1223, 1231, 1234  
**War Committee**, of British Cabinet, 657  
**War Companies**, of German banks, 942  
**War Council**, of Red Cross, 1226  
**War Council of the Allies**, meeting of, 500

**War Crosses**, cities that received, 150  
**War-gardens**, in America, 1215  
**War Investigation Committee**, testimony before, 486  
**War Loans**, in Canada, 1044  
 in Italy, 1184  
 in United States, 1219  
**War Material**, to be surrendered, 1315  
**War Nutrition Office**, in Germany, 952  
**War Refugees Committee**, in England, 105  
**War Revenue Act**, passed, 423  
**War Savings Certificates**, in United States, 1219  
**War-Time Commission of the Federal Council of Churches**, Protestant organization, 1237  
**War Zone**, of German submarines, 264, 270, 735  
 see also Submarines  
**Ward, Sir Joseph**, and the war, 198  
**Warehouses**, American in France, 1103  
 of C. R. B., in Rotterdam, 889  
**Waring, Rt. Rev. Monsignor George J.**, Atlantic Vicariate, 1244  
**Warneford, Lieutenant**, destroyed Zeppelin, 256  
**Wars**, comparison of, 1  
**Warsaw**, German objective, 157, 167-68, 255  
 German occupation of, 327  
 railroads, German objectives, 326  
 taken, 325, 419  
**Warships**, Australian, 196  
 Canadian, 188  
 coaling at sea, 488  
**Warspite**, battleship, 477, 487  
**Warta River**, and Warsaw offensive, 168-69  
**Warwick**, destroyer, 1096  
**Washington Inn**, in London, 1250  
**Watch and Ward Society**, of New England, war-work of, 1233  
**Water**, distributing, at Gallipoli, 346  
 war on the, 207  
 war under the, 229  
**Water-Supply**, of Arabs, drained, 830  
 of Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 827, 830  
**Wavell's Arabs**, exploits of, 966-67  
**Wavre Ste. Catherine**, a fort, 144  
**Weapons**, during World War, 10  
**Weimar**, German National Assembly at, 1322  
**Welfare Organizations**, work of, 1225-62  
**Weiland Canal**, plot to destroy, 427  
**Welsh**, in Colonial Canada, 1187  
 in Egyptian Expeditionary Force, 833  
**Weltman**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Wemyss, Sir Rosslyn**, and evacuation of Gallipoli, 348  
 First Sea Lord, with Foch, 1314  
**Wessels**, Boer leader, 414  
**Wessex Division**, in Palestine, 833  
**West Lancashire Division** (55th), stand at Bethune, 1020  
**West Prussia**, mostly ceded to Poland, 1330  
**Westhoek**, struggle for, 820  
**Wet, General de**, Boer leader, 412-13  
**Wexford**, naval base, 1080, 1090  
**Wheat**, American control of, 1215  
**Wheatless Days**, in America, 1216  
**Whitby**, bombarded, 218  
**White, Sir Thomas**, Canadian Minister of Finance, 1044, 1045  
**Whitlock, Brand**, in Belgium, 879  
**Whittlesey, Major Charles S.**, refusal to surrender, 1298  
**Wien**, Austrian ship, destroyed, 784  
**Wieringen**, German Crown Prince on, 1313  
**Wiesbaden**, bombarded, 927  
**Wilderness**, the, men engaged at, 4  
**Wilhelmshaven**, German New Guinea, captured, 223  
 naval base, 477, 1320  
**Wilhelmstal**, captured, 970  
**Wilkinson, Lieut.-Commander Norman**, painted "Canada's Answer," 191  
**Willard, Daniel**, in Advisory Commission, 748  
**Willcocks, General**, in command Indian Army Corps, 152, 282  
**William the Conqueror**, army of, 2  
**William I**, king of Prussia, altered dispatch of, 24  
 and the Dual Alliance, 354  
**William II**, of Germany, and Constantine, 704  
 at manoeuvres, 41  
 in Turkey, 334  
 palaces of, 25  
 portraits, 30, 39  
 see also Kaiser

## Wil—Zep

**William P. Frye**, ship, 418  
**Wilson, C. B.**, Major-General A., in command Suez Canal defenses, 384  
**Wilson, Rear-Admiral Henry B.**, American commander at Brest, 1075  
**Wilson, Sir Henry**, at Rapallo, 778  
 in Supreme War Council, 826  
**Wilson, President Woodrow**, addresses to Congress, 730, 738  
 and Germany's manœuvres for armistice and peace, 1310  
 and Italy's Adriatic claims, 1338  
 and Liberty Day activities, 1221  
 and the wilful men, 739  
 at Buckingham Palace, 1329  
 attended Peace Conference, 1324  
 calls upon people to be neutral, 424  
 fight for League of Nations, 1326  
 in Paris, 1329  
 influence during 1916, 644  
 inspiration for speech of Jan. 8, 1918, 983  
 note on Peace Terms, 867  
 notes of, 731  
 on association of nations, 430  
 on military preparedness, 428  
 peace speech of January 22, 1917, 731  
 policy of, 417-18  
 portraits, 731, 1325, 1329  
 president Red Cross, 1226  
 rebuke to J. O'Leary, 431  
 reply to Pope's note, 868  
 vetoes Knox resolution, 1337  
 war message of, April 2, 1917, 741  
**Winkler, von**, retreat of, 575  
**Windau**, German fleet at, 224  
**Windhoek**, wireless station at, 409, 414-15  
**Winnipeg Convention**, of Liberals, 1062  
**Winnipeg Free Press**, a newspaper, 1061-62  
**Winterfeld, General**, German peace delegate, 1315  
**Winter Palace**, and Square, Petrograd, 675  
 fighting in the, 697  
**Wippach**: see Vipacco Valley  
 Wipe, Americans and French cutting, 1142  
 barbed tangles, 17  
 transported by Turkish troops, 392  
**Wireless**, on aeroplanes, 926  
**Wireless Stations**, captured, 215, 222  
 see also Windhoek  
**Wireless Telegraphy**, and listening posts, 9  
 Witley, training camp at, 194  
**Woivre, Plain or Plateau of the**, near Verdun, 306, 436, 446, 450, 452, 455  
**Wolfe, [General James]**, army of, 2  
**Woman Suffrage**, English organizations during war, 655  
**Woman's Bureau**, of Red Cross, 1230  
**Woman's Motor Corps**, drilling, 746  
**Women**, French, work during war, 490, 493, 507  
 war-work in Great Britain, 659, 664, 666  
 war-work in Italy, 1183  
 war-work in United States, 1223  
 war-work of Canadian, 1047, 1051, 1052, 1061  
 war-work of German, 940, 941, 960  
**Women's Army Auxiliary Corps**, a party at Tours, 665  
 in barracks, 665  
 work of, 666  
**Women's Committee**, of Council of National Defense, 1214  
**Women's Royal Air Force**, organization of, 666  
**Women's Royal Naval Service**, organization of, 666  
**Wood of the Marine Brigade**: see Belleau Wood  
**Woodfield**, transport, 239  
**Woods, Sir James**, war-work of, 1049  
**Wool**, commandeered in conquered areas, 957  
**Workers' and Soldiers' Delegates**, in control, 1322  
**Works, Senator**, and filibuster, 738  
**World, The**, published Albert's lost documents, 426  
**Woronozov, General**, Russian commander, 394  
**Wotan Stellung**, part of Hindenburg Line, 1137, 1139  
**Wounded**, British, going to the base, 624, 1015  
 Canadian work for, 1053-54  
 return of American on Empress of Britain, 1312  
 treatment for German, 959, 960  
 work for French, 508-09  
**Wrafs**: see Women's Royal Air Force  
**Wrens**: see Women's Royal Naval Service

## INDEX TO HISTORY OF WAR

**Wright Brothers**, development of their flying-machine, 249-250  
**Wunderwerk**, German stronghold, 536-37, 545-46  
**Wurm, General**, Teutonic commander, 1177  
**Wurn Biagas**, losses at, 410  
**Wurtembergers**, 180th, 546  
**Wyoming**, battleship, 1088  
**Wyschaete**: see Messines, Ridge of

**X**

**Xeros, Gulf of**, British ship in, 339  
**Xerxes**, army of, 2

**Y**

**Y. Centre**, in France, fifteen hundredth centre in France, 1249  
**Y Ravine**, fighting for the, 553  
**Yachts**, use of converted, 1075  
**Yankee Division**, in France, 1106  
**Yannakitsas, General**, and warning to troops, 707  
**Yap Island**, wireless taken over on, 223  
**Yaphank**, exercising newly arrived men at, 853  
**Yarmouth**, bombarded, 1095  
 reconnaissance at, 218  
**Yaunde**, Allied objective, 410-11  
**Yeomanry Division**, part of Desert Corps, 833, 842  
**Yoko**, captured, 411  
**Younghusband, General Sir George J.**, portrait, 391  
**Young Men's Christian Association**, war-work of, 1231, 1233, 1246-60  
**Young Turks**, party of the, 75, 334  
**Young Women's Christian Association**, and Y. M. C. A., 1257, 1261  
 war-work of, 1231, 1233  
**Ypres**, and Hindenburg Line, 1137  
 Belgian affairs near, 1141, 1278  
 British objective, 143, 144, 147, 308  
 Canadian Scottish marching through, 278  
 first battle of, 149-52  
 new offensive near, 812  
 offensive from, 874  
 protection for, 1020, 1022  
 pushing the line back from, map, 818  
 received French War Cross, 150  
 ruins of, 99  
 ruins of barracks in, 813  
 second battle of, 19, 186, 190, 192, 285, 286, 418, 1193  
 third battle of, 819, 1196  
**Ypres Canal**, fighting for the, 286  
**Ypres-Comines Canal**, and 3rd battle of Ypres, 818, 820-21  
**Ypres Salient**, and Belgian advance, 1280  
 formation of, 149  
**Yser**, flooding of the, 281  
**Yser Canal**, line of the, 147, 149-51  
**Yudenitch, General**, Russian commander, 632  
**Yusopov, Prince Felix**, killed Rasputin, 678

**Z**

**Zagazig**, advanced base at, 384  
**Zalchar**, engagement at, 372  
**Zaimis**, Greek politician, 370, 702, 705, 707, 712-13  
**Zanov**, Bulgarian party leader, 367  
**Zborov**, fighting near, 719  
**Zede**, designed submarine, 231  
**Zeebrugge**, attacked, 473  
 diagram of the harbor, 1098  
 evacuated, 1281  
 mine-fields at, 472  
 naval operation against, 1095  
**Zele**, fined, 998  
 Germans detained at, 147  
**Zelplitz**, at Brest-Litovsk, 982  
**Zemstvo Unions**, of Russia, 611, 692, 694  
**Zenson**, bridgehead at, 780, 782  
 repulse of Austrians at, 1173  
**Zentrales**, for foodstuffs in Belgium, 107  
**Zeppelin**, Count Ferdinand von, dirigibles of, 244  
**Zeppelins**, and Friedrichshafen, 247  
 at Jutland fight, 483  
 at Verdun, 439  
 destroyed, 912, 913  
 development and use of, 244, 255  
 in Dogger Bank affair, 219

## INDEX TO HISTORY OF WAR

Zep—Zym

**Zeppelins**, raids of, 419, 662

**Zeir**, in Mesopotamia, 402, 761

**Zillibeke**, fighting near, 514, 819

**Zimmerman, Dr. Alfred**, dispatch intercepted, 738, 872

**Zimnitza**, crossing at, 620

**Zionists**, in Palestine, 841, 845

**Zodiac**, type of airship, 247

**Zollern Redoubt**, near Thiepval, 545-46

**Zonnebeks**, ruins captured, 822

**Zossen**, French Colonial prisoners in prison camp, 786

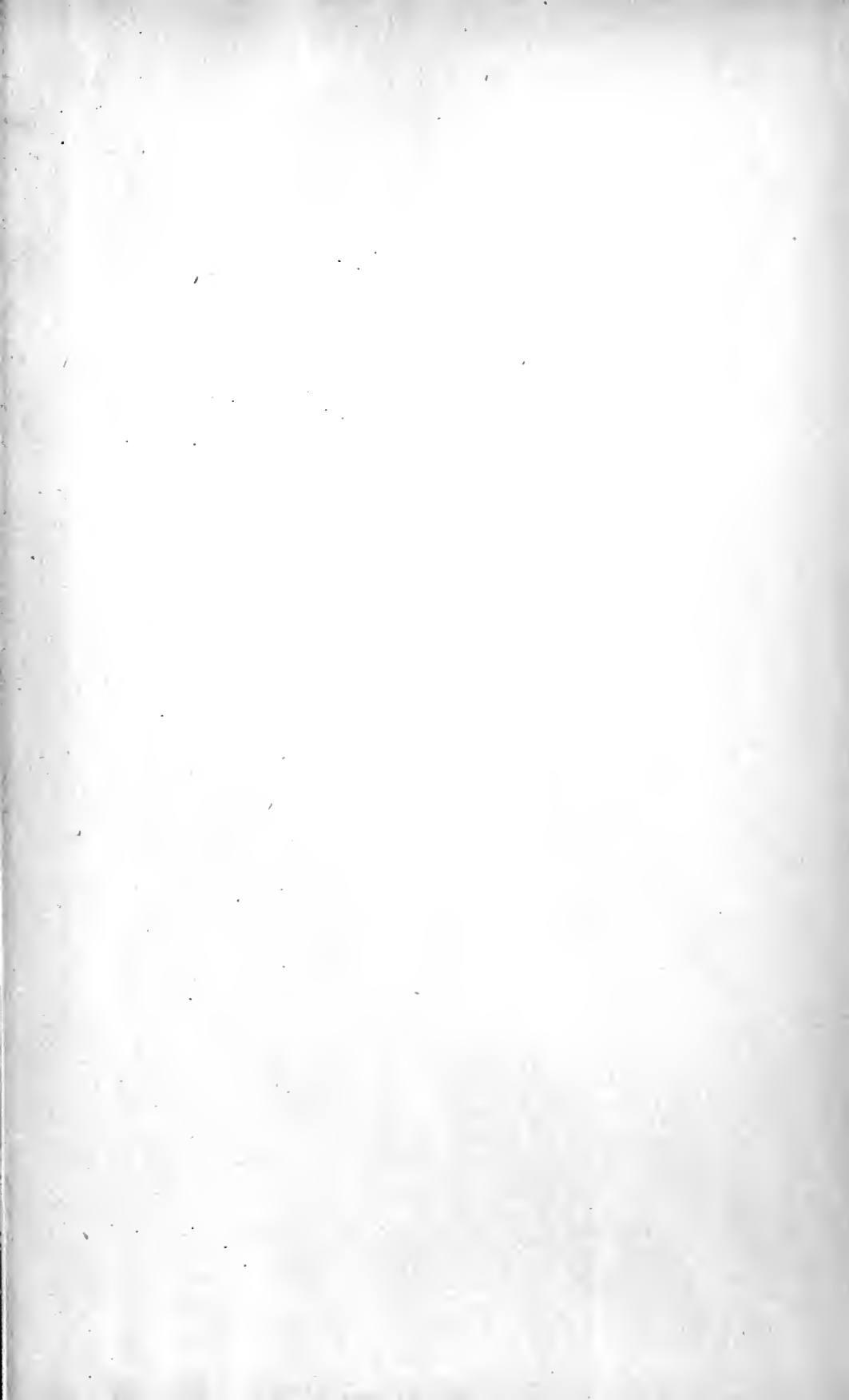
**Zottu, General**, portrait, 622

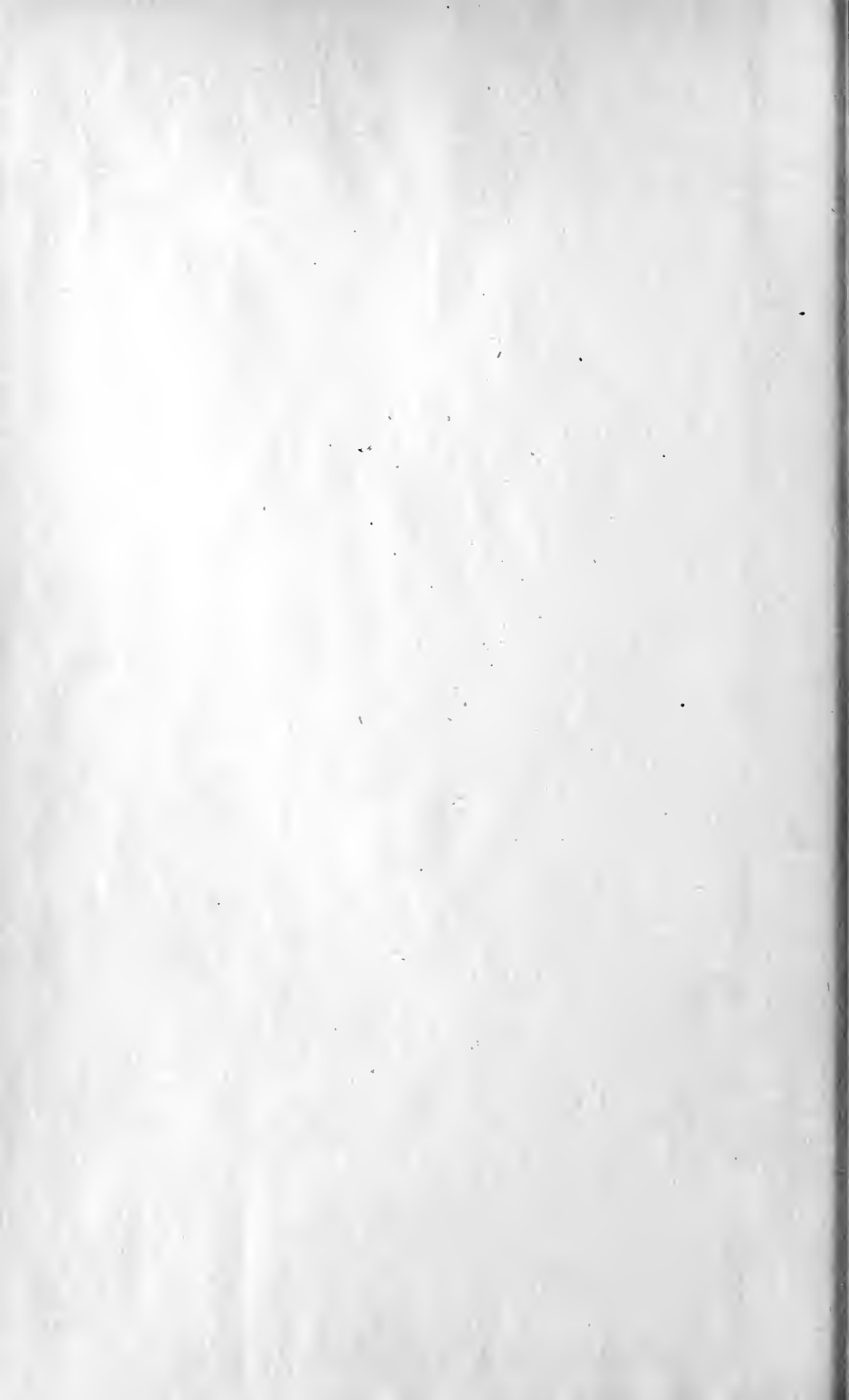
**Zouaves**, at Verdun, 444, 446, 448, 464 engagements of, 154

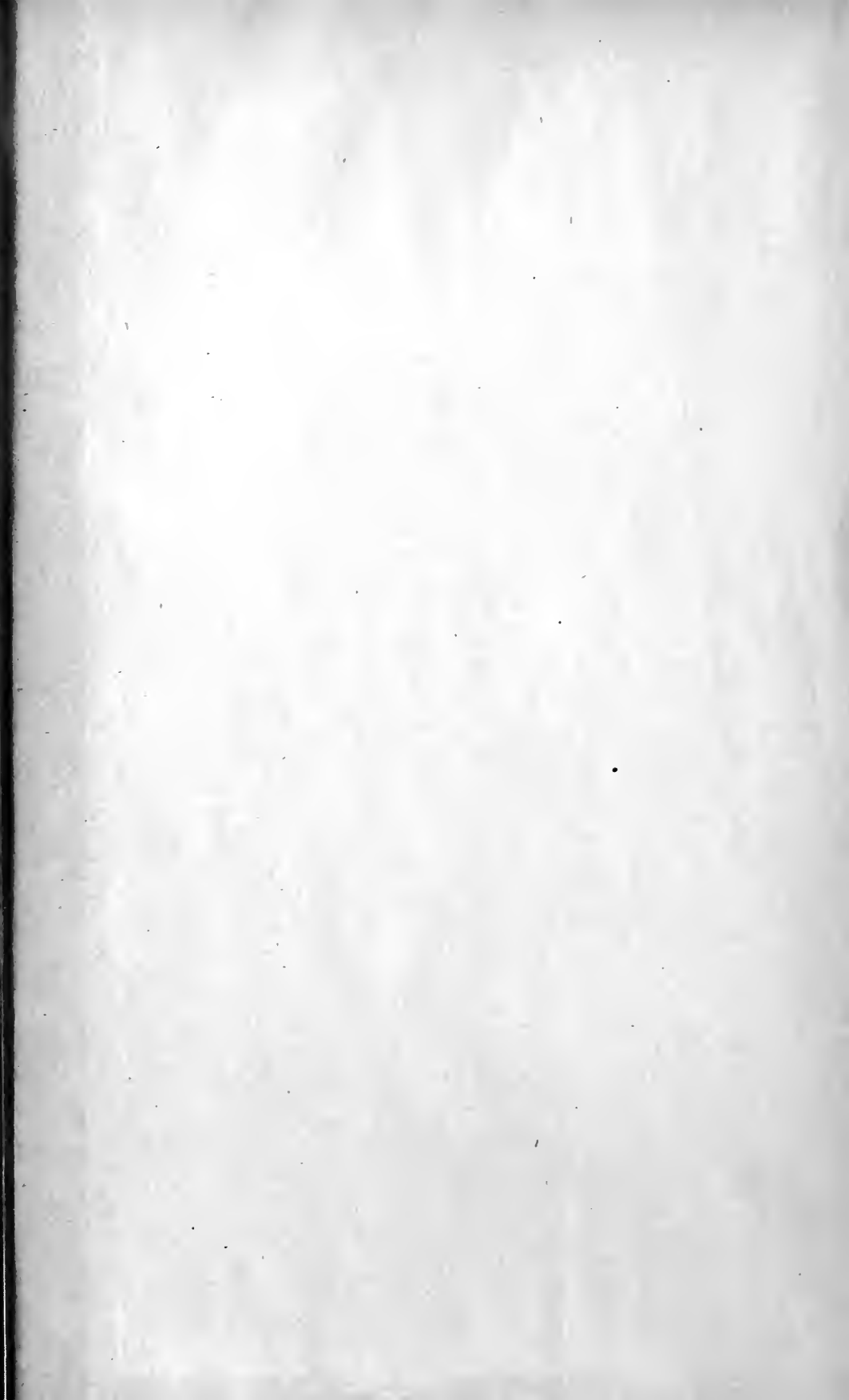
**Zvornik**, crossings at, 173

**Zymbracakis, Colonel**, on Greek Committee of Defense, 709

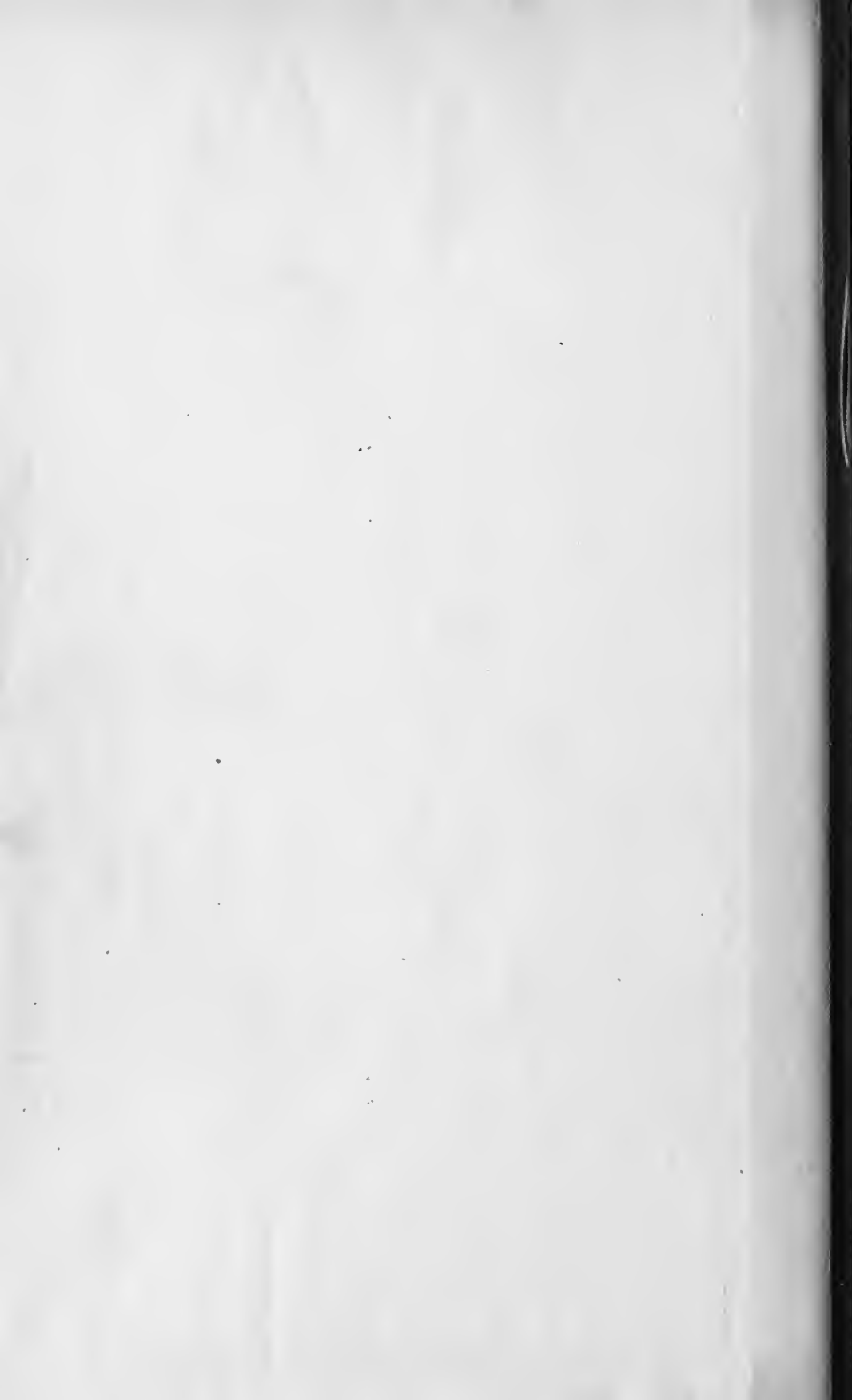
6











BINDING LIST SEP 1 1945

ND 14-12-64

D  
20  
B7  
v.18

The Book of history; history  
of all nations  
v. 18

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

